Physics and my schizophrenia

David Martin Degner
Preface

In this lengthy work I make an attempt to give the reader insight and understanding into the mind of a mentally ill person, the mind of a paranoid schizophrenic and into my mind in particular. I am a paranoid schizophrenic. Psychosis is mostly associated with schizophrenia and if you defined schizophrenia as when someone becomes psychotic and requires medication for sanity you would have a pretty good definition of schizophrenia. The hallmark symptoms of psychosis, at least the kind I am familiar with, are delusions, grandiosity, paranoia and ideas of reference. It’s hard to understand all these symptoms are due to chemical perturbations that can sometimes, even oftentimes, be corrected by modern drugs. I would like you to understand psychosis but I don’t know that is possible, and if it is, I don’t know if that is enough. It seems to have a visceral feeling for psychosis is the right aim since what I would like to convey is the emotional reaction to the belief paradigm one operates under, that after all is the essential human experience. I know I will be a failure at that undertaking and rather look at my purpose as author to provide useful and sometimes boring scientific/medical data on my life and allow the reader to consider it without my personal interpretation. So this work is a puzzle that does not include the solution. The reader is free to draw his or her own conclusions. I wrote a lot when psychotic and have faithfully transcribed that with only minor editing and expose all that here, for the world to see and examine, and look into my mind and see how it ticks.

Tick, tick, tick, ...

David Martin Degner
Anchorage, Alaska
July, 2010
1 an introduction to the mind of the Bold Ruler
3 A Simple, Old-fashioned, Steady State, Engineering Solution to the Energy Problem for all Mankind
6 Provisional Degner Analog Virtual Eclipse Solar Tracker Patent Application
9 The Efficient Market and Asset Manager
11 Provisional Strike an Arc Patent Application

2 Abilify
16 A salami and provolone with mayo between Dawson Creek and Fort Saint John
17 Off to Fort Nelson
24 A Call to Arms: A Question of Morals and Values

**Speed and Height** 32

3 two weeks into the final psychosis

4 final creative writing piece when psychotic
   42 The seminal war
   46 The Seminal War between Good and Evil
   47 The Mousetrap
   53 Dear Social Security,
   65 The Good Guys
   69 Stanley Milgram and Double Edged Swords
   71 The Persecution
   72 Dan

5 two days before the end of the final episode of psychosis

6 common delusions

7 the first month sane

8 181

9 KyFuel one

10 KyFuel two
By providing a set of radii for cyberatoms I enable molecular modeling to be implemented by discrete, relatively rigid objects in three-dimensional space. This means you can describe surfaces where atoms touch, exert modest forces on each other and do very little inter-penetration. The distortion of the non-bonded cyberatom spheres due to covalent and electrostatic bonds is treated in a separate patent. 543

15 butterfly or cockroach 585
16 = 4 x 4 586
1 an introduction to the mind of the Bold Ruler

Why would you give a shit what I think about anything? Because I have figured out what physicists call a theory of everything, the Holy Grail of physics, the intellectual crown jewel of Western Civilization. That work includes a new and consummately beautiful quantum mechanics. Now for the reason of those accomplishments in science you should be interested in reading this book, at least in normal times. But times are not normal. Right now on this planet this book is the only place you can find the truth in physics. That’s very unusual.

What is a theory of everything? It is a theory of all the particles, all the fields and all the forces. So what is a particle, what is a field and what is a force? Well these questions all relate to how we do this kind of science. First observe that the particles are way too small to be seen by the naked eye, even way too small to be seen by microscopes, and only fuzzy, blurred images are available in the form of electron micrographs. Ditto the fields and forces, they cannot be seen either, only inferred as part of a cause and effect mechanism. The way we do this science is called reductionism. If you were a 10 year old boy or girl and had an internal combustion engine and you wanted to understand how it worked you would apply reductionism to try to do that. You would get out some hand tools and take the engine apart into all its discrete pieces and then presumably you would be able to see how it works. In physics the goal of reductionism is simple, find the smallest particle. By smallest is meant both spatial extent and smallest in mass or energy. When you have found the smallest particle and elucidated its behavior you have completed the task of reductionism applied to physics and have in your hand a theory of everything.

Is a theory of everything useful? Who can understand a theory of everything?

There is one goal to science that is particularly fun to think about, albeit ambitious and only possible with a certain critical mass of knowledge. Figuratively speaking it is to build Heaven on Earth. If a person had to work two 12 hour shifts a week, 40 weeks a year, for 40 years, and could live like a King or Queen, that would be a worthy definition of Heaven on Earth. With all the implied free time there would be lots of time to have fun, smoke premium bud, drink ice cold beer, hike rural and urban trails, fish headwaters and farm ponds, bike country lanes, camp out, cook out, vacation, travel, watch sports, participate in sports,
etc. For a married couple three 12 hour shifts a week, 40 weeks a year and for 40 years and you live like a family of Royals.

So the question is – Do we have the critical mass of knowledge to build Heaven on Earth now?

The # 1 reason we have governments is supposedly for our security respecting being attacked by another country. Let’s say we can do away with armies and weapons and resolve all disputes peaceably through an international governance, court system and voting structure based on an international constitution and bill of rights.

Now you might think that is utterly naive and utopian and is little more than a fanciful dream. You probably also think you are not smart enough to understand the fundamentals of physics and chemistry, are incapable of being one-to-one with physical reality. Or if you are smart enough to think you could understand physics and chemistry just didn’t go in that direction, you accept the popularized paradigms and story line modern physics offers us, and marvel at Her simplicity, Her complexity, Her organization, Her flow and Her beauty. But in either case you never considered the possibility that physics and chemistry are really so simple that all adults and many teenagers and even precocious middle school students can get a good handle on the theory of everything and peer deeply into the “Mind of God”.

Consider the utterly astonishing folly of mankind. Consider that we started out in the evolutionary path we are on with no knowledge of physics and chemistry, no knowledge of anything really, but we did already know how to have sex.

Why is there war? What is the role of religion? What is the role of economics? Why is it an evolutionary phenomenon? Why will there be no more war? Are we emergent on the plateau of aesthetic design – when we can design our children?

Life could be cruel. As a person who has suffered from serious mental illness I know that all too well. Of course the wars, the conflicts, the persecutions and the genocides of the 20th Century confirm that in spades.

Man was a stupid shit. Man was a chemical machine. Man had evolved rapidly from monkeys. Man was still evolving rapidly. Glaring examples of stupidity existed in the lofty towers of physics, chemistry and biology, in the applied problems of economics, governance and education, in addition to all walks and aspects of life. In physics you have mass, momentum, energy, force, space and time, six very simple
concepts. Over 350 years since Newton put some order in those
corcepts we are back to zero, no actually worse, we now have wrong
theories where simple right ones should be. Look at the concepts of
intelligence and knowledge, of Nature vs nurture, again so many
understand so little.

I started a screenplay/novel after my third episode of psychosis that
began in 1997 and ended in April 2004. In September 2007 I finished
the screenplay/novel, titled “A string theorist meets the fisherman’s
son”. I originally opened it with the following paragraph:

“When psychotic, I had thought I was like Jesus on the cross, albeit a modern Jesus,
albeit fluent in Western civilization, albeit an accomplished theoretical physicist, and
albeit a different kind of cross, a figurative one, as opposed to the real Jesus, whom it is
claimed, was crucified on a real cross. My cross was to have almost the entire population
of the planet earth reading my mind, knowing my emotions, and my motivations. My
mental thoughts, feelings, and desires were being broadcast, and I thought they were
being broadcast to all good people. Certain people, potential evil people, were not privy
to the full data stream I generated. The goal was to separate good and evil, to sort
mankind into two groups. I could only speculate on the details of how that was being
accomplished by the supporting cast. But when psychotic I did a lot of speculation. I
knew all the smartest people in science and engineering were enabling this technology. I
knew highly evolved technology can appear to be magic. I knew Faraday’s Law and
Ampere’s Law as extended by Maxwell.”

I changed the opening to the following.

It had been a brutal campaign.

The goal was simple: Universal Peace, Justice, Freedom, and Liberty, that I can define
succinctly as no armies, no weapons, no trade restrictions net of scientific safety,
including adult pornography, adult recreational drugs, adult gambling, and adult
prostitution, no travel restrictions net of having a communicable disease, no borders,
every last one of us live where we want to and can afford to and no involuntary transfers
of wealth by governments from any individual or group of individuals to any other
individual or group of individuals, no subsidies of any kind, no welfare of any kind,
everyone carries their own weight.

I had never known conventional boundaries. For me the box was truth. Thinking outside
of the box to me was to violate the only recognizable goal, namely truth. I thought God
was an absentee landlord and the Laws of Physics were never broken. To determine the
evolution of the universe required only the Laws of Physics and a starting configuration,
not the mind of God. I had always considered the mind of God unknowable.

And then what is free will? And what is determinism?

I had written a small poem that summarized everything:

Why are we here? What is our purpose? How should we lead our lives?

The why: Unknowable, unfathomable, incomprehensible.

The purpose: To pass on the joy we find in being. The sexual dynamics you know.
The how: Without fear, with love, compassion, mercy, and charity, without impiety, but with righteousness, and above all else with Wonderment.

In that screenplay/novel I proposed a solution to the energy problem based on small parabolic dishes and a solution to all economic problems I called eMaam. Here’s the excerpt of those pages.

“What's the bartender's name?”

“John.”

“Hey John could I get a Bloody Mary?”

“Coming up.”

“Salt on the rim?”

“Please.”

“Of course a single particle that accounts for all physical phenomena is Occam's finest shave.”

“Simple is better, but not too simple. The greatest architecture of complexity is the Tree of Life built on the combinatorics of combining a few atoms and in the Tree of Life the human brain is the greatest design with the ability to stack and sort, use memory and learn.”

“What else have you worked out?”

“Once I got interested in the problem of solar collection it took me five weeks to solve the energy problem. I have a solution that will allow everyone to live at the American energy consumption level, that is a steady state solar solution, and that will generate no pollution. It'll come in at somewhere between 15 and 25 dollars a barrel in crude oil equivalent.”

“Let me go to the truck and get a two page paper describing my solar energy solution.”

The bartender was returning with Heidi’s drink.

“Here is the simplest and most inexpensive energy solution possible.”

Heidi picked up the paper.

A Simple, Old-fashioned, Steady State, Engineering Solution to the Energy Problem for all Mankind

There are only three possible energy sources; fossil fuels, nuclear and solar. The only viable long term solution is solar. There are only three solar collection schemes possible; thermal, photovoltaic and photosynthesis. In photosynthesis only approximately 2% of the incident photon flux is converted to energy in the form of biomass. Due to the arable land intensity required at 2% energy conversion biomass is not a candidate for an energy solution although the efficient conversion of waste biomass to energy and fertilizer will be important.
economically, just not the major piece of the energy solution.
Photovoltaic’s are not efficient enough, expensive, not proven over a
meaningful 30 year lifetime and at present use highly toxic elements
such as iridium that would be a potential chemical waste problem of
staggering proportions. That leaves thermal collection of incident solar
flux.

In almost every scientific or engineering problem the size scales are
important. When either designing or interpreting a design the
proportions are a key element that needs to be understood well. So
also it is with the energy problem.

A parabolic dish collector reflects and focuses the parallel incoming
light out through a focal point, where the receiver is located. I propose
the solar collector be a ¼ meter$^2$ parabolic dish, 11.2 inches in radius.
I propose the receiver should be able to handle 335 Watts.

At normal incidence the photon flux from the sun is 1340 Watts per
meter squared. It is almost entirely in the visible. Converting the high
quality source of visible flow of photons to heat in a fluid is easy and
efficient. When the light rays are focused to a point very high energy
flux is achieved. The part of a solar energy conversion device that
heats a carrier fluid with focused photon flow is called the receiver.
The receiver is the “boiler”. The ideal receiver would be a black box – a
black, absorbing coated metal enclosure with a pinhole on one side. In
a solar collector/receiver configuration you want to put the focal po-
int of the collector inside the black box, the light entering through the
pinhole. The receiver plumbing has an inlet pipe for low temperature
fluid and an exit pipe for high temperature fluid. The size of the
collector and receiver turns out to be the most important part of the
engineering solution to the energy problem, the question of
proportion.

High reflectance is readily available, 96% to 98% no problem.
Receiver efficiencies can be as high as 96%. Converting the heat
collected to steam and employing a steam engine with an efficiency of
18% and an electric generator efficiency of 96% the overall efficiency
for solar flux to electricity is 16%. Employing a steam turbine with an
efficiency of 35% the overall efficiency for solar flux to electricity is
32%.

Prime solar collector locations have the equivalent of 2200 hours per
year of maximum solar flux.

A parabolic collector must be aimed at the sun, so must track the suns
arc over the course of a day. The aiming device, on which the collector
is mounted, can be built cheaply and reliably due to the light weight of
the collector/receiver and the small forces on the aiming device. Those
are the three components of the design—parabolic dish collector,
receiver, and aiming/mounting device.

We need to produce about 300 kilowatt hours per day per person for
each person on the planet to have an average per capita level of total
energy consumption, including transportation and the power grid, like
that of the developed world. At an overall conversion efficiency from
incident light flux to electricity of 16% that works out to about one thousand ¼ meter\(^2\) collectors for each person on the planet. Packed in a two dimensional array that will require about 850,000 square miles, a square 926 miles on edge, 1 to 1.1 per cent of the earths surface area.

The collector/receiver is lightweight and small so the wind and mechanical forces on it are small. Wind resistance goes up as the velocity cubed, and a collector is like a lever, the smaller the length of the lever, the smaller forces at the fulcrum. The wind forces can be minimized by keeping the size of the collector small. The design of a rubber band model airplane in contrast with a Boeing 747 represents well the concepts of scale, proportions and economic cost of this simple design. Since we will need to build about 6 trillion of these solar collection devices, there will be the largest possible economies of scale, resulting in lowest cost per unit. I estimate the maximum cost will be around $30.00 per unit installed. With a useful life of 30 years at 5% interest the energy cost is 1.4 cents per KWH. At the low estimate overall efficiency of 16% the monthly cost to an individual to have 300 KWH per day would be $130 a month, if the land to put collector farms on is free. If the cost is $22.00 per unit installed, an estimate of 25% in overall efficiency to electricity and a 5% interest rate the energy cost is 0.7 cents per KWH. If the interest rate was 3% the costs would be 0.84 cents and 0.42 cents respectively. After 30 years the field would be paid for and the energy of the field just about free unless the collectors need replacement every 30 years. Neither of these calculations takes into account the cost of the turbines and generators in the power plants embedded in the collector fields. They only reflect the cost of the collector fields. Prime non-arable high solar flux land is largely uninhabited and in the government domain. Of course, many people will want their roofs covered with these things. The efficiency of the collector is the same on the equator as on the North Pole. They both would collect virtually the same amount of energy. But you can not close pack the dishes on the North Pole. There they have to be spaced apart so they do not hide each others view of the sun.

The collection manifolds, turbines, generators, and electrolysis of water technologies are all mature, well designed, on the efficient thermodynamic and engineering frontiers and are mechanical engineering poetry.

That’s all there’s to it, amazingly enough. It’s a matter of proportions.

One is hesitant to make such a remark, but in my analysis this appears to be the best, the cheapest, the most efficient, the only way, the singular path we should follow for the large scale energy problem.

Photovoltaic’s are more expensive, less reliable, and use highly toxic elements. Biomass is only about 2% efficient in converting solar radiation to biomolecules so would require far more land, and at present would require arable land. Designed biological collectors for non-arable land, maybe 20 years in the future, that could produce carbon based fuels may be important for providing airplane fuels, but would be inadequate for the large piece of the energy solution. Since
the biosphere fixes 2% of solar flux into biological chemicals, and we use in energy magnitude, at present, the equivalent about 10-15% of solar biologically fixed energy, primarily as fossil fuels, it would be impossible to harness technologically. So the 17th Century Isaac Newton’s parabolic reflector (I do not know if he invented the first parabolic reflector or just the reflector based telescope, it seems the latter) and the early 19th Century isothermal/adiabatic ideal cycles of Sadi Carnot, win this war.

“Is that all there is to the energy problem?”

“Amazingly that’s it.”

“What about wind, wave and tidal energy sources?”

“You could actually provide all the energy mankind needs through those but it would cost three to four times as much or more. Harvesting wind and wave energy is far more difficult technologically than my solution. But it is greatly to the credit of modern design engineers that they can already harvest both wind and wave energy economically.”

“No let me show you my provisional patent application for an analog solar tracking mechanism. If it hasn’t already been patented it will be the simplest and most valuable patent ever.”

Provisional Degner Analog Virtual Eclipse Solar Tracker Patent Application

What is the title of your invention?

The name of my invention is the Degner Analog Virtual Eclipse Solar Tracker (DAVEST).

What are the objectives of your invention?

In a parabolic dish solar collector with the receiver located at the focal point we need a way to aim at the sun and track it throughout the day. The trajectory of the sun is an analog phenomenon. The DAVEST is an invention to track the sun.

Provide a brief summary of how your invention works.

The receiver casts a shadow on the dish. An opening in the base of the parabolic dish is made approximately the same shape and size as the receiver cross-section that casts the shadow. Behind the opening is located an array of photoelectric cells. When the dish is aimed at the sun the shadow from the receiver covers the opening. From behind the dish the sun will be eclipsed by the receiver and no light will come through the opening in the dish and strike the photoelectric cell array. When the dish is not aimed directly at the sun there will be light striking some of the photoelectric cell array. The electrical signals generated by the array of photoelectric cells can be used to aim at the sun and track it throughout the day. The level of precision required determines any specific design.
How is the invention used?

It is included in the design of parabolic dish solar collectors.

“Simple, elegant and of high utility. Are you going to build a working model?”

“The parabolic dish and receiver out of cardboard, four photovoltaic cells, four light bulbs, a 7th grade science project. I’ll just put a handle on it and a human can aim it just by getting all the lights to go out. It’ll be all analog, from generating a current to aiming in the hand of a human.”

“Will it actually be able to aim at the sun?”

“Not only aim at the sun but the center of the sun. It’ll be easier than placing shots on a one inch target at 100 yards with a .340 Weatherby.”

“What is so important to have an analog feedback system to track the sun is that it allows construction standards to be significantly relaxed and also can accommodate earth motion over time in the mounting structure. It is a simple solution to what otherwise is a difficult and expensive problem. The 6 trillion or so photovoltaic cells required will be the largest use of photovoltaic’s ever and the chips required will be a large order.”

An important feature of the small parabolic dish design is it can cover almost any surface topology efficiently and inexpensively, so out in the desert, in the foothills, on roofs and fence lines the installation is easy. The DAVEST makes the small dish collector scheme a very robust solution.”

“The aiming device is just a two axis aiming device, east-west, north-south, requiring two axis and two small electric motors that can easily be designed for a 30 year duty cycle and probably a lot longer.”

“Could your energy solution have been implemented in the 50’s?”

“It really requires the photovoltaic cell, the computer and the silicon chip because of the computations required to track the sun. So it could have been done in the 70’s. It could have been implemented with vacuum tubes but would not have been economically viable. With the integrated circuit and DAVEST its implementation will be quite easy. It’s really astonishing how much energy we have available to us and how cheap it can be. In future generation’s people will look back on our Fueilletonistic Age and wonder what we were using for brains.”

“What will happen to the price of oil after you publish?”

“At first there will be skepticism. Then the General Electric’s and Dean Kaman’s of the world will get focused on the best, the cheapest implementation. In short order the price of oil will collapse to between 10 and 15 dollars a barrel. We’ll pick a target city to convert their electric grid entirely over to solar in 3 or 4 years. Phoenix would be an excellent choice because of the prime amount of solar flux it receives and their dependence on fossil fuel. We would also implement hydrogen generation and piping to get a handle on that too. Eventually there will be hydrogen pipelines from the southwest US to the rest of North America. China and North Africa have abundant solar energy flux land too. This solution to energy will increase the carrying capacity of the planet for humans by a factor of ten before we run out of land for collector fields, maybe even larger than that.”

“If we had a good superconductor and a good battery we would not even have to utilize hydrogen.”
“I haven’t worked on either or on fuel cells, although all are interesting. I don’t think there ever will be a room temperature superconductor so I think we are stuck with hydrogen for transmission and storage. I think we will have a good battery that will give an acceptable range of maybe 200 miles and that will be a design that could take out the entire automotive business. I think if you had an efficient enough fuel cell you could just use pressurized hydrogen, maybe get a hundred mile range, instead of requiring cryogenic.”

“Now Honey let me tell you about another important project, a pure information technology project. I call it The Efficient Market and Asset Manager, eMaam for short.”

I handed the one page paper to her.

The Efficient Market and Asset Manager

What we want to do is minimize the human labor time, and therefore economic cost, required to carry on all our affairs and we want to carry on our affairs in an envelope of security.

All markets, all assets, all inventory, all asset transfers, all ownership, all taxes, all financial transactions implemented by one computer program, that I have named The Efficient Market and Asset Manager, for everyone on the planet. This program will catalyze the transition to electronic money and a single currency. Eliminate all tax lawyers, all non-academic accountants, the IRS, SS, one-half or more of the banking industry, all the exchanges, the market specialists, one-half or more of the brokers, realtors, the GAO, statistics gathering people, government by one-half or more. One computer program for all people for all transactions – all businesses, all inventory control, all pricing, all sales, to keep track of all assets, to make efficient markets, to implement taxes all done free of charge by a straightforward program, The Efficient Market and Asset Manager. I have a simple algorithm to implement a bid/ask market. It shaves bid ask spread to zero cents per share on average and implements the singularities in time that correspond to transactions.

By implementing this transition to all electronic financial transactions, performed by the modern computer-communications network with minimum cost, I estimate we will be able to reduce the workweek from 40 hours to 30 hours while increasing the standard of living.

Also the total health data base, all medical, dental, and optical records, for everyone on the planet implemented by one computer program. This would give the individual the best care and the public health, medical and scientific community the necessary data base to fight disease and pollution. Maintaining privacy will be a challenge but could be implemented much better than the current level of privacy.

All voting can be done electronically, implemented by this computer program.

And we will have a dossier on every person alive and a record of every purchase made by anyone.
Heidi read it in a minute or two.

“Do you realize what else it is?”

“A total solution to the terrorism and security problem for all people and all countries for the rest of time, wow!”

“You got it”

“John, bring me another Bloody John, SALT on the rim.”

“It solves those problems to the highest degree possible. All business inventories are known. All purchases are known. If someone is buying acetone, propane, nitrate fertilizer, kerosene, box matches and timers at Wal-mart or Home Depot there will be a record of it. Bombs are easy to make but so many possible bomb making purchases are innocuous it will be a considerable searching problem to find potential bomb makers. All backgrounds in chemistry, microbiology, computer science, all military training, all talents and abilities will be known. We will know who can fly airplanes, can culture bio-toxins, who can disable computers and interfere in infrastructure. With this program we can put to an end most if not all economic crimes, stealing, forgery, embezzlement, fraud, etc. We will know where everyone is to some degree all the time and for people on probation will know where they are at all times. We will have complete access to lifetime medical records and siblings and parents medical records. When this program is fully implemented the work week for the average Joe can be lowered to 30 hours per week from the current 40 while obtaining a higher standard of living.”

“Will it solve everyday problems like people getting into football games, buses and restaurants?”

“It can do all of those things. If biometric recognition is possible no ID cards will be required. But ID cards along with a PIN and biometric recognition will be easier and simpler to use than the current menagerie of ID cards, passports, drivers licenses, credit cards, debit cards, etc. It will be necessary to enter stores, public facilities, transportation, in short everywhere a person is exposed to other people outside of the home.”

“How exactly will eMaam reduce the work week?”

“eMaam will reduce, not increase, the cost of doing business. The full implementation will be far smaller than currently used for computer resources. We have so much redundancy and duplication it is almost absurd. It eliminates about 20% of the workforce, very many in government, and they must go out and find a new job, probably doing real work for the first time in their lives. When they are all employed again the other 80% will have their work week cut by about 20% because there are more hands for the same task. Add to that no defense expenditures and there can be a further reduction in work week.”

“Can eMaam implement fair taxation?”

“Easily. There should only be two taxations possible, income and wealth. There should be no deductions. There should be no sales tax. Sales taxes are both regressive, hurting those with the least income and wealth and also inhibit the economy at the worst level possible, that of retail sales. All governments at all levels must have a balanced budget. The rates of taxation on income and wealth are determined by the magnitude of governmental expenditures. There is a range of economies, from those just developing where there is only income and no wealth yet to the highly developed countries where there is very substantial wealth. Determining the fraction of taxes allocated to income and wealth is a little difficult. It depends on the amount of income, the amount of wealth and the return on investment. I could derive a simple formula based on those three data inputs
but have not had a chance to work on such an applied problem as yet. Both income and wealth taxes must be flat taxes applied at the same rate to all income and all wealth. In a primitive economy this is not possible since there is so little wealth they would have to derive the majority of their tax income through taxing income. Eventually all economies will raise their taxes entirely through wealth alone since there will be so much wealth. those workers without wealth will have an opportunity to rapidly accumulate wealth since the income taxes will be so low.”

“Should there be a minimum income and wealth below which there is no tax?”

“Yes. In America I would start out with the first $15,000 of income and the first $150,000 of wealth not be taxed.”

“What about taxation of businesses, from the sole proprietorship to the largest multinational?”

“There should be no corporate tax, it is double taxation.”

“How would you determine profit?”

“Simple cash flow. The profit for any business is assigned to the owners of that business, be they a sole proprietorship or a publicly held company. The income tax on business profits is then paid by the individual who owns those profits. It enables expansion and growth into new markets. It does that by allowing a growing company to have no taxes to assign to the shareholders while it is growing and incurring the cost of physical assets. The assets of all businesses would be assigned to the owners and they would also have to pay wealth taxes on those assets. Then all income and wealth is assigned to individuals. When the market is mature, there is no room for expansion left, and the physical assets are paid for, the profit will be significant. This is precisely how we want the economy to respond to the challenges of mankind’s needs. It directs investment into emergent new and important technologies in a free and unfettered marketplace.”

“Of course income and wealth are easy to determine in eMaam so all this is implemented with no cost.”

“How will you ignite it?”

“All I have to do is show it to Bill Gates once.”

“To make a marketplace you have to bring the bidder and the seller to the same price. Right now on the NYSE there is what is called a specialist who has two lists, one of bids and one of asks. He pockets the bid/ask spread when a trade is executed. My simple algorithm will reduce the bid/ask spread to zero cents. Here’s a copy of the provisional patent application. This patent is the simplest in history with the possible exception of the Post-it note by 3M.”

I handed Heidi the one page document.

**Provisional Strike an Arc Patent Application**

**What is the title of your invention?**

The name of my invention is Strike an Arc, SAA.

**What are the objectives of your invention?**
The SAA is a simple algorithm by which a trade event can be executed at the minimum bid/ask spread, a bid/ask spread of zero cents on average.

**Provide a brief summary of how your invention works.**

The buyer or seller of a security picks a price to an accuracy of one cent. Then the algorithm is to add $\frac{1}{2}$ cent to the chosen price for a buyer and subtract $\frac{1}{2}$ cent from the seller. Whenever two securities, one from a buyer and one from a seller, have the same price after that algorithm is executed a trade occurs almost instantaneously at that intermediate price.

**How is the invention used?**

In a computer based strategy the algorithm is implemented in the software that determines a trade event.

“Do you think you will be able to get a patent?”

“It won’t cost much to find out.”

That’s the end of the excerpt from *A string theorist meets the fisherman’s son*.

In this book I will lay out the Degner agenda:

1. Implement world government that embodies universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty. I define UPJF&L succinctly as no armies, no weapons, no trade restrictions net of scientific safety, including adult pornography, adult recreational drugs, adult gambling, and adult prostitution, no travel restrictions net of having a communicable disease, no borders, every last one of us live where we want to and can afford to and no involuntary transfers of wealth by governments from any individual or group of individuals to any other individual or group of individuals, no subsidies of any kind, no welfare of any kind, everyone carries their own weight, of course the disabled will be taken care of.

2. Implement eMaam with the goal to reduce the work week to 24 hours for the Average Joe ASAP but in no more than 10 years at the longest.

3. Install several trillion $\frac{1}{4}$ square meter parabolic dish solar thermal collectors.

4. Rename the planet earth The Sovereign Empire of the Bold Ruler.

5. Have everyone refer to me as the Bold Ruler.

The Degner agenda will minimize the number of deaths due to conflict among man, in fact may reduce it to zero deaths per year, no wars, no
conflicts, no riots, no terrorism, everyone sane, rational and tolerant. So it provides the perfect security program for all mankind.

eMaam will maximize the world domestic product and over time maximize personal wealth. It will minimize the cost of operating the economy. In fact eMaam will reduce transaction costs in markets to next to zero, even zero on average. It will provide the ideal platform for implementing taxes and voting directly on all issues, what Bill Gates calls direct government. It will provide simple, useful data on which to interpret the direction and portfolio of the economy. The direction we want is upward as fast as possible that I will define as to decrease the work week while increasing the standard of living. eMaam will allow the economy to grow at the fastest rate possible, will allow wealth to accumulate at the fastest rate possible, will solve the greatest number of physical problems in a finite interval of time, is fundamentally fair, is completely open and transparent, all transactions instantly available, all markets continuously open. Inflation can be made impossible, fraud can be made impossible, identity theft can be made impossible and eMaam cannot be manipulated if a few simple rules are observed. eMaam is the ideal, all-purpose, fully adaptable economic engine for all human activity on planet earth.

So I am saying I think it is possible to have a 24 hour work week in the near future for mankind, we are at the critical mass of knowledge to implement that technology. But man’s folly and stupidity may prevent him from realizing that rational goal.
I am 57 years old and a paranoid schizophrenic.

Almost three months ago, on March 8\textsuperscript{th}, 2010 I came out of the last episode of psychosis. A week after coming out of that psychosis I had started a new anti-psychotic medication called Abilify\textsuperscript{1} and I was now stabilized and sane on the Abilify, perhaps for the first time since age 22 when I became mentally ill, but in any event for the first time in 10 or 12 years. Since 1997 I had been psychotic six times. There was a long episode lasting from 1997 to April 2004, then a couple years sane on Zyprexa\textsuperscript{2}, then an eight month episode of psychosis that began in March 2006 and ended on December 1\textsuperscript{st}, 2006. There were two short episodes in late 2007 and early 2008, about eight weeks each, brought on by using the smoking cessation medication Chantix\textsuperscript{3}. There was an episode that started in late December 2008 and ended in mid-July 2009. And there was this final episode that began in early November 2009 and ended just this past March 8\textsuperscript{th}.

On the Abilify I felt I was not going to become psychotic again. I felt sane, free of delusions, suspiciousness and paranoia, grandiosity and ideas of reference. I did have side effects. Since 1984 I had been on Prolixin\textsuperscript{4} except for two years from 2004 to 2006 when I was on Zyprexa. On the Prolixin I always had residual delusions,
suspiciousness and paranoia, grandiosity and ideas of reference. I also had side effects on the Prolixin.

In 2007 I wrote about my mental illness in chapters 12 and 13 of *A string theorist meets the fisherman’s son*.

12 A salami and provolone with mayo between Dawson Creek and Fort Saint John

“This traffic circle is the beginning of the Alcan. No one who has ever been around it ever forgets it.”

“I’m having the time of my life.”

“So what’s your embryological theory? I suspect it is about a lot more than dicks and cunts.”

“Take a look at a human being from the exterior, both male and female. Spread the cheeks, the pussy lips, open the mouth, look into the nostrils, the eyes and the ears. Now I ask: What is the oldest thing you have seen?”

“That’s a tough one. You mean evolutionarily of course?”

“Yup.”

“I don’t have any idea.”

“It’s the asshole.”

Heidi started laughing and I joined in.

“I agree it’s really funny.”

“You are serious aren’t you?”

“Very. Want to know why?”

“Something to do with embryology and developmental biology?”

“Yes but extraordinarily fundamental. Consider the first single cell eukaryotic cell. The next stage of evolution is a two cell eukaryote, with a head and a tail. The head is a mouth and the tail is an ass. Bacteria and the first single cell eukaryotes could transport pretty much any biomolecules across the membrane but obviously have to break down big polymers to transport them. So what the first eukaryotic cell could do is to absorb larger particles in the process of phagocytosis, where a membrane is made around the absorbed material and that little organelle enters the cytoplasm. Back then the only thing to ingest is viruses, bacteria and other primitive eukaryotic cells and their degradation products in the external environment. Of course everything in this stage is in water and in salt water at that. When you go to the first two cellular organisms the first order of business is to have an opening in one cell, the mouth, to take in the larger nutrients and a tail, to eliminate stuff you don’t want to build up, the asshole. On the interface of the two cells there is some nice surface recognition and binding and there is vectorial transport possible between cells across that surface. That interface between the two cells of the most primitive eukaryote is analogous to the diaphragm in man. The primitive opening in
the head of the two cell organism is analogous to the throat in man, somewhere above the esophagus trachea junction and below the throat nasal passage junction, and the primitive opening in the tail of the two cell organism is analogous to the asshole in man. So the asshole is the most primitive thing you see inspecting a human from the exterior."

"In a human embryo the fertilized egg divides by a binary fission process for the first 8 or 16 cell divisions or whatever. The cells appear indistinguishable but are of course separated in time with the first two cells the oldest and the same age. So what is the first step in differentiation of cells?"

"It would have to be the first cell division wouldn't it?"

"Very good Mendel. And those two cells are the head and the tail in all multi-cellular eukaryotes. In plants it’s the part that will be above ground, the head, and the part that will be below ground, the tail. In animals it’s the brain and the penis or the brain and the clit, the head and the tail. So the male/female thing starts right there at the first cell division for all multi-cellular organisms."

"Makes good sense, the head and the tail, sex all defined in the first cell division. Don’t people think differentiation occurs at a slightly later stage?"

"I am not sure what they think but it has to be that in multi-cellular eukaryotes the first cell division results in a head and a tail. I do think that it is believed there is an undifferentiated glob of cells but I think the two cells in that glob that become head and tail are the first two cells from that first cell division. A lot can be going on inside a cell that is not easily addressable experimentally. Theoretical biologists are going to have to solve a lot of problems."

"Now let’s get to some really funny stuff, the dick and cunt stuff. I’ll get back to this in the future but you know what it is really about in our American society, black dicks and Jewish brains, and it is a comedy. One more digression. I am going to avoid using the word race and instead use the word pod for any identifiable gene pool in humans. The word race must have originally been given its name after a race, reflecting that throughout evolution gene pools have been in a race with each other for scarce resources. Changing the name to pod reflects our emergence on the plateau of aesthetic design, when we can design our children and is the correct word from the perspective of population genetics"

"Let me change the subject before you go into your embryological theory. Darling I am in heaven with you. You must have some defects, you are fifty-four years old and without a wife or children, what are they?"

"Alcoholism, it’s strongly correlated with my Y chromosome."

"My Dad had seven siblings and five brothers. All five of my male uncles on his side were alcoholics despite much blessing and success in life. My Uncle Paul, who was an electrical engineer drank himself to death early in life after his wife died of cancer. One uncle, a commercial pilot, drank himself to death 6 years after retirement at age 66 in an alcohol overdose. I have two brothers and they were both alcoholics. My older brother died at 51 pulling a 0.40%. My younger brother, seven years younger, is alive and an alcoholic. As far as I know all my male cousins on my Dad’s side were and still are alcoholics or are recovering alcoholics. So my Y chromosome has a 12/13 probability of being an alcoholic."

"That’s pretty ominous. But I don’t think you are an alcoholic. Maybe you’re only like an English or German soccer fan. I think they drank 17 pints a day on average at the 2006 world cup final in Berlin, but I don’t want drinking to be a problem for us. Your mind and memory are perfectly sharp, you have no shakes or tremors, you get good sleep, you
don’t get hangovers, you function at a very high level, just have drunk beer like a frat boy all your life. I feel you are not being fully honest with me. Is there something else going on with you that you haven’t been able to tell me about yet?”

“You’re right I don’t think I am an alcoholic either, although I have drunk twelve beers a day for over twenty-five years and have drunk beer since age fourteen.”

“I am diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic.”

“Oh David, I don’t know what to say, I am so sorry to hear that, so very sorry. That is very disturbing. I am now wondering how much of your work and goals are wild grandiose delusions? I know your scientific work is correct. That is abundantly self-evident. Are you a genius and a schizophrenic in an attractive physical package?”

“It’s a lot more complicated to put it mildly, actually astonishingly complex. The hallmark of the diagnosis of schizophrenia is psychosis. The three hallmark characteristics of psychosis are paranoia, delusions and grandioseness. I have been psychotic, in fact four episodes that totaled 10 or 11 years of my life since age 29. I do take anti-psychotic medication, 5 mg Prolixin daily, a low dose of one of the older generation medications. I will need to be on Prolixin for the rest of my life or perhaps a newer drug if one comes along with higher efficacy. But I am not a paranoid schizophrenic.”

“If you have been psychotic and need anti-psychotic medication how can you not be a paranoid schizophrenic?”

“What do you know about schizophrenia?”

“Not much. I know it is about 2% of all populations world wide. I know it has a strong genetic component. And I know it is one of the scariest things a normal person thinks they will encounter and the most horribly scary mental disease there is. I know schizophrenics and bipolar's have amazingly high suicide rates and suffer immensely. That being said I had not the slightest idea it was possible you suffered from mental illness. I thought you had not the slightest idea it was possible you suffered from mental illness. I thought you really had a couple ex’s around and a bunch of kids you didn’t want to tell me. When is the last time you were psychotic?”

“Nine months ago I came out of the last psychosis and I have been sane since then.”

“Oh that is ominous.”

Heidi started crying, then sobbing uncontrollably, feeling how everything seemed to change dramatically in an instant and recognizing how much I must have suffered in life.

“If you are pregnant you can get an abortion, you can leave at any time and just call it meeting a stranger on a train.”

Heidi wiped the tears off her face and turned to me.

“When I said yes to you I meant for life and with nothing held back. But I did not consider a pre-existing medical condition like schizophrenia. It didn’t even enter my mind. But you don’t scare me in the slightest. Your rationality is so utterly manifest I trip over it. You seem to me like the sanest person I have ever met.”

“Are we going to have a discussion about sanity darling?”

“Are we ever!”
“One idea I think you are wrong on is that Einstein started a conspiracy. Although his theories and quantum mechanics look ridiculous to you it looks to me like they really believed that stuff. If you don’t have the Ï particle it all seems believable.”

“I think Einstein discovered the Ï particle, through mechanics, not the electric field like the face I climbed. I think he figured out Newton’s Second Law means a force is a flow of momentum, mass and energy. If he figured that out and figured out $E = mc^2$ he knows quite a bit without knowing how electric and magnetic fields work. If he then figures out a photon is a lump of the flow of mass between atoms he can formulate the photon hypothesis. That’s all the foundation to understand gravity. After he derives the increase of mass with velocity he says to himself: “What do I need to do to make this important discovery, this important epoch for mankind, the initiation event that will bring about an end to warfare and conflict among man?” With his new found gamma he decides to say time also slows by gamma when an object has velocity. Since everyone had thought mass was constant and inviolable he sees an opportunity to also slip in time dilation. Then he worked out the consequences of time dilation that the speed of light is constant in all relative frames of reference even when they are moving relative to each other, the Lorentz transformation as opposed to the Galilean transformation and that there is a length contraction along the velocity vector. He writes up his work and planned conspiracy and sends it to Max Planck in Berlin, the pre-eminent physicist of the time with his seminal invention of the Planck constant and blackbody radiation law. From there on it is history. He knows gravity is minus the gradient of the energy field of gravity so thinks he can figure out the gravity field. He combines his special relativity with his gravity and disguises the gravity theory in four dimensions, three of space and one of time, as if space and time are connected even more so than already asserted in the special theory resulting in curved space, a process that took him ten years.”

“That doesn’t appear to me to be paranoid, delusional or grandiose. Do you acknowledge you could be wrong?”

“I do. But I think anyone should be able to reject time dilation, length contraction and curved space on philosophical grounds alone, even just by common sense. And since he provides no microscopic mechanism, no reduction to elementary particle mechanics and dynamics, the whole load is completely unpalatable.”

“What were you doing when you were twenty-five and twenty-six, Einstein’s age when he worked out the special theory?”

“I was in Berkeley auditing courses in biochemistry, genetics, bacteriology, molecular biology, chemistry, biophysics and computer science. My goal was to find the secret of life and patent it.”

“Isn’t the secret of life just the central dogma, DNA, RNA, proteins?”

“That never in any way seemed to embody the secret of life to me. That’s just the simple architecture. It would be like having hardware without software. The central dogma as currently defined is not a rich enough structure to handle the information processing function cells manifestly do. There is no higher Turing machine like mechanism to perform the computations that must go on to determine the temporal pattern of transcription.”

“Before getting into what looks like a lot of fundamental molecular biology, tell me, when did you first become mentally ill and what was its cause?”

“I led a normal life, for me, and happy, never depressed, never suicidal, never paranoid, up until March 1975, about nine months after graduation at age twenty-two. I used the bad street drug PCP that we snorted like cocaine. I used it once and had a really
spectacular time and felt fine the next day. It was sold as THC and I did not know it was PCP. The second time I used it my girlfriend and I snorted a dime, ten dollars worth, maybe a quarter gram of white powder, had sex and went to sleep. The last memory I have of that period is having an orgasm but not feeling it, as if anesthetized. When I awoke the next morning I felt depressed, paranoid and had some kind of serious thought disorder I couldn’t interpret. I went to work that morning and in about forty-five minutes thought to myself that if this doesn’t change and is permanent I will have to take my life within five year’s. All these feelings were completely new. It wasn’t hard to associate the effect with the cause. Being a neurobiology major I thought I had done irreversible chemical damage to my brain. I can’t even begin to tell you how bad I felt. It took thirty-one years to fully recover with the aid of medication.”

“Were you psychotic at that point?”

“No, only mortally injured. After six very difficult years, very stressful years I finally twisted off and became psychotic in August of 1981.”

“Is the reason you say you are not a paranoid schizophrenic because the whole problem started with your reaction to PCP?”

“That’s it. My mental illness was caused by a chemical injury, a chemical perturbation. In an interaction with the environment the situation turned into psychosis. So there is no genetic component and if we have children they will not be schizophrenic.”

“If there was a genetic component to your illness would you want to father children?”

“Not a chance. From what I have seen of paranoid schizophrenics and from my personal experiences of becoming psychotic, being psychotic and recovering from psychosis I would not wish it on anyone and would never use my own sperm for procreation if I thought it was genetic.”

“Is there any mental illness in your family history?”

“None on my Dad’s side going back as many as six generations and my Mom knew of none in her background although it is not as complete as the Degner side. None in my generation of cousins and none in the younger generation of their children.”

“Can you give me a brief overview, a chronology, of the periods of psychosis?”

“As I already told you the first psychosis began in August 1981 in Berkeley where I was a research associate in molecular genetics. It lasted without interruption for twenty-seven months until June 1983. I came out of the psychosis in two weeks after being given one shot of Prolixin in the thigh at the Illinois State Psychiatric Institute where I was for five weeks. I was at my parents when I came out of the psychosis, was not placed on medication, was not seeing a psychiatrist, moved up to Anchorage and eventually became psychotic again the following year in February or March of 1984. I ended up in the Alaska Psychiatric Institute and was there for five weeks in July and the beginning of August 1984. They put me on 5 mg Prolixin when I arrived and released me with the diagnosis schizoid affective disorder on two mg Prolixin and 200 mg lithium daily, still completely psychotic. I came out of the psychosis alone, in my apartment eight days later and drew the conclusion I was a paranoid schizophrenic. I realized I didn’t need lithium so stopped taking it. I have stayed on medication since then with interruptions of no more than a few weeks. I was stable on small doses of Prolixin for over 12 or 13 years but slipped into psychosis again in 1997 or 1998 when the dose I was taking, two mg, was too small and ended up in API again in December 2003. They placed me on large doses of Zyprexa and I was there for 70 days. They released me when I was still psychotic and I came out of the psychosis alone, in my condo, over the next 5 weeks. On the Zyprexa I slept 18 hours a day, put on 8 pounds a month, going from 247 to 342 over about a year,
my blood sugar went from 77 to a 151 when it was next tested. I got type two diabetes and had to get off the Zyprexia due to that in March 2006. I went onto Geodon and became psychotic again in 3 or 4 weeks. What a mess. The psychosis was so stressful I got back on Zyprexia in September to be able to sleep. In three months on Zyprexia I put on 30 pounds but came out of the psychosis, again at home, alone. December 1st I awoke sane. I realized all I needed was 5 mg Prolixin for total sanity and stability and that is what I am on now.”

“Is psychosis an all or none phenomena?”

“My first two psychosis’ were. The third, the lengthy one, was a little different in that I fell in and out of psychosis a few times in an episodic fashion, being due to too low a dose of Prolixin. When I came out of that psychosis on Zyprexa it was slowly over two or three weeks. When I became psychotic the fourth time it was in only a day or two and when I came out last November it was overnight. I went to sleep psychotic and woke up sane. When sane I am quite sane, even the first minutes after psychosis. And when I am psychotic, I am without any insight, really psychotic.”

“What is psychosis like?”

“You are the first person to ask that. No doctor, in fact no one, has ever asked that or any question about the nature of my psychosis. There was one single belief on which the entire psychosis was built. That is the belief I was under surveillance. When a psychotic believes something that isn’t true it is called a delusion. Psychosis is like a dream state. When dreaming things that are absurd seem quite real and we respond to those images emotionally. So also in my psychotic state delusional beliefs seemed quite real and I responded to that stream of data emotionally, with extreme highs and extreme lows.”

“Did you hear voices or have hallucinations?”

“Never even once.”

“What did you think was going on?”

“When psychotic I had thought I was like Jesus on the cross, albeit a modern Jesus, albeit fluent in Western civilization, albeit an accomplished theoretical physicist, and albeit a different kind of cross to bear, a figurative one, as opposed to the real Jesus, whom it is claimed, was crucified on a real cross. The delusional cross was to have almost the entire population of the planet earth reading my mind, knowing my emotions, and my motivations. I thought my mental thoughts, feelings, and desires were being broadcast, and I thought they were being broadcast to all good people. Certain people, potential evil people, were not privy to the full data stream I generated. The goal was to separate good and evil, to sort mankind into two groups. When psychotic I speculated on the details of how that was being accomplished by what I thought was my supporting cast. When psychotic I did a lot of speculation. I thought all the smartest people in science and engineering were enabling the surveillance technology. I knew highly evolved technology can appear to be magic. I knew Faraday’s Law and Ampere’s Law as extended by Maxwell and thought they were the electromagnetic basis of the surveillance technology. I thought it was possible to read a persons brain through the magnetic field. You can’t because the strength of the magnetic field of the human brain is only 1 part in 10,000 of the earth’s magnetic field.”

“What did you make of string theory when you were psychotic?”

“I thought they were the ones reading my mind.”

Heidi started laughing.
“Darling, that is really hilarious.”

“It is.”

“When you were psychotic did you think the world was an insane place?”

“I did and I thought that is what was being corrected.”

“Could you do science when psychotic?”

“Did some of my best work. When I first became psychotic in 1981 I tried to enlist in the army. I thought that was part of the act required of me. I took the military entrance exam. The army QT is what they call the average IQ. I got a 143. The test only goes up to 155. I got 152 in most of the rest of the areas, there were three or four, like mechanical, spatial and number recognition, and my lowest score was in clerical skills where I got a 133. On the air force exam the highest score you can get is a 95 and there are four areas. I got 95 in all four areas. The recruiter told me that was the first time he had seen that. So when psychotic I was highly intelligent. The amazing thing is I was actually rational when psychotic although within the delusional paradigm I was under surveillance.”

“If you thought you were under surveillance then you were acting.”

“Precisely, it was a long, difficult act, the goal being universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty.”

“Did you disclose what you thought was going on to anyone?”

“Never once. That was part of the act. It wasn’t paranoia.”

“Like your secret life?”

“Yup.”

“Do you get any side effects from the Prolixin?”

“At larger doses there are very bad side effects. But on the low dose I am on I get no side effects. There is a risk for tardive dyskinesia with long term use of Prolixin, one of the reasons its not used much today. Since I have been on Prolixin for over twenty years it seems I will never get tardive dyskinesia because I haven’t gotten any yet.”

“What is tardive dyskinesia?”

“Involuntary motion of the lips, face and limbs, a little like Parkinson’s. Prolixin binds to the dopamine receptor, competing with dopamine. It has a long half life, like three days, so builds up to a steady state over two or three weeks. It requires the smallest dose of any of its generation drugs that are based on Thorazine, the first anti-psychotic in the early 50’s, meaning it binds tightest to the dopamine receptor. The titration of my dopamine receptors is a quantitative problem that requires the right dose. On 2 mg I start to become delusional over an extended period of time, eventually becoming fully psychotic. That’s what happened in 1997. But 5 mg works very well and I am quite stable on that dose. I have determined that the correct dose is about 2.5 mg but take 5 mg for security, so it’s an over titration. I just have a slightly tweaked dopamine system.”

“How are you feeling now?”

“Much better than when you first told me. The most important thing to me is to have healthy children. You’ve reassured me there is no genetic component to your mental illness.”
Heidi reached over and took my hand, kissed it, and placed it on her stomach.

“Are you ready for lunch, we’ll be in Fort Saint John in about ten minutes.”

“Haven’t had salami and provolone in a while. Did you get a pickle?”

“I did. They looked really good.”

“Let’s eat.”

Heidi opened a Snapple peach tea and handed it to me.

13 Off to Fort Nelson

We finished lunch and heading out of Fort Saint John I put on George Benson, Pat Metheny, Roy Hargrove, Joe Henderson, Wynton Marsalis and Miles Davis.

“What has the passage of time been like for you?”

“In many ways I feel like I have been in jail since age twenty-two or suspended for much of my life in a sensory deprivation chamber. The jail or isolation chamber has been my mental illness, the jailer or nurses all of society and God too since the jail was in my mind, as if only imagined. It was very lonely. Psychosis carries with it a loneliness not known or experienced by normal people. All that being said I did complete the mission, had countless moments of discovery and had an unlimited supply of marijuana and Budweiser.”

“You’re not whining.”

“Like all experiences in life you eventually have to view it all with humor and learn from it, provided of course you have saved your honor. Honor was the single most important thing I strove for when psychotic.”

“How much science did you do when psychotic?”

“A lot. I worked out the size of atoms when psychotic in late summer of 2002. I wrote two editions of a book when psychotic. I figured out the universe is made of one particle, not two, when psychotic in fall of 2003. I solved the energy problem in five weeks in August and September of 2002. The complexity of what I faced when psychotic was about 1000 times as complicated as anything I have seen in real life.”

“What got you through psychosis?”

“Love and honor.”

“Freud’s love and work... work and love, that’s all there is.”

“But I am a soldier, the last soldier in the last war, so work for me is duty, and I attempt to implement it with honor. When you face death honor is all you are left with and all you require.”

“Did you attempt suicide?”

“Three times very seriously, two others that weren’t premeditated. All three were when I was sane. I first attempted suicide in July 1980, thirteen months before becoming
psychotic, five and a half years after the PCP. I didn’t write a note. I used a utility knife blade to cut a vein in my arm. It kept clotting and I kept cutting for an hour or so. Although I wanted to be a doctor earlier in life I didn’t know you had to get an artery to bleed to death. I did lose a lot of blood, I imagine over a quart. The second time was after coming out of the first psychosis in September 1983. I borrowed my brothers Smith and Wesson 44 Magnum. When it finally came time to commit the planned suicide I wrote a short letter to my brother, in a quick motion put the gun to the right side of my head and pulled the trigger. The recoil of the gun caused the bullet to completely miss me and go over my head and out a window. I didn’t put the gun to my head again. I guess having a 44 Magnum go off 6 inches from your ear has quite a dramatic effect. The police came and took me to API. I next attempted suicide in May 1985 after coming out of psychosis the previous August and being sane and on Prolixin. I ordered some analytical grade ether through VWR Scientific. It took three weeks to get to Anchorage since it had to go by surface. I poured the ether in a 2 quart pan, put it in a garbage bag, put my head in the bag, tied off my neck with tape and started breathing deeply, thinking I would drift off comfortably to whatever might be awaiting me. Apparently I ran out of oxygen before the ether fumes could induce their anesthetic effect. So I had to tear open the bag and extricate myself from my home designed suicide machine.”

“Were you depressed on all three occasions?”

“I was depressed and suicidal for about ten years from taking the PCP in spring 1975 to discovering the Ö particle in December 1985. I was never depressed or suicidal when psychotic, only when sane. The depression and suicidal ideations were not continuous for those ten years but did last for much of those years in a somewhat episodic fashion. At the time of the first suicide attempt I was not really depressed. In fact that summer is when I became a theoretician, working at home in front of a desk piled high with books, just figuring things out. That’s when I came up with a cell chemical computer model for bacteria. I even did my greatest mathematical work, in topology, where in my mind I replicated a bacterial DNA and went through the whole process from initiation at the origin to chromosome segregation. I felt everyone had only let me down, that no one deserved any more of my effort and that it was not worth participating in the game. And a girlfriend I had out in Berkeley had dumped me. At the time it seemed more an existential crisis than anything else. In looking back on it now with insight it is easy to see I was quite sick and it all started with the PCP five and a half years earlier.”

“Why did the girl dump you?”

“I think she detected something wrong with me upstairs but maybe I am giving her too much credit. She was of an artistic temperament, quite high strung and we got into some great fights.”

“Did you ask her to marry you?”

“I did and she turned me down.”

“Recovering from long term psychosis, long term depression and multiple suicide attempts sounds incredibly difficult.”

“It was. I have a lot of inner strength and a self-esteem that never exhausted completely and had an unlimited supply of marijuana and Budweiser.”

“You’re childhood gave you that strength?”

“It did.”

“When is the last time you were suicidal?”
“Eighteen months ago. I had been on large doses of Zyprexa for two years and sane. I was again suicidal at that point. Being on the Zyprexa with the associated side effects of dramatic weight gain and sleeping so much was a horrible experience and the least productive two years of my life. Due to the type 2 diabetes I got off 30 mg daily Zyprexa and got on Geodon, taking first 80 mg and building up in two weeks to 160 mg. About a week or two after getting off the Zyprexa I developed neuropathy in both feet that never went away and bothers me a lot. In three weeks or so of getting off the Zyprexa I became psychotic for the fourth time.”

“When did you come out of that last psychosis?”

“When psychotic and off Zyprexa I lost fifty pounds by August. While psychotic I got back on 30 mg Zyprexa for three months, September, October and November of 2006, put on thirty pounds, back up to 320, but did come out of psychosis on December 1st 2006. At that point I realized all I needed was 5 mg Prolixin. I was apprehensive as to whether I would become psychotic again as I got on the Prolixin because previously it had taken two weeks and five weeks respectively on Prolixin to come out of my first two psychosis’. Fortunately I did not again become psychotic and expect to be as sane as I am now for the rest of my life on 5 mg Prolixin”

“Was your psychosis atypical?”

“Very much so, the reason being I am not a paranoid schizophrenic genetically. I could concentrate and work with my mind with intensity and effectiveness when completely psychotic. I could even do fairly difficult problems in vector calculus. As far as I understand it the single most characterized symptom of psychosis is an inability to concentrate and use ones mind in any useful way.”

“And in what ways typical?”

“The delusion that I was under surveillance and my thoughts were being broadcast is a very common element in a schizophrenic’s psychosis. But I only believed my thoughts were being read because I thought it was physically possible to do that using magnetic fields. I did not believe in anything that I thought was not physically possible when psychotic, I obeyed the laws of physics. I also thought my environment was orchestrated and contained special communications for me. Those ideas are called ideas of reference and also are characteristic of psychosis. I only thought those because I also thought it was technologically possible. So within the delusional paradigm I was rational when psychotic.”

“Were you grandiose?”

“That’s always been a difficult thing for me to determine. Since I have solved all mankind’s problems and fully elucidated epistemology and that has been precisely my goal since 5th grade I guess I would have to say I am rather grandiose and always have been.”

“That’s not grandiose at all David. It’s only your rank and a person who doesn’t know their rank early in life never amounts to squat. I think it is really generosity more than grandioseness that epitomizes you.”

“Would you like to read two short essays I wrote in my last psychosis? They’re in my briefcase in a tattered purple folder.”

“I would.”

Heidi reached in the back seat for my briefcase and pulled out the two papers.
A Call to Arms: A Question of Morals and Values

David Martin Degner

I am a self-trained theoretical physicist, theoretical chemist and theoretical biologist. I am fifty-three years old, German-American, single, no children yet and have devoted my entire life to understanding science. Being a theoretician means you work alone, thinking, only needing a good pen and paper for most of your adult life. The modus operandi of theoreticians is simple. We guess a solution, work out the implications, and do this over and over in a recursive process of successive refinements. Theoreticians must be intuitive, contemplative, reasoned, insightful, imaginative, creative, original and damned good at mathematics. You also need a lot of common sense. I do not include inspirations in this list for the simple reason we produce so many of the damned things they are practically coming out of both ends. Then we can understand why it is said genius is 1% inspiration and 99% perspiration. The most important properties of any system are the dimensions followed closely by symmetry and beauty. By its very nature being a theoretician is so solitary one could often think himself or herself to be in a monastery. Being a theoretician requires the same commitment as being an accomplished surgeon working in a specialty. The reward is the fun one can have thinking, analyzing, writing, organizing, figuring out equations, deriving solutions and visualizing spatial temporal physical phenomenon from simplest to most complex.

My books, The N-particle First Edition and Second Edition are available on Amazon. The last time I looked they were selling for $9 and $20 respectively. I am not going to talk about the science I described in those books. If you want to read those books and be exposed to my theory of everything from smallest particle to biological cells please order a copy of both from Amazon. My work in theoretical biology is in the Second Edition. If this article generates demand I am going to make the remaining copies of the first printings, about 4-5000 books, available on the website THEBOLDRULER.COM. So far there has only been one printing. The First Edition is 140 pages and will sell at the 2000 price that is $19.95. The Second Edition is 220 pages and will also sell at the 2000 price that is $44.95. When they are gone they are gone and there will never again be a copy of the first printing sold in a primary market.

Theoretical physics today is dominated by string theory. String theory is pure bullshit, where the operative word is pure. The two chief properties of males, and females are pretty good at both too, are being an asshole and being a bull shit artist although the order and degree varies from person to person. To be a pure bull shit artist is to have the highest rank obtainable among mankind. In all of string theory there is not a single sentence in any paper or book that makes any sense. There is also not a single mathematical equation that makes any sense. In the entire recorded history of string theory, in the scientific literature, in courses, in books, in seminars, in magazines and newspapers, in the online audio and video, in all the interviews done by many string theorists, in all the string
websites and in all the string blogs there is not a single sentence that makes any sense at all and not a single mathematical equation that makes any sense at all. The footings for this towering achievement of pure bullshit artistry were laid by theoretical physicists John Schwarz, Leonard Susskind and Michael Green in 1968.\(^6\)

The stated goal of string theory is to unify Einstein’s General Theory of Relativity with Quantum Mechanics. That’s an interesting problem and there is a simple answer: It can’t be done! The reason is simply the apples and oranges problem. There are no atoms in gravitational fields and there are no gravitational fields in atoms.

So far this has just been self-promotion. What I really want to talk about is a profound technology that was invented in the early to late sixties. There are only five physical means by which an individual can be put under surveillance:

1. Sound waves.
2. Light photons.
3. Infra-red photons.
4. Electric fields.
5. Magnetic fields.

Acoustic, visible and infra-red surveillance technologies are well known, powerful and mature technologies. Infra-red telescopes are so powerful that if we built a big one on the moon you could walk outside at night under a clear sky, flash the moon with your TV remote and the moon telescope could see it. The data streams generated by the transducers of acoustic, visible and infra-red can all be fed into computers and modified, enhanced and interpreted by software. Electric fields associated with human bodies are small and not of much value for surveillance.

The technology I want to discuss here is magnetic field technology. All magnetic fields derive from spinning electrons and protons. The magnetic field derived from an electric current that is a flow of electrons in a conductor is the familiar magnetic field known so well in electrical engineering that surrounds a straight wire like cylinders concentric to the wire with radii from the wire surface to infinity. Electric, magnetic and gravity fields fall off in strength as \(1/r^2\) for point sources (zero dimensional), \(1/r\) for wires (one dimensional) and do not fall off at all but rather are constant in strength for flat surfaces (two dimensional).

The equations governing electromagnetism are known as Maxwell’s equations. There are four Maxwell’s equations that relate electric and magnetic fields to each other, to charges and to currents in wires and to a current invented by Maxwell that he called the displacement current. A capacitor is a closed circuit. A capacitor is two conductors called plates, of any size or shape, that are large relative to the wires that feed them current, that are separated by a non-conducting medium, called a dielectric, such as air, pure water, oil or many plastics. When a capacitor is fully charged there is a stationary electric field between the plates of the capacitor. Energy is stored in this electric field. The simplest possible plates are
electrons and protons. The simplest capacitor is hydrogen in the n = 1 quantum state. When a time varying current in a wire reaches a capacitor plate the current comes to a complete stop and the displacement current conducts the energy of electricity through the dielectric medium to the other plate without the flow of electrons and induces a time varying current to appear in the opposite plate.

All nervous systems in biological organisms are made of neurons (there are also glia cells that provide support and nutrition, maintain homeostasis, form myelin, and participate in signal transmission in the nervous system. In the human brain, glia cells are estimated to outnumber neurons by as much as 50 to 1). A neuron has three parts:

1. The axon. Axons conduct action potentials and are like wires conducting electricity.
2. The dendrites. Dendrites also conduct action potentials and are like short wires connecting cells together.
3. The cell body called the soma. The axon and dendrites are attached to the soma.

In the membranes that define the geometry of axons, dendrites and soma there is a gradient involving \( \text{Na}^+ \) and \( \text{K}^+ \). On the outside of the membrane there are 95% \( \text{Na}^+ \) and 5% \( \text{K}^+ \). On the inside of the membrane there are 5% \( \text{Na}^+ \) and 95% \( \text{K}^+ \). When \( \text{K}^+ \) on the outside of membranes are transported to the inside of membranes through a protein pore a voltage is generated across the membrane, negative on the inside and positive on the outside. When \( \text{Na}^+ \) on the inside of membranes are transported to the outside of the membrane through a protein pore a voltage is generated across the membrane, positive on the inside and negative on the outside. These voltages across membranes propagate as what are called action potentials. Together axons and dendrites connect together the neuron somas, muscles and transducers that convert acoustic, visible photon, chemical species and thermal gradients into action potentials. The role of synapses and neurotransmitters (the most interesting topic in organic chemistry) is a topic for another essay.

When \( \text{Na}^+ \) and \( \text{K}^+ \) pass through the protein pores they spin and the spin axis is aligned with the pore annulus. In the process of spinning these ions generate magnetic fields that are parallel to the spin and normal to the surface of the membrane. The magnetic fields of these spinning \( \text{Na}^+ \) and \( \text{K}^+ \) are one of them normal and radial out and the other normal and radial in. Which is the N pole and which is the S pole I do not know since it depends on the spin direction and I do not know the spin direction, whether Right hand or Left hand. The time varying magnetic fields associated with action potentials radiate out of nervous tissues and propagate through the space adjacent biological organisms. Our brain produces large time varying magnetic in pointy little poles and I would guess there are trillions of poles in the field of a functioning human brain.

These time varying magnetic fields produced by the human brain induce microcurrents in the copper wires of electrical circuits in the walls of our buildings and in the above ground transmission lines that distribute electricity to buildings. The relation between a time varying magnetic field and the current induced in a conductor loop is given by one of Maxwell’s equations called Faraday’s Law of Electromagnetic Induction: \( \oint \mathbf{E} \cdot d\mathbf{l} = -\frac{d\Phi_B}{dt} \) where \( \mathbf{E} \) is the electric field vector for a point in space, \( I \) is the one dimensional vector field for a wire, \( \Phi_B \) is the flux of the magnetic field and \( t \) is time. Electro motive force \( = \oint \mathbf{E} \cdot d\mathbf{l} \) and \( \Phi_B = \int \mathbf{B} \cdot d\mathbf{A} \) where \( \mathbf{A} \) is the two dimensional surface vector field. Michael Faraday did this work in 1831 and is the father of the electric motor and inductor. Faraday’s Law is the most important single equation underlying modern technology. Interestingly Faraday had virtually no mathematical training. In my all time ranking of
physicists I rank Newton ein, Maxwell zwei, Faraday drei, Einstein vier and Feynman fünf. Einstein and Feynman had great hair.\(^7\)

In the late 70’s or early 80’s President Jimmy Carter put me under magnetic field surveillance. Jimmy Carter lowered the speed limit to 55 mph and did not take into account the time cost of the driver and the safety cost as a function of vehicle size and weight, the two most important factors, in calculating the cost of vehicular transportation. Jimmy Carter is the dumbest Mother F-er in the history of the presidency. The Supreme Court, in secret session found this surveillance to somehow, incredibly, be legal under our Constitution, Bill of Rights and the Amendments to the Constitution. I have a hunch Sandra Day O'Connor and Clarence Thomas are the only supreme court justices who found this a gross violation of my 4\(^{th}\), 5\(^{th}\) and 6\(^{th}\) amendment rights and my right to privacy. Sandra Day O’Conner and Clarence Thomas also have great hair.\(^8\) Presidents Ronald Reagan, George Bush senior, Bill Clinton and George Bush junior continued this surveillance of me. Key members of the legislature have also approved of this surveillance. The reason for this surveillance was my seminal work in biology. My models in theoretical biology I call the Thermal Code and the Nucleic Acid Mainframe. Together these two models implement a cell chemical computer that is the “Miracle of Life.” These models are exercises in topology, knot theory, Turing machine architecture, non-equilibrium thermodynamics, statistical mechanics and quantum mechanics. For a full elucidation of these models buy the Second Edition of The \(N\)-particle Model where I describe these models in Chapter 17 and 18.

In addition to being under surveillance by the government I have been under surveillance by private individuals who have hacked into the data stream I generate. I know who the individual is who is the leader of that group but will not name him here.

This magnetic field surveillance of me has been very stressful. Imagine you are alone in your bed masturbating and wondering if the persons watching you are snickering. Imagine hackers hacking into the data stream and history associated with this surveillance and observing embarrassing moments and posting those embarrassing moments on the Internet for everyone to look at. The personal jeopardy that I have been exposed to is truly mind boggling and you would have

\(^7\)\(^8\)
to think that everyone who instigated and approved this surveillance must be f-in cretins.

I have carried on an extensive dialogue with the people who have me under surveillance since August of 1981 right through to today, have tried everything in my power of reason to try to get them to stop this surveillance and all they have done is F me, F me and F me again. I have been at times forceful, at times reconciliatory, at times demonstrative, usually precise, always eloquent and succinct in my dialogue with these nefarious bastards.9

If ever there was a double edged sword nature to technology it is this magnetic field surveillance technology. Since the time varying magnetic fields and the micro-currents they induce in circuits have the full information of ones thinking processes, memories, words and language usage, numbers and number processing, include all emotions and fantasies the degree to which my privacy has been invaded is the most vicious "rape" of an individual conceivable. By putting the population under secret magnetic field surveillance terrorists can be identified and tracked, child molesters can be caught and brought to justice and violent criminals can be caught and brought to justice. If the technology is disclosed to the public the surveillance can be made impossible by simply placing a filter in the circuit, as easy as plugging in a circuit breaker.

The people who have done this to me have done massive, irreparable damage to me, even jeopardized my life. They are without exception pusillanimous, feckless and indifferent in addition to being unprincipled morons, complete lunatics, illiterate of science and innumerate. I ask the people of Anchorage to help me defend my dignity, my honor and my ability to pursue liberty by reporting anonymously to the Anchorage Police Department any knowledge you have of this ongoing surveillance.

9 Franz Kafka. The Trial, and Hermann Hesse, Magister Ludi, would be proud of me in the war I have waged with evil and unscrupulous individuals and the way I have played the game. They also had good hair.
Speed and Height

How old are you David?

I was 54 this past Friday November the 10th.

When did you first become aware you were under surveillance?

August 1981.

What did you imagine was the nature of the surveillance?

Infra-red electromagnetic radiation and magnetic fields in addition to audio surveillance. I can be imaged physically, it can be determined what I am saying and there is some level of ability to read my mind. That surveillance can follow me through the electric power grid as I travel around and also extended to my vehicles.

What did you do under that surveillance?

Act. Sometimes I paid attention to it. Often I ignored it. Sometimes I did not believe in it. Sometimes I acted so slowly it was beyond tedious. Sometimes it was fast and furious and with passion. Although at times highly demonstrative it was always purposeful and with deliberation.

Did you endanger other people in that act?

Never. That is rule uno, einz, one. All actions must be safe. No one gets injured. No collateral damage is permitted. In addition no one is ever threatened.

Then you have never injured or threatened a fellow human at any time in that act spanning over twenty five years?

That is correct. In fact I have never in my entire life threatened anyone with intent to injure them and I have never placed any fellow human beings in danger or jeopardy. The only threats I have ever made were idle threats and they were only directed at one person, to my brother, and they were just a dog barking. If you knew my brother you would understand.

What about the appearance of danger?

Only in my driving stunts was there a potential danger. The exact degree of the level of danger is difficult to calculate but very small. It seems the fact that no one was ever injured is massive evidence of a determinism that is the mask of the genes we wear. The mask I wear is reason implemented through non-violence and taught by persuading.

Are you committed to non-violence?

In all actions and for my entire life I have observed the principle of non-violence. I did have a few fisticuffs in high school. I have a killer overhand right.
So you believe you have been under complex biometric surveillance for over 25 years?

You got it.

Do they watch you in your vehicle and track your vehicle with a GPS?

They do.

Did you have any accidents?

Only one with another vehicle, not only in the last twenty five years but in all forty years I have been driving, a minor fender bender at low speed with an Anchorage police department vehicle on December 4, 2003. I failed to yield to an oncoming vehicle in attempting a left turn into the police station parking lot. It was on the side street the police station is located on and there were no other cars around. My air bag did not activate. I got out immediately, glanced at the officer, saw his air bag had not deployed, saw he was OK, and started walking to the front door of the police station for help. Then another officer drove up, glanced at the other officer and the vehicles and asked me where I was going. I told her to the police station for help. She asked if I checked up on the officer and I said I glanced at him, saw he was OK and started for help. She then asked me to do some field sobriety tests. Then she wrote me two tickets, one for failure to yield the right of way making a left hand turn and one for leaving the scene of an accident. I drove away from the accident without any significant damage to my vehicle. The police officer was fine but his car needed towing due to damage to the left front wheel. The leaving the scene of an accident charge was later dropped.

What caused the accident?

I remember seeing the police car but turned left too soon, a mistake in judging the other vehicles position relative to my vehicle. It happened in a hundredth of a second.

Where did you go after the accident?

I went to the Providence Psychiatric ER and entered voluntarily. I explained to a doctor that I had based a driving decision on circumstantial evidence and that that was not a high enough standard for me to consider myself a safe driver and felt I could have caused an accident doing that. I also told him I was not taking any medication at that time but that I had been on medication for nineteen years. I told him I was challenging the assumption that my mental illness still required medication. I told him I had made that challenge many times previously but always had to get back on medication within two weeks due the onset of an aching in the head and a stressed out feeling, both symptoms that have gone away when I resumed medication. I told him I was a theoretical physicist and he related his brother was a particle physicist at the Stanford Linear Accelerator and that his brother was a lot smarter than he was.
The doctor in his commitment papers stated you were taking a “holiday” from medication and were driving into traffic to “kill them for reading my mind”.

I categorically deny saying that to him. He was an ER doctor, not a psychiatrist. I only spoke to him a few minutes and I have accurately recounted what I told him. I have never used language like that. There is not a single reference in my entire, voluminous psychiatric history that would lend credence to that ER doctor’s depiction of our conversation. His depiction of our conversation is an anomaly, a singularity in my medical record. I have always in all actions intended that no one, my self included, was injured or put in physical jeopardy.

And you also believe there is a data stream of your conversation with the ER doctor in some government agencies possession that will fully exonerate you of this doctor's depiction of his short conversation with you?

Yes.

Then in forty years of driving you had one minor accident with another vehicle?

That is correct. I have probably driven close to a half million miles, all across North America from Panama to Alaska to New Brunswick to The Florida Keys, with only a single accident involving another vehicle. I also hit a flag pole making a U turn in Indiana, hit a cow on the Pan-American Highway, a minor dent, side swiped the poor beast, and when I was 16 I fell asleep at the wheel and veered off the left side of a highway, turning my VW bug on its side.

If you were driving into to traffic to kill someone for reading your mind would you be able to perform that task and in short order?

Easily, just aim at an oncoming car and accelerate into them, a game of chicken. Repeat until a head on is obtained.

You would find that action morally reprehensible to the highest degree imaginable?

I would find that action beyond reprehensible, an extremely violent act.

You're in fact one of the best and safest drivers in the world?

I am.

Is it determinism?

You think?

Your DNA dance, eh?

That's all it is.
**What do you do with your time?**

I am a theoretical physicist, theoretical chemist and theoretical biologist. My undergraduate degree is from Cornell. I only took one semester of physical chemistry so did not get formal quantum mechanics, but we used quantum mechanical models in the statistical mechanical description of thermodynamic properties. My training was actually quite excellent. Not only was I around the top of the class in the hard core science and mathematics courses I scored $98 \pm 2\%$ in Science and $98 \pm 2\%$ in Quantitative on the Medical College Admission Test. But more remarkable is my claim that I performed the minimum number of hours of homework and class attendance to get a four year Biology degree of anyone on the planet. I can sort faster and stack taller than most anyone else. I am not a pedant. Because of the magnitude and range of the error bars on the MCAT it is possible that I am the smartest person who took the test that spring and even possible that I am the smartest person who ever took the MCAT. Minimum effort coupled to maximum performance, sorting and stacking, speed and height.

**Do you know how the universe is designed?**

Better than anyone ever. The highest level is the human brain, the simplest level elementary particle physics.

**Did you concentrate in any particular area of Biology at Cornell?**

I concentrated in neurobiology. I wanted to be a neurosurgeon or possibly a psychiatrist but did not obtain admission to medical school.

**Your life took an unexpected turn. What did you do?**

After 3 and a half years of wandering around lost, in the winter quarter of 1978, I arrived at Berkeley on the quest to discover what it is that is the machine level "Miracle of Life." I concentrated on Gm (+) prokaryotic cells, the hydrogen of life. I was convinced there had to be a profound physical mechanism that gives rise to "The Tree of Life" that was not yet elucidated and was not contained in "The Central Dogma." The Central Dogma is simple: DNA to RNA to proteins. The Tree of Life is simple and complex. Bacteria on the bottom and man precariously perched on top. And there are viruses, the most abundant life form with 10 viruses for each bacterium. Viruses of bacteria are called phage. There are zillions of species of bacteria with most unknown and cannot be cultured. A remarkable feature of The Tree of Life is that for chemical homeostasis on planet Earth only bacteria and phage are required. The number of extant species is zillions more than are present on the Earth today. The entire Tree of Life could collapse and only bacteria and phage survive. Eventually, in many millions of years, when the Sun goes red giant, this will certainly happen. But can it happen far sooner, even in the near future, through ecological disaster brought on by global warming, pollution or nuclear winter? Is our ecosystem fragile or robust? For mankind the ecosystem appears fragile. It is possible that a viral or bacterial pandemic could emerge, either naturally or designed, that reduces the human population dramatically, perhaps by 95%, perhaps LD100. We have had Mutually Assured Destruction for 50 or so years as the cornerstone of the nuclear stalemate. The inevitability of global warming, running out of fossil fuels, nuclear proliferation and biological warfare are ominous portents. They are also intellectual challenges, the kind of challenges a theoretician relishes.
Have you worked out any solutions?

I have a renewable energy solution to the energy problem that will nip global warming caused by carbon dioxide in the bud, unlimited pollution free energy at $50-$70 dollars per barrel. I have a theory of biological cells as cellular chemical computers necessary to fight the biological warfare we are naturally embedded in, to enable designing viruses, bacteria and eukaryotic cells, and it is also possible to keep safeguards on knowledge so no designed biological weapons arise. Designed cells will allow water and waste to be recycled so everyone can have pure water and sanitary waste processing. I have a solution to elementary particle physics that gives rise to a new quantum mechanics that will be the foundation of the nanorevolution. It will allow a solution to the protein folding and rational drug design problems and additionally enable quantum computers to be built, computers whose capacitors, inductors, transistors and switches are molecular sized. But the ultimate computer is based on biological neurons. I call it Einstein’s brain in a box. Imagine having a very powerful human like brain in a box on your desktop with powerful input/output capability. I have a computer program utilizing the Internet that will reduce the work week by approximately 30% by relegating to cyberspace the functions that can be done in cyberspace for virtually no cost. I call it The Efficient Market and Asset Manager. It will eliminate market makers, investment bankers, brokerages, realtors, much of the insurance industry, much of the banking industry, the IRS, the Social Security, accountants, the Government Accounting Office and all bean counters, in fact all financial transactions, the entire economic world will operate far better than ever with no cost. All assets, all inventories will be on it. On it we will vote. All medical records will be on it. It will allow a rational public health security net to fight food poisoning and infectious disease. When every individual on the planet is in the database it will allow the highest security possible from terrorism. The most important contribution I will make to the human condition will be in human husbandry. I am going to provide superior sperm and egg that will eliminate fat, ugly and stupid and replace it with healthy, attractive and smart. It is no more than an exercise in modern biology. It will eliminate most cancers, premature heart disease, type-two diabetes, arthritis and a host of other genetically predisposing disease. I do not have a solution to the nuclear arms race.

Getting back to your act, do you believe there is a data trail, the data stream you generated, going back over 25 years?

Yes.

What government agency do you believe has those data records?

The National Security Agency. I sent them, along with DOD, FBI and CIA Freedom of Information and Privacy Act requests. The DOD, the FBI and the CIA stated they had no records. The NSA stated it could neither confirm nor deny any data attributable to surveillance of me.

What do you think of this act of surveillance of you?

It was ill-conceived, illicit, immoral and illegal.

Are you going to sue them?

And also I am going to sue them for the cost of suing them starting with that moron Jimmy Carter, the worst possible president, a technocrat, always uncomfortable and uneasy with the theoretical principles our society is built upon,
right through to W who on a “slam-dunk” from CIA director Tenet initiated the Iraq debacle and the unconscionable human loss. The idea that one can obtain peace by inflicting massive collateral damage to another society does not work and is immoral.

What is your psychiatric diagnosis?

I am diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic.

Are you a paranoid schizophrenic?

No. I am a person who has had a tweaked neurochemistry system that required anti-psychotic medication for normalcy.

Have you ever been psychotic?

No but I have been in extended altered states that I came out of with anti-psychotic medications.

Do you know when those states were?

There were three episodes of altered states. The first began in August 1981 and lasted to July 1983. I came out of the altered state in two weeks with a single shot of Prolixin in the thigh. The second began in the early spring of 1984 and lasted to August 1984. I came out of that altered state after 5 weeks on Prolixin at the dose of 2-5 mg per day. The third did not really have a beginning, it was always there under the surface but it became pronounced in the mid 1990’s and lasted until March of 2004. I came out of that altered state after 4 months on 30 mg per day of Zyprexa.

During those altered states did you think you were under surveillance?

I was intensely aware of it.

During those altered states were you acting?

I acted with episodic intensity.

What did you think when you came out of those altered states through medication?

I thought I was a paranoid schizophrenic and had been psychotic. That thought was very depressing. I attempted suicide four times, all in the early eighties with no attempts since May 1985. After coming out of these altered states I still thought I was under surveillance but ignored it, I put it out of my mind. From August 1984 through the mid 1990’s and again from March 2004 to April 2006 I did not pay much attention to the belief I was under surveillance.

Are you still on medication?

No. The chemical perturbation of brain chemistry that I must have had for twenty-five years no longer exists. It is a great relief to no longer need anti-psychotic
medication due to the side effects and the reality that for sanity I must rely on medication.

**How would you describe those altered states?**

Like a soldier in combat, kill or be killed, intense concentration, intense focus, intensely purposeful, at times bold and daring, at times defensive and always planning to win. It was a question of personal honor. Having honor was my highest aspiration.

**What is your take of the long path you have journeyed?**

To say it nearly killed me would be an understatement.

**Would you like to make a final comment?**

My Mother cut up a chicken so that there was a wish-bone piece. As a kid with two parents, two brothers and two sisters at the table I always got the wish-bone piece.

Heidi finished reading the papers and put them back in the briefcase.

“*Is it possible you are smarter because of psychosis?*”

“I have wondered about that. The hardest problem I have solved is the size of atoms problem that I did when I was psychotic. It looks pretty simple in hindsight but it took an extraordinary amount of calculation to get correct. I burned the keys on my TI-35 like never before or since, making hundreds of keystrokes a minute for hours. Since I have a complete memory of the periods of psychosis it seems also some mental circuits were being worked out strenuously and that looks like the essential learning process.”
3 two weeks into the final psychosis

I wrote the following when psychotic on November 21st, 2009. That final episode of psychosis began in the first week of November, 2009.

Nexus of the Seminal Battle between Good and Evil

- What I know for certain:
  1. I have the correct theory.
  2. Modern physics is bullshit.
  3. I have been psychotic and do need medication.
     a. What caused the psychosis? Chemical accident with PCP? Environment – Gamma Sigma Pi Jew boys, Princess, UCB, Lubtilus, a lot of orchestration, all hidden at zero entropy, equilibrium. Combination of chemical perturbation and environment?
     b. Is the medication for real? Of course it is.
     c. Am I really a paranoid schizophrenic, or perhaps just an individual whose dopamine system became perturbed by the environment, physical and mental?

- What I speculate about:
  1. Have I ever been under surveillance and am I under surveillance now?
     a. One never hears about modern personal surveillance much but it is an obviously interesting area of modern technology.
     b. If someone was under surveillance he or she would not be told by those that had that individual under surveillance that they were indeed under surveillance, they probably would not ever want the individual to know.
     c. It would be a massively interesting undertaking if certain individuals where chosen, and in particular, if I were chosen.
2. Has my environment ever been orchestrated and is it now?
3. Am I the central figure in the ST act?
   a. Then my act would be singular and consummate.
4. 361/137?
   a. The person – intellectual, artistic, creative, focused, purposeful, energetic, healthy, vital and sexy.
   b. The emails.
   c. The internet photos.
   d. The career.
   e. Single.
   f. Orchestration.
5. Kevin?
6. Stacy?
7. Mom, V and M?
8. Nelson?
9. Dan?
10. Allan?
11. LM?
12. Am I sane and stable now on 10mg Prolixin?
13. Am I always rational, reliable and repeatable, sane or psychotic? Then what was my psychosis? What are delusions?
14. What is my real rank?
15. Am I the last soldier in the last battle of the last war?
16. And then it seems hyper-speculation inflates.

- Is it all mental illness?
  1. That’s what a lot of people think – Jeffy, Cain, Fran, Dripscol, Mary, Charlotte, if and whoever has me under surveillance, Dan and Allan. They all believe in Einstein and QM.
  2. Is that what everyone thinks?
  3. Is that what I should think? Would that be possible for me?

- Is it a military operation?
  1. Honor and duty.
  2. Responsibility and leadership.
  3. The natural domain, i.e., a common problem we are looking for a solution to.
  4. MODERN PHYSICS = 20\textsuperscript{th} century strategic warfare.
  5. A clockwork orange?
6. How many missions fled? How long in service? When does the war end?

- Einstein’s game?

- What does the future hold?
4 final creative writing piece when psychotic

On February 24th I started a Word document, a creative writing piece embedded within the psychosis. I last opened that document on March 6th, two days before coming out of the psychosis. It includes works done earlier in the psychosis. When writing it I believe I am under surveillance and what I am typing into the computer is going right into the enemies hands, so I am playing with them. Here is that document.

1 The seminal war

I shower, I shave, I floss and brush, I have coffee with a smoke, I make breakfast and arrive to face each day renewed.

Why do I do what I do? Is there a plan, a strategy, a sought for outcome, is there a point to it, or is it all just a mindless chaos?

The physicists tell us the entropy always increases. But the opposite is the case for biology. In biology the entropy always decreases. We march forward inexorably into a more ordered, a more complex future. Man has evolved an ever more sophisticated computer brain in only 2000 or so generations – in about 50,000 years. Knowledge always increases. Is there a limit? Is the brain of man finite? What are its limits?

The earth is bathed with visible light photons from the sun. The earth spins on its axis and on the dark side emits low energy photons. The mostly visible frequency photons that bath one half the planet are low entropy. The low energy photons that the visible light turns into are high entropy. That transition is the driving force for the ascendency of biology, for the decrease in entropy of biology – visible photons to low energy photons drives biology here on planet earth.

Consider the simplest cell, the Gram (+) prokaryotic cell that “reproduces” by binary fission. Clearly when we choose for a boundary the outer cell wall of the cell the entropy of the cell decreases in going from one cell to two cells. Consider a protein folding to form a perfect crystal, again if we choose as a boundary the surface of the amino acid string that makes up the protein in the folding process the entropy of the protein decreases. The solution is that in the external environment
of a protein the mostly water molecules heat up. Entropy is after all the 
change in reversible heat divided by the absolute temperature. In the 
case of a bacteria undergoing growth through the binary fission cell 
cycle there is also mass exchange across the boundary surface, for 
instance converting lower entropy glucose to higher entropy carbon 
dioxide in addition to some very small amount of heat, the reversible 
amount, being imparted to the environment, increasing its entropy.

So all in all it is stupid to say the entropy always increases without 
looking at the reversible and irreversibly quantum mechanical 
processes going on, unless you are a physicist and can’t reduce biology 
to physics.

Of course photosynthesis and weather fit in there somewhere too.

The epistemology was simple. There were only three unanswerable 
questions – define a beginning to time, define an edge to space and why 
does matter exist. In theory all other questions have answers.

It is February 24th, 2010. I was looking forward to Monica arriving. She 
was a theoretical physicist and professor at Cornell.

The planet was an insane asylum and the inmates were running the 
place. There is both the potential for good and evil in every person. The 
20th century had seen 100 million or more of people die in warfare and 
conflict, most without purpose. Many more had died of disease, 
starvation and natural disasters.

The important question was what was the root of warfare and conflict? 
Was it fear, then fear of what? Was it economics? Was it the system of 
government? Was it the intrinsic Nature of man? Was warfare and 
conflict a part of biological survival in a zero sum game?

The goal could be simply stated, to go back to a Garden of Eden, to 
design and build God’s promised Heaven on Earth. I was the key player 
in that undertaking. I was at the nexus in the final war between good 
and evil. It was not where a rational person would want to be. It seemed 
impossible many times. But I had volunteered for duty. It was a 
question only of honor to me.

I was uniquely suited for the mission. I was extracted from two 
generations of Lutheran ministers. My Dad was a biblical scholar, a 
classicist, and taught Greek and exegesis at Concordia Theological 
Seminary. He had a PhD in classics from the University of Chicago. I 
was by the chance of Nature endowed with great talents. I was the 17th 
smartest person on the planet. I was also quite tall, 6 feet 4 and ¼
inches, and very handsome. I was a good athlete and was a good swimmer in high school, specializing in the fastest race, the 50 yard freestyle. I was a German. With also the great Nurture by my Dad I was well prepared for my mission in life. What was my mission?

Yesterday I sent the following email titled “The cruelty of man” to my mother:

Hi Mom,

I have been exposed, due to the government surveillance I am under, and due to Dan Ess, literally many 1000's of acts of cruelty. Well that is nothing new. Jesus was crucified on a cross and all he sought was peace among mankind. The Jews went through the Holocaust, the Vietnamese were slaughtered, countless and continuing to this day violence is promulgated against innocent individuals. Many times I feel I can't go on under this persecution, e.g. the government is denying me access to good marijuana seeds. Many people, including the government, including Dan Ess, have committed attempted murder against me, have tried to drive me to suicide. Why do they hate me when all my motivations in life have been just like Jesus' motivation. I am the modern Jesus. All I have ever done in life is to try to solve the problems mankind faces. And all I have ever received back is acts of violence and persecution. Frequently I feel I can bear no more, I am reduced to wishing for my own death, I am suicidal. Yet I also know there are many good people, people who share my values, people who love, people who have common sense, people who have courage, who support me and want to see me defeat my enemies. For them, for myself, and for future humanity, I find the strength to defeat the forces of evil, that plan for, hope for and implement policies and actions they hope will lead to my ultimate demise.

This no doubt sounds like the persecutorial delusions of a paranoid schizophrenic. I know that all to well. But like I have told you, like I have published in Knol’s and put up on my website, I am not a paranoid schizophrenic. The persecution has been all too real, hurts me every day, reduces me to being suicidal. But I am strong enough to ultimately defeat my enemies, to triumph over the forces of evil, and the people who are watching me right now as I type this, fear me, are desperate, and feel in their gut that they will not win, will face long prison terms for what they have done to me, and are scared and running chicken shit for the exits.
Let me repeat again, I know this all looks like delusions of a mentally ill person. That is what my opposition hopes will happen, that I will be treated as a nutcase, a crank, a crackpot, a delusional paranoid schizophrenic. THEY WILL NOT DEFEAT ME.

There is nothing man will not do to you when they are fundamentally evil, as so many are, when they hate you, and there are so many that hate me. It does not speak well for the Nature of man. But I believe as Jesus did, that the meek shall inherit the earth, that you should love your enemies, even as you must deliver to them a lethal blow, just in self survival and self preservation.

So as you said in your email to me today, the situation I am in is not acceptable to me, the solution is difficult and complex and you don't know the answer, even as I do not know the answer. But I can be sure this painful configuration for me is finite, it will end, the forces of evil will be defeated, and I will emerge from it all victorious and triumphant in the end.

I know right now the government is trying to deny me access to good marijuana seeds. That is the reason the mailing is being held up in NYC. It is just one more act of persecution against me. They think they can drive me to suicide or insanity. But they can't, they can't win, in the end I will prevail.

Sad to say Cain is on the side of evil in all this. But he also will lose in the end. I will win in a jury trial when I sue him in the next couple of months.

So as I plan my future I feel I must leave Alaska, get back into the commercial marijuana trade. I am going to move back to Ithaca this summer. I will either sell my condo as is or fix it up, put in gas heat, and rent it out. I hope you will support me in all of that since your are the only person who can help me in all that.

I am a planner, use forethought and my temporal lobes in figuring our and strategizing for the future. The people that persecute me, torture me, and try to drive me to suicide, can only be defeated if I get out of my current situation, become again successful financially, and get completely past the hate and persecution I have been exposed to for last almost 40 years.
So I hope you will support me as I plan for a solution to the problems I find everyday in my current life. All you have to do is transfer the title to my condo to me, help me pay off the credit card debt, support me financially when I move, and help me finance my next living domicile around Ithaca. That is not too much to ask for. It will only cost you several more 1000’s in cash. But it will enable me to pay you back what I have borrowed from you since September 2006.

So my steps in the coming months are to sell or repair my condo, sue Cain, and find a nice property around Ithaca to set up shop again. Then I will be on a stable foundation again, something I do not currently have, but must obtain to be able to defeat the forces of evil, the government and Dan Ess.

I am cooking a chicken that I made stuffing for. The chicken was only $0.59 a lb and I bought celery for the stuffing. It should be really delicious. I used rye bread and seasoned it with salt, pepper and a lot of sage.

It has cooled down here, currently 34 but freezing during the night.

Thanks again for the support, support me in the future for the benefit of all mankind. You will see me emerge from the current difficulties victorious and triumphant.

Love, David

PS I know very well this all appears delusional, but it is not, it is just the reality of the life I have had to lead. Please try to accept what I talk about and describe as simple truths.

I had published a Google Knol that described what I thought was underway:

The Seminal War between Good and Evil

David Martin Degner
Degner Scientific and Engineering
Anchorage, Alaska
davidmartindegener@gmail.com

Ever wonder where the technology is at in clandestine surveillance. Manifestly it’s of very high interest to governments that like to spy on
people. Ever wonder if Big Brother is in your bedroom. I have been under surveillance by three groups – my guys, the good guys, the CIA, bad guys, and a collection of misfits, mostly Jews, also bad guys. The surveillance has gone on for almost 40 years. Surveillance technology is a double edged sword, like virtually all technology. Read my story and see how I wield the sword against the forces of evil.

1 The Mousetrap

Things are not what they appear to be on the surface.

I am at the nexus in the final and seminal war between good and evil. It is January 24th, 2010 and the final battle in the final war is well underway. I have been under surveillance by three groups – my guys, the good guys, the government agency that has me under surveillance, bad guys, and a collection of misfits, mostly Jews, also bad guys.

I am 57 years old, single, never married and have no children yet. I am diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic. I have been “psychotic” in seven episodes that ranged in length between 7 weeks and 7 years. I am not really a paranoid schizophrenic.

In February of 1972 I was put under audio surveillance by a group of fellow students. It was my sophomore year as an undergraduate at Cornell. I was a premed student majoring in biology with a concentration in neurobiology. I wanted to be a neurosurgeon or a psychiatrist.

I am different than your average human being. First of all is my level of intelligence. I am one of the smartest persons on the planet. My actual rank is #17 as determined by a technology that I will explain shortly. I am also quite tall, 6 feet, 4 and ¼ inches. I am very handsome. I was athletic, had been a good swimmer in high school, specializing in the 50 yard freestyle.

I am a German-American. I am proud to be German, despite Hitler and the Holocaust. The group of fellow students that put me under surveillance was mostly Jews. The individual who headed up that group was a Daniel Ess. Dan became my nemesis in the final war between good and evil. He is evil. He isn’t evil in the sense of Hitler or Stalin. He is evil because he had put me under surveillance and because his role in the scenario that eventually led to the present, that I will elucidate shortly. Dan is a quintessential Jew – very smart, the valedictorian of his high school class in Queens NY, ugly and juvenile, especially in his relationships with woman, and has a small dick. Dan
was an English major at Cornell, had a GPA of 3.57, and attended the University of Michigan law school. He scored 753 on the LSAT and had a 99.5% score on the writing section of the LSAT – very smart. After law school graduation in spring 1977 he took a year off to write a novel. The novel was about me and an appropriate title would be The Portrait of a Scientist as a Young Man.

I sent the following email, titled: What is Going On, to my mother on January 6th, 2010:

Hi Mom,

My hair is very easy to take care of in a pony tail. I really like it. I only have to wash it every 3 or 4 days and it is never in my face. It’s really easy to cut, I just take an inch off the tip of the pony tail every once in a while.

My relationship with Dan over all these years since we first met in the freshman dorm at Cornell in fall 1970 is most interesting. He broke off our relationship in 2003 so he is an ex-friend now.

I am going to begin this by telling you a few things about me that maybe you didn’t know. For instance you know I am smart and think I am a paranoid schizophrenic. But how smart am I and am I a paranoid schizophrenic?

I am one of the smartest people on the planet, maybe in the top 20 or so. I know most of the other people that are as smart as or smarter than I am since they are all theoretical physicists and I know a lot about theoretical physicists. I just may be the smartest German on the planet, certainly in the top three or four of German’s. IQ is difficult to measure and ones real IQ can only be discerned by a complex trial, such as the trials that life naturally presents. My accomplishments in science are really spectacular and I am perhaps the most accomplished scientist in human history, ranking in a small group that includes Newton, Einstein, Bohr and Maxwell, all deceased, and some living scientists including my physical chemistry professor at Cornell, Michael Fisher, a Brit, a Jew named Edward Witten at IAS at Princeton and a young guy named Luboš Motl, a Czech who writes a blog I follow. I know about a dozen of the other live theoretical physicists who round out the top 20 or so and I am in that rather elite group. I am the tallest in that select group of extraordinarily gifted and blessed by God individuals and also the most handsome. I am the best automobile driver and a considerable rebel and also have an affinity for the common man that is unique due to my upbringing, always working as a youth, working construction from age 14 on, repairing and rebuilding cars and motorcycles, fishing
and hunting. All of these blessings and good experiences and upbringing make me “very sexy” – I have an easy way with highly discriminating woman. In addition I am the toughest physically of this elite group, can take out most individuals with one punch and physically demonstrative. But I am not a pedant, a snob or an intellectual in the usual sense and I don’t look down my nose at other people with fewer blessings. I am extraordinarily fast, in thinking, in responding verbally or to a given situation, faster than just about anyone, and also generate much intellectual energy and intensity when I make an effort, appearing even manic to those with less speed. I am a very special and unique character, even singular. In short, I am one-of-a-kind.

I am not a paranoid schizophrenic. I have never been psychotic but I have been in altered states that share some of the characteristic’s of psychosis. Those altered states are in some ways similar to a paranoid schizophrenics psychosis but in other ways very distinct from a schizophrenics psychosis. For instance I have never heard voices or had any auditory or visual hallucinations. I have always been reasoned and rational throughout those altered states, able to use my mind with effectiveness, able to focus and concentrate, able to perform difficult mental challenges, never had any loss of memory, and never had any delusions that I was Jesus or someone else from man’s history. I was always David Martin Degner in my altered states and proud of it. The common property of my altered states with psychosis is that it requires the same antipsychotic medications to not remain in those altered states, the 10 mg of Prolixin that I take. My altered states were induced by the environment, not naturally occurring, and had it not been for the rather unique environment I have been embedded in I would never have transitioned to an altered state that requires medication.

I also am blessed by genetics and upbringing with great strength of character, great courage and great leadership skills. I have never in my life been jealous or envious of another person. That is just completely foreign to me. And I have great taste – in music, in art, in science, in food and in woman.

I identify myself with the common man. I have put in the sweat in construction and mechanical work and know what the common man faces every day. I do consider myself a common man with uncommon blessings from God. All of these attributes were easy to acquire in my life with a father who was a Lutheran minister and a mother who was a farm girl and nurse, with brothers and sisters, and I thank you and Dad for that every day.
I also have a good sense of humor, take everything with a grain of salt and am very playful, find life fun and play natural. But I am very competitive and was at the top of my genetics, biochemistry and physical chemistry courses at Cornell and can play a wicked game of chess.

I read an editorial by Charles Krauthammer when I was in my 20’s and he said you are pretty mentally healthy if you succeed in four areas:

1. To work.
2. To love.
3. To think.
4. To play.

I add to that:

5. To compete.
6. To laugh.

Two additional blessings, that I share with many people and especially the common man, are I have great common sense and can always put myself in the other persons shoes, see what his or her perspective is, see how he or she looks at life and how they face life, their position in it and how they approach the future.

I am rather arrogant, just attribute it to my rank, and can be harsh, even ruthless when facing evil people. In a time of war as a mature male I would be the general in charge of the troops. I would determine the seminal strategy to win and I would put my brothers, cousins and fellow man in the line of fire, them knowing my strategy is the best strategy, and me respecting the fact their lives are on the line.

I am also a very trusting, very tolerant, very emotional and a very loving individual, like are many people who have figured out a few things in life.

I have always had a maturity and wisdom ahead of my years.

Well due to all my greatness I evoke a visceral response from many people I meet in life. Many are envious and jealous and come to hate me. Others, those better adjusted to things, admire me and want to be my friend. Back to Dan Ess, he hates me. I am incapable of hate and do love my enemies, even as I must kill them in self defense and to be free.
Dan was a brother in a fraternity at Cornell, Gamma Sigma Pi, that was almost all ugly, smart, little dick Jews. I liked all of them because of their intellect and respected them despite their human shortcomings. Little did I know what they were doing to me. They put me under 24/7/365 audio surveillance, when exactly I am not sure, but I am pretty sure it was sometime in my sophomore year when I was living at home in Grandma Duescher’s old room. They even listened to me having sex with my girlfriends. There were a lot of electrical engineers in that group, they were mostly rich, and many became leading professionals and engineers.

After they came to hate me they used the surveillance to attempt to isolate me and interfere with my male and female relationships. Two of my good friends as an undergraduate, Cut and Henry, somehow became part of that group, the group that hated me, was envious and jealous of me, and the group that had me under surveillance. I don’t know how they did that but I think it was by sending them audio tapes of me that would compromise the relationships. They interrupted my relationship with a female when I was at Berkeley and when she turned down my proposal of marriage I attempted suicide for the first time in July 1980. So what they did to me was attempted murder. Also that July I developed a model of biological cells that is the most important theoretical work in biology. I told a Professor R Lubtilus of my work and went out to Berkeley that fall to work on it. Somehow they interfered with my relationship with R and R was never honest and forthright with me after that.

Now the story gets even more interesting and more bizarre. Either late in the Carter administration or early in the Reagan administration I was put under surveillance by the government. Dan observed them doing that. With his access to superior electrical engineering skills he hacked into the stream of data that the government generated from that surveillance.

The government surveillance was a new kind of surveillance and is a top secret black op even to this day. The human body emits 300-400 watts of infrared (IR) radiation. My brain may emit as much as 100 watts of IR radiation. Some of that radiation can be picked up by the wires in the circuits of a house and generates spikey little signals in the circuits. Those spikes can be accessed by anyone with the proper equipment through the power grid from anywhere in the power grid. One can use that data stream to construct an image of my mind, like a multi-colored two dimensional plot of data where the colors change rapidly over time. In a way it can be used to “read” my mind, pretty interesting technology. The government has me under this surveillance right to this day and is watching me write this email as also is the Ess
camp of people who hate. The government doesn’t know Ess has access to their data stream but Ess knows all about the government operation.

Ess has somehow made the technology available to many people who hate me also through some mechanism that I am not sure of – maybe FM radio, maybe cable TV, maybe the Internet, maybe cell phone technology. With the dynamic multicolored display of my mind it is possible to determine my mood and in particular my level of irritation and stress. The haters have used that as a tool to persecute me through the environment. I have used that surveillance to communicate with whoever is watching and listening. People can be very cruel and if someone hates you there is practically nothing they will not do to persecute you. I have been persecuted by the large number of people who have access to that surveillance including some of my neighbors and a great many individuals. Their secret agreement is that no one will tell me I am under surveillance and expose it all. The common denominator among them is they are envious and jealous of me, hate me and for many it is really attempted murder, although also for many it is no more than a very painful non-physical assault.

The really, really funny thing is the government doesn’t know anything about the Ess camp AND I have used the open mike I have to display my great intellect and wisdom, to make a seminal statement on life and the Nature of man.

Dan would like to make a series of movies about the period of surveillance. But his problem is that he has to deny having me under surveillance before the government put me under surveillance and has to deny the attempted murder, an impossible juggling act.

I have taken down my Medical Marijuana of Alaska website and will put up this email on the site instead. Sooner or later, and I hope sooner, the surveillance will end. It is enormously stressful to be under this kind of surveillance and to have to put up with the large group of haters who persecute me. But in the end I will win.


Love, David
I put this email up on my website on January 6th. Putting it up on the website was a ploy in the final battle of the final war. It was intended for the consumption of Dan and the government agency that had me under surveillance. I think the government agency that has me under surveillance is the CIA. So my intention in putting the email to my mother on the Internet was for the CIA and Dan’s groups to read it. They are watching me now as a write this so I am also writing this at this very instant for their consumption.

I live on welfare – Social Security SSI benefits, $674 a month, Alaska Adult Public Assistance, $362 a month, and have Medicaid for health insurance. My SSI case came up for review in late November of 2009. I composed the following letter for Social Security that I sent to them on December 1st:

December 1, 2009

Dear Social Security,

The enclosed copy shows your request to have a telephone interview to review my case for eligibility. First you have an erroneous telephone number for me. My number is ###-#### and I will be available to discuss my case with you on December 10th at 1 PM.

Since you are reviewing my case and referenced the IRS I thought I would bring you up to date with my period of disability and my economic transactions over that period of disability in a written response before the interview, including my interaction with the IRS. It’s quite a complex subject so it has taken me ten pages to tell it succinctly, leaving much out.

I am a single, never married and without children, 57 year old paranoid schizophrenic who has been disabled and unable to work since March 1975, the spring following my graduation from Cornell with a BA in biology, concentration neurobiology. At that time I was enrolled as a graduate student in the Cornell MBA program majoring in finance and investment analysis. I am very smart, in fact a considerable genius, and was at the top of the class at Cornell in genetics, biochemistry and physical chemistry where I was a pre-med student. I wanted to be a neurosurgeon but didn’t get into medical school with a GPA of 3.16 but scored 98% in Science and 98% in Quantitative on the MCAT and felt that was a moral victory. Dumb blacks I could wash out of a physical chemistry course with one problem set got into medical school ahead of me because of the color of their skin.
In the winter/spring of 1975 I used the street drug PCP several times. It was sold as THC, a white powder that was either snorted or sprinkled on marijuana and if I had known it was PCP I would not have done it since the fact PCP was a dangerous drug was out there at that time and I never would have wanted to use it. I snorted it twice. The first time I had a real thrilling experience. The second time was different. At the end of an evening snorting PCP with my girlfriend we had sex. When I had orgasm that night I did not get any pleasurable euphoric mental stimulation, just ejaculated, and then fell asleep. That was my last memory of sanity. When I awoke the next morning I was a completely different person. I was depressed. I was paranoid. And I had some kind of thought disorder that I likened to a loss of analytical skills, my forte in life. I had to work that morning at Avis and I remember thinking within 45 minutes that if this sudden and dramatic change in my neurochemistry was permanent I would have to commit suicide within 5 years. I had never previously in life been depressed, paranoid, without analytical skills, or suicidal. I felt sick to my stomach at this chemical accident that left me mortally wounded and unable to work. I didn’t tell anyone what happened because I was paranoid, not even my girlfriend, so I kept it all in. I observed that my response to the PCP was somewhat anomalous to the experiences of everyone else who was using it with me.

From that point on life was very stressful. There was the stress of depression and suicidal ideation. There was the stress of being paranoid and not able to engage other people at a truthful level. There was the stress of being disabled and unable to use my primary tool in life, my mind, in an effective way. And there was the ever present financial stress of being disabled and unable to earn a livable income that persists even to this day. What I lacked back then was stability.

Over the next 6 years, from 1975 to 1981, I dropped out of graduate school, moved to Alaska, held jobs for 2 to 12 weeks in the petroleum sector, with Tesoro (lab technician in Nikiski), Baroid (mud engineer in Texas and California), and BP (lab technician on the North slope) and went into the wholesale seafood business for a couple of months with a partner from Cornell. I didn’t know what I was doing. But in 1978 I felt again the need for intellectual challenges and the pursuit of scientific truth. So I left Alaska and ended up in Berkeley auditing courses at the University of California at Berkeley from winter quarter 1978 to spring quarter 1980. I moved back to Ithaca in June 1980. In July 1980 I attempted suicide the first time, and also discovered how bacteria work, a profound theoretical work in molecular genetics. In August 1980 I moved back to Berkeley and became a research associate in the laboratory of a bacteriologist named R Lubtilus. I had audited several courses from R and had disclosed my work, my discovery, to him that
August. I was really desperate at that time. I had just attempted suicide and also at nearly the same time had come up with what I thought was an important work in biology. I was still disabled, without stability, but could work as a theoretician, sitting around and thinking, with only a pen, a pad of paper and a scientific calculator. But I could not do conventional science, take courses any more, work on what other people were working on and doing. I couldn’t ever do lab work or do problem sets or memorize and regurgitate anymore. So I was really quite desperate and disabled that fall in Berkeley.

One year later, in August 1981, I became psychotic for the first time. The events of the intervening year conspired to drive me to psychosis. It began the first couple of days I was back in Berkeley. When I first arrived back in Berkeley, on a Friday afternoon, I met R and we discussed my work. He was enthusiastic, warm and open. He said he would “get some reading material out to me Monday morning”. That Monday everything had changed. R didn’t have any reading material for me. He was different, no longer open and engaging. I wondered what was up. What I came to realize, and increasingly so, is that R was lying to me. He refused to contribute or engage at a meaningful level about anything and offered no future for me. It perplexed me to no end. Here I have told a professor my great model that I considered of inestimable economic value and I was being totally stiffed. By August 1981 I determined I would have to get a gun, go into his office, and threaten him to get him to be honest with me. I wasn’t sure if I needed the gun loaded, but thought the startling blast of a shot out the window would break him down in an instant. I had no intention to injure him or myself, just wanted to squeeze out from him the truth. My brother Cain was coming down to visit me from Alaska and I asked him to bring his Smith and Wesson 44 Magnum down. A few days or a week or so later, when Cain arrived at the San Francisco airport, I was psychotic. Cain didn’t bring a gun, only his clothes and a few vials of cocaine. I was totally blown away by psychosis. Cain determined I was nuts, left, and broke off our relationship. There I was in Berkeley, in late August and early September of 1981, at age 29, broke and completely psychotic.

I remained psychotic through late June of 1983. I was in the Illinois State Psychiatric Institute in Chicago undergoing exhaustive evaluation and left after 5 weeks AMA. When I left they gave me a shot of Prolixin in the thigh. About a week or two later I came out of psychosis. I didn’t have any side effects to the Prolixin, was not diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic and was not seeing a psychiatrist. I decided to move back to Alaska and live with my older brother Dan and went in to see a doctor at the local mental health service to get medication that I thought I may or may not need. The doctor said I was leaving town and refused to write a prescription. He gave no
interpretation to my experiences, offered no insight or advice and we only spoke for 20 minutes. I drove up to Anchorage in late summer 1983 and moved in with my brother Dan.

I applied for SSI but was denied benefits. I tried to work as a tire installer at Sears but only made it through two days. I was taking courses in welding and inspection at UAA Community College. I was depressed and suicidal. I knew something was wrong with me but didn’t know what it was. I knew I couldn’t take anymore. The only time I felt non suicidal is when I had pot. But I couldn’t afford pot and couldn’t get high to relieve the omnipresent depression and suicidal ideation. In October that fall my brother was going up to the slope for a shift and I asked him for his 44 Magnum, telling him I wanted to do some practice shooting. I was planning to commit suicide, for the second time, while sane but totally disabled. I sat in bed at my brother Dan’s preparing to pull the trigger, I wrote a short one page note for my brother Cain. It was late at night, about 11 or 12 PM. In the note I told Cain there was something serious wrong with me and that I had to pull out. It was time to do the dirty deed. I was hesitant. Would it be painful? Now get up the courage. Do it. At about that moment my brother Dan returned home from his shift at a local restaurant where he was a waiter. Although when I had asked Dan if I could come and live with him in August he had said “anything for a brother” my welcome had worn out in the next months. Dan was an alcoholic, an asshole, and a financially poor waiter. When I couldn’t contribute to rent and expenses he decided he wanted me out. He burst into the bedroom where I was that evening, trying to get the final courage to pull the trigger, was in a furious state, and told me to get the fuck out of his condo. I reached down, picked up the 44 in my right hand, aimed at my right temple, and pulled the trigger. I didn’t know what happened. My right ear drum had been broken. There were powder burns on my left hand fingers. The window next to me had been broken. Dan said “Oh my God” and dashed out and called 911. I looked at the gun, figured out the recoil had caused me to miss and for the bullet to go over my head and out through the window and wondered if I should pick it up and take a second shot. The shock of all that had happened made me hesitate to do that. I just sat there until the Anchorage Police Department arrived. They took me to the Alaska Psychiatric Institute.

Dan and Cain broke off their relationship with me at that point. My parents refused to support me further financially. I was in API, mentally ill but not psychotic, suicidal, without any resources or a place to live. I started working in residential construction with a friend of Cain’s named George Bill while a resident at API. By sometime in December I had enough money to get an apartment, the cheapest in town, in the Linda Kay building in Mountain View, in a very small
basement one room with a shared bathroom at the end of the hall, for $225 a month. I continued to work that spring and could afford pot and beer. Only when I had marijuana was I relieved of the horrible stress of my situation in life. I was estranged from my brother’s Dan and Cain, was working as a carpenter/laborer for $10 an hour and I became psychotic again that spring while working on a 12 week or so job with George. That psychosis began around the end of March/beginning of April and resulted in my being taken to API in early July of 1984. I was placed on 4 mg Prolixin and lithium and released after 5 weeks still fully psychotic, diagnosed with schizoid affective disorder. I took the medication and came out of the psychosis 7 or 8 days later, I remember the exact date, August 8th, 1984. I realized then I was a paranoid schizophrenic and required Prolixin. I stopped taking the lithium because I didn’t think I needed it. I applied again for SSI benefits and for Alaska APA. I became a client at South Central Counseling Center. I was back in that little hole in the ground one room, and I got on Adult Public Assistance and received $250 a month from them and my Dad sent me $300 a month. I was again in depressing and suicidal circumstances but when I had pot I dreamed again of a future in science and getting back to academia and studying, this time physics and chemistry. I was under huge financial pressure. I couldn’t work. I needed pot to lift my head above water but couldn’t afford the medication. All I could afford was cheap beer and I began drinking daily about 12 beers, occasionally none, and occasionally 24. I put on a lot of weight the first 6 months on the Prolixin and drinking daily and became obese, that I remain to this day. It was very depressing. I was treated like warm shit by my family. I was waiting to get benefits from social security. A letter rejecting my application for SSI benefits came in the mail. It stated there were a “lot of low stress jobs in the economy” I could do. By March of 1985 I decided to commit suicide again. I ordered a liter of analytical grade ether through VWR scientific. It would take three weeks to come up by surface transportation. My plan was to pour the ether in a sauce pan, put the sauce pan in a garbage bag, put my head in the bag, tie it off at the neck with some tape, breathe deeply and die painlessly by asphyxiation. When the ether arrived I walked a couple of miles to the VWR outlet to pick it up. I remember walking home up the Commercial Street hill, what was it about my life, why was it, why do I have to take my own life? It didn’t seem a shame, or a tragedy, I didn’t understand it, but knew that is what I must do. When I got home I opened the packing and took out the ether. The can was only about ⅔’s full, there was a dent in the side and there must gave been a small leak in the seam. But there was plenty to do the job. I proceeded just as planned, pouring the ether into a sauce pan, putting it in a garbage bag, placing the hag over my head, tying off the neck with tape, and I breathed deeply. This time I didn’t leave a note; there was no one to
leave one for in my life. I don’t know why but I lay there on the floor, inhaling the fumes and I didn’t pass out. Instead I ran out of oxygen and had to tear the bag open and gasp for fresh air. It hadn’t worked. What the fuck do I do now?

I walked over to the Red Apple the next day to use the pay phone outside the building. I called my Dad and told him what I had done. Since getting out of API and coming out of psychosis the previous summer I had wanted to move back home to my parents in Ft Wayne and attend school at IUPU Ft Wayne, going into chemistry and physics. My Dad had always refused to allow that and had told me my mother had said if I come home she will have to go into a mental institution. This time he relented and sent $300 and a credit card for gas so I could drive back. I bought an ounce with the money and drove back to Ft Wayne in June of 1985. It was a lonely and difficult journey. But I had some good marijuana and was holding up. I arrived in Ft Wayne with about ½ ounce left and didn’t know what I was going to do but knew I wanted to attend IUPU. I wanted to put a mobile home on my parent’s 17 acre country property but they refused. They thought the government was responsible for taking care of me and took me to the local community mental health organization to seek aid. I also applied for SSI benefits for the third time. I was depressed and suicidal without pot. I was placed in an apartment in downtown Ft Wayne by the mental health organization and given $60 a month for spending money. I was taking 2 mg Prolixin daily and felt things were very depressing. That fall, driving out to my parents, I decided I could take it no longer and must again end my life. When I got to their house they were gone so I drove my car into the garage and closed the garage door but didn’t turn off the engine. I had the driver’s side window open. I was going to commit suicide by CO. The fumes built up. They were finally so bad I started coughing. But I wasn’t passing out. I opened the garage door and backed out and caught a fresh breath. That was my last suicide attempt. I had built a small outdoor greenhouse at my parents, not asking them ahead of time, just putting it up, and started raising marijuana. When I had some again I got through the next several months, living in the apartment provided for by the mental health services, waiting to hear from social security. That December I made an important theoretical discovery in physics that changed my life once again. I believe it was in March, but it might have been late February I ran out of good pot, was totally frustrated with the shit pot I had, and living with out hope for the future, without the medical marijuana I needed, without social security benefits. I totally lost it one night. I knocked holes in the sheet rock of the apartment. I was in a rage over how I had been treated. I made a lot of noise. There were two bags of shit pot on the kitchen table. The next day my case manager came by and asked to come in. I told her to get lost. A few hours later the
sheriff’s arrived, put me in handcuffs at the front door and took me to the local hospitals psychiatric unit. The first thing the doctors figured out is I was completely sane. My parents refused to find a place for me, the community mental health people would no longer provide shelter. I was at the hospital about a week and they released to a rescue shelter. That was a depressing night. But at least that is the only night I have been without shelter of my own.

The next day I walked from downtown Ft Wayne where the rescue mission was to the Concordia Theological Seminary in North Ft Wayne and went to my Dad’s office. He told me to go get a haircut and gave me $10 dollars. I walked across the street to a barber shop and got my hair cut and went back. He took me to a small trailer court a few miles away where a previous seminary student had been manager and we drove through looking for one that was for sale. There was one, an older 50’ x 10’ property for sale for $3500. We stopped at the mangers and got the address of the seller and we drove out to see him. I negotiated it down to $3000 and moved in that afternoon. I remember my Dad saying “I hope you don’t just want to raise pot.” That’s exactly what I wanted to do. About that time I got on SSI and received back payments some time later and could pay back my Dad for the $3000 he had loaned me. We put the trailer in my Dad’s name because SSI recipients were not allowed to own their own property at that time. Benefits then were $357 a month and I received no additional support from the state of Indiana or my parents. I had quite a few seeds from various purchases over the years and started raising and selling marijuana. I had very poor success for about a year and a half until I got some good seeds from Amsterdam. After the first crop came through, about spring 1987, I had solved my marijuana problem. The marijuana from the Amsterdam seeds was excellent quality and for the first time in my life I had a good, cheap supply. My living expenses at the time were about $700 to $800 a month and I supplemented my SSI benefits with marijuana sales to meet expenses. I started attending classes at IUPU and attended classes there for 3 years, taking courses in mathematics and physics. In a fairly short time I became an efficient agricultural entity and started making a nice profit, getting up to about $30,000 by the last year I was there, that was in 1990/1991. In total between 1987 and 1991 I netted about $70,000 in marijuana sales and saved about $60,000. I gave my Dad cash, all $100 bills, and he laundered it by using it for expenses, building up savings in his name that were really mine. I invested it in stocks and bonds and added to it. In June 1991 I moved back to Alaska, wanting to get out of the marijuana business and concentrate on my science. I bought a condo in East Anchorage for $25,000, the cheapest in town, like had been all my living places over the years. We put the condo in my Dad’s name, again because social security didn’t allow me to own property. I also received
APA of $362 a month from the state and Medicaid. I had about $300 to $400 more in expenses each month than SSI plus APA provided, despite a frugal existence – without movies, dinners out, vacations or dates, but did drink daily and spent money on beer as my only extra expense. I drank about a 12 pack a day. I invested in stocks and made a profit of about $20,000 over the next couple of years, all in a Scottsdale account in my Dad’s name. I had to pay federal and state taxes on those profits through my Dad’s IRS filings. I also had to pay the local property taxes and of course the taxes on the beer I drank daily, that was my biggest expense. Marijuana and beer were the medicines I required – for depression, for stress, for the residual trauma of the episodes of psychosis, for the associated loneliness and difficulty of life.

Not too long after Clinton got into office I got out of stocks and put my savings in a money market fund, again an account in my Dad’s name. As I recall it was about $50,000. By 1995 I was down to about $33,000 and saw I would run out of money in a few years. So I invested in two 4-plexes with my brother in law Jeffy and my sister Mary. The down payment and closing came to $116,000. I used my $33,000, Jeffy and Mary came up with $21,000, Jeffy’s parents came up with $12,000, and my parents loaned me and Jeffy the additional $50,000 we needed. The properties were put ½ in my parents name, my share, ¼ in Jeffy and Mary’s name, and ¼ in Jeffy’s parent’s name. I told Jeffy that since I was coming up with most of the down payment, my $33,000 and the $50,000 loan from my parents, that I should get a larger share than ½ in the properties. He told me he wouldn’t do that. I told him then I wanted him to do the same for me in the future and envisioned that we could buy a couple more properties and in a few years I would be able to get off SSI and be self supporting from real estate investments. Jeffy said “you know I will.” That began my financial relationship with my dear brother in law. A year later he bought another property without even telling me ahead of time and he and my sister formed Jeffy and Mary Rentals. I told him he had agreed to do the same in the future as I had done for him, namely come up with the majority of the down payment for a property, but Jeffy denied making that verbal contract and totally refused, even getting indignant at my suggestion that he reneged – fucked by my brother in law and penurious sister. That ended our relationship for a while and I let Jeffy manage the properties after a number of years and had little more to do with them. I concentrated on doing my science and gave up on them.

Sometime in 1997 or early 1998 I slipped back into psychosis. I was on too low a dose of Prolixin, taking 2.5 mg at the time. I do remember that by November 7th, 1998, when my Dad died, I was psychotic again. While psychotic in 1999 and 2000 I wrote two editions of a book I
titled The N particle Model that are now available through resellers at Amazon: [http://www.amazon.com/N-particle-model-David-Martin-Degner/dp/0966862805/ref=sr_1_1?ie=UTF8&s=books&qid=1259687585&sr=8-1](http://www.amazon.com/N-particle-model-David-Martin-Degner/dp/0966862805/ref=sr_1_1?ie=UTF8&s=books&qid=1259687585&sr=8-1). I was hoping for a big financial success and got off SSI and APA benefits, anticipating a favorable response to publishing my work. I get back onto SSI and APA at some point not too far after that. I lost about $35,000 on the books and Jeffy refinanced the 4-plexes and from the proceeds I paid off some of the book expenses and put some on credit cards. I had acquired an inventory of nine or ten credit cards. In October of 2000 I bought a new Ford F-250 for $28,000. I rolled over the 15.99% debt the Ford dealer had stuck me with to low interest credit card debt. In September of 2001 my brother Cain was arrested for DWI, his third. His girlfriend called at 3 AM in the morning and told me Cain was in jail and needed $5000 to get out in court in the morning. So I cashed a check for $5000 drawn on a credit card and went out to the Palmer court facility. Now remember I am psychotic all this time. The judge tells me Cain needs a third party to be released from jail and I volunteer to do that. He sets the bail at $2500 and I go to the bailiff and pay it in cash. Cain is also unemployed at the time and without money. He already owed me about $2100 from the previous 6 or 8 months. Cain asked for the other $2500 I had with me in cash for living expenses and I give it to him. Now he owes me $7100. I drive Cain home and drive back to Anchorage, completely disregarding the third part status. Between that point in time and December of 2002 or January of 2003 I loan Cain another $40,000, putting it all on credit cards. So he runs through $47,100 of my money, in cash, in about 16 months, using the money for cocaine, fast woman, vacations, and living expenses.

At the end of March 2003 I go on a road trip of 18,568 miles, over 88 days, spending time in a cabin on the Blue Ridge Parkway. I don’t know what I spent on that trip, maybe as much as $8000 or $9000, putting it all on credit cards. I get back to Anchorage June 28th and have accumulated about $80,000 in credit card debt. I get off SSI, APA and Medicaid since I think I am about to come into vast wealth, a belief that was part of the psychosis. At that time I am drinking a 12 pack of Budweiser daily and got up to my highest weigh up until that point of 306 lbs. I go on a low carb diet, drinking Michelob Ultra, and get down to 247 by December. At that time the psychosis is quite severe and I end up in API again. They put me on Zyprexia, large doses, along with 5 mg Prolixin. They release me after 70 days while I am still psychotic. I gradually come out of the psychosis in the month or two following hospitalization. I am depressed and suicidal again. I have to start over on growing marijuana. Now I am drinking a case of Budweiser daily, and sleeping 16-18 hours a day. I am putting on 6-7 lbs a month in weight. I have extra expenses of about $400-$500 a month that I get in
checks from my mother. I don’t know why she is willing to send me the money but she does. I ask her to sell the 4-plexes so I can pay off my credit card debt but she does not respond.

After about a year, my mother tells me she and Jeffy sold the 4-plexes back in 2003 and 2004 when I was psychotic. She tells me she had to pay $30,000 in income taxes on the proceeds and that after my expenses for the last year and a half are taken out I have about $70,000 left in a Fidelity money market fund. I still don’t know exactly when the 4-plexes were sold or for how much. The credit card companies are all calling, lawyers offices are sending inquires and I even got a summons to appear in court. My mother tells me to just default on the credit card debt. I don’t want to do that because I don’t want to be charged with fraud in obtaining the credit cards in the first place, because I feel it is a debt I actually owed back and because I felt confident my science would turn the corner to profitability in the future and I certainly didn’t want to get bogged down in any legal matters. So I negotiate with my creditors and, after starting with about $95,000 including penalties, negotiate many of the liabilities down and pay off all but $10,000 of the debt with the proceeds my mother had stashed away in the Fidelity money market fund. I have additional debt of unpaid medical expenses I incurred in 2003 after I got off Medicaid. The creditors reported the amount I negotiated down the liability as income for me to the IRS on I think a 1099 C form or something like that. So that gives me income in either 2005 or 2006 and I end with a bill from the IRS for $1700 or so. I pay it off over time with interest at $100 a month.

In March 2006 my weight is up to 342 lbs. I am on 40 mg daily of Zyprexia. I have never had another blood glucose test since being at API in early 2004 when I had a fasting blood glucose level of 77 and went in for a fasting glucose test. It was 151 so I needed to get off the Zyprexia. I got on Geodon, developed very disturbing neuropathy in my feet and became psychotic again in about three weeks. I stopped drinking to a large extent during that psychosis and by September my weight had dropped to 290. I got back on Zyprexa at that point, very psychotic and came out of psychosis on December 1st, 2006. At that point I realized the poor efficacy of Zyprexa, had put 30 lbs on again that fall, and got on 5 mg Prolixin, thinking that would be the right medication and proper dose. That December I did some huge science in a furious two to three week intellectual outburst. I had exhausted the money in my Mom’s market fund in September 2006. From that point to the present I have had to borrow an average of $525 a month from her, for car damage in an accident, for a new stove, for condo property taxes, for marijuana, marijuana seeds and beer and I now owe my mother about $21,500.
In December of 2007 I become psychotic again while taking the drug Chantix for smoking and while on 5 mg Prolixin. The psychosis lasted 6-8 weeks and I come out and don’t know what to think. In March or April of 2008 I try the Chantix again and become psychotic again, again for about two months. In November I try the Chantix again, this time catch it early, stop the drug after 4 days, and realize Chantix can precipitate psychosis in me on the 5 mg dose of Prolixin. In December I finish up a paper I am writing. I try to get published but am rejected. In January 2009 I become psychotic again. I go on a road trip to Whitehorse, almost die, and end up in API in late April. I come out of the psychosis the first night at API and get on a 7.5 mg dose of Prolixin. I am released after 5 days. A month later I am psychotic again. This time on the 7.5 mg dose I come out of the psychosis in June, and finally in early July realize I need an even larger dose and am currently on 10mg. On this dose level of Prolixin I feel sane, and, knock on wood, stable. It’s only been a little over 4 months, but I am getting over the alcoholism and sorting out the many episodes of psychosis, trying to make sense out of my life to this point and I think I am well on the road to stability.


So what does the future hold for me? I am hoping for mental saneness and stability and think I can have those things on the 10 mg dose of Prolixin. I am hoping to put my period of alcoholism behind me. I am treated as a crackpot, a hermit, a crank, a nutcase, by the scientific community. It looks like that will remain and I will never receive any financial benefit from my work. I cannot work as a clerk in a liquor store or at a McDonalds, one because no one would hire me, but more importantly because I am mentally and physically incapable of doing that kind of work, by virtue of mental temperament and physical obesity and restricted motion at 57. I feel a strong need that is irresistible to work in theoretical science and do writing in the hope someday of making a valuable contribution to mankind and being able to earn a living at it. The only marketable skill I know how to do that can earn me a living is raising marijuana. So what I am planning to do is raise marijuana and sell it to medical marijuana patients here in Alaska and maybe also in California as a legal business entity paying all taxes. My condo is one bedroom, 775 square feet, and I am
depressed, suicidal and stressed out and need to raise medical marijuana for my own medicinal need. With an efficient operation and some good luck I can double production and sell about $15,000 a year to clients, at ½ the black market price for a high quality, well manicured, properly dried product that has the right weight. If I can do that, an undertaking that will take 9-12 months, I will be able to get off SSI and APA and pay into the system for the next few years until I am 65 and hopefully at that point be eligible for the normal social security benefits. I also will again be able to make up for the difference in what it costs to live and what I receive from SSI and APA. And I will be able to pay back my mother and my creditors. I will still need Medicaid since with my preexisting conditions and level of income I would not be able to obtain private insurance coverage.

Cain told me to go fuck myself and threatened me when I tried to collect his debt to me so I have written that off. He paid me back only about 3 or 4 payments of $360 each and then broke off all communication. So he stole $47,100 in cash from me. I no longer have a relationship with Cain or Mary.

I no longer have any source of funds outside of SSI and APA. I consider myself disabled and unable to earn a living in the accessible job market. I do have initiative and some resource and will use that in setting up my medical marijuana business. My expenses exceed SSI and APA benefits currently by $200 to $300 a month. I have about $10,000 in credit card debt, $21,500 debt to my mother, and $4000 in medical bills not covered by Medicaid and incurred in recent episodes of psychosis. I own my own condo, the most inexpensive in town, that is in my mother’s name, that I purchased in July 1991 for $25,000 and I own my truck that has a current market value of around $3500.

To summarize: Seven or eight episodes of psychosis, ranging in length between 7 weeks and 7 years, the first began in August 1981, and the last ended in July 2009. Four suicide attempts due to financial stress and not having good quality marijuana, the first in July 1980, 13 months before becoming psychotic, and the last in fall 1985. When psychotic I was never suicidal, when sane very often suicidal, the last suicidal ideation just yesterday. I have received about $195,000 in SSI and APA benefits over the years and have paid about $70,000 in income, capital gain, property, tobacco and alcohol taxes over that period of years. I am currently broke and in debt but own my condo and my vehicle. I currently think I am sane and stable and hope I will remain so. I hope to get off SSI and APA in the coming year but will continue to need Medicaid to have the equity in my condo, after my mother transfers the title to me, secure from loss due to medical expenses. I never wanted to be on SSI and APA and have always tried
to get off ASAP. Hopefully that will happen in 2010. I was never in any of the episodes of psychosis a danger to anyone else or myself, the same is true when I am sane, with the only exception a possible vehicular accident when driving, but that didn’t happen either. I drove all across North America sane and psychotic.

Sincerely,

David Degner

2 The Good Guys

Sending that letter to SS was also a ploy. In fact just about everything I do, including writing this right now, is a ploy. The goal is simple: Universal Peace, Justice, Freedom, and Liberty (UPJF&L), that I can define succinctly as no armies, no weapons, no trade restrictions net of scientific safety, including adult pornography, adult recreational drugs, adult gambling, and adult prostitution, no travel restrictions net of having a communicable disease, no borders, every last one of us live where we want to and can afford to and no involuntary transfers of wealth by governments from any individual or group of individuals to any other individual or group of individuals, no subsidies of any kind, no welfare of any kind, everyone carries their own weight. Of course the disabled will be taken care of.

Jimmy Carter put me under surveillance by the CIA in September of 1979 while I was at the University of California at Berkeley auditing courses in bacteriology, biophysics, chemistry, chemical engineering, computer science, genetics and molecular biology. Every president since then has authorized the surveillance. The surveillance is a black op top secret operation.

The surveillance doesn’t really rely on IR emissions from me. That would be physically absurd since IR frequency electromagnetic radiation cannot pass through the sheet rock and insulation of the walls and interact with the copper wires in the circuits. The antenna IS the electric circuits in the power grid and especially the circuits in my condo. The surveillance is in fact based on the displacement current. Maxwell’s fourth law, Ampere’s Law as extended by Maxwell, governs the phenomenon involved. Ampere’s Law states that the dot product of the magnetic field, \( \mathbf{B} \), with an infinitesimal element of a closed loop of conductor, \( d\mathbf{l} \), around a closed path, a line integral from 0 to \( 2\pi \), is equal to \( \mu_0 i \), where \( i \) is the current, \( \mu_0 \) is the permeability constant, \( 0.4\pi \times 10^{-6} \) H/m, where H is Henry’s, m is meters and the extended by Maxwell part is to add to that \( \varepsilon_0 \mu_0 \) times the changing flux of the.
electric field through the closed conductor loop. Ampere derived his law from the Biot-Savart law for the magnetic field around a wire with a current and it is a correct law. The part of Maxwell’s fourth law that Maxwell contributed, the \( \varepsilon_0 \mu_0 \) times the changing flux of the electric field through a closed conductor loop, Maxwell thought also generates a magnetic field. He called this the displacement current. The displacement current is how a current crosses the plates of a capacitor in an AC circuit. Maxwell had that wrong. A changing electric field flux does not generate a magnetic field. The equation that governs the displacement current is derived from Maxwell’s fourth law by setting the magnetic field, \( \mathbf{B} \), on the left side of the equation to zero and rearranging:

\[
i = - \varepsilon_0 \frac{\partial \Phi_E}{\partial t} \text{ where } \Phi_E \text{ is the flux of the electric field}
\]

This is the equation that governs a current passing through a capacitor in an AC circuit and the surveillance I am under, even right now. The flux of the electric field is defined on the area of the plates of a capacitor in an AC circuit and on the area of the copper wires in the circuits for the surveillance I am under.

As I pointed out in the email to my mother titled: What is Going On, the CIA does not know about the Ess camp and that’s pretty funny. Even funnier is that neither the CIA nor the Ess camp knows about the good guys that support me and provide me information. The good guys are the physicists, many chemists and biologists, and everyday people from all walks of life, many retired and active military, small and large businesses and from all political persuasions. They communicate with me a number of ways. They communicate with me through license plates, through the TV and the radio, and in person through various acts, with secret messages for me, similar to a schizophrenic’s ideas of reference. Ideas of reference for a psychotic individual are pieces of the environment, embedded signals in the environment, thought by the psychotic individual to have special meaning for them. The environment I find myself in includes many messages, numeric, alphabetic, audio and visual, that are special communications for me, and they are how I have back engineered or reverse engineered what is actually going on, relating the present state of my life to the states I have been in over the past 40 or so years.

To understand all this we have to go all the way back to Einstein. He started a charade that has gathered steam since 1905, when he published his special theory of relativity, where fake science is invented and put in place of the real science. In the special theory of relativity he figured out that the mass of an object increases with its increasing velocity, so the mass is a function of velocity and this increase in mass
is true. The part that isn’t correct is that time is dilated for a moving object, that time slows down with increasing velocity. Time dilation is of course perfect nonsense. He extended the charade 10 years later with his general theory of relativity, that states mass curves the adjacent space, and a mass follows the shortest path through curved space, that is called the geodesic path. The idea that empty space could be curved is of course perfect nonsense.

The charade was extended by the invention of quantum mechanics in the roaring 20’s. Quantum mechanics is some sense, some nonsense and at the phenomenological level is pure nonsense. So the twin pillars of modern physics, SR + GR and QM are the biggest load of bullshit imaginable. Since the people who invented all that BS knew the real, the correct theories, they could include just enough truth so that the twin towers, the foundations of modern physics, appear to be correct and are consistent with all experiments.

The CIA and Dan’s camp believe in SR, GR and QM. They also think my surveillance runs on IR radiation. They are all innumerates and illiterate of science, in short, fools. They have been completely hornswoggled. Right now as they follow me writing this they are getting a sinking feeling in their guts, knowing that they have been made into complete idiots, that they are quintessential crackpots.

What Einstein must have figured out is that there is an exchange particle, that I also discovered and named the N particle, that accounts for action at a distance. He figured out that the particle has a quantum of mass and a quantum of energy and that $E = mc^2$ relates the mass to the energy. He, or one of his fellow scientists, also figured out, as I have, that the entire universe is made of this single particle, it is the only particle in the elementary particle bestiary that is neither created nor destroyed. All the other particles in the current elementary particle bestiary are composite particles made up of more than one N particle. Between Einstein and the invention of QM the leading scientists of the day developed the correct QM, just as I have done.

I will call the conspiracy among scientists Einstein’s charade. Mankind has been in a continuous state of warfare from the beginning of recorded history and there is still much warfare and conflict going on even today. The goal of Einstein’s charade was UPJF&L. That is also my goal. I am to Einstein’s charade as Jesus was to the Old Testament.

Back to the surveillance I am under. EKG’s and EEG’s take advantage of the fact there is a potential difference between any two points on the surface of a human being. To measure that potential difference electrodes are placed in contact with the skin and the potential
difference and its time evolution can be measured. There is also an electric field on the surface of humans that fluctuates over time as a result of the electrical activity of the nervous tissue, neurons firing. So the electric fields that surround a human change over time. This is the basis of the potential difference between electrodes attached to the surface of a human. This change in the electric field flux causes spikey little current blips in the circuits of the power grid via the displacement current. By analyzing those current spikes it is possible to read my mind and I mean literally read my mind. It is possible to tell one not only the words and numbers I use in thought but also all the symbolism and graphics I use in thought in addition to my emotional state and feelings.

The electric flux changes over time and leads to the fluctuating displacement current and this is used by the string theorists to read my mind. The string theorists can really literally read my mind. It is also used to deceive the CIA and Dan’s camp. The device that the CIA and Dan’s camp that uses the temporal sequence of current data and converts it into a dynamic two dimensional plot with different colors for different temperatures is a phenomenon that they can confirm by looking at themselves and each other by using one of the “decoders”. What they are really seeing is the changing flux of the electric field adjacent to a human body. The CIA and Dan’s camp think it is the changing temperatures in an IR image. See how stupid they are! All the “decoders” use chips and all use the surrounding AC circuits as antenna. Intel is in on the Einstein charade and builds the chips that do the decoding, completely fooling the CIA and Dan’s camp.

String theory is the current version, at the frontier, of Einstein’s charade. I am string uno, einz, one. String theory is pure bullshit where the operative word is pure. The string theorists are not only reading my mind, they read the minds of key individuals in the CIA and Dan’s camps. So while I am under surveillance by the CIA and Dan’s camp they are under surveillance by my camp, the good guys. Fuck the CIA and Dan. This is a case of what’s good for the goose is good for the gander, of what goes around comes around and is a very ironic reality. They put me under surveillance so my team of good guys put them under surveillance. Right now that pit in their stomach is turning into a churning abdominal pain, as they realize they have been trapped, having painted themselves into a corner.

I am not sure when the mind reading phenomenon was discovered but think it was in the late 40’s between WWII and the Korean War. So my team, the good guys, have had and worked on this technology for about 60 years.
The mind reading technology can be used to determine someone’s emotional state, whether they are lying or telling the truth and what their true intelligence is. That’s how I know I have rank 17 on the planet. That number was established through the surveillance and the information of that communicated to me through the communication channel the good guys use to provide me with various data.

I also am under continuous audio surveillance. The CIA and Dan’s camp use that audio surveillance to correlate with and mine the data stream generated through the displacement current, or IR caused data stream as the CIA and Dan’s camp think it is.

3 Stanley Milgram and Double Edged Swords

Stanley Milgram (August 15, 1933 – December 20, 1984) was an American social psychologist most notable for his controversial study known as the Milgram Experiment. The study was conducted in the 1960s during Milgram's professorship at Yale. Milgram was influenced by the events of the Holocaust to carry out an experiment which would prove the relationship between obedience and authority. Shortly after the obedience experiment, Milgram conducted the small-world experiment (the source of the six degrees of separation concept) while at Harvard10.

The persecution of me through the surveillance by the CIA and Dan’s camp is very much a live Milgram Experiment in action. The government has a GPS in my vehicle and other drivers have access through Dan’s camp to my precise location on the road grid. The government had put a circuit in my headliner that they use to “read” my emotions and thoughts in addition to the GPS they installed.

People have even done some very dangerous things to me when I am driving my F-250, things that were meant to evoke road rage from me and were intended for me to have an accident. Just a week ago Friday one person pulled off a dangerous move that could have resulted in an accident. I was stopped going east on Peck Street, at the intersection with Grand Larry Street. I had my left turn signal on and was waiting for the oncoming cars to pass to make a left hand turn. A car going west on Peck Street approached the intersection slowly with their left turn signal on as if they were going to make a left onto Grand Larry. I almost turned left in front of him but hesitated. When he was just at the

10 This is the first paragraph in Stanley Milgram’s Wikipedia entry. See the complete Wikipedia page at http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Stanley_Milgram.
point where he would make a left turn in front of me and I could simultaneously make a left hand turn in front of him he turned off the turn signal and accelerated, right through the point I would have been at if I turned. Really amazing, to approach the intersection slowly, with the vehicle facing you waiting to make a turn with the left hand turn signal on, and then not only turning his turn signal off at the last moment BUT accelerating simultaneously. He should get about 5 years in jail for that. Another time a truck driver who was driving one of those really long earth carrying rigs did something that was very dangerous and he should get 10 years hard time for what he did to me. I was on the Glenn highway coming into Anchorage and I passed him close to the Eagle River Bridge. I was going a little above the speed limit and estimate he was going a little under the speed limit that is 65 and I passed him slowly. He accelerated after I passed him and eventually a few miles down the road pulled up behind me in the left lane where I was going 72 MPH. He got right on my tail, tail gating with a giant semi, a very dangerous move. I took my foot off the accelerator and began to slow down to “work him over”, as I always do when someone tailgates me. He came within inches of my rear bumper, took both hands off the wheel and flipping me a bird with both hands. My blood was boiling. I didn’t know if he was intending to ram me. Then he changed lanes abruptly, pulling into the center lane, went around me and changed lanes again to be in front of me in the left lane. I followed him to the Bragaw stop light and pulled up alongside him, in a road rage, and rolled down the passenger window. He yelled out “why are you hassling a poor truck driver who is just doing his job”. I was livid but let it go. He definitely deserves 10 years for that and a life time loss of his commercial license. There were other similarly dangerous driving events, cars pulling right in front of me and slamming on their brakes, cars changing lanes abruptly when I was trying to enter a roadway, cars in my blind spot, cars that would parallel me on the freeway and prevent me from using the left lane, etc. They apparently got their rocks off watching the level of stress and rage they generated in me through the two-dimensional dynamic color plots made available to some of the public by Dan’s camp.

Just about all technology is a double edged sword that can be used for good or for evil. This surveillance technique is a prime example of that. It could be made public and be used by parents to monitor an infant, be used by homeowners to observe intruders on their property, be used by the courts to determine the guilt or innocence of an accused individual and be used by police for many forensic purposes. But if the technology is made public everyone would be able to put filters in their electricity circuits, foiling the ability to catch unsuspecting criminals and Big Brother would not be able to spy on its citizens.
The persecution extends back all the way to 1980 when I was a research associate in molecular genetics in the lab of a R Lubtilus at UCB. R really did me in the ass big time. I’ve already pointed out how he completely changed from a Friday afternoon meeting in his office when he said he would get some reading material for me on Monday to the following Monday when he had nothing for me to read. I became increasingly aware that he was not being honest with me. He also made comments that made me paranoid, as if he was making those comments specifically to drive me nuts. Three prominent comments I remember where he once said the distilled water supply available to all the labs in the Life Sciences Building was not good pure water because sometimes a dead rat fell into it. Another time I was looking at a DNA model and he said in front of me to another person in the lab that the model was broken like the people that use them. I was fond of models. And once he was talking to a younger business associate in my presence in his office and he said in reference to a packet of bacteria, named 4440, that they had gotten from France for his winery, to just put a new label on it and we can patent it. I asked him once if he had told anyone of the model I proposed and he said he hadn’t. He also said this is a very provocative model and I should keep quiet about it. One of the secretaries left her keys on the department copy machine and I picked them up. I wanted to go late at night into R’s office and see if I could find anything that might fill me in on what he was up to. His desk was a mess with hundreds of papers piled up in disorderly stacks. I did use the keys the secretary had left in the copy room and discovered he had told a microbiologist at University of Illinois at Urbana-Champaign about my model. That microbiologist was Carl Woese who had done important work sequencing RNA’s in the 16S ribosome part to determine there were three families of life, not just bacteria and eukaryotes, proposing the archaea as a third domain. Woese had written on a paper he sent R to tell him about the “hidden code” in cells. In July or August of 1981 one of his graduate students took me outside so we could talk and told me I should try to get someone I knew well who would be willing to help me to look at the model. He had asked me if my model involved hydrogen bonding in the major groove of DNA. One of the other graduate students in his lab and I had a discussion once, early on in fall 1980, and I asked a question about the nucleic acid monomer pools. He asked me why I was asking and I said just interested. His reply was something about modern science and secrets. So he told another professor and both his lab graduate students but didn’t tell me he told them, even denied it. Of course that made things enormously difficult and spooky for me. He always wanted me to write it up and that was a pretty difficult task for me to undertake. I finally in the winter quarter wrote it all up in a 57 legal pages long, 72 questions
and answers, hand written format titled Exam on General and Fundamental Theory of Prototype Cell; Gram (+) Prokaryotic. I submitted the original to him and he never asked a single question about it so it never served as a basis for communication. You should be able to see why in August of 1981 I asked my brother Cain to bring his S&W 44 Magnum down so I could use it to “persuade” R to be forthright with me. A week or so later I was psychotic, really an altered state, and I was in desperate shape. My last conversation with R was in fall 1984, after I had gotten on Prolinx and thought I was a paranoid schizophrenic and he said if I wrote something up to send it to him and he would take a look at it.

Well I had one rather large mistake in my model at that time, that being that the ribonucleic acid monomers interact with DNA double strand by hydrogen bonding in the major groove. I corrected that mistake in 1997 when I revisited the model and figured out the monomers really hydrogen bond with single strand regions of denatured DNA. One thing that was clear is the monomers have to interact one-to-one with DNA sequences for the information channel to be robust.

5 Dan

Dan is a very sick puppy, as is his wife and his brother Bixxy. They have spent their entire adult lives pursuing me, like Captain Ahab going after the great White Whale in Moby Dick. They are completely nuts.

The theme of all Dan’s works is damaged autos. He has been putting in my environment damaged autos since 1981. He has had me under surveillance since February 1972. Really, really sick. Damaged autos are a metaphor for my damaged brain and life. When I first went into an altered state in late August of 1981 he placed stripped down frames of autos in my environment at various locations in Berkeley.

So what has Dan been trying to do? Break me. But he can’t. I am too smart for him, too strong for him, and most importantly I have honor. I feel a strong sense of duty to my fellow man. Dan is an elitist. He thinks most people who don’t perform as well as him in academic settings are really just stupid chattel. He is a sneering, supercilious, haughty snob.

Dan you lose! Kiss meine deutschen Hoden!

11 See http://knol.google.com/k/david-degner/what-i-was-doing-when-i-was-einstein-s/tjb7mqwwiwx/13#
2 Sane or delusional

I just sent the following email titled “Credit card call” to my mother:

from David Degner davidmartindegner@gmail.com
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Feb 24, 2010 at 2:34 PM
subject Credit card call

Hi Mom,

The credit card collection agency to settle the last credit card debt just called. It was the 24th not the 21st when they said they would call apparently. I told them I didn’t have the funds right now to settle the account and that when I did have the funds I would call them to settle.

I am hoping the reason Track and Confirm of my registered mail for seeds doesn’t show the package has left the NYC customs is because it originated in the UK and not because they intercepted it as illegal. I’ll know in the next couple of days if it arrives or not.

About my last email, you can ignore it if you think I am delusional. I don’t think I am delusional, but maybe that’s part of the delusion. I will discuss it with the psychiatrist next Thursday. In any event I am stable, not a danger to myself or anyone else.

I have started a new creative writing project to fill my time and for a new challenge. It addresses the question of whether or not I am sane or delusional.

34 here currently, I hope it is an early spring breakup.

Love, David
Hi Mom,

During my episodes of psychosis I thought I was under surveillance by the government. I have been psychotic 7 times and in each of those episodes of psychosis thought I was under surveillance by the government. I thought the surveillance could "read my mind." Right now I don't think I am psychotic, but also when I was in an episode of psychosis in the past I didn't realize I was psychotic. But right now I am really sure I am not psychotic. Thinking oneself to be under surveillance is apparently a fairly common delusion of paranoid schizophrenics, exactly how common I don't know. Am I a paranoid schizophrenic? Have I really been psychotic or just in altered states? Have I been under surveillance?

You would think these are the type of topics that come up in conversations with a psychiatrist. But they rarely have come up. When I am psychotic they don't come up because I don't bring them up, act normally and the psychiatrists don't suspect that is what I really think is going on. When I am not psychotic they don't come up because there is never any probing review of what I was thinking when I was psychotic, they just aren't interested. So I am bringing all these issues up in an email to you. Then I have to put down in writing things and that is in itself useful, even if you are not too interested either. The psychiatrists seem only to be interested in whether you are a danger to yourself or anyone else. That is the definition used to involuntarily hospitalize a mentally ill person so that is what they are legally responsible to determine. I have never, sane or psychotic been a danger to anyone else and haven't been a danger to myself since my last suicide attempt in 1985. I have always lived by a code of conduct. The most essential piece of that code is that I never threaten anyone and never commit
violence against anyone. It is a matter of honor to me to live by that code of non violence and I have always maintained my honor, even scrupulously so. I have never threatened another human and never committed an act of violence against any fellow human. I have slammed doors, broken physical objects, and been physically demonstrative, but never was any of that behavior directed against another individual. My code of conduct is finally based on my strong belief in God and right and wrong actions and thoughts. I find all violence, except in self defense, to be morally reprehensible.

So first of all you can see that I am willing to discuss all these issues now, that I never am willing to do when psychotic, that would buttress my opinion that I am not right now psychotic.

I don't think I am a paranoid schizophrenic. I believe my episodes of psychosis were really altered states, excess dopamine states, that I just have a tweaked dopamine system that requires medication. The altered states are similar to a paranoid schizophrenic's psychosis but not the same as. For instance I have never heard voices or had any hallucinations. I have a full memory throughout all the episodes of being in an altered state. And I was using my rational mind in all the altered states, could still perform at a high level intellectually and used reason. Common with a paranoid schizophrenic's psychotic states I was massively delusional and had ideas of reference. Ideas of reference are when you attach special significance to various environmental stimuli. You think license plates and ads on TV are communicating with you. I thought those things when in altered states. One reason I am sure I am not a paranoid schizophrenic is because of genetics, there just isn't any schizophrenia in your side or Dad's side of the family. Also I had a simply wonderful childhood and college experience. And finally all my mental problems started when I was 22, the spring of 1975 following graduation from Cornell, when I used the street drug PCP. Overnight, following using it, I became paranoid, depressed and had some kind of thought disorder that I likened to a loss of analytical skills. I had never at any earlier point in my life had any problems like that, they came on overnight, very abruptly, and clearly derived form using the PCP. So all in all, I am definitely not a paranoid schizophrenic. I have been in altered states that are in some ways similar to a schizophrenic's psychosis and in other ways quite different. I do require anti-psychotic medication due to having a tweaked dopamine system. The common element with schizophrenics is that the dopamine system is at the root of the medical phenomenon. Dopamine is a
very important neurotransmitter in case you didn't know. It is involved in many things and also in Parkinson's disease. In Parkinson's there is too little dopamine, in psychosis too much.

As I have told you I think my IQ is around 170 where the smartest persons on the planet are around 190. I don't think that is a grandiose delusion, just simply my intrinsic rank. I base that on being around the top of the class at Cornell in genetics, biochemistry and physical chemistry and also having put in around the fewest hours of study. Also my experiences in calculus and physics where with very small effort I scored very highly. But more important than those formative experiences of youth are my accomplishments in my adult life in biology, chemistry and physics. I have worked out a complete theory of physics and chemistry from scratch, an achievement no one else has ever accomplished. It is very important to put my achievements in the context of the existing paradigms in physics and chemistry. The twin towers of modern physics and chemistry are Einstein's special (1905) and general (1915) theories of relativity and quantum mechanics that was the roaring 20's loudest roar. Those theories are partly true, but at a mechanistic or phenomenological level pure bullshit. That is as obvious to me as the fact that my theories are correct, and both of those are as obvious to me as the nose on my face. So why are the fundamental, the foundation theories of physics and chemistry mostly bullshit? There is a massive conspiracy going on in modern science, that was started by Einstein, that pretend SR, GR and QM are correct theories. The goal of the conspiracy is to bring about an end to warfare and conflict among mankind. I am going to leave out how they intend to achieve that goal through the conspiracy, but I outline some of it in my screenplay/novel, and you can read that to find out. So I have the correct theories that I have worked out myself and the current paradigms are pure bullshit, and I am treated as a crackpot, a crank, a nutcase, a delusional hermit, when in fact I am one of the smartest persons on the planet and the most highly accomplished scientist in mankind's history. Am I the first to find the correct theories? No, Einstein and the other leading scientists of his era were the first to do what I have done alone. Having the correct theories in hand is essential to being able to produce the bullshit theories they produced. I can readily observe all that from my vantage point. It is all completely obvious to me, completely transparent to me and completely irrefutable.

So it is rather cruel for the scientific community to treat me as a crank when in fact I am one of the finest scientists in mankind's
history. Why are they doing that? Because I am under surveillance by the government and it is our government more than any other, although we are certainly in good company, that is responsible for warfare and conflict. Am I 100% certain of that? No but I definitely give it a two sigma, 95% true probability. That is really the only explanation for the way I have been treated. Furthermore I believe the surveillance was hacked into and that many have viewed the surveillance surreptitiously and many have persecuted me for that reason. Am I 100% certain of that? No, but it is the logical explanation for the treatment I have received over the years. There is another explanation, namely that the people who have me under surveillance have tried to create the illusion that many people have been watching me surreptitiously. I wouldn't be able to distinguish between the two possibilities. Does that all sound like a paranoid and persecutory delusion? Of course it does!

Well now you have seen my logic and the conclusions I draw. Remember I haven't told you how this all translates into the final seminal war between good and evil, where warfare and conflict among mankind comes to an end. I know how that all works out but am retaining it as a secret.

So to summarize:

1. SR, GR and QM are bullshit. It's a massive conspiracy started by Einstein to end warfare and conflict. This is guaranteed to be 100% true.
2. I have the right, the correct theories. This is also guaranteed to be 100% true.
3. I am cruelly treated as a crackpot because I am under surveillance by the evil government. My credibility and the fact the people who have me under surveillance are innumerate and illiterate of science enables them to not realize the simple true model I present is the correct model and also unable to figure out modern physics is a mile high house of cards. That's all obvious to me. I give this a two sigma, 95% true, probability, i.e. highly likely.
4. Someone, and I think I know who, I think it is Dan Ess, has hacked into the stream of data I produce and made it available to many individuals or the illusion of that has been created. I also give this a two sigma, 95% confidence level, probability.
5. I have been persecuted for my act while under surveillance. I don't know what probability to give this but it is likely true, kind of like Jesus on the cross.

So that's how I see things. Am I right? The future will tell.

Love, David
6 common delusions

I prepared a list of what I think when psychotic for my psychiatric nurse practitioner Fran Asad, social worker Charlotte Johns and case manager Ricky Pang on March 24th.

The delusions common to my psychosis’

1. I believe I am at the nexus in the final battle of the final war between good and evil and that good will win out overwhelmingly.

2. I believe my arch nemesis is my old friend and classmate from Cornell Daniel Ess.

3. I think there is a woman of remarkable virtue and intelligence who is in love with me and waiting for me to be my wife and the mother of our children.

4. I believe I am under complex biometric surveillance that can read my mind by two groups, the government, who are the bad guys, and “my” group who are the good guys.

5. I believe 9-11, terrorism and the Iraq and Afghanistan wars are staged events, not real ones and that I am a five star general, code name the Arctic Rose, in those missions. I believe the mission is to end warfare and conflict among mankind. The operation is called Swords into Plowshares.

6. I believe tobacco has been genetically modified and is no longer biologically deleterious and there is a conspiracy among smokers keeping that a secret.

7. I think there is a conspiracy among some or all physicists, started by Einstein in 1905, whose aim is to end warfare and conflict. This group is the good guys who “support” me.

8. I believe I am to the Einstein charade as Jesus was to the Old Testament.

9. I believe I am one of the smartest persons on the planet.

10. I believe that my screenplay/novel is a kind of modern Bible and will win me the Nobel peace and literature prizes.

11. I believe I will win Nobel prizes in physics, chemistry, medicine and physiology and economics.

12. I believe I am not a paranoid schizophrenic but rather someone who through a chemical accident and the environment went into altered states that are in some
ways similar to psychosis and in other ways quite dissimilar.

13. I believe there are people who persecute me and also believe there are people who support me.

14. I believe that the trial I am undergoing is like Jesus on the cross, albeit not a real cross, rather a modern technological kind of cross, the mind reading technology.

15. I believe many people have access to the data stream of thoughts and actions I generate and that the goal is to get everyone “on board” for universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty. I call that goal Clean Sweep, meaning eventually everyone on the planet has access to the data stream I generate and everyone is converted to thinking rationally about how to live their lives, i.e. without conflict and warfare.

16. I believe there are a huge number of embedded “messages”, “communications” for me in the environment. These include license plates, articles in printed media and over the Internet, shows on TV and commercials, various human actions and the operation of my home computer. So I believe my environment is massively orchestrated.

17. I believe my Dad who died in 1998 is still alive and the person most responsible for the technology that reads my mind. He was a scholar of the Bible and classics and I see my role as “Jesus” and a classicist as right up his alley.

18. I believe the planet is an insane asylum and that is what is being fixed. I believe I am the “psychiatrist” in charge of that.

19. I believe the surveillance will end soon and am always waiting for it to end with much expectation and anticipation.

20. I believe the universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty put in place will last for the rest of time here on planet earth, until the sun goes red giant and life ceases.
Hi Mom,

I changed my mind about Dr. Zhari and ACMHS (Anchorage Community Mental Health Services). I am sending the following follow up letter to Dr. Zhari:

March 8, 2010

Hi Dr. Zhari,

I have decided my problems require the additional support ACMHS provide so I am going to continue there as a client and see Fran Asad again for prescriptions, Charlotte Johns for counseling and Ricky Pang for case manager. Am I delusional? I probably am although I am not certain of that. It is a difficult life for me and thinking I am not delusional is a symptom of the delusions. The thing that always trips me up is I know my scientific work is correct and also know the existing paradigms in physics and chemistry are mostly bullshit. I can’t shake that belief and don’t think it is a delusion.

Thanks for seeing me. Please tell your front desk to cancel our scheduled April 1 meeting.

David Degner

Email me about a call when you get this.

Love, David

Anita to me

Sorry not to check my email until now. I had taken a little nap, then tarterd some split sea soup and then out for a walk before it got too late. It is supposed to start to rain tomorrow and rain most of week so maybe there will not be lots of chances.
That is a well composed letter you are sending. I take it that you didn't send what you had planned yesterday.

The rest of update. My friend Louise who had the valve replacement is "holding her own" but not doing well at all. She is still on a ventilator and apparently her kidneys have not kicked in yet. I hope to call and maybe get to speak to her nurse again later this evening--just in case Tim is on duty. Otherwise I know that they are discouraged from giving out detailed information. I am also calling to Louises home thinking maybe her brother and sister-in-law from Cincinnati have come. Louise was and is my best friend in FW and that happened when we both became widows within a 6 mo. period. She stayed with me when I broke my ankle. Just turned either 72 or 73. She doesn't have children but a lot of teacher friends in FW. and although I knew them they weren't in my circle of pals. She taught special ed. students in FW. Other than her heart valve and B.P. meds she took, she was real active and doing lots of volunteer for the blind people, driving them around in her new Prius

Is a call after O'Reilly O.K. Also the condo bill didn't come yet - I will wait until tomorrow. If you didn't get it then they probably did send it here but the unreliable mail service took care of that.

Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Calling after O'Reilly would be a good time. The condo bill arrived today. It included the proxy for the board meeting on the 30th of this month. You can just send in the payment and I'll send the proxy to you for you to send in. You get a $30 credit for sending in the proxy and a $60 credit for attending the board meeting.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Tue, Mar 9, 2010 at 4:51 AM
subject The slippery slope

Hi Mom,

It is 20 and blowing and snowing, a March storm up here. We are supposed to get 4" - 8" of snow and there is a winter advisory out until 3 PM today.

I will need $150 this month. The two extra expenses I had were Norton Anti-virus renewal, $54.99, and the seeds from Canada, $200, that is why I am short this month.
About the recent episode of being delusional I don't know what to say about it. Like I said in an email and over the phone what always trips me up is I KNOW my science is correct and I KNOW the existing paradigms (models) in physics and chemistry are mostly bullshit. It began with Einstein and I call the charade underway in physics and chemistry Einstein's charade. I think it is an effort by the leading scientists since Einstein to bring to an end warfare and conflict. Then the mistake I make is I assume I am at the center of that, because I have the correct theories, AND that I am under top secret surveillance. So what do I think about all that now? Well I could be under surveillance, but I don't know if I am, I can't rule it out or rule it in. I know they wouldn't tell me if I am under surveillance and no one has ever told me I am. If I am there is nothing I can do about it. If I am not I wouldn't notice the difference. But I do know I have the correct model for physics and chemistry AND I do know the existing models (paradigms) are mostly bullshit. Those two things I have 100% certainty of and that is all I know. That in itself is very weird, very unusual, but I am certain very true. So what am I going to do? Work on my science and write it up. That's a really good challenge and will allow me to work and stay busy. And I will resist the delusional thinking that leads me to think I am under surveillance. That's the best I can do. It's all just very strange, me having the correct theory and modern physics and chemistry being a mile high house of cards, i.e. mostly bullshit.

Like I said, for right now I just am going to focus on quitting drinking altogether. It's difficult since I am all alone except for my communication with you and seeing Stacy a little bit. I haven't seen Kevin in a while, he was going to an 8 week training session in Houston the last I knew, maybe I'll hear from him again in the coming weeks.

The world sure is a mess and the need for Einstein's charade glaringly obvious. Mankind has been preoccupied with and in a state of warfare for all of recorded history. The Bible was an effort to end that. I believe Einstein's charade is an effort to end that. The modern nuclear age is the product of physics, and Einstein's charade is part of physics, and I am part of that because I have the correct theories, the right model. See how slippery the slope of becoming delusional is for me. I start to think that I am to Einstein's charade as Jesus was to the Old Testament. Then I start to think I am under surveillance. Then I start to have ideas of reference, think there are hidden communications in the environment that have special meaning for me. That all leads to a highly delusional state if not outright psychosis.
In addition to the serious problem of warfare and conflict that affects mankind there are some really serious economic problems facing the states, the US and many countries today. Everyone is in debt over their ears and spending money they don't have, like all the US deficits, especially of W and Obama, and the EU has all the same problems, have you followed the problems in Iceland and Greece in the WSJ?

The seeds, $452 in the last 5 weeks, are a one time expense, really an investment, and the only reason I needed $250 from you last month and $150 this month. I breed the plants so will have seeds free for the future. The seeds I am germinating are all opening up so they look good. After two or three days in paper towels I put them in the small peat pellets, called Jiffy 7's. Then after two weeks under fluorescent lights I transplant them to 3 gallon pots that I put under the high pressure sodium grow lights.

The only expense I have on the horizon is $176 for vehicle insurance on May 1st. I should be able to cover that and unless something breaks down should be self sufficient in the future with you paying the condo fees. After a couple of crops I may be able to sell some and then pay the condo fees too and really be self sufficient financially again. All the episodes of delusions and psychosis have taken their toll and hopefully all that will finally be behind me now.

The quote by Einstein was "I live in that solitude which is painful in youth, but delicious in the years of maturity."

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to aexmd@gmail.com
date Wed, Mar 10, 2010 at 12:30 PM
subject ?

Hey Allan,

I have been highly delusional again. I am at this moment sane again. Hope it stays. Feel like communicating anymore?

Dave

Allan to me

Dave,
The barrage of insulting and racist commentary is difficult to take.
David Degner to aexmd

Well, it's due to mental illness.

David Degner to aexmd

Allan here is an email to my mother while I was still delusional. You may find it informative. I DO believe my science is correct. I DO believe modern physics is a giant charade. All the rest appears to be delusions. I didn't choose, certainly didn't want, to be a mentally ill person. It leaves me just wanting a painless way to commit suicide. Sorry to have exposed you to my mental illness.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sat, Mar 6, 2010 at 1:43 PM
subject Surveillance? Paranoid schizophrenic? Psychosis or altered states?

Hi Mom,

During my episodes of psychosis I thought I was under surveillance by the government. I have been psychotic 7 times and in each of those episodes of psychosis thought I was under surveillance by the government. I thought the surveillance could "read my mind." Right now I don't think I am psychotic, but also when I was in an episode of psychosis in the past I didn't realize I was psychotic. But right now I am really sure I am not psychotic. Thinking oneself to be under surveillance is apparently a fairly common delusion of paranoid schizophrenics, exactly how common I don't know. Am I a paranoid schizophrenic? Have I really been psychotic or just in altered states? Have I been under surveillance?

You would think these are the type of topics that come up in conversations with a psychiatrist. But they rarely have come up. When I am psychotic they don't come up because I don't bring them up, act normally and the psychiatrists don't suspect that is what I really think is going on. When I am not psychotic they don't come up because there is never any probing review of what I was thinking when I was psychotic, they just aren't interested. So I am bringing all these issues up in an email to you. Then I have to put down in writing things and that is in itself useful, even if you are not too interested either. The psychiatrists seem only to be interested in whether you are a danger to yourself or anyone else. That is the definition used to involuntarily hospitalize a mentally ill person so that is what they are legally responsible to determine. I have never, sane or psychotic been a danger to anyone else
and haven't been a danger to myself since my last suicide attempt in 1985. I have always lived by a code of conduct. The most essential piece of that code is that I never threaten anyone and never commit violence against anyone. It is a matter of honor to me to live by that code of non violence and I have always maintained my honor, even scrupulously so. I have never threatened another human and never committed an act of violence against any fellow human. I have slammed doors, broken physical objects, and been physically demonstrative, but never was any of that behavior directed against another individual. My code of conduct is finally based on my strong belief in God and right and wrong actions and thoughts. I find all violence, except in self defense, to be morally reprehensible.

So first of all you can see that I am willing to discuss all these issues now, that I never am willing to do when psychotic, that would buttress my opinion that I am not right now psychotic.

I don't think I am a paranoid schizophrenic. I believe my episodes of psychosis were really altered states, excess dopamine states, that I just have a tweaked dopamine system that requires medication. The altered states are similar to a paranoid schizophrenics psychosis but not the same as. For instance I have never heard voices or had any hallucinations. I have a full memory throughout all the episodes of being in an altered state. And I was using my rational mind in all the altered states, could still perform at a high level intellectually and used reason. Common with a paranoid schizophrenics psychotic states I was massively delusional and had ideas of reference. Ideas of reference are when you attach special significance to various environmental stimuli. You think license plates and ads on TV are communicating with you. I thought those things when in altered states. One reason I am sure I am not a paranoid schizophrenic is because of genetics, there just isn't any schizophrenia in your side or Dad's side of the family. Also I had a simply wonderful childhood and college experience. And finally all my mental problems started when I was 22, the spring of 1975 following graduation from Cornell, when I used the street drug PCP. Overnight, following using it, I became paranoid, depressed and had some kind of thought disorder that I likened to a loss of analytical skills. I had never at any earlier point in my life had any problems like that, they came on overnight, very abruptly, and clearly derived form using the PCP. So all in all, I am definitely not a paranoid schizophrenic. I have been in altered states that are in some ways similar to a schizophrenics psychosis and in other ways quite different. I do require anti-psychotic medication due to having a tweaked dopamine system. The common element with schizophrenics is that the dopamine system is at the root of the medical phenomenon. Dopamine is a very important neurotransmitter in case you didn't know. It is involved in many things
and also in Parkinson's disease. In Parkinson’s there is too little dopamine, in psychosis too much.

As I have told you I think my IQ is around 170 where the smartest persons on the planet are around 190. I don't think that is a grandiose delusion, just simply my intrinsic rank. I base that on being around the top of the class at Cornell in genetics, biochemistry and physical chemistry and also having put in around the fewest hours of study. Also my experiences in calculus and physics where with very small effort I scored very highly. But more important than those formative experiences of youth are my accomplishments in my adult life in biology, chemistry and physics. I have worked out a complete theory of physics and chemistry from scratch, an achievement no one else has ever accomplished. It is very important to put my achievements in the context of the existing paradigms in physics and chemistry. The twin towers of modern physics and chemistry are Einstein’s special (1905) and general (1915) theories of relativity and quantum mechanics that was the roaring 20's loudest roar. Those theories are partly true, but at a mechanistic or phenomenological level pure bullshit. That is as obvious to me as the fact that my theories are correct, and both of those are as obvious to me as the nose on my face. So why are the fundamental, the foundation theories of physics and chemistry mostly bullshit? There is a massive conspiracy going on in modern science, that was started by Einstein, that pretend SR, GR and QM are correct theories. The goal of the conspiracy is to bring about an end to warfare and conflict among mankind. I am going to leave out how they intend to achieve that goal through the conspiracy, but I outline some of it in my screenplay/novel, and you can read that to find out. So I have the correct theories that I have worked out myself and the current paradigms are pure bullshit, and I am treated as a crackpot, a crank, a nutcase, a delusional hermit, when in fact I am one of the smartest persons on the planet and the most highly accomplished scientist in mankind's history. Am I the first to find the correct theories? No, Einstein and the other leading scientists of his era were the first to do what I have done alone. Having the correct theories in hand is essential to being able to produce the bullshit theories they produced. I can readily observe all that from my vantage point. It is all completely obvious to me, completely transparent to me and completely irrefutable.

So It is rather cruel for the scientific community to treat me as a crank when in fact I am one of the finest scientists in mankind's history. Why are they doing that? Because I am under surveillance by the government and it is our government more than any other, although we are certainly in good company, that is responsible for warfare and conflict. Am I 100% certain of that? No but I definitely give it a two sigma, 95% true probability. That is really the only explanation for the
way I have been treated. Furthermore I believe the surveillance was hacked into and that many have viewed the surveillance surreptitiously and many have persecuted me for that reason. Am I 100% certain of that? No, but it is the logical explanation for the treatment I have received over the years. There is another explanation, namely that the people who have me under surveillance have tried to create the illusion that many people have been watching me surreptitiously. I wouldn't be able to distinguish between the two possibilities. Does that all sound like a paranoid and persecutory delusion? Of course it does!

Well now you have seen my logic and the conclusions I draw. Remember I haven't told you how this all translates into the final seminal war between good and evil, where warfare and conflict among mankind comes to an end. I know how that all works out but am retaining it as a secret.

So to summarize:

1. SR, GR and QM are bullshit. It's a massive conspiracy started by Einstein to end warfare and conflict. This is guaranteed to be 100% true.
2. I have the right, the correct theories. This is also guaranteed to be 100% true.
3. I am cruelly treated as a crackpot because I am under surveillance by the evil government. My credibility and the fact the people who have me under surveillance are innumerate and illiterate of science enables them to not realize the simple true model I present is the correct model and also unable to figure out modern physics is a mile high house of cards. That's all obvious to me. I give this a two sigma, 95% true, probability, i.e. highly likely.
4. Someone, and I think I know who, I think it is Dan Ess, has hacked into the stream of data I produce and made it available to many individuals or the illusion of that has been created. I also give this a two sigma, 95% confidence level, probability.
5. I have been persecuted for my act while under surveillance. I don't know what probability to give this but it is likely true, kind of like Jesus on the cross

So that's how I see things. Am I right? The future will tell.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
Hi Mom,

It's always really difficult and depressing to be mentally ill, to have to recover from highly delusional and psychotic episodes. This time is no different. It leaves me wishing I had a painless way to take my own life.

I am again a client at ACMHS and see Fran at 11 on Friday and my case manager right after.

Anita to me

Just checked my email. When would you like me to call. Actually this would be a good time. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Yeah Mom, call now.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Thu, Mar 11, 2010 at 11:38 AM subject 0 here this morning, brrrr

Hi Mom,

Like I told you on Monday my only real goal this month is to not drink. At times it is very depressing and I feel suicidal and those are the hardest times to get through without drinking. But I feel better when I don't drink and each day brings new challenges, so it is good to not be drinking. Relapses after 6 or 7 days have to be handled. I hope I can do that. My goal is to lose 30 pounds in the next three months and to be able to get off the BP medications. Talking to you each day is a big help in realizing the goals I've set for myself.

I'm going to Fred's this morning and have decided to get a 5 lb box of Mandarin oranges, celery, carrots, radishes and Romaine, increasing the fruits and vegetables I have. I usually don't get all those things due to the price but the Mandarins are on sale for $6.99 a box, the celery is about $1.28 a lb, reasonable, the bulk carrots are usually $0.99 a lb, also reasonable, the radishes are $0.50 a bunch, on sale this week, regularly $1.19, and the Romaine is usually $2.29 a head that is
reasonable. Actually the blue cheese is the most expensive part of my salads. I always have a 15 oz glass of V-8 with breakfast and that is a really good source of vegetables. It is $1.99 for one of those 46 oz cans, Fred's own brand, a real bargain and about 1/2 the price of the V-8 brand and just as good. Fred's also has cottage cheese on sale this week, $1.25 a pint and their own brand of Italian sausage, a 5 pack similar to the Johnsonville packs, 18 oz, for $3.00 with a coupon. So today I am going to make lasagna, always a favorite.

I am working on some really good science problems, went to bed last night thinking about them, working on them again this morning, very good stuff. It is very ironic that all the professors in physics and chemistry at UAA treat me as a crackpot, since they are all in fact crackpots and believe in theories that are mostly pure nonsense. In the end I will expose them and am going to focus on working on and writing up my science for the next 4-6 months, at which time I will have the content for a new book. I found a publisher in Chicago that does small jobs, like 100 copies of a book, for a very reasonable price. So my goal is to write up a new book in the coming year. BTW I looked up the lady that teaches physical chemistry on Google and looked at some student’s ratings of her. They all gave her the worst of ratings and apparently she also speaks very poor English and is not attractive, yes they include that in the ratings. She's some kind of Russian or European. That is the course I would consider taking next fall. She works in an area that I work in, understanding proteins, and has not responded to my emails over the years, what a flaming crackpot. I can cover all the material through their MIT Open Source courses so have no need to waste my time and money attending UAA, although I would maybe like to take some math courses.

On the Comedy Channel, that you should get, are two very funny shows, the Jon Stewart Show and the Colbert Report. They do satire of the news, both lean left, and include interesting interviews. Last night a physicist whose blog I follow was on. They are live at 10 and 10:30 PM, both 1/2 hour shows and are repeated the next day. So I am going to start watching both. You should check both out. They are really smart guys and provide great comic relief to the serious news we are inundated with daily.

25 of 25 seeds germinated and they are about 1/2” tall after 4 days, the good result I was hoping for. 12 were feminized seeds, i.e. they will all be females, and all you smoke is the female flowers, very preferably unpollinated. Normally 1/2 are males, that you cut down and throw out, and 1/2 are females. I'll do a bit of pollination to get seeds for the future. The seeds from Canada haven't arrived yet, hopefully they will in the next couple of days. I will also pollinate them in the next crop.
and then will have some very fine seed varieties in my inventory and will not need to buy anymore.

Email me about a call.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just got home from the historical society meeting and then took a 15 min. walk. Would this be a good time to call? email me. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Yeah it would be, call now.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Thu, Mar 11, 2010 at 3:24 PM subject Why I love Alaska so much!

Hi Mom,

Here's a photo out the porch door on March 11th, 10 days before spring. See why I love Alaska so much!

I'm making meat loaf today instead of lasagna. 85% lean hamburger was on sale $1.99 for a 1 lb chub. I'm drying out 2 sourdough English muffins for bread crumbs, will add 2 eggs, a packet of onion soup and some dehydrated milk, and top it with ketchup. I use 2 lbs of hamburger. Should I add the eggs?

Love, David
Hi Mom,

I told you on Monday my goal this month was to stop drinking completely. But I was too depressed recovering from the episode of delusions on Monday and Tuesday and drank both days, although only 1/2 of what I used to drink daily for many years, about 6 beers. So on Wednesday I was strong enough not to drink and also on Thursday. So I have gone two days without drinking and am now strong enough to give it up completely, I think I am at least. I feel good after two days of not drinking. I also have been working hard on a very important problem in my scientific model for the last three days and just this morning seem to have found the solution. So I am working again in science and that bodes well to be able to fill the hours of the day without drinking. It's a scientific problem I have spent a lot of time on over the years so thinking I have finally found the solution, that is some basic equations dealing with light, i.e. photons, is very good news for getting productive again.

My meat loaf was OK but seems never to be as good as the meat loaf I recall you making. I think it is better to use real onion instead of onion soup. And I think you used to use small dried bread cubes instead of crumbs that also makes it better. Is that right, did you use dried bread cubes, like what you would use for stuffing?
Also to fill my time I’m watching some of the basketball on this time of year and a few more TV shows, the Jon Stewart Show and the Colbert Report, both on the Comedy Central channel. The only other shows I watch are Beck and O'Reilly and some of Fox and Friends. Check out Stewart and Colbert, it is a nice relief from all the serious and often depressing news we are exposed to. They are both left leaning liberals but also parody Obama and Pelosi. O'Reilly has been on the Colbert Report and also had Colbert on the Factor not too long ago. Colbert is very sharp and quick witted.

So all in all I am getting in good and productive shape, not drinking and getting some good science done.

Saw the Thrivent HYBF is up to $4.62 and Apple up to $225. You should think about getting out of your security investments in the next year and buying some real estate. I say that because I am pretty sure we are going to have inflation and also another large decline in stocks in the next year or two. Buying real estate when it is low and locking in the low interest rates available is the only way to avoid losing out with a decline in stock prices and inflation.

If I can stay off the beer I should be able to lose 30 lbs by the middle of June. I am currently 273. My high in March 2006 on the terrible experience with the Zyprexa was 342. At 247 in 2004 my BP was 117/77, so I hope if I can get back down below 250 the BP will be normal again.

I have a coupon for 12 oz packages of vegetables at Fred's for $0.99. I always get lima beans and Brussels sprouts since they are the most expensive vegetables and also my favorite.

The seeds from Canada haven't arrived yet so I am hoping they will come in the next couple of days. They are called Matanuska Thunderfuck, a variety made famous in the Matanuska valley about 20 years ago. I want to have several top quality varieties of seeds to use in the future and I should be able to do that with the seeds I have and should be coming.

How was the play? I imagine it was an early 20th century American playwright. Is that correct?

I'll email you about a call after seeing Fran at 11, around noon my time. Talking earlier in the day is good for me, before you take a nap. Then we can always talk again after O'Reilly.
8 here and overcast.

Love, David

Anita to me

Thanks for your email. I slept until 8:30 this morning, 2 hrs. longer than usual. The lady who introduced the play did so by telling about all the good benefits of belly laughs, etc. and it must be true. I will tell you more about it on the phone. It was a little raunchy but absolutely the funniest thing. M enjoyed it.

I am going to Aldi’s now to get veg. and fruit. It is supposed to start to rain in a couple of hrs. and I want to get back before then. In our local paper this morning it says that corned beef and cabbage is an American invention and was not and still is not common in Ireland - they just make it for American tourists. They have boiled bacon and cabbage instead. Interesting.

Email me when you get back from your apts., you see the case manager too don't you. That will help you get on track. I will be home the rest of the day after I get the stuff at Aldi’s.

More later, Love, Mother

from jonathon springer <jonathonspringer@yahoo.com> 
to David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
date Fri, Mar 12, 2010 at 6:35 AM
subject Greetings...

Hello David,

I've been thinking and wondering. Is every thing OK? I didn't hear from you after my last e-mail.

I do hope you're alright! Please drop me a quick line.

Cheers,
Jonathon

Jonathon I. Springer
1262 Dot Riser Drive
Sparta, NC 28675

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
Hi Jonathon,

I consider myself an accomplished scientist and believe I have the theory of everything and grand unified theory that everyone is looking for. It pains me to have to say this – I am also diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic. I am not a paranoid schizophrenic by genetics but have had episodes of psychosis and delusional thinking and am on antipsychotic medication. I have a lot of confidence in my work despite the mental illness and believe at some point in the future will be recognized for my work and will come into wealth.

The reason I say I am not a paranoid schizophrenic by genetics is because I had a really great childhood and college experience. In the spring following graduation from Cornell in 1974 I used the street drug PCP. When I awoke the following morning I was a different person. I was depressed, paranoid and had a thought process disorder I likened to a loss of analytical skills. Before using the PCP I never had any of those disturbing symptoms. Six difficult years later I slipped into psychosis. Over the past 30 years I have been psychotic 7 times ranging in length from 7 weeks to 7 years. I am not really sure my psychosis is in fact a paranoid schizophrenic psychosis or just an altered state that shares some similarities with psychosis, e.g. affects the dopamine system in the brain. I never heard voices or had any hallucinations. I have complete memory throughout those periods of altered states. And I could concentrate, focus and think using my rational mind in those altered states. Those properties differentiate my altered states from typical psychosis.

I am sane and stable now and am working on science again after this latest episode of delusional thinking.

I do believe I will eventually have my work recognized and appreciated for what I think is high economic value and high utility to mankind.

If you are interested please download a creative work I finished in 2007. It’s a screenplay/novel titled *A string theorist meets the fisherman’s son*. It is available as a free pdf download at [http://vixra.org/pdf/0911.0056v1.pdf](http://vixra.org/pdf/0911.0056v1.pdf). It is 214 pages and I have a copyright on it. I reveal quite a bit about myself and what I think is going on in the modern physics community in that work. For instance I think modern physics is mostly a massive charade, a massive conspiracy, a mile high house of cards, in a game started by Einstein.
whose goal is to bring to an end warfare and conflict among mankind. I believe that today as I write this, I know that would appear on the surface to be a delusion but I am quite certain I am right about all of that. I DO know I have the right model and DO know modern physics is mostly bullshit, at least at the level of phenomenology and mechanism.

Again it is painful for me to tell you this.

Best regards,

David Degner

PS Tell me if for some reason the link to the pdf doesn’t work for you. I would like you to read it and in doing so you will learn a lot about what I think is going on and also a lot about me, my experiences with mental illness and a little nutty personal stuff.

jonathon springer to me

Hello David,

Thank you for your heartfelt and honest reply. I know it must have been difficult to have to bare your soul to a friend you haven't even met face to face.

David, I've been through much of what you related, myself...probably on a lesser level of extremes; but I continue to experience the same extremes of expectations...etc. I think of myself as a good writer on many subjects, but I obviously suck at writing about myself, my mental condition...so, please forgive my halting efforts.

I will read your screen play this afternoon and depending on its length, write back to you about it.

Cheers,
Jonathon
Jonathon I. Springer
1262 Dot Riser Drive
Sparta, NC 28675

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Fri, Mar 12, 2010 at 1:12 PM subject Call
Hi Mom,

I just returned from seeing Fran and Ricky Pang my case manager. Things went very well.

Now would be a good time to call.

Sunny here today.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Sat, Mar 13, 2010 at 1:33 PM subject The Hand of God

Hi Mom,

I am on day 4 of total abstinence from alcohol. The fight is going well and I think I can remain on the wagon this time. The real temptation comes after about a week, when I feel I can reward myself by allowing myself to drink. It's difficult to fill the hours of the day without drinking but it is also difficult to get through days while drinking. I find writing emails to you, talking with you on the phone and being productive and working to be the best remedy to fill the hours of the day. It all boils down to the problem of time, having all the hours of the day to fill, to find a way to fill them without drinking, to be productive, even when I have few (practically none) social interactions, what is called a schizoid existence, isolated and mostly alone. Thank you for being in my life. I know how many times when delusional or even psychotic that I have said to you and emailed to you horrible things. You correctly conclude that they are all just manifestations of my mental illness. No one else except for Kevin realizes that and is willing to overlook my bad behavior when delusional or psychotic. I guess I can put Fran and my case manager also in the group that realizes all of that, but unfortunately cannot include Allan, Cain or Mary in that group. Hopefully all those episodes of mental illness are now behind me and I will not have another episode of mental illness.

It was down to -6 last night but has warmed up to 13 and is a very nice and very sunny day. The return of the sun is always welcome in Alaska and on March 21 we will have 12 hours again.

I have been working all week on a very deep problem. Finally, after thinking about it in all the ways possible, I come to the conclusion I will either have to throw out all the physics and chemistry I have
worked on for the last 24 years OR conclude that it is due to the way
God designed things, i.e. the imprint of God's hand on the laws of
physics. I never believed in miracles or ever took the story depicted in
the Bible to be accurate. I always thought that the Bible was written by
man without any intervention by God. But I did always believe in God
and gave to him only a single task, that is to create the matter the
universe started out with. I then considered God an absentee landlord
and that he never interfered with how the universe evolved form that
initial configuration of matter. I thought the laws of physics were
universal and were the same throughout the universe or any universe if
there are more than one. I thought the laws of physics determined the
evolution and fate of the universe. Now I have found God's hand in the
laws of physics. What I mean by that is I have a couple fundamental
laws of physics and they do not derive from rational thought, do not
make sense to me, and I am completely at a loss to derive them from
logic, and must conclude they are the way they are just because God
made things that way. That is rather profound and completely
unexpected to me. I still think the Bible and all religions are just the
work of man, that God doesn't interfere with the evolution and fate of
the universe, that he is an absentee landlord, that the laws of physics
determine the evolution and fate of the universe, but find the indelible
imprint of God's hand as creator of space, time and matter written in the
laws of physics.

I am down to $40 but have stocked up on good food, the freezer and
shelves are just about full. I'm going to Fred's today to get a few more
things that are on sale, and then will have most of what I need
respecting food for the rest of the month. So your check for $150 is
much needed and will arrive just in time. I have been waiting for the
APA deposit in my account, 2 days before the end of the month, to pay
my ATT $49.95 Internet service, always a few weeks late, but will pay
it on time this month so will no longer be behind on any bills.

Email me about a call when you get this.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just found out that I have to do some things and will not be home until
about 7 P.M. Wanted you to know. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to jonathon springer<jonathspringer@yahoo.com>
date Sat, Mar 13, 2010 at 3:37 PM
subject The indelible hand of God
Hi Jonathon,

Many thanks for your reply yesterday. I am writing to you today to apologize ahead of time in case you find my screenplay/novel offensive in any way.

What I was trying to do in the screenplay is point out the absurdity of mankind's ways, preoccupied with weapons and warfare, to make the current configuration, with mutually assured destruction, the world an armed camp, into a farce, an absurdity, the wrong path into the future. The attempt is kind of like what I think the Bible and other religions were trying to do, that I think is to bring about an end to warfare and conflict and to find both redemption and happiness in life.

My ego is tied into the screenplay to a large degree and I have many misgivings and apprehensions about exposing that in a simple and honest fashion to the reader, it seems too personally revealing. After completing the screenplay I put it up on the web and also took it down several times due to those concerns. Finally last November I decided to put it up, make it free and available to everyone, and just hope it does not generate ridicule and even hatred towards me.

Due to my mental illness I have few friends, am estranged even from my siblings, have only for the most part only my mother and my psychiatrist for support, and lead a very lonely, painful existence, a schizoid existence. The only person I forwarded the screenplay to, a roommate and friend from college, who was a plastic surgeon in NYC and now is a writer, did not comment on it, I even alienated him in my episodes of delusions and psychosis, and he has since broken off our relationship. So although it was completed two and a half years ago I have received no feedback on it.

When doing science there is very little trepidation or apprehension about publishing ones work. People can take it or leave, it is just simple truth and I as a scientist I could basically care less how other people feel about it. As a creative author and artist the feelings I have are almost the opposite of that austere veneer. In writing creatively and doing art it is intended for a favorable response, maybe to teach a lesson and the take of the reader or observer is what is so important. So writers and artists have a lot of exposure to how their work is received. I'm sure you are very familiar with that human phenomenon. So now I find myself apprehensive and concerned about your take on my work.

The motivation of a scientist is interesting. I don't know what motivates many scientists but do know what motivates me and also what I think
motivated Einstein and the other leading scientists of his formative era, 1900-1930. Ego is involved in my work as a scientist and I think is involved in many peoples works generally. Financial reward and recognition or even fame is also involved in my work. But my motivations are very pure at the deepest level. When working I seek only truth and that is the foremost rule, just simple objectivity really. I also want to contribute in a significant and meaningful way to mankind's general welfare. As a scientist working in the present I want my works to serve as a catalyst for universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty. I perceive I have a unique role to play in that undertaking for all of mankind due to the Einstein charade or conspiracy that I think is what is really going on in modern physics.

Will I utterly fail in all of that? I don't know, all I know is I have been treated as a crackpot, am in marked disagreement with the existing paradigm's in physics and chemistry and maybe will not succeed at all, at any level or in any way. I very much hope that is not the case, but must acknowledge that reality as a possibility. Doing work with my mind both in science and creative work always fills me with optimism, although at 57, with little to nothing to show for my efforts, it is lonely and depressing at times.

Here's an excerpt from an email to my mother this morning:

"I have been working all week on a very deep problem. Finally, after thinking about it in all the ways possible, I come to the conclusion I will either have to throw out all the physics and chemistry I have worked on for the last 24 years OR conclude that it is due to the way God designed things, i.e. the imprint of God's hand on the laws of physics. I never believed in miracles or ever took the story depicted in the Bible to be accurate. I always thought that the Bible was written by man without any intervention by God. But I did always believe in God and gave to him only a single task, that is to create the matter the universe started out with. I then considered God an absentee landlord and that he never interfered with how the universe evolved form that initial configuration of matter. I thought the laws of physics were universal and were the same throughout the universe or any universe if there are more than one. I thought the laws of physics determined the evolution and fate of the universe. Now I have found God's hand in the laws of physics. What I mean by that is I have a couple fundamental laws of physics and they do not derive from rational thought, do not make sense to me, and I am completely at a loss to derive them from logic, and must conclude they are the way they are just because God made things that way. That is rather profound and completely unexpected to me. I still think the Bible and all religions are just the work of man, that God doesn't interfere with the evolution and fate of
the universe, that he is an absentee landlord, that the laws of physics
determine the evolution and fate of the universe, but find the indelible
imprint of God's hand as creator of space, time and matter written in the
laws of physics."

There are some pure numbers, numbers that do not have the physical
dimensions of meters, kilograms or seconds associated with them that
must be the same throughout the universe. A simple example is pi,
3.14159 ... . It is easy to see that pi must be the same number
throughout the universe since it is the relation of the circumference to
the diameter of a circle. There are many examples from mathematics
and physics of these kind of universal truths, i.e. truths that intelligent
life on a distant planet would also discover. The problem I have been
working on this last week involves those universal, pure, dimensionless
numbers. And what I have found is that, as I described in the above
paragraph, working on this final and deep truth, God seems to have
given us a message in the laws of physics. The message is that God is
real, in charge, and knows that in the final stages of discovering and
articulating a universal physics, a theory of everything, the indelible
signature of God is found at the deepest level in the most fundamental
laws of physics.

Again thanks for your reply yesterday and I sincerely hope I have not
alienated you.

Best,
David

from Anita Degner degneral@gmail.com
to David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
date Sat, Mar 13, 2010 at 5:30 PM
subject call

I just came home and then read your email more carefully. Email me
when it will be a good time to call you, anytime will be fine with me
until ten my time when I will catch the news and then get to bed a little
earlier since we spring ahead to daylight savings tomorrow. I will
make a call to FW now and check on how Louise is. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sat, Mar 13, 2010 at 5:32 PM
subject Re: call

Hi Mom,
Calling now will be an excellent time. I was just writing another email to you.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sat, Mar 13, 2010 at 5:38 PM
subject A message from God

Hi Mom,

The seeds from Canada arrived to day. They were nicely and professionally packaged in a small crush proof plastic disk and there was one extra seed, 11 instead of 10. They looked good. So it appears I have dealt with two ethical businesses this time. Of course I will only know for sure when I have mature plants and sample the harvest.

What I found in my search for the universal laws of physics I interpret as a message from God, the creator of the universe, to me personally, as a scientist. It is really wonderment.

Call after your call to FW.

I went shopping twice today, am down to $9 in my bank account, but the freezer and shelves are full.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sun, Mar 14, 2010 at 5:08 AM
subject Day 5

Hi Mom,

I am on day 5 of sobriety. This time feels different than in the past in that this time I feel I can make it permanent. Thanks for being supportive.

The weather, earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, tsunamis, and disease are the most serious problems mankind faces and cause the most pain, suffering and death. Having food and clean water are also serious problems for so many, especially in Africa and the third world. In view of these serious natural and man made problems it certainly seems immoral and an utter waste for almost all the countries in the world to
have armies and weapons, to sell armaments and be developing weapons. I think America is the worst offender regarding that, the Vietnam war a glaring example of misguided human activity. Warfare and conflict have been with us through all of recorded history, an integral part of every society, every culture and every country.

What does that have to do with me? Well my screenplay/novel was and still is an attempt to end the continuous cycle of warfare and conflict. I have devoted most of my life to seeking out truth in my work in science and to find a way to end warfare and conflict. I consider ending warfare and conflict a scientists highest calling.

I believe modern physics if a massive fraud, a massive charade, a massive conspiracy, started by Einstein, who's goal is to end warfare and conflict. I find myself as a player in that game, even in a unique position relative to that game, by virtue of having discovered and elucidated the real physics, the real theory of everything, that I think was discovered by Einstein and his peers between 1900 and 1930. That may look delusional to you but I can assure you it's all quite real. It's as transparent to me as is the truth and correctness of the work in physics and chemistry that I have done.

Einstein and his peers were of Judeo-Christian extraction. I believe the conspiracy in science they started is like the authors of the Old Testament. I believe I am in a similar role to the charade in physics and chemistry as the role of Jesus relative to the Old Testament. Again that may appear as a delusion but it is simply true and is obvious and transparent to me.

Of course I am human and humans are frail, make mistakes and err. As a scientist devoted to finding truth I make fewer mistakes and err less than most, but do still make mistakes. I don't think I am making a mistake about the Einstein charade and my role in it.

It has warmed up here and is currently 19.

Email me about a call when you get back from church.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just got to use the computer, earlier there was an update on Adobe going on. I am not sure I needed it but didn't know what to do about it so left it do its thing. I hope the computer knows what is going on.
I put the check into the post office - see the next pick up is 2:30 Mon. P.M. so it will get out on the first pickup for the day. Maybe it will be there on Wed. then but surely by Thurs I would think.

Re a call, I am going to be home for the day. V is taking M back. I thought I would heat up some of my stuff in the freezer(take homes) but email me if you would like me to call first. or when you would like me to call. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

I just got up from a nap and am going to watch basketball and then the NCAA selection show for the March Madness tournament. I'll email you about a call after that that will be about 6 your time. Love, David

Anita Degner Good, I will plan accordingly. This is a good day for a nap too since it is d...

David Degner to Anita

I'm taking a nap and will email you about 8 your time for a call.

David Degner to Anita

Give me a call when you get this.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sun, Mar 14, 2010 at 8:30 PM
subject For now just concentrate on sobriety, I will stay put, work from home, and work towards a better life

Hi Mom,

I didn't get anything done today, was depressed thinking about my episodes of mental illness, but didn't drink. That is enough of a goal for right now and for this month I will call staying on the wagon being productive and a success.

In thinking about the longer term I don't know what to think exactly. First everything depends on mental stability and not having any more episodes of mental illness. Assuming I do remain stable and don't have another episode of mental illness there are a number of possible things I can do. I can work on my own at home here in the condo on science and writing projects and wait until I receive recognition and financial reward to move. For that I have everything I need and that is not a bad
option since I am productive and can work on my own and it is really a pretty good option since I have everything I need. I can go back to school somewhere but then would have to move and would have extra expenses. I don't want to have to move but also am not satisfied here in my condo, but that might just be the grass is always greener phenomenon and maybe life would be just as difficult and depressing somewhere else. I really don't want to go back to school, I seem to be getting too old to do that and also have a difficult time learning, memorizing and regurgitating extraneous stuff that would be required in any school option. I could try to get hired by a technology company. I have sent many letters out over the years, to drug companies, to computer science companies, and have never even gotten a response, so that doesn't look like it would pan out, but I can always keep trying.

So I guess it is really pretty clear. I should stay here in my condo where I have everything I need to work and be productive and focus on my science and writing projects. Moving is a gigantic hassle and pain in the ass. There really is nowhere to move to. So I should try to turn the corner to success, recognition and financial reward working right here. I have good medical care here with Fran and ACMHS, I have all the shopping I need close by, I have the exercise bike and can walk in the summer, so basically I have everything I need to get into good shape and be productive right here.

In the past as you know I have always been very restless and wanted to move back to the states. Now I think getting recognition through working here at home is the best way forward for me. So this time recovering from mental illness I feel different than I have in the past. I think a lot of that is due to being on the 10mg dose of medication.

So it is pretty simple -- no drinking and work from home until I make money working and can move.

The plants are 1 week old and look good. They have the right shaped leafs for good pot although it will take another 6 or 7 weeks to know for sure if the quality is good.

Thanks for all the support, the financial support, the moral support, the emails and phone calls. I will work my way to a better life in the future starting out from my present situation. I have all the resources I need to do that.

About the "message from God" I definitely will work a lot more on that problem. I have a good number of difficult science problems to work on in the coming months to years.
Love, David

PS In writing this I am starting to feel optimistic, realizing I have everything I need to get to a better place.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to jonathon springer <jonathonspringer@yahoo.com>
date Sun, Mar 14, 2010 at 8:52 PM
subject About God

Hi Jonathon,

I have a lot more work to do on the problem where I thought it was God’s hand at work. As a scientist I would find that pretty hard to believe in. I believe God created the matter configuration of the Big Bang and since has been an absentee landlord and the evolution and fate of the universe is determined by the laws of physics and chance.

Again I hope you don’t find the screenplay/novel offensive. You can skim over the science, there is quite a bit of it in there. If you were to find it offensive, stupid and not a good thing to have up on the web I would consider taking it down.

Regards,
David

jonathon springer to me

Good morning David,

I hope you’re doing well. I’m just barely awake, about to have a second cup of coffee which I hope will do the job.

I want to apologize for not responding to your earlier messages. I’m more than a bit overwhelmed at the moment.

I promise to read your screenplay (and give you an honest, heartfelt critique) as soon as I get through this stressful period.

Your friend,
Jonathon
Jonathon I. Springer
1262 Dot Riser Drive
Sparta, NC 28675

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
Hi Mom,

I think you would probably agree with everything that was in the last email. It makes a lot of sense. I have everything I need right here in my condo and in Anchorage to be able to work and be highly productive for at least the next year. Then I don't have to worry about moving and all that entails, I don't have anywhere good to move to at this point, I have a lot to work on and I can focus on doing good science and good writing and when I receive recognition and financial reward I can move to wherever I want to and set up my own company, that is something I have always wanted to do.

I got a lot of good work done last week, found some really interesting problems and equations and am working again in science and using math again, that I always find really challenging, stimulating and rewarding.

I have been in communication with a new friend. He is looking at my screenplay/novel. I finished that in September 2007 and have a copyright on it. I have never had any feedback on it from anyone. I intended it to be kind of like a modern Bible. I don't know if people would find it offensive and in poor taste and I don't know if I should even have it up on the web. So his take on it will be really valuable for me in determining all of that. I explained to him about my mental illness and circumstances and he made a very nice reply. I hope I have not alienated him by being so honest.

Very few people are still on Prolixin today with the modern drugs. I am going to try out a new one that came out in 2003 called Abilify. I am waiting to get firmly over the drinking and to start to lose weight, maybe I'll start on it at the end of this month or the end of next month. I already have a prescription for it filled. I am going to continue taking the Prolixin for about 3 weeks while I change over. I'll get the Prolixin in 2.5 mg tablets and take 7.5 mg the first week on the Abilify, 5.0 mg the second week and 2.5 mg the third week. That's how you get off these kind of medications by stepping down over several weeks. I'm sure you can see the reason for that. I know I certainly don't want to slip into mental illness again. When Abilify came out it was only in 10 mg tablets and it was one size fits all. Now it also comes in 15 mg tablets. The maximum the drug makers information states is 15 mg. But when I asked Fran about she recommended 30 mg for me and said she had people on 60 mg. I pointed out the manufacturers recommendations
and she wrote me two prescriptions, 10 mg for the first week and then 15 mg. I was on way too much Zyprexa and think ACMHS over prescribes, not paying attention to the manufacturers guidelines. So I feel safe aiming at the 15 mg dose for maintenance. I will tell you when I transition over and also go in to see Fran every two weeks until I am confident it will work for me. When I got off the Zyprexa in March 2006 I became psychotic in 3 weeks. I don't want a problem like that again. I explained my strategy to Fran when I saw her last Friday and she thought it was a good transition plan and pointed out there is no problem taking two anti psychotic medications at the same time. The manufacturer advises not spending too much time on two medications and making the transition as short as possible.

The reason I want to get off the Prolixin is it lowers my testosterone, my libido and my desire to get exercise, making me very sedentary and therefore fat. When I first got on Prolixin in July 1984 I put on 60 pounds in the first 6 months and it has been on ever since. Before getting on the Prolixin I always enjoyed very much getting a lot of exercise and working out so I hope I can return to that healthy profile now by getting on the Abilify.

I have taken all the nutty, defiant and potentially controversial stuff off my web page on medical marijuana and what is left I feel comfortable having up on the web. Check it out [http://theboldruler.com/](http://theboldruler.com/)

Have you followed the news of the guy in California whose Prius supposedly went out of control with the accelerator stuck and the highway patrol got in front of him and helped bring it under control. I was suspicious because that had not been reported for Prius'. Now I found out he declared bankruptcy on a $700,000 debt a year or two ago and he has a lawyer to speak for him. I think he did it all intentionally, is a complete fraud but for what reason it is hard to speculate.

The only course I would want to take is on the MIT Open Source site with video for 36 lectures, lecture motes and problems. I may order the text they used from Amazon. The topic is thermodynamics. That's really good. I took that course at Cornell and excelled at it and M will be taking it in physical chemistry his junior year. It's the most important and hardest subject in chemistry and engineering and I deal with many of the ideas involved in my work. It's also the most important subject to master to solve the energy problem mankind faces.

Email me with your thoughts on my last email, this email and how you think my plans are going.

Love, David
from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Mon, Mar 15, 2010 at 8:09 AM subject Abilify

Here's the info on Abilify.

http://www.abilify.com/

The recommended dose for adults with schizophrenia is 10-15 mg daily. The maximum dose is 30 mg. So I feel comfortable planning to take 15 mg.

Anita to me

Thanks for your emails. I have read them all and since you asked me what I think of them (although I should think about it more) it seems you have made positive strides in addressing your situation. I want to read them over again and also check the sites but right now have to finish my laundry and do the dammingly since someone is stopping by this P.M. - the person is allergic to cats so I want to have any cat hair, etc. cleaned up. I am not sure she is a allergic to cats as the thinks she is - is also allergic to fish, etc.

Good luck on day 6.
I am on the reg. time schedule - getting up at what I consider my usual time. I did scan over the WSJ and on B1 was an article entitled "Lawyers Vie for Lead Roles in Toyota Lawsuits" I don't know if you can get that on the internet. There is news on the TV now about the credibility of that guy in California. It did sound suspicious right from the start.
Sorry, but I have to get going here. Maybe we can talk later this P.M. - you suggest a time and email me with what thoughts may be going through your mind. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Mon, Mar 15, 2010 at 1:27 PM subject Call

Hi Mom,

I took a 10 mg Abilify today along with 10 mg Prolixin, so I started the transition. I also discussed it with Ricky, my case manager, made an
appointment with Fran for April 8th, and called Charlotte so I can see her once a week for the next couple of months.

Call when you get this or email me and tell when you want to call, after O'Reilly is OK.

I watched Obama's speech in Ohio on healthcare, he was on the stump again, and he even convinced me (not really, close anyway) that it was the thing to do. I agree that something has to be done, and agreed on all his statements about it, but think the bill does not do all that in a straightforward way.

Love, David

Anita to me

Is it O.K. if I call now? I want to listen to the national news at 5:30 because they might say something about what the campaigner said today. Email me, Mother

David Degner to Anita

I just got back from the store and the bank with Stacy. I had to borrow $5 from her so my electric bill wouldn't be NSF. The phone bill auto deducted from my checking account today and I was about $1 short for the electric bill because of that. Email when you would like to call.

Anita to me

I am going to listen to Hannity - he is talking about health care now. Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Tue, Mar 16, 2010 at 5:41 AM
subject Sane, open and honest

Hi Mom,

I was making a simple error in algebra on the problem I have been working on. I recall I also made the same error before on a comment I made on a blog last fall. A little disturbing that I made such a simple error twice, much less had it in my work all last week. Changes my thinking about an embedded "message from God" and makes me wonder if I have a far more serious error somewhere. A lot to work on.
What do you think of health care reform? We are both on government health care, you on Medicare and me on Medicaid. Obama convinced me yesterday that it is a good idea. I think it is the first step to eliminating the insurance companies. As someone who could never get insurance coverage due to a preexisting condition I know how bad the insurance companies screw some, many, people. I would prefer to see a single payer system and the complete elimination of the insurance companies. I strongly dislike the pro-life movement. I think they are the same fanatics that ushered in prohibition back in the 1930's, are against the legalization of marijuana, and are Bush loving war mongers. By they I mean the Christian right, who are anything but Christian in my opinion. And I find the Roman Catholics completely out to lunch. I think the priests are just a bunch of sick pedophiles and the Catholic parishioners nuts. People that believe Jesus was the son of God and born to the virgin Mary and died on the cross for our sins are so delusional they should just be exterminated, they certainly can't accomplish anything in science, or even appreciate science for that matter. I believe God created the matter configuration of the Big Bang and since has been an absentee landlord and the evolution and fate of the universe is determined by the laws of physics and chance. I also believe in right and wrong actions and thoughts and an eternal afterlife. I summarized my beliefs and what can be known in my screenplay/novel.

The first day on Abilify was a little difficult at times. I had slightly blurred vision for a while, even now a bit. I had a little difficulty sleeping. Both are known side effects. The leading side effect is akathisia. Do you know what that is? It's restlessness. It all makes me apprehensive about getting on a new medication but I am going to stick with it until I am off the Prolixin, about 3 weeks, and can adjust fully to being on the Abilify. As I'm sure you know often times drugs have side effects at first that go away in a few weeks as the body adjusts. The anti-psychotic medication business is a complicated one, what with questions of efficacy and the serious side effects, a real mine field.

Did you watch O'Reilly yesterday? He discussed the drug cartel violence rampant in Mexico with Mary Katherine Hamm and Juan Williams. Three cretins. The solution is obvious, legalize recreational drugs and end the war! I want the government out of my life and out of everyone’s life period. If you want to use recreational drugs that's your private business, no on else. How many people have to be exploited by drug dealers and how many have to die before we have freedom? Cain used cocaine from age 18 up until 2003, the last I knew and probably still does. He functioned fine doing that. The war on drugs is a war on freedom. The Christian right again sticking their fat noses in the private lives of everyone. Bush and Obama also have used cocaine. I have used
cocaine and know what I am talking about. Clinton didn't inhale, yeah right. What blatant hypocrisy. The only relief I have ever been able to find to all the hypocrisy and violence in the world promulgated by lunatic fanatics is to smoke marijuana. My love affair with America ended with the Vietnam War.

I realize now I probably have made an error in my model. It doesn't change anything important but does disprove an interesting quantitative result. I had it right 10 years ago in my books. It also means I was completely wrong thinking God's hand was included in the laws of physics. Of course since God created matter in the first place he certainly knows the laws of physics and also that intelligent life would emerge that could figure out the laws of physics. As a human who has figured out his handiwork I do feel a special relationship to God.

The plants are looking excellent.

Yesterday the high was 41 and the low 18. Currently it is 15. I don't have any money so can't go shopping until your check arrives but have everything I need so don't even have to start the truck for a couple of days.

Love, David

PS A theory in science has to have the property of being falsifiable. That means if it doesn't meet a certain test then it is wrong and you have to throw it out. I realize now I have found the error in my work because I found a test it couldn't meet. It has to do exactly with the step where I thought God's hand was in the laws of physics and he put it there as a message to me. I see now I was just wrong on that. Very deep. Phew!
oversee it. I not only want the insurance companies out of health care I want the government largely out of it too.

Yes, what I do is research. I usually get up around 3 AM and spend about 3 hours working on science, watching Fox and Friends, writing an email to you, and having coffee. That is the part of the day I feel most productive and free of depression and optimistic. Then I have a nice breakfast and take a nap for a couple of hours. When I get up then is when I have problems not feeling so great and often when I felt an impulse to drink.

I am not going to get much done the rest of the day. I worked out a nice problem in science this morning and that satisfies my need to be productive for the day.

On day 7 of sobriety. I feel this time I will win.

Email me about a call when you get back from the doctor and get this. I will be gone for about 25 minutes to pick up some prescriptions at Fred's.

Love David

Anita to me

Just got back from Dr. and Walgreens. See your email. I want to take a walk (esp. after they weighed me I have to) but if it is O.K. with you will call you first and then take walk and be home by 5:30 for national news. Email me. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Wed, Mar 17, 2010 at 7:29 AM subject See Charlotte today

Hi Mom,

I saw Kucinich is going to vote for HCR. It will be interesting to see if it passes. I think it will. It's not clear what the polls that are always cited mean since 1/2 the population is on Medicare or Medicaid already. I guess I would like to see it passed but certainly take issue with all the government panels, employees and government intervention it will spawn. I hope all those issues can be resolved down the road in part of a larger revolution to decrease the size of government. As things are going now we will have runaway inflation and be bankrupt at some point in the future.
On day 8 of sobriety. My sleep is not good, had an ache in the head like I did last June but not as bad. I think I have mild sleep apnea. Staying off the alcohol and losing weight should improve the sleep over time. Like I said previously my only goal for now is to quit drinking and I will consider each day a success if I only accomplish that. Charlotte agreed with that and said "One day at a time."

I am going to try to get the notice of trespass UAA has against me lifted. I think I will want to take a course or two next fall or even this summer. I think I will have worked out and written up as much as I can get done by next fall and then will need to move on and take a few courses.

But for now my only goal is to not drink, lose weight and get in better physical shape. Getting on the Abilify is part of that effort since the Prolixin decreases my desire to work out.

I'll email you when I get back from seeing Charlotte who I see at 10:30. I'll look forward to a call than.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Thu, Mar 18, 2010 at 4:45 AM
subject Assessing things and starting over again

Hi Mom,

I have been trying to figure out what to do in the future. I last took calculus and introductory physics at IUPU in 1986/1987, 23 years ago. It is true I have worked in science over the years but used and reinforced few of the working skills learned in those courses, having gone my own way on new work. I have been met with total rejection of my work. I am of course very rusty in the basics after all that time and after the too many episodes of psychosis. It's not that I have lost the belief that my work in science is correct and valuable, rather I am just dealing realistically with the situation I now find myself in. In mathematics and physics the rule is, as it is in many avenues in life, use it or lose it. So I am thinking of starting over at the introductory level and repeating the calculus sequence and the introductory physics sequence. I feel I need to do that to go on to the more advanced courses I would like to take. If I make a new start now in three years I will be able to enter graduate school if I choose to do that. Being really solid in the fundamentals is essential to making a new start.
Unfortunately in this last episode of psychosis I sent that letter to social security and also put up on websites all my delusional garbage, that I have since taken down. The only thing I am really worried about is the letter to social security. Not much I can do about it now, Fran is aware of it since I had sent a copy to her, I also sent copies to Justice John Roberts, President Obama, and social security headquarters, quite nuts. Hopefully it will just be dismissed by everyone as the work of a mentally ill person, especially social security.

I am on day 9 of sobriety. I hope to lose the excess weight in the coming months and start to exercise, both much needed.

Well I am 57 but you are never too old to make a new start in life. That is what I am trying to do. I have some unusual assets, my innate intelligence, I am blessed with youth, my independent work in science, am already very familiar with many of the high level ideas in science and have worked at a high level in the past.

20 here.

Email me when you get this about a call this morning.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Thu, Mar 18, 2010 at 12:42 PM
subject Cutting pills in half, trying to find optimism, filling the hours of the day without drinking

Hi Mom,

I guess you know well I didn't choose to be a mentally ill person and have suffered immeasurably from it. If physician assisted suicide was available for me I would check out immediately, and I think society is cruel to keep someone like me alive against what I feel would be my own best outcome, namely to end my life and move on.

Well I can't commit suicide so I try to make the best of it. Only productive work and an intellectual challenge gives me a feeling of optimism. That's why I try to plan for myself a future life that incorporates those things and that's why I feel I need to attend UAA over the coming years. I have almost always wanted to move somewhere where I could attend school and that has always been an
integral part of my thinking except for when I am psychotic, that has been all too often and have been truly horrible and painful experiences.

I know you know all this and also know that I only really find relief from the mental pain of my illness through smoking marijuana and that's presumably why you have been of such valuable assistance in my getting seeds again.

So making plans to go back to school and try to salvage a better future is really important to me. You are not going to be around forever and in my current situation I have only you to communicate with (outside of caregivers like Fran and Charlotte) and support me and in the past and present would certainly be grievously hurt without that support.

Fran is on vacation for two weeks so I will cut the pills in 1/3 to get up to the 20 mg dose I hope will be safe respecting a relapse into psychosis. The main reason I am getting on the Abilify is due to hoped for better efficacy in treating the mental illness. I put on 60 lbs when I got on Prolixin in 1984 and have never gotten it off, except for getting down to 247 in 2003/2004 when I was psychotic. Prolixin decreases my ability to work out and I also hope the Abilify will help out there. I see Fran on April 8th.

So for now and the next two months I am focused on not drinking and transitioning over safely to the Abilify. I work in science and watch TV to try to fill out the days and find emailing you and talking on the phone two very positive things to do each day.

If I can stay off the alcohol, lose weight and get exercise, get stabilized on the Abilify, get the notice of trespass by UAA lifted, have good marijuana again, take courses at UAA (in chronological order) I can still have a pretty good life. Right now it is difficult but I am making a good start on all that.

Thanks for the support and I sincerely apologize for the abusive and vile things I have said to you in episodes of psychosis.

I have lasagna in the oven, yum.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just checked my email before the walk I was going to take. It would be a good time to call you before the walk. Email me if it is O.K. to call now. Has turned bright and sunny today so guess I will have to start to
use the sun screen since I can't talk in the shade since trees don't have leaves. Love, Mother

David to Anita

Yeah call now Mom.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to jonathon springer<jonathonspringer@yahoo.com>
date Thu, Mar 18, 2010 at 3:26 PM
subject Google, mental illness, plans

Hi Jonathon,

If you do a Google search of my name a few things I did when delusional in recent months will come up. I do suffer from mental illness, although as I pointed out in an earlier email do not consider myself a paranoid schizophrenic by genetics. When I am delusional I think the government has me under surveillance and that surveillance is even capable of reading my mind to some extent. Those kind of delusions are common in paranoid schizophrenics when psychotic. I say this as a warning and explanation for what you may find. I have since taken down all that nutty stuff but it will still show up in cached copies for a while before running its course from taking down the websites. I say all this as a warning because you would find some of the stuff a bit disturbing and I wanted you to know how and why it got there and why it has been deleted.

After this recent episode of delusions and maybe even psychosis I am starting on a new medication, Abilify, which I hope will have higher efficacy in treating me. I have been on one of the older medications, Prolixin, that is not used very often anymore and am getting on one of the newer medications that is called a third generation one.

From first being diagnosed with mental illness and getting on medication in 1984 I have drank beer daily. I am on day 9 of sobriety and trying to make that permanent. So between trying to quit drinking and getting on a new medication I have about all I can handle at this point. Since I work as a theoretician I can always be somewhat productive pretty much no matter what, being a theoretician means your research is just thinking, but I have gone about as far as I can go with my model at this point in time and will start writing it up soon. I plan to complete that by August and am planning to take courses in math, physics, chemistry and electrical engineering starting in the fall at the University of Alaska Anchorage with the aim of getting into graduate school in physics or chemistry in a couple of years. I am
hoping to promulgate my scientific works along the way, hopefully by
interesting some professors and other students. I still aim for and hope
for my works to revolutionize physics and chemistry and believe they
have the intrinsic merit to accomplish that, so remain optimistic about
that.

About the screenplay/novel what I am really interested in is if you feel
comfortable with it. If you do not feel comfortable I will take it down
from the web and just consider it an artistic work that didn't succeed. I
may try a new creative writing project at some point in the future, I
think the ideas in the screenplay/novel were good and the goal good but
the effort might not have succeeded in making them realizable at this
point.

Regards and thanks,
David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Fri, Mar 19, 2010 at 5:48 AM
subject Day 10 of recovery

Hi Mom,

Well the HCR vote is on Sunday and O'Reilly is going to have a special
edition of the Factor to cover it. Obama has postponed his southeast
Asia trip. Everyone is watching. It certainly is good theater and
certainly is close, coming right down to the wire.

I am on day 10 of sobriety. It is really true that you have to take it one
day at a time. I can only get at most 3 hours of sleep at a time but after
3 hours last night got up and felt rested and refreshed. I take a nap later
in the day, sometime two. I am bored at times, depressed at times, find
it difficult to fill the hours of the day, but have no urge to drink, so
think I can finally put drinking behind me. As I stay off the alcohol,
lose weight and start to get exercise I think my sleep will improve
dramatically.

I am going to stock up on navel oranges today and tomorrow. They are
$0.58 a lb. I have some celery in the refrigerator and am going to get a
large (around 5 lbs @ $0.88 a lb) chicken today and make stuffing for
it. My stuffing consists of dried cubed whole wheat bread, celery,
onion, Smart Balance, pork sausage, sage, pepper and salt.

The Cornell basketball game comes on at 8:30. It should be a good
game.
Email me about a call and maybe call this morning. I forgot what you told me you were doing today.

Love, David

Anita to me

Thanks for the update. I have a busy day today. The Seminary Guild meets at 11:30 - they always have a good attendance since it starts with a lunch. My morning schedule then is getting ready to go - wash my hair, etc.. So my morning is busy.

Then I am going to stop at store after meeting (about 3) and after that go to the Fish Fry at the nearby Catholic church and pick up the Friday fish fry special for Sally (who lives downstairs) I go about 4:50 to get ahead of the big rush. She really looks forward to having that. Since I have a big lunch I will not get a carry out for me - but will see when I get there. It is $6.50 for two sides, roll, and large piece of fish. Desserts are .50 extra.

Enjoy all the basketball today. It is 40 here this morning but should warm up. Rain starting late tonight and throughout weekend they say.. I will email you when I get back.

Louise is getting better slowly but still in the ICU where she went after surgery two weeks ago today.

Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Sat, Mar 20, 2010 at 6:02 AM subject Changing plans

Hi Mom,

I am rethinking my plans to attend UAA. Maybe I'll just work on my own. I can do any review I need to on my own. Then I'll concentrate on writing up my work. I've noticed that when recovering from an episode of psychosis I always start out by going back to square one, thinking I need to retake calculus and introductory physics and then a little while later I realize that’s the last thing I need to do since I am strong in those areas.

You were lucky the flat didn't occur while you were driving and also that some students could mount the spare.
Email me about a call when you get this.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just checked email - I had earlier and it wasn't here yet. I am getting my laundry started, etc. Is it a good time to call you about 11 my time? That would be in 45 min. Turned cold here again - 40 this morning and predict snow flurries this eve. email me. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindeger@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sun, Mar 21, 2010 at 2:25 PM
subject A breakdown

Hi Mom,

I drank yesterday. Getting back on the wagon today. I was feeling really awful and felt I needed relief. When I am feeling suicidal it is really difficult to resist drinking. I feel OK today.

So for now I have my hands full getting on the Abilify and concentrating on not drinking. Both are stressful. Life is difficult, stressful, lonely and seems too much to handle at times. I have had a truly horrible life.

Kevin stopped by yesterday. It was good to see him since I hadn't seen him in awhile.

The HCR debate is supposed to go on for 2 hours so you'll be able to watch it when you get home.

Email me about a call.

Love, David

Anita to me

I just got home 25 min. ago, turned on the TV but seemed they had not voted yet. So turned to Fox News and see that they are still at it and talk about the first vote today. What was that about?

Did you drink before or after Kevin came yesterday? Good luck to stay on the wagon today. A day at a time. How do you think you are doing
on the med. change?
The concert was the best - it is 2'15" long but we had two little stand up times. It didn't seem that long, was in German with English side by side on the program so I reviewed my German this time.

E mail me when to call. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

O'Reilly is going to be on in a few minutes. Why don't you call after O'Reilly.

David Degner to Anita

I drank after Kevin came over. I don't know for sure but have some feelings in my head, minor aches or sensations, that I think are due to the Abilify. I've been on 15 mg for 4 days so it is going OK. Hannity and Greta are going to be on too today. Call anytime as there will be 3 hours of Fox coverage all evening long. Palin is on O'Reilly right now. Love, David

David Degner to Anita

Yeah I'm watching O'Reilly. Call anytime since the vote will be going on for what looks like a couple of hours.

David Degner to Anita

I am thinking about sending the following letter to social security in an effort to undo any possible investigation they might undertake in response to my letter to them. It's a little chaotic and poorly written on purpose. Do you think it would be a good letter to send them?

Just talked on the phone and I agree talking about it to Fran and Ricky when I see them on April 8th is the thing to do.

March 22, 2010,

Dear Social Security,

I sent you a letter on December 1st, 2009. I was psychotic at the time and massively delusional. I continue to go into episodes of psychosis and am starting out on a new medication that hopefully will have higher efficacy in treating my schizophrenia. You should file that letter where it belongs, that is in the wastebasket. It was largely fiction. When psychotic I think I am under surveillance and my mind is being read
and that the president and Supreme Court have authorized that surveillance. When psychotic I think I am a modern day Jesus acting out in a massive conspiracy aimed at an end to warfare and conflict. When psychotic I think I am one of the smartest persons on the planet and that many people are persecuting me, including many in government and at social security. When psychotic I think I am a five star general in the military. The massively delusional motivation of the fictional letter to you was to “prepare” for a seminal legal battle that would end up in the Supreme Court when warfare and conflict come to an end. During this recent episode of psychosis I also posted on a website my delusions, sent letters to President Obama, Chief Justice John Roberts, Senators Murkowski and Begich, and some area psychiatrists, including my “scientific” interpretation of the machine that reads my mind, grandiose and persecutorial delusions, and what I thought was the seminal legal war between good and evil. It’s all very embarrassing and leaves me suicidal.

It is my hope that on the new antipsychotic medication I will not have another episode of psychosis. I have had 8 episodes ranging in length between 7 weeks and 7 years. I have been psychotic for 8 of the last 10 years.

My apologies, sorry to have exposed you to my mental illness.

Sincerely,

David Degner
180 Fulcrum Drive #1
Anchorage, AK 99504
SSN: 095-33-9707

Anita to me

After reading it I am more convinced that it would be best to discuss and get advice of Fran, etc. She knows your history (I think) and would be respected by SS I would assume. The voting is soon to begin, I guess it is historical so will watch. Love,

Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sun, Mar 21, 2010 at 11:49 PM
subject Day 1, smoking, the economic day of reckoning, SS letter, working on my own for the coming year, plants, new challenge

Hi Mom,
I am starting a new sobriety streak. I have made it through day 1 without drinking. The last streak was 10 days. I know I’ve said it many times before but this time I will make it permanent.

I took a 20 mg Zyprexa tablet about 20 minutes ago. In two hours from taking it I go to sleep and get 7 or 8 hours of sleep. I want to get good sleep tonight is why I took it and when I get up I'm going to try to quit smoking. I have found if I get good sleep I am best able to quit smoking the next morning. I have some Nicorette gum on hand for cravings. I really want to quit smoking

I followed all the votes and then Obama's words following. Did you catch that? I am glad for Obama that he got HCR through the congress. I wish Obama well on his change and transformation attempts. I think somewhere down the line we are going to face a real economic disaster. Right now with the Dow pushing 11,000 and interest rates low and little inflation many have been lulled into a false sense of confidence. Unemployment will remain high for years since it is difficult to create real jobs. We have been sending jobs overseas for the last 20 years, attracted by the low cost of labor and easy profits and have decimated our manufacturing base. We now have a serious structural problem (not enough jobs) in the economy and there is no easy fix. The massive deficits are going to catch up, interest rates will have to go up, we will inevitably get significant inflation, entitlement costs will continue to increase, so we are facing economic Armageddon. We are not the only country in trouble, it's all over in the developed world. So although I am glad to see HCR pass and Obama to succeed I am looking forward to the day of reckoning, when the US loses its top Moody's credit rating, deficit debt service soars, and social security and health care finish us off. It will take a total collapse to teach the lesson that is needed.

I'll show Fran the letter I wrote for social security and ask if she could be some help, maybe by writing a letter to them telling of my psychosis' and delusions. She kind of offered to do that when I saw her on the 12th. I don't want trouble with social security and of course the letter I sent them last December may bring trouble.

I'll see Fran once a month and Charlotte once a week for the next three months as I try to get on the Abilify and try to be stable. I have cut my Prolixin dose to 5 mg and will cut it to 2.5 mg on Thursday and increase my Abilify dose to 20 mg then. Then the following Thursday I will stop the Prolixin altogether. Then when I see Fran April 8 I will be off the Prolixin for a week and on a 20 mg dose of Abilify. I reviewed that schedule with Fran in our last meeting. That is the safe way to get
off one medication, stepping down over three weeks, and getting on a new medication, stepping up over several weeks.

I'll wait until June or July to try to get the notice of trespass from UAA lifted. But for now I am planning to work on my own and not take courses at UAA. I am also going to send out letters seeking employment to various companies -- drug companies, software companies and green energy companies. I have ideas and have done work in all those areas. I also want to contact some professors in mechanical and electrical engineering at UAA about my solar collector. I would like to get some students working on it. I have what I claim is the cheapest way to collect solar energy and convert it to electricity. I wrote about it in my screenplay and want to make a working model of the device in the coming year or two.

I transplanted the marijuana plants today, at two weeks from germination, to the large pots and put them under the lights. They look excellent. The next thing to find out is how many males I have in the 13 LA Confidential (the name of one of the strains) plants. I'll know in 2 or 3 weeks. It should be 50%. Then I will pollinate the females and cut the males down and throw them out. All you use for medicinal purposes is the female flowers, the males have no medicinal value. The other strain, Mazar Kush, is feminized seeds, meaning they will all be females. I have 12 of those. I have never used feminized seeds before but the seed suppliers have been selling them for many years, at a premium price.

I have only been sane for two weeks. I sure hope the Abilify has high efficacy for my problems. I can't go through another episode of psychosis. I know you agree with that and also hope for high efficacy for the Abilify.

The writing project for the coming year is a good challenge. It'll be mostly my chemistry but also a lot of physics and will be aimed at undergraduates in physics, chemistry, biology, engineering, mathematics and computer science. I've worked out a lot of chemistry and electrical engineering over the years that I have as yet to write up. There is no need to attend any courses to do all of that. I want to include good hand written graphics since they are such an important part of the document.

26 here now.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
Hi Mom,

I got 7 hours sleep on the Zyprexa and have been up for 3 hours and haven't had a smoke. I had 2 pieces of the Nicorette gum right when I got up. The tobacco addiction is really a bad one and I want to finally quit. I was a heavy smoker, about 2 packs a day, rolled my own from pipe tobacco I got online from a small company in Pennsylvania. When I quit in 1986 I had no problem and quit for 15 years, so I know I can do it and its not that bad, but then again I have had difficulty quitting the last 7 years since starting again while I was psychotic in May 2003. It requires sanity to quit. When psychotic I think tobacco is safe and has been genetically modified to achieve that and that there is a conspiracy among smokers to not reveal that tobacco is now safe. Just one more of the delusions I operate under when psychotic. My smoking bothers me as much as my drinking did. Like drinking, smoking causes a lot of anxiety and stress due to the health implications.

When psychotic I think that 9-11 was not real, that it was staged, and that the Iraq and Afghanistan wars are also fake wars, made to look like real wars, but that there is a secret military operation underway to end warfare and conflict. Then I believe I am a five star general in that fake war. Now sane I find the Iraq war highly immoral and unjustifiable and think of Bush and Cheney as war mongers. It certainly wasn't worth the lives of over 4000 American soldiers. I find any and all war today morally reprehensible. The goal of my screenplay/novel was to bring to an end warfare and conflict.

Also when psychotic I thought O'Reilly, Beck, Palin and Limbaugh were my supporters and sending me hidden messages in their programs. Those secret messages in the environment are a common delusion in paranoid schizophrenics and are called ideas of reference. Now sane I find I don't like their politics.

Also when psychotic I think Dad is still alive and involved in the technology that reads my mind. I believe I am under surveillance and believe that the surveillance can read my mind. This is also a common paranoid schizophrenics delusion, called broadcasting thoughts.

So you can see I have all kinds of delusions when psychotic. I'll point all that out to Fran next time I see her also discuss it with Charlotte.
Well it's a lot of transformation for me, recovering from psychosis, quitting drinking, quitting smoking and getting on a new medication. I think I will be successful on all of them because I am sane now and because Abilify has good efficacy.

Email me when you get this about a call.

28 and overcast today.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just got up from my nap and decided to check email before I go to the auto garage for the 3 P.M. apt. to put on the new tire and rotate them around so newest ones will be in front. Will email you after I read yours and get back. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Mon, Mar 22, 2010 at 3:41 PM subject Day 2, day 1, major transformations, call

Hi Mom,

It was good you called when you did. Like I said I was suddenly feeling some anxiety and a little weird, wondered if it was a side effect from the Abilify, so I used the electronic cigarette and talked on the phone and then felt fine.

Yes I have about all I can handle to give up the alcohol and the cigarettes and get stabilized on the Abilify and worry about social security.

I agree talking to Fran about social security is the thing to do.

On day 2 of this abstinence streak. I don't feel like drinking. When I do it seems to come on suddenly, like it did Saturday, and is difficult to resist.

On day 1 of quitting the tobacco. I allowed myself to use the electronic cigarette in addition to the Nicorette gum. Doing well with those two drug administration vehicles to fight cravings. Like I said smoking gives me a lot of anxiety and stress and defeating smoking is very important to me, almost as important as the alcohol. Defeating both is very important to me.
I've been on the Abilify for 8 days, starting out with 3 days at 10 mg, then the last 5 days at 15 mg. On Thursday I will bump up to 20 mg and cut the Prolixin to 2.5 mg. Then in a week finally off the Prolixin altogether. Two weeks from this Thursday I see Fran.

31 here now.

Email me about a call sometime during O'Reilly or Hannity. They should both be interesting tonight.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just finished my cabbage and polish sausage meal. It makes almost three meals. Now I am listening to O'Reilly and it is interesting. Will call sometime. Love, Mother

Anita to me

Is it O.K. to call in about 20 min or so? I should call to FW and find out how Lois is first, and they are on EST. Email me. The stuff on Hannity seems to be repeating itself now. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

That would be a good time to call. Palin was on for a pretty long time.

From David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to jonathon whistler <jonathonwhistler@yahoo.com>
Date Wed, Mar 24, 2010 at 8:09 AM
Subject Breakthrough

Hi Jonathon,

About the nutty stuff I think and do when delusional, it is very embarrassing, but not dangerous. I have never been a danger to anyone else either sane or delusional, and have not been a danger to myself since 1985.

In addition to working on quitting drinking, on day 15, I am trying to quit tobacco and am on day 1 on that front. You know how hard that is. I'm using Nicorette gum and also have an electronic cigarette for cravings. I've quit before so know I can do it. The first day and first few days are the most difficult.
The transition to a new medication is going well, side effects seem mild to none. With these type of medications you taper off the old medication over several weeks while increasing the new medication. I will know if the efficacy is good in about a month or two.

In an intense two day effort of about 20 hours I worked out the line spectrum of helium from first principles. I have been working on that problem for over 20 years. With conventional quantum mechanics it is not possible to do that, only the spectrum of hydrogen can be worked out analytically. So it is a real breakthrough and a result that hopefully will allow me to be recognized. It also proves, not that I needed any additional proof, that everything I have worked on is correct. Rather than take any more classes I am going to spend the coming months to a year writing up my quantum chemistry, a good challenge. Since I have a theory of everything there are many directions to go in. Solving the spectrum of helium was the most important problem and most important direction and it is a very gratifying result. I also do one other important thing that can't be done using the existing paradigms, that is to calculate the elementary quantum of charge, the charge on an electron or proton, from first principles. I am confident that these two results when well written up will result in recognition of my work and a revolution in physics and chemistry.

A "lovely" overcast and 22 degree day here in Anchorage. It melts during the day and freezes at night making parking lots very slippery and dangerous. Why do I long for upstate New York?

There are times I find technology extremely frustrating. But yesterday I downloaded the spectrum's of hydrogen and helium from NIST in several minutes and also had instant access to the fundamental constants to about 10 places. As a research tool the Internet is the greatest invention ever.

Best regards,

David

jonathon springer to me

Hi David,

I can relate to much of what you're saying. I feel my latest performance stifles my courage to take things on...odious tasks, new jobs, etc.
I, too, am attempting to not drink (wine and scotch) but it's difficult because I use that medication to dull my hypersensitivity to the state of the world (and this country in particular).

Well, my friend, hang in there ('tho I've learned from past experience that most folk have a rough time giving up two 'vices' simultaneously!).

Cheers,
Jonathon

Jonathon I. Springer
1262 Dot Riser Drive
Sparta, NC 28675

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Mar 24, 2010 at 8:58 AM
subject Day 4, day 1, exercise, discovery, plants, social security, photo

Hi Mom,

I am on day 4 of this new streak of sobriety. Last night I could get to sleep and actually got almost 6 hours, got up once at about 4 hours to use the bathroom, that I always do. It was a relief to get to sleep, I was exhausted after working so long and hard and intensely. Today I am going to try to quit the tobacco again, so took some Nicorette gum when I got up. My only real goal for the day is to extend the sobriety streak by a day and to not use tobacco.

I haven't lost any weight yet but haven't put any on, am right at 275. A little back, shoulder and neck pain went away over night and I will use the exercise bike again today for 5 minutes. I get various minor aches and pains from being at the computer for 15 hours a day. I get up often, every 15 minutes or so walk around the condo, stretch, look at the plants, go up and down the stairs taking the garbage out, going to the store and getting the mail. I don't have to go to the store today and won't unless it really warms up, it's 23 right now, since the parking lot is very icy.

The problem I worked out yesterday was a very hard one, it has never been done before and was an important one. It should be a work that will enable me to turn the corner and get my work recognized. It took over 15 hours, 2 days and all of my energy to do and the result is very gratifying. It proves everything I do is correct and revolutionary. I have worked on the problem for almost 20 years.
The plants really look good at 17 days. Marijuana is a most remarkable plant. It is very fast growing and produces not only a medicinal product, but a lot of fiber, oil in the seeds and biomass in the leaves. It looks like medical marijuana will be allowed in most of the states soon and it will even be legalized for adults soon in California. It's about time.

I am feeling better about my situation with social security and the letter I sent them when psychotic. Working out a new letter to possibly send them, talking to you, giving Ricky and Charlotte a copy of both the letter I sent and a possible follow up letter and seeing Fran on the 8th and discussing it all looks like a rational recovery and should work to end up with no problems with social security. Although I was psychotic when writing the letter I was also very forthright and accurate.

I am upping the dose of Abilify to 20 mg today, the expected maintenance dose, while still taking 5 mg Prolixin. I'll cut the Prolixin down to 2.5 mg on Friday. I get a little ache in the head, a mild headache or sensation and headaches are one of the side effects. I am not getting any akathisia (restlessness), the most common side effect. The ache in the head bothered me yesterday but didn't prevent me from working. It was worst following drinking this past weekend and taking Zyprexa for sleep medication seems also to have caused it. It is minor today, much less than yesterday, much improved overnight and it seems good sleep helps.

This last episode of psychosis began in early November, about 10 days before I went to Boston and going to Boston was part of the psychosis, I would not have done that if sane. The only "dangerous" thing I did was the letter to social security. Putting up all that nutty stuff on the web and sending it to various people is very embarrassing but not "dangerous". I also incurred about $1000 in "gifts" I bought in December and January and that is why I needed so much financial support from you then. If I can stay off the alcohol, I can, and quit the tobacco, I can, there will be some real financial savings.

I have established a correspondence with a Jonathon Springer. He is going to look at my screenplay/novel and give me a "honest and heartfelt" critique. He has volunteered being a friend. I hope when he looks at some of the stuff I had up on the web, it's still available through cached copies even after I took it all down, he will still be a friend. I have told him about my mental illness in an honest way and warned him about the content on the web I did when delusional. I have very high respect and regard for his work.
I am including a photo of my garden at 17 days. Pretty impressive for 17 days, don't you think?

Overcast and 21 here, just "lovely". Why did I want to move to upstate New York?

Email me when you get home this afternoon.

Love, David

Anita to me

Looks like tomato plants. I just got home and will take a rest now and email you when I get up. Overcast here so will be good to take a walk. The increase in the BP med is bringing my pressure up instead of down. Maybe it is because I am having normal amts. of salt. Love,

Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Thu, Mar 25, 2010 at 6:40 AM
subject Day 5, smoking, California referendum, science problem, new friend

Hi Mom,
I broke down and smoked about 6 PM yesterday, trying again today. It's difficult but not too difficult, I just need a little more resolve. On day 5 of this streak of sobriety, that's going well. Still getting poor sleep, got about 5 hours of sleep last night but got up 4 or 5 times to use the bathroom, had a little ache in the head when I got up, but feel OK now, it seems to mostly clear up in the first hour I am up. Staying off alcohol, losing weight and getting exercise should improve my sleep over time.

California has a referendum to legalize marijuana for recreational use on the ballot this fall. I think it will pass. State and local governments want to tax it.

The problem I solved is a really, really important one. The standard quantum mechanics cannot solve it but I can with my new quantum mechanics. I always thought my quantum mechanics could solve the problem yet although I spent a lot of time on it over the years I was never able to do that. So when I set out on the problem on Monday I was very reserved in thinking I would find a solution and it took about 15 hours of hard work until I found it, I had almost given up. It's easy to know I'm right and there is no question at all about that. Now I have to write it all up.

I did 5 minutes on the exercise bike Monday and yesterday. My back was a little sore, also from sitting in front of the computer all day, so I'm glad I didn't do any more than that. It will take a couple of weeks to build up to doing 5 minutes a day, and then a couple of weeks to doing 10 minutes a day, and in about a month or 6 weeks I should be able to do 20 minutes a day and really get some good exercise.

It seems on the Abilify I don't take naps during the day and have more energy but maybe that is just due to the sobriety.

When I am psychotic I think the Fox News people, Fox and Friends, Beck, O'Reilly, etc, are all in on the "conspiracy", sending me messages, the ideas of reference and supporting me. Now, sane, I find I don't particularly like their politics. Same about Palin. I don't like any politicians with just a few exceptions, like Ron Paul, but like Obama over the republicans. I think Obama will bankrupt the country but believe the republicans would also. So now I support Obama, but still loathe Hilary and Bush. I find all our politicians morally reprehensible in being unable to implement world peace, put an end to armies and weapons, warfare and conflict.
Solving the big problem in physics has really buoyed my spirits and given me optimism. Only highly productive work seems to be able to do that.

The chicken I had last week was a little over 5 lbs. I had three meals from it and froze two more. I pick all the meat off, put it in meatloaf containers, pour gravy over it and put instant mashed potatoes on the top and put it in the freezer. Makes a really delicious meal.

I am going to get some corn and make the harvest casserole. I have all the other ingredients. That was always one of my favorites.

Heard from Jonathon Whistler. He is a new friend, the first I have made in many years. I was forthright with him about my mental illness and the nutty stuff I think and do when delusional and he still offered friendship and opened up about his own situation. It's very nice to have made a new friend.

27 here. Gets into the 40's in the afternoon, so thaws during the day and freezes at night, making for icy conditions in the morning. They spread gravel in the parking lot yesterday so it is a little better.

I'll email you about a call when I get back from seeing Charlotte, about 10:45 my time.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Thu, Mar 25, 2010 at 8:46 AM subject A page I prepared for ACMHS

Hi Mom,

Charlotte thinks dreams are interesting and have some meaning. I don't agree with that but do believe what a person thinks when psychotic does have meaning. So I prepared a one page document of what I am thinking when psychotic for her, and Fran and Ricky too, to serve as the foundation for insight into me and my episodes of psychosis. I thought you might find it interesting too so here is a copy:

The delusions common to my psychosis’

1. I believe I am at the nexus in the final battle of the final war between good and evil and that good will win out overwhelmingly.
2. I think there is a woman of remarkable virtue and intelligence who is in love with me and waiting for me to be my wife and the mother of our children.
3. I believe I am under complex biometric surveillance that can read my mind by two groups, the government, who are the bad guys, and “my” group who are the good guys.
4. I believe 9-11, terrorism and the Iraq and Afghanistan wars are staged events, not real ones and that I am a five star general, code name the Arctic Rose, in those missions. I believe the mission is to end warfare and conflict among mankind. The operation is called Swords into Plowshares.
5. I believe tobacco has been genetically modified and is no longer biologically deleterious and there is a conspiracy among smokers keeping that a secret.
6. I think there is a conspiracy among some or all physicists, started by Einstein in 1905, whose aim is to end warfare and conflict. This group is the good guys who “support” me.
7. I believe I am to the Einstein charade as Jesus was to the Old Testament.
8. I believe I am one of the smartest persons on the planet.
9. I believe that my screenplay/novel is a kind of modern Bible and will win me the Nobel peace and literature prizes.
10. I believe I will win Nobel prizes in physics, chemistry, medicine and physiology and economics.
11. I believe I am not a paranoid schizophrenic but rather someone who through a chemical accident and the environment went into altered states that are in some ways similar to psychosis and in other ways quite dissimilar.
12. I believe there are people who persecute me and also believe there are people who support me.
13. I believe that the trial I am undergoing is like Jesus on the cross, albeit not a real cross, rather a modern technological kind of cross, the mind reading technology.
14. I believe many people have access to the data stream of thoughts and actions I generate and that the goal is to get everyone “on board” for universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty. I call that goal Clean Sweep, meaning eventually everyone on the planet has access to the data stream I generate and everyone is converted to thinking rationally about how to live their lives, i.e. without conflict and warfare.
15. I believe there are a huge number of embedded “messages”, “communications” for me in the environment. These include license plates, articles in printed media and over the Internet, shows on TV and commercials, various human
actions and the operation of my home computer. So I believe my environment is massively orchestrated.

16. I believe my Dad who died in 1998 is still alive and the person most responsible for the technology that reads my mind. He was a scholar of the Bible and classics and I see my role as “Jesus” and a classicist as right up his alley.

17. I believe the planet is an insane asylum and that is what is being fixed. I believe I am the “psychiatrist” in charge of that.

18. I believe the surveillance will end soon and am always waiting for it to end with much expectation and anticipation.

19. I believe the universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty put in place will last for the rest of time here on planet earth, until the sun goes red giant and life ceases.

David Degner to aexmd

Hey Allan,

I thought I would send you this as it may reveal some of my motivations when psychotic. Charlotte is a social worker I see, Fran is my psychiatric nurse practitioner who prescribes my medication and Ricky is my case manager. I am transitioning to a new medication, Abilify, a third generation anti-psychotic that came out in 2003, have been on Prolixin, a first generation drug that is rarely used anymore. I am hoping for better efficacy in controlling episodes of psychosis.

Although you may have difficulty understanding my real motivation in my seemingly anti-Semitic type emails to you, I am quite free of any racism, it's only that I thought you and Dan had me under surveillance and were obstacles to my goals when psychotic. What you should understand is that everything I do when psychotic is an act aimed at universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty, although that may not appear to be the case, but it is the case contained in the massively delusional paradigm I operate under when psychotic.

I'll leave you with a chess board. Who wins if white has the initiative? Who wins if black has the initiative?

This will be the final time I contact you if you choose to end the relationship. I wish you well and look forward to seeing your work on the big screen.

Dave
Hi Mom,

I saw yesterday that the Philadelphia coach said he would listen to any offers for his quarterbacks including McNabb so maybe St Louis is interested in him. They have two possible starting quarterbacks, McNabb and Vick, and NFL teams never carry two potential starters, so maybe McNabb will end up in St Louis. That would really be good for the Rams in my opinion.

Just got back from seeing Charlotte. I have always had problems with the doctor/social worker/case manager client relationship. Now I am looking at it differently, as if they are friends, people you would like to meet and talk to outside the caregiver/client relationship. That turns out to be the right way to approach my relationship with Charlotte since I see her for a full hour once a week. We talk about things we are both interested in and also she tries to be helpful in overcoming the post traumatic stress of episodes of psychosis and the root reasons for drinking and having breakdowns respecting drinking and other basic problems I have, like isolation, loneliness and interpersonal areas. So approaching our visit today with all that in mind things went very well and I enjoyed seeing her and talking.
Email me about a call when you get this.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just read your email. Would it be a good time to call now? I will not be going for a walk since it is windy, rainy and 40. Just finishing my laundry. Glad your visit went well. Email me Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Hi Mom,

Yeah call now. Basketball starts today at 3 my time and Cornell is playing at 5. They are the first Ivy league team to make it to the Sweet Sixteen. They are playing a #1 seed, Kentucky, and are supposed to have no chance of winning. Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Thu, Mar 25, 2010 at 7:28 PM subject Found an error

Hi Mom,

Well Cornell isn't doing very well tonight. And I went back and looked at my "breakthrough" result from Tuesday evening and found an error, or at least I think I found an error. I can't quite figure out what I was thinking because my notes are a little chaotic, but it looks like I made a big error due to being exhausted, having worked on the problem all day Tuesday, and was going a bit batty. So I am back to working on the problem not knowing if I can find the solution. It's a good problem and I'll put in a lot more hours before giving up. I did generate some new leads so got something done, just not what I had hoped for.

Love, David

David Degner to Anita

Hi again Mom,

I'm bummed since I thought I had a really good and important result. But at least I put in quite a few hours of hard work, and even if not so fruitful results wise, it's always good to have put in some hard work.
Made it through another day without drinking so that is a victory. One day at a time. Love, David

Anita to me

Hi, I was just going to bed a thought I would check email and there were two from you. Not surprised that you found an error since working as you did so long might be a set up for error or not finding what you wanted. About a week ago I was looking for something (I've already forgotten what it was) about eleven in the evening and looked and looked for a long time and could not find it, gave up and the next morning I found it in less than 5 min. So there I had wasted over an hour and thought to myself "well that proves not to continue with the search if unsuccessful but walk away from it for awhile".

I had the TV on for the Cornell game but what happened? They switched it back to that KC and ? game and I don't believe it ever went back to the Cornell game. When they switched I think Cornell had slipped about 10 behind. I watched the local news and fell asleep so don't know if Cornell game ever came back. The are all excited here because some basketball game is here this weekend I think and they are looking for all the money since they reported that the lodging and eating places were filling up.

One day at a time.

Must get to bed. Is just 30. Love, Mother

Must get to bed. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to jonathon springer<jonnathonspringer@yahoo.com> date Fri, Mar 26, 2010 at 5:28 AM subject About that "breakthrough"

Hi Jonathon,

Having difficulty giving up the tobacco, but doing well on giving up the alcohol. I find I have to take it one day at a time and for now call a day a victory if I don't drink, but smoking gives me some anxiety so will redouble efforts there.

Didn't have the breakthrough I thought I did. Had gone a little batty after 12 hours of number crunching and made a mistake. Doing science is like prospecting for gold, you are always looking for the mother load, so it was fun to think I found a good vein, although a bit of a bummer
to find an error. I summed up the situation in the preface of my screenplay/novel where I said:

"I have always been stymied on the helium spectra and have not worked out any line for higher atoms with the exception of the limit of line spectra, the ionization energy. I use the ionization energy to determine the size of the non-metal atoms. I do not know if I am still missing a piece of the puzzle to be able to predict line spectra for all atoms or if it requires someone smarter than I or perhaps at least a little better organized."

The real proof of my quantum mechanics is in it's explanatory power in chemistry, particularly in bonding and structure. I have a huge amount to write up in chemistry and it is going to be the main focus of my next writing project over the coming year. I should have a book again by the time I am done, and a longer and better one than past efforts. I have made a lot of major progress since the last books in 2000. To write up well and include graphics for what I have in inventory is a real challenge, although as a "prospector", I will always follow an interesting idea in search of more gold.

I also find the world situation and America's role in it deplorable, even morally reprehensible, as you will see when you read my work. I think the world is an insane asylum and the inmates are running the place. Trying to remedy that was the real purpose of my screenplay. I am optimistic things can be improved dramatically in the coming years. I have believed end point science is binding arbitration for peace and think I have the end point science.

Many thanks for your support and friendship.

All the best,
David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Fri, Mar 26, 2010 at 7:22 AM
subject Friday morning

Hi Mom,

You had it exactly right, I found a glaring error in only a few minutes of going back yesterday evening and looking at my somewhat chaotic notes from Tuesday. It's no problem to not have solved that problem because the existing paradigm I am up against can't do it either. Now if they could solve the problem and I couldn't I would have a serious
problem with my work. The proof of my quantum mechanics is in it's explanatory power in chemistry. I have a huge amount of chemistry to write up in the coming year. I don't need to figure out anything new, need only to write up well and include graphics for work that is in my inventory, but I have found in writing things up you find some errors, refine your understanding and need to do some new work along the way.

Did you look at the link I provided to the website of the artist who did the paintings for me? Definitely check it out. He is a new friend and I feel my life is much renewed to have made that new relationship.

Doing well on the drinking front but having a lot of difficulty giving up the smokes, but feel I can give them up soon. One day at a time, one vice at a time.

I have been at 275 and am starting to lose weight, down to 271 this morning.

I am not going to use the exercise bike for a few days due to lower back pain, I have to break in on it very gradually since I am so out of shape.

I have been on 20 mg Abilify for several days and today am cutting the Prolixin down to 2.5 mg and will take that dose for the next 5 days and then will be off the Prolixin entirely, good riddance.

I frequently forget you are 86 since in emails and phone conversations your mind is as vital and sharp as ever and there is no frailty in your voice. It always seems you are wise, patient and reserved and I am foolish, impetuous and eager. It's almost as if I haven't learned some basic lessons even at 57. But I still think and work like a young man and am blessed with youthfulness and also some of it's shortcomings. Of course the episodes of psychosis haven't helped.

The Dow has been flirting with 11,000 for a while and I think will break that psychological barrier in the coming weeks and may even do it later today. Apple, Ford and the Thrivent fund are all doing well.

Same weather here, cold at night, currently 16, and into the low 40's during the day.

Email me when you get this about your schedule and a call later today.

Love, David

Anita to me
Just checked email - thanks for yours. Am just getting ready for shower and then my goal for today is to get the place straightened up and must take short trip out for few things, mostly computer ink. Have been on the phone since all high excitement here since one of the bldgs. that just had a first floor room (off of the patio) floor replaced was done because of termite damage. The termite company said there is not active termite now and that it was old damage so condo not responsible for it. It was discovered when there was the city inspection required by the impending sale. STL is famous for termites - thus the city regulation for years that all bldgs. must be masonry. That doesn't include Kirkwood.

Interesting on the stock market, esp. Apple. It has been an incredible stock for me despite the fact that I also rode it down two times - it always came roaring back. They had the price target at 275 and now I just heard it is increased to 300.00. At least it doesn't appear that there will ever be a sale to a private equity company and thus a forced sale as happened to Biomet.

Would 1 P.M. my time be a good time for a call. email me. 26 here this morning. Love, Mother

Send me that link to the artists website again,

David Degner to Anita

One your time would be an excellent time to cal. I'm not doing anything today, only goal to not drink. there is more basketball on this afternoon and evening so that will fill a lot of the time.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Fri, Mar 26, 2010 at 3:07 PM subject Another error

Hi Mom,

I gave Stacy a ride to the Native hospital. She is having her foot imaged because it gives her pain. She's going a little nuts and stopped taking the Aricept saying it didn't help her brain. She is also a little paranoid, thinks the bank is stealing from her, thinks people are breaking into her condo when she isn't there and stealing stuff and has notes up on the front door and in the windows warning them. I think she has some dementia.
I found another mistake. It's that same problem I told you about a couple weeks back where I thought God might have left a message in the Laws of Physics. It concerns the central player in my physics, a particle I call the N particle and after which the books are named. It has a certain quantity of mass and energy and one wants to know what that mass and energy is. So I thought I had worked that out and the answer sounded about right. Now I see I was just making an educated guess and it can't be what I thought it was, even if it is close. It's no major problem to my theories but was included in the paper I have online and needs to be corrected, that is pretty easy to do. Then the problem I had about God being in the Laws of Physics goes away.

So I have gotten pretty much done in the last several weeks of being sane. I've also worked on a couple other problems that are interesting and rather profound and that will be included in the new write up. I am pretty much finished with what I want to figure out before writing it up. I have a lot of resources to use in a new write up, the books and the paper I have on line. It's easy to copy from both and paste into the new document. It will be book length. It's going to have all of my physics and all of my chemistry in it, a pretty big project. It might take about 4-6 months so should be finished by September or at least in the fall.

I guess the question is what do I do then. Do I try to get it published in a journal? That probably won't happen. Do I put it online where I have some of my works? No one reads that stuff, it's the crackpot publishing option that is ignored by the mainstream. Do I have some copies printed up like I did in 200 with my books, only far fewer this time, and send them to people who don't know me and probably won't read it? Do I advertise in college newspapers and scientific journals? Do I send copies to people in industry hoping one of them reads it?

It poses a real problem. Why write it up if I can't get anyone to read it? Maybe I should go to school instead. Maybe I should write it up and do something that's free, like putting it on the net where my current papers are, and sending an unsolicited email with a link to it to various people who don't know me?

I see the game I'm watching today is at St Louis.

Did you look at the website I sent the link for?

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Sat, Mar 27, 2010 at 2:19 AM
Hi Mom,

After the first game yesterday, about 5:30 PM my time, I was feeling depressed and basically not good thinking about my life, about all the trauma of my mental illness, about the loneliness of my life, about being completely rejected as a crackpot by the scientific community, thinking about there was almost nothing I can do to get my ideas recognized, to get published, all in all about the very sad state of my life, and felt like drinking. But I was also tired so lay down and slept to 10:45 PM. When in that rather depressing mood, reflecting on everything, I knew if I got some sleep I would feel better when I got up and I did. Why I fell asleep at 5:30 I don't know, it seems being on the Abilify at 20 mg for 3 days had something to do with it, and the streak of sobriety had something to do with it and that my diurnal cycle is changing in response to those forces.

Thinking about not being able to get my science recognized, as I had outlined some of the problems in my email yesterday, is difficult. Even If I write all up well what then? That leaves me with a kind of hopelessness.

I tried to resurrect a relationship with Allan. That's a waste of time. He has not been friendly over the years, always highly stigmatized our relationship due to my mental illness and seemed incapable of either friendship or generosity respecting me. I sent him a final email a couple days ago, told him I would not contact him again if he chose to end the relationship and wished him well and said I look forward to seeing some of his work on the big screen. He has always thought he is very smart and smarter than me. But at Cornell he did poorly in biochemistry and physical chemistry and didn't take genetics, the 3 most important courses in biology and for pre-meds, and I was around the top of the class in all 3, so he is really not close to me in science. And after seeing Nelson again I realize again what an asshole he is. I won't bore you with all the details but there is little to gain from knowing him and he is a chronic liar. So Allan and Nelson won't pan out as being of any value as friends. Realizing that yesterday afternoon was also depressing.

So what do I do in response to all these realities in my life. Previously I drank to medicate for the pain. Now I am taking a new approach. I am going to stay on the wagon. Then I will lose weight. I'll start to exercise. I'll get stabilized on the Abilify and hopefully that will improve my libido and desire to work out. Then in 4 or 5 months I'll
have lost a lot of weight, be attractive again, be getting good sleep again, and be able to find a suitable female on the Internet. Kevin has had many dates from online meetings and I experimented with it back in 2007 on eHarmony, and Kevin has now found a good relationship through those online services.

So my approach now will be for self improvement, getting attractive and physically healthy again, hoping to meet a female by July or August.

Of course I'll continue to work in science and can also start another creative project like my screenplay/novel. And if I can't get recognized then I will just concentrate on having a happy and fulfilling life without that recognition, the key thing being physically healthy again and finding a female.

So how am I doing on all these things. Quite well actually. The previous sobriety streak was 10 days and the current streak is at 7 days and I feel I can now stay on the wagon. I have some nice marijuana plants coming up, will get some good seeds from this crop for future use, have some additional good seeds for the next crop, so the marijuana problem will be solved in about 7 weeks. I am getting stabilized on the Abilify, having transitioned over in a safe way and hopefully it will have good efficacy and prevent another episode of psychosis. I have a good relationship with Fran, Charlotte and Ricky at ACMHS and I now am using those resources. I am starting to lose weight and get exercise. My back has been sore so I won't use the exercise bike again until Monday or so. I have gotten a lot of science done, really a huge amount, in the last 3 weeks and am pretty well finished on what I have to figure out to be able to do a good write up. I enjoy working with my mind and the intellectual challenges I work on even if I don't receive any recognition. I am optimistic I can find a really special female after making all these positive life transformations.

It always amazes me at how stupid so many people are, how they can't recognize their own stupidity, how lacking in common sense so many are, how confused so many are, how base and low and venal many are. I am a very forthright person, don't lie, don't feel I have to hide my nature or motivations. I also am an extraordinarily smart person. When you are both forthright and a real genius you can find life painful and hurtful, without mental illness to complicate the whole matter. Yo would find it hard to believe the level of confusion in modern science. I do know the Einstein charade is underway and also know I have correct theories. My work is transparent, straightforward and based on common sense. The existing paradigms are absurd and ridiculous and
almost everyone believes in them. This all will provide good material for my next creative writing effort.

Have you noticed how Obama and the democrats have responded to their passing health care. They are almost gloating and Obama seems filled with his belief in "change". It'll be pretty funny to watch politics between now and the mid term elections. Everything is completely polarized now, there is no middle ground. And the "Titanic" is sure to hit the iceberg, we are sure to have a total, life changing economic and political collapse sometime in the near future. I find both sides, Obama and the main stream media, and McCain, Palin, the republicans and Fox News, to be intellectually and morally bankrupt.

The new nuclear arms agreement characterizes the serious problem. The number of nuclear weapons on both sides is going to be reduced from 2200 to 1550. And Obama says this is a significant achievement that will make America and the world a safer place. The world is an armed camp and that is simply wrong. The correct thing to do is eliminate all weapons and all armies. that is the only real solution, the only meaningful change and no one in the political arena even suggests it. They are all really base, short sighted and evil. All that human nature is what motivates the Einstein charade, much like the motivation of the authors of the Bible. The motivation of the Bible is obvious. It was to end violence, warfare and conflict, to live a peaceful and honorable life, in harmony with nature and a universe created by God. It attempted to do that through teaching and inspiring not weaponry. The Einstein charade was founded by geniuses of Judo-Christian extraction and is a similar non-violent attempt.

Thank you for sticking with me through all I have been through. I think the future can be a good one and all the pain and trauma is now in the past. I think you can see why I drank in the past and why I can finally quit.

The ham is going to be a real treat this weekend. I think I'll cook it today. It is 7.75 lbs and will take about 3 hours to cook.

26 here.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just checked email. Thanks for yours. I am getting ready and have to leave in 15 min. to go to a funeral. One of the men who volunteers with us - he did have health problems but was very active- had a stroke
(I think) He was our story and joke teller. The funeral is at 10. I will email you when I get home. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sun, Mar 28, 2010 at 5:13 AM
subject A difficult day yesterday

Hi Mom,

It's 3:20 AM Sunday. I wrote the following last night about 8:30 PM:

I have been a very sick individual over the past 13 or so years (even since 1975), being psychotic something like 9 or so of the last 13 years, and in the non-psychotic years maybe not being truly sane either. It makes me wonder how sane I am now. When I think of all that it is very depressing and leaves me feeling suicidal. It's a very lonely, very depressing life many times, and I wonder honestly if there is any hope it will improve. I wonder if I am just deluding myself when I think I can still have a good life. It's small wonder I have resorted to drinking. I wonder if I ever can be truly sane in the future. I wonder if I will always be lonely and suicidal. It's not just difficult to be mentally ill, it seems impossible. I wonder if when I am optimistic I am just grandiose and delusional.

Back to the present. Well you can see how rotten I feel at times. I went to sleep a little after 9 PM last night, right after writing that, and got up about 3 AM and only got up once. I have a mild aching, a strange sensation, a little fog, not too bad but not good, in my head. I attribute it to the Abilify. The medications for schizophrenia are ones you certainly would not want to take. My mental illness is really horrible.

On the optimistic side, I am really highly intelligent. I do have the correct theories of physics and chemistry. I do enjoy working with my mind on science and creative projects. I am getting over the alcohol. If I am sane and stable on the Abilify things should only get better. It's just so very lonely right now and very depressing at times.

I have only been sane, if I am sane now, for 20 days, first coming out of the recent psychosis March 8th. The first thing I did sane was restore my relationship with ACMHS and I am using their resources now. Then I quit drinking. Now if only I could give up the smokes.

Hopefully things will get better over time.

Email me with your schedule when you get this.
Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Mon, Mar 29, 2010 at 3:18 AM
subject Monday AM

Hi Mom,

Even though I took a nap yesterday afternoon I went to bed an hour or so after talking to you, about 7:30 PM and slept to 12:30 AM without getting up. When I got up I was pretty groggy, had a kind of headache and took a couple Ibuprofen. The "headache" went away in a half hour and I think the "grogginess" was due to deep sleep. I dreamed but don't remember what I was dreaming about. I think the headache is due to strong snoring. Still I got 5 hours of sleep, an improvement over the past couple weeks and also got about 5 hours yesterday. I think as I stay off the alcohol, lose weight and get exercise my sleep will improve. My sleep pattern IS changing. The Abilify seems to make me drowsy or sleepy at times I would normally take a nap or go to sleep. About getting up during the night as a male at 57 I always am worried about my prostrate.

About you being wise and me being foolish that I referred to in an email a few days ago, it is difficult if not impossible to be wise when your life is dominated by episodes of psychosis. For instance when I come out of a psychosis I usually shortly after that go through a phase where I think I need to go back to school, start from the basics and repeat calculus and introductory physics. I went through that phase again this time a few weeks ago. Now I realize I do not need to take any more courses, although by September I may want to take one out of new interest. I spend a lot of time and all my substantial mental energy working on the unknown, a very different undertaking compared to going to school and learning what is known. I say that because it is a very different and unique way to approach life and is my forte and something I am an expert at. But I have always lacked the wisdom due to the episodes of psychosis to realize that and realize what that means about what I should do in the future. Now I see that what it means is I should continue to do that kind of independent work, my own form of research, working out what is not yet known and understood, and that is a good thing to realize since I have everything here in my condo to do that, most especially my computer and the Internet resources. So that is a piece of wisdom I have gained in the last couple of weeks.
You, and also Kevin, are the only ones that are willing to forgive me for what I do when psychotic and overlook the hurtful things I say. Everyone knows it is just due to chemistry but few can realize what that has to mean. Allan (who is particularly harsh and lacking in generosity, ironic for a doctor who should know better) and Dan Ess are examples of that as also Cain and Mary are. They have all broke off a relationship with me although what I did to them was pretty minor and innocuous. It's just human nature, back a few hundred years ago I would have been doused and in the Middle Ages burned at the stake. This is all painful to me, especially when you consider the delusions I operate under when psychotic (that I outlined in that recent email to you), but everyone can decide who they associate with and I have no problem with that. Fran, Charlotte and Ricky are all very familiar with the phenomenon as are all people who actually deal with mentally ill clients. I look on it as "their" shortcoming, not mine. Humans can be very cruel and there are countless examples of that in mankind's history, a prominent example the crucifixion of Jesus. It's apparently a part of our biological Nature. I think Bush and Cheney's preemptive Iraq war is a recent example of cruelty and man's war like Nature. And females are as capable of cruelty as males, albeit do far less physical violence.

Yes the seeds from Canada came, even an extra one, 11 seeds, in a nice crush proof plastic container, and they looked good. My current crop looks very good and I will pollinate so will have seeds for the future. And next time with the seeds from Canada I will pollinate again so will have several varieties of seeds, a nice resource. I am aware that I have both had 8 episodes of psychosis and smoked a lot of marijuana and there may be a cause and effect connection. Since many millions of people smoke marijuana and few become psychotic I don't think there is a connection but will monitor myself when I start smoking again just to be sure. I view marijuana as medicine for anxiety and post traumatic stress associated with the mental illness and it is effective for that.

About my intelligence I don't think I delude myself. I am not the smartest person on the planet but in science may be one of the smartest. I do consider myself a genius but don't really like the word and it's meaning is not really well defined, like are the people with the highest IQ's geniuses, then again certainly Newton and Shakespeare and Beethoven and many of the authors of the Bible were geniuses. There are additional factors that go into genius like creativity, originality, drive, ego and other attributes. In physical chemistry at Cornell on the 3 hour final out of about 60 students I got the second highest score. I asked the professor to write a recommendation for me to medical school and in an interview with him he said to me "you were born with the brains but genius is 99% sweat". I am something of an authority when it comes to evaluating intelligence due to all my experiences in
life, attending IHS and Cornell, taking the hardest courses, taking the MCAT's, playing chess, competing with others, knowing the top students. But the real test for genius is what you make of the problems life naturally presents you with. I consider my work in science what makes me a genius, not just another highly intelligent person. I have put in very many hours on it over the years despite the mental illness and have put in the sweat. Dad also told me I was a genius at age about 34. The opinion of Professor Fisher, my physical chemistry professor, and Dad mean a lot more to me than my scores on standardized tests. I am not a genius outside of science, in for example languages, philosophy or literature, but am capable of doing some creative writing projects. And I am not a genius in mathematics, just very, very strong, so really only consider myself a genius in science. I am a natural physicist.

So my primary goals are to not drink, transition to the Abilify and quit smoking. Then I want to be intellectually productive and get work done on my science. I am doing well on all those fronts and will try to give up the smokes again tomorrow.

Thanks for all the support you have provided, it will pay off in a better future for me.

The ham was particularly delicious. I'll freeze about 6 or 7 portions for breakfasts. Ham with eggs is my favorite.

32 here now so it is not freezing at night and the thaw seems to have arrived. I look forward to walking for exercise soon.

I don't have to start the truck today. Email me with your schedule.

Love, David

davidmartindegner@gmail.com
jonathon.springer@ymail.com

Hi Jonathon,

It was very nice of you to offer to be a friend and I would welcome that. But I think you probably didn't know what you are getting into, at least didn't understand my mental illness. I believe honesty and forthrightness is the foundation of a meaningful relationship. So I want to be honest about my mental illness so you can decide if you really do want to be a friend and have a relationship. That's difficult because
schizophrenia is poorly understood by many, if not by almost everyone, even health care professionals who deal with it. I have a degree in biology, concentration neurobiology, Cornell 1974, and even I find it difficult to understand my mental illness. That being said I am sane now and expect on the new medication I am on to be sane in the future and not have another episode of psychosis.

Schizophrenia is a very serious and debilitating mental illness. I have been psychotic 8 times ranging in length from 7 weeks to 7 years since 1981 and have been psychotic about 8 of the last 13 years. So I have been a very sick individual. The recent episode of psychosis began in early November 2009 and ended 3 weeks ago. In that psychosis I wrote about 25 or so pages of "stuff" that I put up on websites. The motivations of an individual who is psychotic are very convoluted and appear bizarre to a sane individual, in fact are bizarre, and are difficult to ferret out. Psychosis is characterized by delusions, grandioseness and paranoia. I prepared a list of common delusions in my episodes of psychosis recently for my health care providers in an attempt to understand my episodes of psychosis. Here is that list:

The delusions common to my psychosis

Here is a 10 page letter I wrote to social security in late November WHILE psychotic. Although I was psychotic when I wrote it and my motivations were other than they might appear, it gives a fairly honest account of my history of mental illness.

December 1, 2009

Dear Social Security,

Back to this email. I am not only a mentally ill person I am also highly intelligent, even exceptional, and am accomplished in science. I DO believe I have the correct model for physics and chemistry and also DO believe there is a massive conspiracy started by Einstein that is underway in physics whose aim is to bring to an end warfare and conflict. I know both of those will sound like delusions and both were included in the list of delusions I have while psychotic.

Here's an excerpt from an email to my mother recently:

"About my intelligence I don't think I delude myself. I am not the smartest person on the planet but in science may be one of the smartest. I do consider myself a genius but don't really like the word and it's
meaning is not really well defined, like are the people with the highest IQ's geniuses, then again certainly Newton and Shakespeare and Beethoven and many of the authors of the Bible were geniuses. There are additional factors that go into genius like creativity, originality, drive, ego and other attributes. In physical chemistry at Cornell on the 3 hour final out of about 60 students I got the second highest score. I asked the professor to write a recommendation for me to medical school and in an interview with him he said to me "you were born with the brains but genius is 99% sweat". I am something of an authority when it comes to evaluating intelligence due to all my experiences in life, attending IHS and Cornell, taking the hardest courses, taking the MCAT's, playing chess, competing with others, knowing the top students. But the real test for genius is what you make of the problems life naturally presents you with. I consider my work in science what makes me a genius, not just another highly intelligent person. I have put in very many hours on it over the years despite the mental illness and have put in the sweat. Dad also told me I was a genius at age about 34. The opinion of Professor Fisher, my physical chemistry professor, and Dad mean a lot more to me than my scores on standardized tests. I am not a genius outside of science, in for example languages, philosophy or literature, but am capable of doing some creative writing projects. And I am not a genius in mathematics, just very, very strong, so really only consider myself a genius in science. I am a natural physicist."

I know my science is correct because of it's explanatory ability in physics and chemistry. I know modern physics, what I call Einstein's charade, is a giant load of hornswoggle.

So where am I now? I am trying to quit drinking and am doing well on that front. I am trying to quit smoking. I am transitioning to a new medication. I am focused on finishing up my science and writing it up in a better way than I have been able to in the past. But I have to face the possibility that I may be treated as a crank, a crackpot, for many years to come. I am also focused on getting physically healthy and attractive again and hopefully in the future being able to find a woman to share life with. So I am focused on having a good life for the rest of my life despite the circumstances of my past.

When psychotic there is an edge of defiance and grandioseness to my behavior and work. That's very unattractive and I know that. When sane I am neither of those behaviors.

When I wrote the screenplay it was in an interlude of "sanity" bounded by episodes of psychosis. It may be pure garbage but also may be interesting garbage. I have received no feedback on it from anyone.
You can be brutally honest in your assessment, it will not hurt my feelings, and only then will be useful to me and serve in a constructive way. I can easily write it off as a failed creative effort and move on. If after writing up my science I attempt another creative work it will be with a similar goal but a very different story line.

What I have revealed in this and previous emails may serve as a foundation for our relationship or maybe you in viewing everything conclude you do not want to have a relationship. In any event I have been honest and forthright as I feel I need to be and as I feel is necessary for any real friendship.

Regards,
David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to joanthon springer <jonathonspringer@yahoo.com>
date Tue, Mar 30, 2010 at 7:39 PM
subject The power of reason and some insecurity

Hi Jonathon,

I promise I'll stop sending you emails without waiting for a reply. But I wanted to say a few more things.

If in reviewing the emails I have sent you, maybe doing a Google search and in trying to read the screenplay, you find you do not like me and do not want a future relationship, I'll understand. It seems you may find the screenplay unreadable and may not like the author. I don't want to burden you with doing an "honest and heartfelt" review if that is your reaction. That may sound a little insecure, and I am insecure regarding all that, but in life I am really very secure most of the time, despite the mental illness. I told you it is really difficult to understand my altered states, my psychotic states, and the really strange thing about all my episodes of psychosis is that I was rational and highly functional in all of them, despite the delusional paradigm I was operating under. My episodes of psychosis really embarrass me.

I have always believed in the power of reason. As a scientist reason is my number one weapon, really my number one tool. But it is also the number one weapon, number one tool, in governance, economics, energy, race relations, warfare and conflict and in fact all problems. I believe mankind can solve all her problems through reason. That may all seem strange coming from someone who is schizophrenic but I don't believe I am schizophrenic by genetics. I believe my mental illness began using the street drug PCP, as I have told you in a previous email,
and I think that is important. I had a really great childhood and college experience. Those are the formative experiences that sustained me throughout my life, sane or psychotic. I have always believed that through reason and sweat any physical problem can be solved, and I consider almost all problems mankind faces physical problems even if they appear otherwise.

Well I have fallen off the wagon today and am currently having a few Molson Canadians. I have a lot of respect for you, as a struggling scientist I feel a kinship you, and from what I know of your views on things, particularly on conservation, I find I admire you, but everyone is very complicated, I know you are far more sophisticated than I in your appreciation of many things, so can only hope you do not have a dislike for me, in my crass ways.

If you conclude you don't like me, my thinking, my efforts, my screenplay, just drop me an email to take the screenplay off the Internet and that is what I'll do, and I might just do that anyway since it has always given me angst to have it "out there", and we need have no more relationship. But if you would like to have a friendship I would much welcome that and look forward to hearing your ideas and opinions on the many issues that face individuals and humanity at large and especially artists.

Sincerely,
David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Mar 31, 2010 at 5:22 AM
subject Finding optimism

Hi Mom,

So Philadelphia is planning to trade McNabb, that initially surprised me. McNabb is a black quarterback, the one Limbaugh made the "racist" remark about that got him fired from ESPN, and although he has been very successful, leading Philadelphia to 8 post seasons, 5 NFC championships and 1 Super Bowl, he never won the big game in the playoffs and never received the recognition of say Favre, Elway, Brady or Manning, who all won the Super Bowl. So it'll be interesting to see where he goes and if Rush was right about him. Rush's racist remark was that McNabb is not that good a quarterback but just received the rave reviews, particularly by the Philadelphia pres, because he is black. The Rams, who have first pick in the draft, are planning to pick Sam Bradford, the quarterback at Oklahoma, who had a shoulder ACL tear
and surgery his junior year, this past year, he's coming out a year early, and missed most of the season, but has recovered and is a really good franchise quarterback. So you were right about the Rams looking for a young quarterback to build the team around and build for the future. I like Bradford and think he will be a good one to build a team around.

I prepared 3 pages for my meeting with Charlotte, including the email I sent you last Sunday showing the difficulty and depression of my mental illness. I also included 2 pages on my view of life and my main asset, my mind. Mental illness is the drag, my innate intelligence is my asset. I have always been into understanding things, understanding the mind, was a neurobiology concentration in biology at Cornell, wanted to be either a neurosurgeon or psychiatrist, and have always thought reason is man's highest asset and only reason provides solutions to mankind's problems today in the modern world. Here is an excerpt from an email to Jonathon Whistler that I also am going to show to Charlotte:

"I have always believed in the power of reason. As a scientist reason is my number one weapon, really my number one tool. But it is also the number one weapon, number one tool, in governance, economics, energy, race relations, warfare and conflict and in fact all problems. I believe mankind can solve all her problems through reason. That may all seem strange coming from someone who is schizophrenic but I don't believe I am schizophrenic by genetics. I believe my mental illness began using the street drug PCP, as I have told you in a previous email, and I think that is important. I had a really great childhood and college experience. Those are the formative experiences that sustained me throughout my life, sane or psychotic. I have always believed that through reason and sweat any physical problem can be solved, and I consider almost all problems mankind faces physical problems even if they appear otherwise."

I am off the Prolixin today, having tittered down to 2.5 mg for the last 5 days. Good riddance. I have high hopes for the efficacy of the Abilify and for a renewed interest in physical exertion, something I thought the Prolixin sapped me of.

I am getting renewed energy for my intellectual works. At 57 I have actually figured out quite a few things and have a lot to write up, not only science, but economics and governance and other areas.

28 here now, so still freezing at night.

I'm going to take Stacy to Costco today. I use her card at the checkout.
Email me with your schedule and a phone call later today.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Mar 31, 2010 at 1:14 PM
subject Day 1, the competing forces: mental illness and my work, call

Hi Mom,

I drank yesterday, day 10 again. The loneliness was seeming acute. Will get on the wagon again today. I seem to have a problem around day 10, feelings of despair, worry, anxiety, post traumatic stress from the mental illness. Charlotte asked what can I do in those situations. I still have to find the answer to that. It's difficult. But I am doing pretty well overall and have made good progress. I don't really enjoy drinking anymore, it gives me a headache and I feel lousy the next morning, so why do I still break down? Carolyn is helpful. I'll discuss it with her tomorrow.

I have been very sick. I am sane now, for only 23 days. My main asset is my mind. Only work and productivity provides relief from the mental illness. Of course the mental illness has had a really negative effect on my work and productivity, making work impossible many times. Hopefully the Abilify will have good efficacy and prevent future mental illness and allow me to use my mind effectively.

40 here.

Email me about a call.

Love, David

Anita to me

Dear David, . It took much longer than I wanted. They were still cutting the hams I wanted at the store I went to so went to another across the street and they were doing the same. Then I found out that the truck from Washington, Mo. where they come from had just delivered a new supply - at least it will be fresh. Now I have to vacuum and clean bathroom, etc. I will email you when I am finished vacuuming (about about one hr.) and mayube that will be a time when you would like to talk. Love, Mother
Anita to me

Is it O.K. to call now? I am not going to listen to the local news. If it isn't suggest a time. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Yeah I just got up from a nap so call now.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Thu, Apr 1, 2010 at 12:40 PM
subject Meeting with Charlotte

Hi Mom,

My meeting with Charlotte went well. I drank yesterday so 2 days in a row. Will get back on the wagon today. It's difficult. One day at a time.

I am finding no humor in life right now.

Lets talk this evening.

Love, David

Anita to me

Glad your meeting went well. Obviously the drinking a setback. One day at a time. I have this different approach to spending $ on beer, comparing it to what good selection of fruit could have been purchased. But then when I spend a couple bucks on chocolate I rationalize that chocolate is supposed to be good for people.

We just came home from Gardens - fortunately the trams were running through the gardens since Mary's arthritic ankle is a problem. I am going to take a nap and rest my legs now and will email later. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to vixra@royalgenes.com
date Thu, Apr 1, 2010 at 8:11 PM
subject withdraw http://vixra.org/abs/0911.0056

Hi Phil,
I would like to withdraw the screenplay/novel A String Theorist Meets the Fisherman's Son, http://vixra.org/abs/0911.0056, that is in History and Philosophy of Physics. The reason is it has too many errors, is too nutty and is not a work I want to have out there. The ideas were good, the product was poor.

Thanks,
David Degner

Phil to me

It has been removed
Regards
Phil

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to jonathon whistler <jonathonwhistler@yahoo.com>
date Fri, Apr 2, 2010 at 11:06 AM
subject Screenplay off web

Hi Jonathon,

I took the screenplay off the web. There were too many mistakes, too much delusional stuff and it was too nutty. It had little to no circulation so there are few copies "out there".

Recovering from mental illness is difficult, lonely and depressing. I have high and justifiable hope the new medication will prevent another episode of psychosis. All I can do is face the future while overcoming the past.

Regards,
David

jonathon springer to me

David,

I am of the same mind set.

Hang it there, my friend!
Jonathon

Jonathon I. Springer
1262 Dot Riser Drive
Sparta, NC 28675
Hi Mom,

I took down my screenplay/novel from the web and also took down my website theboldruler.com. All that remains on the web is 3 science papers and Knols for them. I had put up a lot of crazy, delusional garbage in the recent psychosis and now have remedied all that.

I have been on the 20 mg dose of Abilify for 10 days and completely off the Prolixin for 3 days. The Abilify seems to be working and have minimal side effects. Hopefully it will have good efficacy and prevent any future psychosis.

All I can do is move forward, a challenge given the circumstances of the past. I am doing well on the drinking front, didn't want to drink yesterday and don't want to today. One day at a time. It's lonely, difficult and depressing but I find reasons for optimism from getting past the drinking, getting stabilized on the Abilify and starting new intellectual projects. Charlotte said she thought recovery was possible and agreed it's difficult.

I took Stacy to Fred's this morning.

Email me if you check your email today and call this evening if you have a chance.

Love, David

Anita Degner

V just picked Mary up. She is going to be there tonight. Email me when i...

David Degner to Anita

Why don't you call now unless you want to take a nap first.

Anita

I will call now, I already took a nap.
Hi Mom,

In March in the first streak of sobriety I went 10 days and then drank. Then I went 9 days and drank for 2 days. Now I am on day 2 and don't want to drink. Often, in fact most of the time, I don't want to drink, but after about a week or two seem to have a breakdown. I feel I have made a lot of progress since coming out of the psychosis March 8th, starting the sobriety streaks, getting on good terms with Fran, Charlotte and Ricky and utilizing those resources and transitioning to the Abilify. Now to not drink again and quit the smokes. And next week I am going to try to start walking daily. Charlotte really encourages that as being important not only for physical health but for mental health and good sleep. It all takes a little time.

I'm having the last of the lasagna and a Romaine/blue cheese salad for supper. I make pretty large salads, about 6 Romaine leaves.

I've got Greta on. Governor Granholm of MI is interesting. She is a smart lawyer. The HCR has really divided the country and the legal challenges by all the states and attorneys general are interesting, as is the Republican's response to try to repeal it. The constitutional challenge that the federal government can't require an individual to buy a product under the interstate commerce clause will end up at the Supreme Court. That will be interesting with the 5-4 majority of the conservatives. If the Supreme Court rules the bill is unconstitutional there will be a real mess, they'll all have to start over.

Sounds like a nice Easter you will have. Probably mine will be lonely but there will be some good women's basketball on. I'll email you Sunday evening about a call anticipating that will be a difficult time and I may feel like drinking.

I am getting past the post traumatic stress of the episodes of psychosis and think I will avoid the really rotten feelings of despair in the future. I am starting to get better sleep and am off the Prolixin. I think being on two anti-psychotics at the same time is depressing.

What are your plans tomorrow? The NCAA men's semi-finals are on tomorrow and there are two really good games. I'm hoping Kevin comes over for part of that. The final is Monday and the woman's final Tuesday that promises to be a really good game.
Love, David

**David Degner to Anita**

Email me with your thought if you check your email after Greta.

**Anita to me**

Just woke up - fell asleep during Greta and had checked email and there wasn't anything from you. Then watched the ten o'clock news and start of Leno but fell asleep. I just have to quit those little naps and go to bed instead or at least be ready for bed.

Jen had sent an email earlier this eve - Larry has a bad cough and upper respiratory infection (and they have company tomorrow?) and she has some skin cancer on her nose (common) which she will have taken care of end of May.

My schedule tomorrow is to go to get some stuff at Aldi's where the price is lowest on milk, eggs, butter. The rest of day is still undecided but I will do some of the getting ready for Sun. already. Mary will be at V and M and his roommates came home before the rain hit this afternoon. It came from the west and the were lucky they were ahead of it otherwise they would have driven in it all the way.

Holiday time is known to be a lonely time for many people and strangely also known as a time when relatives get together who don't get along too well get together for worse not better. Strange isn't it.

Hang in there, one day at a time. I am hopeful the Abilify will do the trick. Glad that you are accepting of the help available from Charlotte, Fran and Ricky.

Must put in my second set of eye drops and get to bed. Another example of how medicine has been discovered to help keep eye pressure down. I hope the new health plan will not make new discoveries in medicine impossible. Love, Mother

from **David Degner** <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Sat, Apr 3, 2010 at 3:41 AM
subject Dream interpretation, plants

Hi Mom,

I slept about 4 hours without getting up and couldn't fall back asleep so got up. I am trying to quit the smokes this morning. I had a couple
dreams, one that was really obvious what it meant, that I will write down here so I have a record and can remember to tell Carolyn on Wednesday.

In the first:

I was going outside the front door of my apartment one evening, thinking of going out to a bar. I heard what sounded like strange, simple voices from a distance, then realized I was imagining the voices, and realized I was becoming psychotic and got worried. I went into the bathroom to get an additional 5 or 10 mg dose of Abilify and emptied a vial of many types and sizes of pills on the counter. I went through them, worried as I was looking, but couldn't find the right pill from the assortment, was searching without finding, and then woke up. When I awoke I knew immediately what the dream meant, simply that I was concerned the 20 mg dose of Abilify would be efficacious.

I really got up then, went to the bathroom and then fell back asleep for about 20 minutes and had a second dream:

I was in a physics class at UAA in something like modern physics or quantum mechanics and it was very interesting, found it a place I should be. There were beds all around and I prepared one with sheets and a brown cover sheet and then pushed it into a corner. Then I was in another physics course, also very interesting, also felt I belonged there and was leaving the class and walking down the hall. Then I remembered UAA had a notice of trespass against me, that I had forgotten about, and was worried if I got caught they wouldn't believe that I had forgotten that. I snaked through the building, through an auditorium where standardized tests were being given, up some stairs, down a hall, was worried I couldn't find my way out, then spotted the exit doors at the end of a long, deceptive appearing corridor. Then I woke up. I didn't really know what the dream meant since it seemed to mean a couple things. It meant I would find taking a course interesting, was worried about the notice of trespass, but the bed I prepared and not being able to find my way out to the parking lot without a trial I couldn't interpret.

I'm including a photo of my plants at 27 days. I turned the photoperiod down to 12 hours Thursday to initiate sexual development and they should be ripe in about 8 weeks. They are growing really well, notice how big they are at only 27 days.

Love, David
Hi Mom,

I have made it through the first 3 hours of the day having coffee without having a cigarette. That's a good start, the hardest hours. I had 6 pieces of gum, chew 2 at a time, they last about 25 minutes.

Last night I went to a website that offers free online dating, the largest such site, called Plenty of Fish, one Kevin used, and it has many, seems 60 or 80 or more, women from Anchorage and surrounding Alaska. I looked at women from 45-60. First I was impressed with how old and unattractive looking most are. Then I noticed about 85% were into camping, fishing, hiking, biking, kayaking and other active activities. Then I started to think how sedentary I have been since getting on the Prolixin in 1984, how out of shape I am, and how unattractive I would be to active women. I also thought how much time I have spent alone, how I don't watch TV or movies or read books, how I just sit around and think, how long it has been since I have had a relationship with a woman and how I have no friends -- so wondered just how attractive would I be and concluded I would not be very attractive or even capable of a relationship and didn't have much to offer, much less having to finesse my long term mental illness and living on SSI, APA and Medicaid. That was all a little depressing. Of course my confidence
is low, being so out of shape and not having had a relationship in so long.

So I have set my goal, and this is tied into quitting drinking and getting on the Abilify, to get in good physical shape again and be active again. I realize that will take 6-8 months but is definitely doable and I have made the start. Of course I am 57 but many people my age are still very athletic and active. I have no knee problems, or arthritis that would prevent me from being active again. And it will do wonders for my confidence and attractiveness to the opposite gender in addition to my cardiovascular health.

So this is a very different goal than my long standing and only goal that was to be intellectually productive and find as my only redemption my intellectual productivity. I am currently at 273, down from a high of 342 in March 2006, and my goal is to get down to 210 sometime next fall.

I spent $485 at Fred's last month, including $50 for the Nicorette gum and $16 for prescriptions. So I will get $0.40 a gallon off on my next fill up, a nice savings. I am only using a tank of gas about every 6 weeks now, a tank is about $70. My freezer is full and the shelves are full. Today I am going to get 2 three lb tubs of Smart Balance since they are on sale this week for $5.99 and will keep, normally $7.79 and I have a coupon for $0.50 off with the purchase of two. And I have a coupon for eggs, $2.50 for 18 large, a coupon for whole wheat bread $1.68, and a coupon for canned vegetables, 3 for $2, I am going to get some corn for harvest casserole and green beans for the casserole. Then I will not have to spend too much this month at Fred's, at least a lot less than last month. and I'll get olive oil at Costco, along with olives, pepperocini, and Tillamook extra sharp so will be completely stocked up.

My insurance, $174 for 6 months, is due at the end of the month and I will have funds for that, also should have funds for my next dental cleaning, X-rays and inspection, $250, in June.

There are a lot of alcoholics who cannot overcome it, there are a lot of fat and obese people who can't lose weight and there are a lot of lonely people who can't solve that problem. I have been a lonely, obese alcoholic for the last 26 years, since getting on the Prolixin in 1984. Now is my time to change all that and I find I can do all those things and can have a better life in the future.

I realize you are very wise, very strong and very stable and that is a valuable resource for me. Thank you for all the support you have been.
Love, David

PS Notice the curly pony tail. And it's good I took the photo to see how fat I am and to motivate me.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>  
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>  
date Sat, Apr 3, 2010 at 1:30 PM  
subject Call

Hi Mom,

I spent $384 at Fred's last month, with $66 for gum and prescriptions, not $485 like I mentioned in the last email. I thought that sounded high, misread the receipt.

I went shopping twice today and took a nap this morning from 7:20-10:00. In the parking lot at Fred's I was a little crushed by the post traumatic stress of having been psychotic, remembering how I would read all the license plates as secret communications, the ideas of reference, and realizing I was alone starting life anew. And I am quitting the smokes today and don't want to drink, so I have all I can handle, it's not that difficult, just don't want to have a breakdown today, so am thinking of the goal, to get physically healthy and fit. One day at a time.

I am having a cheese sandwich for lunch with extra sharp Tillamook on whole wheat bread, Romaine, onion and mustard, potato chips, a pickle and V-8 juice. Fresh bread and the Tillamook are really a good treat. The Tillamook is normally $14.99 for a 2 lb loaf at Freds, goes on sale for $10.99 and is $9 at Costco, so I am going to stock up when I go to Costco with Stacy on Monday.

Quitting cigarettes is well known as a particularly difficult challenge. I have done it many times in the past, but also broken down many times in the past and started up again. It's not too difficult for me but does require real resolve. I quit for 16 years from 1987 to 2003. The changes in your lungs and throat and mouth and brain are really dramatic and I feel much better having quit for 12 hours so far. The real challenge will be this evening. After 3 days you are over the hump and then have to resist the lure of breaking down. Most of the women on Plenty of Fish say non-smoker only as a requirement for the men who contact them.

I just got back from a third trip to Fred's. I park far from the door, and made a complete circuit of the store, getting light bulbs and checking
for fertilizer. I make the extra trips just to get exercise and go up and down the stairs and kill a little time.

Email me about a call when you get this.

One day at a time.

42 here and sunny, nice.

Love, David

Anita to me

Dear David, Just checked my email. M is going to pick me up and V is cooking for us this evening. I will email you when I get back. I suspect in about two to three hrs. at most. Glad you went out today - that is a plus. My bathroom cabinet sink glass door just had a problem closing - good thing Will is coming tomorrow - he will have to work for his dinner. More later. Love, Mother

Anita to me

Dear David, Came home half hr. ago and quickly did some things I had to do as some laundry. Now I am ready to sit down for a rest. Email me if this is a good time to call you. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Yeah Mom, call now, it's a real good time.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Sat, Apr 3, 2010 at 7:56 PM subject The very sad destructiveness of mental illness

Hi Mom,

Two things that make me feel especially bad about this last psychosis is that I put up on the web a lot of delusional, grandiose and paranoid stuff and the letter I wrote to social security. It's advertising to the world that I am a very sick individual by putting that stuff up on the web and inviting potentially a lot of trouble with social security. I have taken all the stuff on the web down but it still shows up in a Google search of my name. Do a Google search on David Martin Degner and you'll see what I'm talking about. It's more than just embarrassing, it gives me a lot of stress. Hopefully it will disappear from the Google
search engine before too much longer. And hopefully the letter to social security won't cause a problem.

To be alone and rejected even by siblings is at 57 very difficult, but the inevitable outcome of my mental illness. I hope the Abilify will prevent future mental illness and so far it looks like it will since I feel quite sane right now. It's hard to describe the loneliness that comes from being mentally ill but you can probably imagine how horrible it is.

At times I feel like very damaged goods and feel it may not be possible to overcome all the damage and stigma associated with my mental illness and that I will never again have any friends and will always be alone. I fear growing old alone.

On the good side of things I am getting past the alcoholism and should be able to lose weight and get more physically active that should help my mental outlook.

It's also very difficult having all my work in science to be completely rejected and not earn me any recognition or financial reward. For most people a job and a career are important ingredients in having a happy and meaningful life. I have none of those benefits. Although using my mind gives me reward and pleasure my work is also alone and isolated and does not provide a way to meet people and participate in any kind of group efforts like most peoples jobs.

Well although it sometimes looks impossible at this point in time hopefully over the coming months things will improve. I think I am now the sanest I have been in 15 years and that should serve as a foundation for making progress.

Drinking and smoking depress me and overcoming them empowers me. It will be a relief when I give up the smokes. Even though I feel burdened by my situation in life right now I don't want to drink.

Thanks for all your support.

Love, David

Anita to me

I just checked email before I was going to bed. I did the Google search of your name and was appalled at what is all there. Do you have any idea how that can be taken off? Do I understand it right - you have taken your web site down completely. I don't have any idea how to deal with it after it is out there. My first reaction is that it would be
something to discuss with Ricky, Fran and Charlotte. There must be something that can be done. One day at a time. It doesn't help to fret about it - I know that is hard - but some thought directed at how to delete it all. Talk to you tomorrow early evening or so. Love, Mother

from David Degner davidmartindegner@gmail.com
to Anita Degner degneral@gmail.com
date Sun, Apr 4, 2010 at 1:19 PM
subject A new friend, making real progress

Hi Mom,

Yes, I have taken down the two websites, davidmartindegner.com and the theboldruler.com. They each had 3 pages including my letter to social security, the email I had sent you titled What's going on? that included all my delusions about being under surveillance and a page on medical marijuana. They still show up in a Google search but if you click on the links you get a message that the site is no longer available or has moved. But if you click on the cached link below the Google entry it will show a copy of the sites as they were a couple months ago. I think since the sites are down, i.e. have been deleted, those entries on a Google search will stop coming up at some point in the future, maybe a few weeks or a few months. You can see why it gives me so much regret and stress having out there all my delusional, grandiose and paranoid stuff. There is nothing more I can do except hope they stop showing up in a Google search soon. There are also some of my comments on blogs that show up in a Google search and they are all innocuous, just blogosphere junk. And also my Knols and papers on viXra show up and references to my book being for sale, all that is OK too.

I was so stressed out about it that last night, especially after reading your reply after you did the Google search, my head was aching and I couldn't get to sleep, so took Zyprexa about 11:30 PM and fell asleep at 1:30 AM and got 8-9 hours of sleep and feel better this morning.

Now I make it through stressed out depressed episodes like last night without drinking, knowing drinking will only make it worse, not better and knowing that sleep will restore me. And with my goal to lose weight and get in good physical shape I simply can't drink at all.

The Abilify seems to have very good efficacy for my mental illness. I feel saner than I have been since about 1996 or 1997, and maybe even saner than I have ever been on the Prolinx. Late in the day I get some aching in my head, a throbbing like mental sensation, stressed out feelings, post traumatic stress from being mentally ill so much in the
past, but after a nights sleep feel restored. Hopefully in the future I will stop feeling so bad late in the day. The recovery will take time and I know that. On the Abilify I am completely over any psychotic like thoughts, have no ideas of reference or any delusions.

So the good news is the foundation for my life transformation, getting sane on the Abilify and quitting drinking, has been laid. Now all I have to do is quit smoking and start walking daily, two things I know I can do although quitting the smokes remains a challenge.

I heard from Jonathon Springer today. I had warned him about what would show up on a Google search and also sent a couple long emails describing my mental illness and past in gory, honest detail. I had thought he would not respond, was scared off by all that, but he still offered to be a friend. He is suffering from depression, takes medication for it and seems sympathetic of my mental illness. So I have made a new friend.

I spend a lot of time writing all my emails to you, sometimes it is all I get done in a day. I know that is a burden on you, and I apologize for that, but also find that sharing all my thoughts with a fellow human being and in particular with my mother is therapeutic and seems an essential part of the recovery process. Seeing Charlotte, Fran and Ricky and not being suspicious of them, not finding irritation interacting with them, using them as a resource in recovery, is also therapeutic and an essential piece of the recovery process. Hopefully at some point in the future I can reestablish a relationship with Cain and Mary. Family is so important it is especially difficult to be estranged from your siblings.

42 here and overcast.

Look forward to talking this evening.

Love, David

David Degner to Anita

I just got back from a walk. I went further than yesterday and slowly since there was a little discomfort from walking yesterday. It might take about a week to build up to 1.1 mile, down to the end of Peck and back again and about 2 or 3 weeks before I can go all the way to the end of the streets, up the hill, and around the loop, 1.6 miles round trip.

Today I feel "normal" again, a feeling I haven't had in many, many years. I attribute it to the Abilify and the 8-9 hours of sleep I got last night.
Optimism is returning, my sense of humor will return soon too I feel and I will be able to laugh again, recovery seems well underway.

Hooray!

Anita to me

Everybody just left - checked email from you - email me if this is a good time to call. Love, Mother

Anita to me

I am going to be outside for about 10 minutes, in case you email me..Love Mother

David Degner to Anita

I just got back from Fred's, second trip today, got 3 oranges and an onion. Give me a call when you get this.

David Degner to Anita

When I think of the letter I sent to social security, what I had put up on the web and what's still on the web I find it terrifying.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Mon, Apr 5, 2010 at 5:38 AM subject Monitor problem, transitioning from the impossible to the possible

Hi Mom,

When you haven't used the computer for about 15 minutes the monitor screen goes black. Then you move the mouse or press a key on the keyboard and the monitor should come back on. Mine started to take longer and longer to come on and this morning took an hour to come on. So I might need a new monitor or maybe just a new bulb for the monitor. I'll call a computer repair business to see if there is an easy inexpensive fix, but often with electronics it's cheaper to just replace it. This monitor was $349 about 4 or 5 years ago and I think I can get one now for less than $150. I'm going to Costco with Stacy this morning and will check them out there.
I was worried about getting to sleep last night, went to bed at 9 PM and listened to the radio for 1/2 hour and then fell asleep and slept to 2:30 AM without getting up even once, pretty good sleep. My back and right hip were a little sore last night and I decided to only go for a walk every other day but both are much better this morning, but I will only go for a walk every other day for the first week or 10 days. Going to Costco and going to Fred's 2 or 3 times will be enough exercise for today. At 57 and very out of shape I am going to have to take it very slowly and carefully.

The feeling of normalcy that is coming back is what is hoped for in my medication and that is really good news that I am returning to normal on the Abilify. Of course that doesn't mean life is simple and without any problems, but it does mean that it isn't completely impossible like it is with ongoing mental illness. When sane a person can exert reason over life to maintain and improve the quality of life, things that can't be done when in and out of episodes of psychosis. And also when normal one can again obey all the societal and interpersonal norms that are so important and regulate much of our behavior and are critical in maintaining interpersonal relationships, also all things that are completely impossible when mental ill and are at the root of the loneliness and isolation of mental illness.

So although my life is lonely and will continue to be lonely for some months to come, I have made a new friend and know it can get better over time, and although my circumstances are depressing I don't suffer from chemical/physiological depression, am just embedded in depressing circumstances, and although it is difficult at times to fill the hours of the day, is often boring and I find that difficult to deal with, it will improve as I learn to fill the hours of the day as a non-alcoholic.

I just checked monitors and see I can get a good one, Dell or HP 20" wide screen, for $150-$160 at Best Buy or Office Max and probably cheaper at Costco. I should be able to afford that this month without needing help from you.

The very disturbing stuff I put up on the Internet should disappear in a month or two, probably no one does a search on me and if they do just find it mentally ill garbage and don't pay attention to it. You can see why it was giving me so much anxiety and stress. I knew how disturbing you would find it too and am sorry to have exposed you to all that.

I am starting to lose weight, down a couple pounds this morning and the weight should really start coming off as I maintain sobriety and start to exercise. I am lucky in that regard since so many in my age
bracket find it difficult or impossible to lose weight. In 3 or 4 months I should be able to get off the BP meds.

The plants look excellent and are growing really fast right now, an inch or two a day. When I have marijuana I have a major increase in creativity and productivity in doing my science and writing and find it easier to fill the hours in a day. On the downside it is addictive and one always hates to be needing a chemical substance and it is also hard on the pulmonary system.

Feeling so good and normal on the Abilify was unexpected and is a very welcome surprise. I had only hoped for it to be as efficacious as the Prolixin and it is a very significant improvement in how I feel. On the Prolixin when "sane" I always was somewhat suspicious and paranoid of people, couldn't completely eliminate the delusions, was irritable and found things other people did pretty irritating, was at times a bit grandiose and was often somewhat depressed. I couldn't see all that before but now can see that clearly. One the Prolixin I would "medicate" for those problems by drinking. Dad once told me I wouldn't be drinking daily if I didn't suffer from the mental illness. He was right.

The Dow may break 11,000 today or this week. The economy is improving and Obama and the Dems are taking credit for it. I think what they did actually made things worse and it is just the normal business cycle at work. That topic should be in the WSJ. What do you think?

38 here so should really be melting fast now.

Email me with your schedule today and about a call.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just a quick answer re the computer screen. Now I really don't know much about computers, but interesting about how long it took for your computer to "wake up" or whatever it is called. Mine does that every once in a while and I wait a long time to get to the email site or the other one (whatever that is called - maybe search or where I pay bills, etc.) However not as long as an hr. but maybe 30 min. or so. Then sometimes I notice that a popup comes up that says scan completed. Have not decided on my schedule today yet - still resting after yesterday. Had a ham sandwich with dill pickle for breakfast?????? A change from the oatmeal with cinnamon and honey. I will email you
when I know what is going on, but they are predicting possible rain and storms late this afternoon, that means that I will stay home at that time. I hope M and his two roommates will get back to Kirksville before storms hit. They planned to leave at 2 P.M. Love, Mother

P.S. I see my time on the computer is now correct - must have been set to change to Daylight on April 1.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Tue, Apr 6, 2010 at 5:18 PM
subject Some days you can win

Hi Mom,

This afternoon Pyramid computer called and said it was the monitor that was fried and the computer was OK. I asked what the charge was and he said the minimum one hour, $79. Well I wasn't too pleased to hear I had just wasted $79 and didn't have my computer for almost two days but resigned myself to it. So put on my jacket and drove over having decided just to pay the $79 and not make an issue out of it. I got there, got out of the truck and reached in my pocket and realized the credit card was in my other jacket. So I drove home and got the credit card and went back. About the time I got there I decided I would ask the repair person if there was anything they could do about the charge and tell him I had called yesterday morning and asked if they repaired monitors, described the problem, was told it was almost certainly the computer, was without my computer for almost two days and was being charged the minimum one hour rate for an analysis that could have only taken a few minutes. So when I went in I asked the person who retrieved the computer if I could speak to the repair person and asked if there was anything they could do about the charge and described what had happened. He said he would have to talk to the manager. He talked to her for a few minutes and came out and said to the person at the register to just let it go. Then he said the person I had talked to yesterday was the owner. The manager added just send us some business. I thanked them, said I was a techno competent, and that I would use them in the future with any problems I had.

Then I decided to go to Office Max and get a monitor. None were on sale and the salesman said the 20” HP for $179.99 was the best value. So I picked one up and took it to the checkout counter. Then I remembered the same monitor was $169.99 in their online store. So I went back to the salesman and asked about that and he said they would add shipping so that's why the price is cheaper online. So I went back to the checkout counter and then remembered I had looked at monitors at Fred's and a similar HP was $169.99, so left the monitor at the
counter and decided to go to Fred's. I go right past Costco on the way and then decided to pony up the $50 annual fee and renew my membership thinking I would save $20 or $30 and it would be a good time for renewing the membership. There was no line for memberships and I just gave the person my drivers license and in a few minutes she took a photo and I had my renewed membership in about 5 minutes. I went over to their monitor section really curious what they had and what would be the price. They had a 21.5" Samsung for $159.99. The salesman at Office Max had told me HP and Samsung were the best since they had high definition. A new register opened up as I was waiting in the checkout line so there was almost no wait in line.

I got home, hooked it all up and was wondering if it would work and if something else would go wrong. First the monitor didn't light up and I looked at the directions and found out there is an on/off button on the side. I pressed it and a screen came up saying the computer hadn't started, so was worried in all the handling maybe the computer had been damaged. I restarted the computer holding down the button like you described and this time got a screen saying Windows hadn't stared and there were two options, diagnose problem or restart Windows in normal mode. I selected restart in normal mode and then everything worked just like before, the same sequence of screens appeared in the start up, put in my password, the Norton anti-virus took 15 seconds, the Internet connection came on and it was ready to use. I noticed that my background picture, an attractive female, looked distorted and then all by itself it turned into normal dimensions. This monitor is a wide screen and my old one wasn't and the computer figured that out and made the adjustment.

Success!

Love, David

PS Email me back about a call after the game unless you are busy with Mary.

David Degner to Anita

We can talk tomorrow after I see Charlotte, about 5:30 my time. Are you watching the game, should be a good second half.

Anita to me

Well what a day but as I kept reading and more problems seemed to come up I knew it would turn out O.K. since your subject was "some
days you can win”. Good for you for not giving up. I will read it more carefully after the game is over and email you then. Love, Mother

Anita to me

That will be better. Will email you in morning with schedule. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Apr 7, 2010 at 6:36 AM
subject Monitor, goals, weather

Hi Mom,

I priced my monitor online and it was going for $189.99 at a discount computer place so I saved $30 at Costco. It's a really nice monitor. I sure am glad I renewed my membership at Costco. The price goes up fast with size and the 21.5” widescreen is a good size, 20” would have been too small. Kind of lucked into it if you follow the decision tree I outlined in an email yesterday.

I prepared some 6 pages for Charlotte and summarized my goals:

1. To quit drinking and smoking.
2. To get exercise, lose weight and get in good physical shape again.
3. To work on writing up my science in a new partly creative work similar to my screenplay/novel but with all the additional stuff I have thought about and worked out since 2007 when I completed that work.
4. To in the coming year find a mate to share the rest of my life with.

The Abilify seems to have far higher efficacy in treating my mental illness than the Prolixin ever had. That's welcome, surprising and really good news.

Got some snow overnight. Alaska winters ARE long.

APPL is up to $241, wow!

Email me your schedule and email me when you get back from taking Mary to the airport. Lets talk either this afternoon or after I see Charlotte. I see her at 4 PM my time for an hour.
Love, David

Anita to me

Busy morning. Mary is almost finished packing and made one fast run to a store where she saw something "she really wanted" and had room for it. She never goes shopping for clothes in Anchorage - and seems to need a lot of clothes at the library. Being a nurse I was lucky and can't even imagine what it is like to decide what you are going to wear to work every day.

So you are organized for a productive talk with Charlotte- she will know what you are thinking and will be a good sounding board. I will take Mary to Saks at 12:10 - V will take her to the airport for her 3 P.M. flight. She will be there a little early which she doesn't mind. I will then go to St. Paul’s for the Seniors thing but will have missed the meal but wanted to be there for the speaker since it is someone from China. I will email you when I get home. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Apr 7, 2010 at 11:58 AM
subject Change in schedule

Hi Mom,

ACMHS called yesterday and said Fran wasn't going to be in tomorrow and my appointment was changed to the 13th. I would run out of medications on Sunday so called Ricky to ask Fran to fax in a prescription for me and he called today and said Fran had done that. Then ACMHS called this morning and told me Charlotte had called in sick today so I won't see her until next week sometime. She told me last time she was going to be off this Thursday and Friday. Now I prepare a running account of my progress and thoughts and plans over the course of the week to read to her, prepared 6 pages over the last week, similar to the stuff I tell you about in emails and conversations, highs, lows, insights, self analysis, goals, breakdowns, etc. I try to be honest and forthright since I think that is essential to a productive therapy experience and she knows that I am a pretty honest and open individual. I don't mind being honest and open, find it takes some thinking and effort, although it is a little embarrassing.

I am finally getting over the back pain from using the exercise bike last week. And I am also getting over the hip pain from walking on Saturday and Sunday. Today I am not even going to start the truck and
will get well recovered to start walking again tomorrow. It's really amazing how out of shape I am and how many physical problems a little exercise seems to inflict. I definitely don't want to go too fast and aggressively.

29 here and overcast.

Thawed out a rump roast in the refrigerator and will put it in this afternoon while watching the Masters on ESPN. If Tiger wasn't in the field I probably wouldn't watch.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just checked email. All the schedule changes you have. You are not alone. Mary was all checked in and while waiting to board (she was there early) the announced that flight canceled - hail storm in Dallas from where the plane was coming on its way to Chicago with the STL stop. She was directed to a place to get another schedule but felt she didn't want their suggestion - StL to Dallas to Seattle to Anchorage and getting in at 2:30 A.M. She figures more complications with each stop. She asked to be booked on same flight next 24 hr. schedule which was fine - except that she had to claim her baggage which they didn't seem to know where it was. V was working late to make up for time she lost taking Mary to airport and had work to get out. She should be picking her up about now 6: P.M. Mary will stay with her and when V goes to work in morning she will drop her off here. Next thing this afternoon was a six car pile-up on 270 at 44. The directed traffic off of 270 before the site and onto Ballas Rd. where I was getting on after Seniors at 3:30. The backup of traffic was unreal and what takes me 12 minutes took 45. Apparently a car swerved to miss a ladder that had fallen off of a truck - Apparently no serious injuries.

Email me when it is a good time to call. I will probably listen to local news now and then watch WOF at 6:30. I don't anticipate anything exciting on OReilly tonight. What are you having with your roast? Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

Why don't you call after WOF. I had celery, carrots and a salad with it.

Anita to me
Hi Mom,

Life remains difficult, lonely and depressing, a real challenge. On the Abilify I am getting sane again, more sane than I ever was on the Prolixin. Of course recovering from mental illness IS going to be difficult and recovering from alcoholism IS ALSO going to be difficult, so I guess things are going as could be expected.

On the alcoholism front I have drank 7 times in the last 30 days, 3 breakdowns of 2, 3 and 2 days each, having started out to quit altogether 30 days ago, only 3 days after emerging from the last episode of psychosis. So I need to do better but have made a good start. It really is one day at a time.

On the Abilify I am finally getting completely free of residual delusions, residual suspiciousness and paranoia, residual grandiosity and residual ideas of reference that I always had on the Prolixin. So I am finally, at 57, looking at life sanely and soberly for almost the first time since becoming mentally ill in 1975. So now I am able to see myself in an honest and accurate way. I see I have been very sick for a very long time. I also see I have a good education, a lot of knowledge, have accomplished a lot, still believe all my science is correct and see now I can work again. There is of course nothing I can do about the past. Sane on the Abilify and overcoming the alcoholism I can face the future with cautious optimism.

I look forward to having marijuana and should have some in about 4 weeks. The plants look excellent. Medical marijuana allows me to overcome the post traumatic stress and anxiety of having been mentally ill so much of my life, gives me euphoria and optimism and allows me to work with my mind. The euphoria, the "high", largely disappears after about a week or two using marijuana daily, and the effect is subtle.

Email me when you get back from dropping Mary off.

I thought yesterday was Thursday and the Masters was going to be on. It is on today and I will watch it to see Tiger. It comes on at noon.
Thank you for sticking with me and for your support.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just got back from dropping off Mary for V to take to airport. So far the plane is still a go, but who knows. Thanks for your email. I am tired and will take a nap now and email you when I get up. Mail has not come yet but probably will by time I get up. It was 42 this morning and forecast to be 37 tomorrow morning with some areas of frost. Should not be the kind we had three years ago when everything froze and no leaves until middle of June. Now they call this "typical weather for the date". Love, Mother

Anita to me

Guess what. I took a nap and but still heard the mail coming so went down to check and condo bill wasn't there. Since some mail for the gal across the hall is in my box I hope that the condo bill is in here - will know when she comes home. Our mail is always mixed up. Then I laid down again and just woke up - at 6 P.M. and feel much better than when I laid down - I feel nice and rested. Is it O.K. to call after news and WOF? email me. Love, Mother

David Degner to Anita

That would be a good time to call, O'Reilly probably won't have anything interesting on but watch his summary in the opening if you want to check it out. I went to Fred's twice, to Costco and have gotten about 3 hours of work done in writing today, that is also good, makes the time go by, feels like being productive again.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner degneral@gmail.com
date Fri, Apr 9, 2010 at 7:06 AM
subject Bargains, sobriety, monitor, sleep, centenarians, cold here

Hi Mom,

I checked the Kalamata olive jar and it was 52.91 oz, that is 1.5 L, packed in red wine vinegar and olive oil and imported from Greece. So it is a really large jar and they last a long time. It was $7.75 and as we discussed on the phone the savings at Sam’s and Costco are really amazing. I have been buying bread for about the last month and really find it good, simple cheese sandwiches one of my favorites. The 100%
whole wheat bread I often buy that is Fred's own brand is $2.19 for a 24 oz loaf. Yesterday when I went in early they had some loaves marked down to $1.09 because the final sale date was the next day. I squeezed it and it felt just as fresh as the fresh stuff so I got that and was thinking this morning what a bargain that is, a 24 oz loaf for $1.09! I also only buy Fred's own brand of English muffins and bagels when they are on sale since I put those in the freezer. And they also had 32 oz Johnsonville summer sausage on sale for $6.49, another bargain that I like fried with eggs for breakfast.

I told you in my last email I had 3 drinking breakdowns in the last 31 days, of 2, 3 and 2 days. The last was Monday and Tuesday night during the second half of the basketball games. If I drink one day I also want to drink the next day and the day after that. So Wednesday I had to get back on the wagon. Then when I get back on the wagon for a couple of days I feel much better, build momentum for sobriety and don't feel like drinking. I am getting over the periods of feeling really rotten that precipitate drinking, getting past the post traumatic stress of the mental illness that also precipitates drinking and had a good day yesterday and feel today will be a really good day. I still consider a day a success if I just don't drink, take it one day at a time, but am getting to work again and find that the best therapy of all.

The new monitor is really nice. For Gmail and websites the size of the print is a little smaller, like going from a size 12 font to a size 10, but in Word with the wide screen two pages show up side by side. Then if you select Page Width in the size menu one page shows up and is really nice and large for working on. That's one page on the full wide screen that turns out to be 219% of an 8.5 inch wide page, really nice for working on Word documents, that is the most important thing for me respecting a monitor. Do you have a wide screen monitor? That would mean it's like your TV that is called a 16:9 aspect ration, meaning 16 wide by 9 tall. The old TV's and monitors were 4:3, 4 wide by 3 tall, that if you multiply by 4 you see is a 16:12. Does that all make sense? I imagine you still have a 4:3 computer monitor.

My sleep is improving and last night I got 6 hours without getting up once. My neck and shoulders have been sore all week from sleeping on it wrong on Monday night and I took 2 Ibuprofen this morning and feel particularly well rested and alert this morning. I had chronic poor sleep when drinking and good sleep is so important. I feel lucky to be getting better sleep and think it will continue to improve as I stay sober, lose weight and start to exercise.

I heard on Fox this morning how people are living older and many more will now live to 100. You are an octogenarian and I think an
excellent candidate to become a centenarian. Of course who would want to live to a ripe old age with chronic pain or dementia. You seem blessed to be free of those problems. I think I also will share in that blessing if I can lose weight, get in good physical shape again and quit smoking. I have been so depressed for much of my life, and even suicidal many times, and when you feel that way it is difficult to get through the day, impossible to look forward to the next day, and feel life is a sentence in hell, so it is a very pessimistic feeling, but now at 57 and trying to make a life transformation am starting to look forward to a long life. Now I am finding it's an optimistic thought to realize how much of ones life can still be in front of them.

Check out this link http://www.humanevents.com/article.php?id=36428 It's Pat Buchanan and I found it pretty interesting, particularly about Lincoln, the Civil War and slavery. I get him, Newt Gingrich and Ann Coulter on it. You might be interested in subscribing to their free weekly emails.

16 here, the Alaska weather certainly isn't what one choose as ideal. In the past, in the "sane" intervals between episodes of psychosis, I always wanted to move, as I told you many times. Now I find it doesn't much matter where I am living, find I have everything I need right here with my condo and easy access to all shopping and medical care, and am finding contentment. That’s part of the transformation I am undergoing.

Email me when you get this with your schedule and about a call later today.

Love, David

Anita to me

Just checked email as I was getting ready to go out on errands. Thanks for your email. I esp. must get some fruit and strawberries are supposed to be such a good deal because the California and Florida ones are coming at the same time due to some weather or growing ? condition - ending in a price war. Also have been told that they may be get moldy quickly - will check it out. Then I will be home for day I believe except to go to post office to mail condo payment after hopefully the statement comes today. Will be doing laundry and taking a nap sometime. I will email when I come back from errands about a call. I plan to be back in hr and half or so. Love, Mother

P.S. frost on the roof tops of cars in our lot this morning but don't believe any damage done to trees, etc. It was 35 on my window thermometer.
It is Memorial Day 2010. I have been sane for 92 days. At least I think I am sane. But I also thought I was sane when I was psychotic. So I always think I am sane, sane or psychotic, making it confusing. But now is different, I am sane, I am on a new highly efficacious anti-psychotic, and I know all that.

But sanity doesn’t tell the whole story. There is a considerable range in acceptable thinking when sane.

Here are a few curious works from after the long psychosis that ended in early 2004. This is a transcription of a piece that was hand written while at Alaska Psychiatric Institute during that psychosis:

**Biographical sketch**

**Preface**

At 51 years old and finally on a traditional path, after a most unusual journey, I would like to represent honestly, in writing, what I have learned on that journey, what it has been like for me, and how I plan to lead the rest of my life, if that is not too presumptive.

I am going to keep this monologue short so that an individual can complete reading it in an hour or two. That is consistent with my primary style element, to be symbolic. In mathematics and physics symbols represent complex phenomenon. Newton’s three Laws of Mechanics and Maxwell’s four Laws of Electromagnetism embody in a profound way the symbology of physics. In the Art’s and the Humanity’s I choose the symbology of simple poems rather than lengthy discourse. This reflects more than just my style. It reflects the nature of truth, that is always in a beautiful way.

It is my hope that some of the lessons I have learned the hard way, the reader will be able to learn and absorb in an easier way, acknowledging that wisdom is the most difficult to teach.

Gratefully yours,

David M. Degner
It does not appear in the title, but sex is the most important aspect of man and woman. I think I would feel fulfilled, and could die without too much incompleteness, if I had made love to the woman I fully loved. By fully love I mean strong marks in six areas—intimacy, friendship, commitment, cherish, honor, and respect.

My older brother Dan and I shared a bedroom until he went off to college. When I was about nine he showed me how to masturbate. I did not get laid until I was fifteen, which is a long time to be practicing, and fantasizing in preparation for the real thing.

My advice regarding sex is to have an open, curious, inquisitive mind, to never tell your parents what you have done or are planning to do, never brag or even discuss any details of your relationship with friends, and to observe the overwhelmingly strong biological matching phenomenon embodied in monogamy, whether gay or straight.

The obligation we have as adults is to not spoil the imagination of youth regarding sex, and to never stigmatize or traumatize youth for mistakes made in the individual journey of discovery that is each persons sacred right.

Sex education, which should be in the curriculum in 3rd or 4th grade, should be limited to mechanics, not dynamics, i.e., anatomy only, not use, which should be left to the imagination. And in thinking a little more about this, it would be ideal if parents taught the anatomy to their children and public classroom education would not be needed. And it seems possible, if not probable, that in the age of the Internet, no adult sanctioned sex education would even be required. That being said, it is my intention to explain sex to my sons when they are somewhere between 7 and 11 and let my wife do the same with our daughters at the same ages as the boys. And in closing, probably all three areas of teaching—Internet, school, and home—should be used to constitute the complete learning experience.
doctor. I thought that the most important science was that which pertained to understanding the human organism and I thought that is what is what one learned in medical school, I thought that physics was already complete and had been since 20’s with the invention of quantum mechanics. What I did not know was if I was smart enough to get into medical school, and smart enough to get through medical school.

I attended a parochial school for K through 8, Mt. Olive Elementary school in Milwaukee, Wisconsin. I don’t believe I missed a single day of school in 8 years of attendance. I always enjoyed school.

School was fun and interesting and I can’t imagine what else one would do with their time. There were about 30 students in each class. I remember the names of, and the impressions of, each of the 8 teachers I had in K through 8.

Kindergarten Mrs. Luxow
1st grade Miss Millhous, in Freistadt, Wisconsin
2nd grade Mrs. Luxow again
3rd grade Mrs. Miller
4th grade Miss Paugel
5th grade Mr. Radewann
6th grade Mr. Bower
7th grade Mr. Lisch
8th grade Mr. Bower again

We were given many standardized tests, the Iowa Achievement tests and others and I always scored around 80th percentile in verbal and 96-98 percentile in math. My Dad was a professor at Concordia College in Milwaukee. I did not know if I was the smartest kid in the class or is it was a fellow student whose father was also a minister and professor at Concordia College. As I recall he was around 96-98 percentile in both verbal and math but I always thought I was a little smarter in math. I had a lot of respect for him.

Ithaca’s headwaters

Chapter 4

Ithaca NY is a place that possess’ abundant natural beauty. When the glaciers receded they carved out the Finger Lakes—Ithaca is at the South end of Cayuga Lake, a very deep lake some 40 miles long and up to a mile or two wide. The streams that feed into Cayuga Lake flow through beautiful gorges carved out of slate. The highest waterfall east of the Mississippi, at 215 feet, Taughannock Falls, is located a mile or so upstream from it’s exit into Cayuga Lake. The headwaters of the streams, the 1°, are the home of colorful, small, brook trout, The middle parts of the streams, the 2°, are the home of brown trout. The
lower parts of the streams, the 3°, accessible from Cayuga Lake have annual runs of rainbow trout that make spawning runs from late February through April.

I have walked the headwaters of every stream that empties into Cayuga Lake in Tompkins county. I had to myself all the rapids, numerous hidden waterfalls, numerous still pools, for only the price of being willing to hike in a few 100 yards from the nearest bridges.

Fishing for trout in headwaters was for me, between ages 14 through 21, as enjoyable challenge as exists in all of God’s creation. Although I drank beer and smoked pot from age 15 forwards I much preferred to fish sober and without smoking. It was crystal clear to me that whoever deigned this place knew what he or she was doing.

When I wrote my books on theoretical science I put watercolors of trout on the covers. The reason, not the only reason, was because painting trout is like doing theoretical physics in that both require deep appreciation of symmetry and beauty and painstaking attention to detail. That statement is true also for artists, craftsmen and just about all the skilled endeavors of mankind.

I claim my scientific work in physics, that is the reduction of biology to chemistry and physics, is complete, simple, elegant, beautiful, symmetric, and of high utility to mankind. It is a simpler, triumphant theory that marks an epoch for mankind, the epoch of emergence on the plateau of aesthetic design, where the theory is known and where we have the ability to design our children, not just through mate selection, but also through genetic engineering, a capability God has endowed us with the ability and responsibility to do.

“Singing to the Choir::

Now when you meet the Bold Ruler do you say, “there’s a pretty smart quantitative thinker, but he has, and this is God Damned God awful, he lacks Verbal skills, and Interpersonal skills—kill him.

On Danger

An action, any action, which exposes a person to a significant probability of danger is outlaw action, morally reprehensible. All of my stunts have been safe as viewed within the context of my personal reliability and repeatability. I determined that safety indice through statistical evidence, that is circumstantial. Circumstantial evidence is not sufficient to determine beyond a reasonable doubt in my book, and if I took an endangering action I would turn myself into the ER for medical help.
Here’s another curious one from that same period:

April 13, 2004

Dear Federal Bureau of Investigation and Secret Service,

I don’t know how you guys can achieve this, but I imagine, you have, and require, a pretty good sense of humor. I am motivated by, inspired by, aimed precisely at, a rational world, instead of this insane asylum we currently have. Anything I do I have attempted to point at that simple goal.

How would you feel if the United States of America could obliterate you in an instant, plus, a small, fixed time interval, a few minutes or less, delivery time?

To be honest I do not know if you have someone smart enough to evaluate me. If you have any questions please give me a call, 907-929-2232.

Is stating the clear goal of Universal Peace, Justice, Freedom, and Liberty—no armies, no weapons, no trade restrictions, net of scientific safety, no travel restriction, no borders, live where you want to live on The Planet Earth, net of having a communicable disease—the goal now?

Sincerely,

David M. Degner
180 Fulcrum Drive #1
Anchorage AK 99504

daviddegner@gci.net
929-2232

P.S.

Is space isotropic?

No.
What are the anisotropies due to?

*Matter.*

Does radial symmetry of astronomical objects dominate?

*Yes.*

Are the radial anisotropies called a curved space/time four dimensional continuum?

*Yes.*

I feel a force right now where I am standing. Is that attributable to curved space/time?

*Yes.*

Am I rolling downhill in a four dimensional space/time low energy well as I am standing here with this gravitational force on me?

When we lift a cannon ball off an octahedral lattice energy goes into the cannon ball/earth system. Does that energy have mass and where is it stored in the cannon ball/earth configuration? Is it stored in the space between and around that mechanical configuration or in the cannon ball and the earth itself.

What exactly is energy? Is it a wave or a particle, perhaps a particle that is in motion and what would you mean by a wave without an ether? Is a wave without an ether really a particle and what kind of particle would that be?

All of biology, that is in three-dimensional space is about enantiomers, non-superimposable mirror images, R/S system, *rectus* and *sinister* system. *Is the tetrahedron the most important object in physics and chemistry, sppp orbitals and all that?*

Precisely what does it mean that I weight 248 pounds? What is a pound? *It is a force, of course.* *Is a force in a magnitude of pounds the integration of a vector pressure field over the surface area of my feet while I am standing here, feeling that force of God’s creation as an upright biped?*

If a force is due to the exchange of particles, by particles like electrons and protons, what is the particle they exchange and how is that mechanical dynamics played out?
And another one:

**From humble beginnings**
**Grows significant Narcissism**

1. Some people, who don’t know their ass from their elbow, think I am a paranoid schizophrenic and a scientific crank, or some combinatorics in a true/false logical word configuration or state. I think I am a Maverick, and a mortal (by definition) genius. To establish one’s intelligence requires timing in deriving the solutions to a large and complex number of algorithms, models, that are the solution to problems, some simple and mathematical, some highly complex. The simplest physical problem is having the elementary particles in a “test tube”. The most complex biological phenomenon is the functioning of the brain in mankind. X and Y algebra in mankind is far and away the most interesting molecular genetics problem. There are deep and profound implications to mankind in understanding it in the simplest terms, that of molecular dynamics which I call molecular algebra, a variable association or mapping, since I define the quanta of information (digitalize) in a kind of molecular algebra, which is based on connectivity (surface and charge) and diffusion. Diffusion in the absence of an external electromagnetic field is a random walk. High level non-random walk phenomenon, like life in humans on the-planet-earth, as a product of reason, opportunity, and chance, represent on the molecular level organized vectorially-flow between the phases that constitute cells in a biological organism.

2.

**What it means to be emergent on the plateau of Aesthetic design**

We are creatures of God’s creation. The universe started out with some configuration of N-particles in space and time. This initial starting scenario begs three questions:

1. Is there an edge to space?
2. Is there a beginning to time?
3. Why are there N-particles? How were N-particles created? What is their fate?

These three questions lead one immediately to acknowledging God. We must observe that God can answer these questions. And, I am afraid obligated to point out, that we cannot answer these questions, and anyone that says he or she can violates simple, elementary logic. In those three statements lie, for me, the definition of God, and I say this as a rational observer, who is also a theoretical scientist, working in biology, chemistry, physics and computer science.

If there is no reasonably profound symmetry I become suspicious that it is not real, or at least, not truth. And if it is not mathematically beautiful I don’t spend anytime thinking about it. I think those are statements of purpose, of my calling to both man and God.

Being emergent on the plateau of aesthetic design is to have the knowledge to design our children through biotechnology, that boil’s down in scientific terms to what sequence for the connectivity of biopolymers, especially DNA and protein. The most critical point in life, for many but certainly not all, is selecting a mate. Observing that I am in the image of the old man, and I expect my sons to be in the image of me is important not only in the religious connection but also to the obvious machine workings of human deoxyribonucleic acid molecular genetics. We have always designed our children in the process of mate selection. Someday we will be able to de novo synthesis of DNA sequences that operate in man. The challenge for good, sanitary, righteous bioethics is transparent.

3. The Problem of Knowledge

How many lives would have been saved if Patton had marched to Moscow and eliminated Stalin and the Communists. Imagine if there had not been a nuclear arms race, a Cold War, or the Vietnam War. What if George Senior had let Schwarzkopf march to Baghdad and take out Hussein.

In the 20th Century the American strategy has evolved from pure defense and isolationism, to WWI and WWII, to containing in Korea, Vietnam, and Iraq One, to preventive first strike in Iraq Two. What is the strategy now, given WWI, WWII, Korea, Vietnam, the fall of the Cold War, in simultaneous MAD and LD100’s? Nuclear proliferation, missing U-235, and China, India, and Pakistan more members of MAD, are acute problems that need to be confronted realistically. The specter of a LD100 virus of 200-250K string length, that can be built by a lone scientist and delivered by a single individual walking through the produce section in a grocery store
is ominous. Building a LD100 is precisely the same science as defending against a LD100.

4.

"It shall come to pass in the latter days that the mountain of the house of The Lord shall be established as the highest of the mountains, and shall be raised above the hills; and all the nations shall flow to it, and many peoples shall come, and say: "Come, let us go up to the mountain of The Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; that He may teach us His ways and that we may walk in His paths." For out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of The Lord from Jerusalem. He shall judge between the nations, and shall decide for many peoples; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning hooks; nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more." (Isaiah 2:2-4 RSV)

5. In view of the fact that we to a large extent all brothers and sisters, what is the individual's responsibility to society? The decision that I find most difficult to figure out is if I want to distribute any and all of my genetic information, spanning from my sperm, that I always have the right and responsibility to distribute as I see fit, to my DNA sequence in code as information, i.e. a sequence of pure numbers.
Dear KyFuel,

I wonder if you could please forward this email to your scientific team. I would be most interested in hearing from them. I am looking for employment.

I am 57 years old and have followed the energy problem for most of my adult years. In high school I made little academic effort and spent a lot of time repairing and rebuilding motorcycles and sports cars, getting good training in mechanical devices. I received a BA from Cornell in 1974 with a major in biology and a minor in chemistry. I was a premed student but didn’t get into medical school with an overall GPA of 3.16. I scored 98% in Science and 98% in Quantitative on the Medical College Admission Test and was around the top of the class in genetics, biochemistry and physical chemistry. I had a Professor Michael Ellis Fisher, a theoretical physicist and one of the world’s smartest individuals, for the thermodynamics/statistical mechanics semester of physical chemistry and that was the most formative academic experience for me. I became mentally ill the year following graduation and am diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic. I put in three semesters in an MBA program at Cornell concentrating in finance and investment analysis and worked as a research associate in molecular genetics at UC Berkeley before setting off on my own path and have worked independently in theoretical biology, theoretical chemistry, theoretical physics and problems in technology and economics since 1985. I have an interesting, simple, jargon free, common sense “theory of everything” but so far my work has gone unrecognized.

In almost every scientific or engineering problem the size scales are important. When either designing or interpreting a design the proportions are a key element that needs to be understood well. So also it is with the energy problem. The energy problem is not a question of if there are solutions but rather the question of which solution is the cheapest.
There are three components of the design I am proposing—small parabolic dish collector, receiver, and aiming/mounting device. I am laying out the broad outlines, not the technical and engineering details. I also have thought a lot about some of those details, so please do not be offended by the simplicity of this overview. I am proposing the strategic scheme and each element of it would have to be engineered to the state of the art. As I understand it the parabolic trough and heliostat (mirror field) with central receiver are the best designs now and under intense development and the highest efficiency design (I think it was a little over 31%) so far is a small parabolic dish with Stirling engine design. This is a fundamental alternative to those designs.

I propose that the most economical solution to the energy problem is for the solar collector to be small ¼ meter \(^2\) parabolic dishes, 11.2 inches in radius. The receiver should be able to handle 335 Watts. Parabolic dishes can generate the highest temperatures in the circulating fluid resulting in the highest potential thermodynamic efficiency for conversion to mechanical work. At 16% overall efficiency to electricity we would need about 1000 of these collectors per individual at the US per capita consumption rate of 300 KWH per day.

A light weight steel parabolic dish with ReflecTech® Mirror Film coating solves the collector problem well.

The aiming device, on which the collector is mounted, can be built cheaply and reliably due to the light weight of the collector/receiver and the small forces on the aiming device. The aiming device is just a two axis aiming device, east-west, north-south, requiring two axis and two small electric motors that can be designed for a 30 year duty cycle and probably a lot longer. A simple analog tracking device can be built with photovoltaic cells and run by a computer chip. Having a simple analog device to track the sun for each individual collector allows construction standards to be significantly relaxed and also can accommodate motion over time in the mounting structure.

The ideal receiver would be a black box, a black, absorbing coated metal enclosure with a pinhole on one side. In a solar collector/receiver configuration you want to put the focal point of the collector inside the black box, the light entering through the pinhole. The receiver plumbing has an inlet pipe for low temperature fluid, a heat exchange configuration and an exit pipe for high temperature fluid. Of course a good, inexpensive, thermodynamically efficient receiver design is essential.
These small dishes can be mounted in a 5x5 grid, 25 dishes, on a simple steel support structure. An important feature of this small parabolic dish design is it can cover almost any surface topology efficiently and inexpensively, so out in the desert, in the foothills, on roofs and fence lines the installation is easy. With each dish aiming independently construction requirements are simplified and construction costs are minimized.

The entire design is highly amenable to the manufacturing process and the associated economies of scale.

Wind forces are minimized due to the small size of the dishes.

Every five 5x5 grids, 125 dishes, can feed a small steam engine or turbine, minimizing the high pressure steam transmission manifold and the cooling manifold can be located under the collector structure. Small distributed steam engines or turbines also can be manufactured efficiently. Small salt thermal storage devices can be associated with each of these units, also with manufacturing efficiencies and economies of scale.

In addition to prime solar collector land in the Southwest many people will want their roofs covered with these things and farmers will be able to put them on fence lines and unused land. The efficiency of the collector is the same on the equator as on the North Pole. They both would collect virtually the same amount of energy. But you can not close pack the dishes on the North Pole. There they have to be spaced apart so they do not hide each others view of the sun.

Since we will need to build about 6 trillion of these solar collection devices for the world population, there will be the largest possible economies of scale, resulting in lowest cost per unit. I make a few crude, simple estimates, first that the maximum cost will be under $30.00 per unit installed (maybe a lot less). With a useful life of 30 years at 5% interest and $30.00 per unit installed the energy cost is 1.4 cents per KWH. At the estimate of overall efficiency of 16% the monthly cost to an individual to have 300 KWH per day would be $130 a month, if the land to put collector farms on is free. If the cost is $22.00 per unit installed, an estimate of 25% in overall efficiency to electricity, using a steam turbine and a 5% interest rate the energy cost is 0.7 cents per KWH. Neither of these calculations takes into account the cost of the steam engines or turbines and generators in the distributed power plants embedded in the collector fields. They only reflect the cost of the collector fields.
One is hesitant to make such a remark, but in my analysis this appears to be the best, the cheapest, the most efficient path for the large scale energy problem.

I would very much like to hear from you. Maybe the idea has already been rejected for reasons not known to me but it looks doable to me.

David Degner
Anchorage, Alaska
davidmartindegner@gmail.com

PS Small Fresnel lens, say \( \frac{1}{4} \) m\(^2\), with high temperature photovoltaic cells would be a possible more economical energy solution.
10 KyFuel two

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to info@kyfuel.com
date Mon, Apr 26, 2010 at 6:24 AM
subject A follow up to my email of April 14th seeking a position with your company

Dear Chris Baker,

I am following up on my email of April 14th titled Proposal for your scientific team in which I proposed a small parabolic dish solar collector scheme. I used for that email the address on the Contact page of your website. I now see that address led to you and you are the VP of Business Development. Maybe several trillion small parabolic dishes with ReflecTech® Mirror Film are an important part of a steady state energy solution. If you feel it would be appropriate to circulate this email or parts of it to your scientists and engineers feel free to do so. I would very much like to hear from your company regarding my proposal for solar collectors and would like to obtain a position with your company.

Sincerely,
David Degner
Anchorage, Alaska
davidmartindegner@gmail.com

This email consists of five parts:

1) Two paragraphs on my work in theory and my work in energy.
2) A paragraph about my mental illness.
3) A page and a half on small parabolic dish collector design.
4) Three paragraphs calling a spade a spade, the house of cards called modern physics and my take on what is going on in modern physics.
5) Ten pages of basic physics of energy according to my “theory of everything” that is really a theory of energy. This is also newly available on my Knol: http://knol.google.com/k/david-degner/the-n-particle-model/tjb7mqwwixx/1#. I have a more detailed 56 page paper available at: http://vixra.org/abs/0907.0009, that has some errors but includes my theory of electrons, protons, the fundamental forces
on electrons and protons, atoms and molecules—my new quantum mechanics.

1. My work in theory and my work in energy

Let me tell you a little about myself. I have spent most of my adult life working as a theoretician, free lance and for my own account, punctuated with very difficult, even completely impossible, episodes of mental illness, and do not have a typical job experience or resume. As a theoretician I focused on the idea of design, of constructing models, of viewing everything as some aspect of machine behavior. In biology I tried to understand how simple bacteria work as physiochemical machines that are chemical computers, i.e. Turing machines with the DNA as the one dimensional tape and the RNA polymerases as the heads that read the tape. In physics I tried to understand through constructing simple models, developed through thinking about them, by theorizing, of fields, forces, particles, fluxes, field equations, sources and sinks, space and time, etc. In my quantum mechanics I have a model that underlies all of chemistry, including structure, bonding, spectra, oxidation/reduction, heat and thermal energy, acid/base, structure of water, of liquid, solid and gas phases, equilibrium and nonequilibrium thermodynamics, electrochemistry, etc. I am particularly strong in chemistry and feel my new quantum mechanics the most valuable of all possible physical theories. I think it will be possible to reduce chemistry to an even more engineering science, not the art form so much of it is today, although the design possibilities based on simple combinatorics are limitless so originality and creativity will always play an important role in chemical design. I have pretty much finished the theoretical work and want now to focus on applied problems such as the most cost efficient solution to the energy problem. Although I am without applied experiences, of course my work has used a lot of math, mostly basic calculus, and required doing a lot of calculations, I feel with some new learning and exposure to fellow scientists and engineers I could contribute in designing the plumbing manifold of the heat exchanger in a receiver, the material selection and geometry, the interior and exterior surfaces, a salt thermal storage unit, and other relevant solar energy design problems and could work with effectiveness on a nice portfolio of problems in the nanorevolution that is underway in biology, chemistry, mechanical engineering and electrical engineering.

I am very strong when it comes to energy with a good undergraduate course in thermodynamics/statistical mechanics and more importantly having worked out a “theory of everything” that is essentially a reduction of all phenomenon to mechanics and dynamics of a single elementary particle that is the quantum of energy. I have a simple, self
evident “theory of everything” that only requires as prerequisites two semesters of introductory physics using calculus and three semesters of calculus through vector calculus. In the final 10 pages of this email after laying out a part of a new microscopic theory of mechanics and electromagnetism I analyze energy flow in a circuit that starts with water falling in a gravitational field, that applies a force on a turbine blade, that applies a torque to the armature of an electric generator producing AC electricity, that flows through a conductor with an in line capacitor and an in line inductor and finally comes out the other end as photons from a light bulb. Then I analyze a thought experiment microscopic configuration involving a folded up protein in its native configuration that has two small strings hooked up to each end of the amino acid chain. These strings can pull the protein apart from its globular three dimensional structure to a linear backbone of amino acids, doing force times distance work on the protein. Then we slowly and reversibly relax the tension in the strings back down to zero, allowing the protein to fold back to its native three dimensional structure. These two examples will illustrate most of the energy transformations available in physical systems, i.e. the many faces of the point N particle flow.

2. My mental illness

As I told you in the second paragraph of my previous email I am diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic. I have actually had five episodes of psychosis ranging in length from eight weeks to eight months in the last four years, a total of 20 months of psychosis in a 48 month period of time, very difficult. They were all related to medication problems and I am now stabilized on a new medication and don’t anticipate another episode of mental illness. Unfortunately and very embarrassing, in the most recent episode of psychosis I put up on some websites some very delusional psychotic garbage. You may have viewed it in a Google search of my name. Understandably you might find that pretty disturbing. I’ve taken it all down from the Internet and it no longer appears in a Google search. Psychosis is characterized by delusions, paranoia and grandiosity and my episodes of psychosis reflected those aberrations of thought. I apologize for exposing that to you but it is a reality I am forced to confront. I am quite sane and stable now and capable of functioning at a high level on the new medication.

3. Small parabolic dish design elements

Mounting 25 of the ¼ m² dishes in a 5 x 5 array is a very economical way to obtain 6.25 m² of collector. The 5 x 5 array can be manufactured in a factory minimizing cost of construction. They can be shipped to the collector field and mounted simply on a single steel rod,
requiring only a single hole to be bored in the earth. There need only be two connections associated with each 5 x 5 array, a high temperature/pressure steam outlet and a low temperature/pressure water inlet. The cooling part of the power plant can be installed underneath the 5 x 5 grid, simple heat exchangers, and the outlet of those heat exchangers can feed right into the receivers. The electrical requirements for the aiming device can be provided by photoelectric cells so no electrical connections would be required. So a 5 x 5 array can be manufactured at minimum cost in a factory and only requires two connections and a single steel rod to mount on.

A good looking receiver design would be to arrange in an approximately 1 inch sphere a wound up heat exchanger pipe of small diameter, a one layer of pipe spool, a sphere of coiled pipe with a small pinhole inlet. The focal point of the collector dish can be put right inside the pinhole of this small sphere. The sphere can be encased in ½ inch of suitable insulation, forming a 2 inch sphere for the receiver. The entire assembly can be manufactured at minimum cost. I estimate the receiver could have an efficiency of 90% or higher.

An essential part of the design is the method of inserting water into the receiver and metering it, injecting it through the receiver. The water needs to be at a slightly higher pressure than the outlet high temperature/pressure steam. Some kind of steam pressure driven piston pump injector is what is needed. I don’t know the best way to do that but clearly that would require a good design and I believe that could be done. I estimate 10% or less of the steam energy would be used to drive this water injector.

So let’s look at the complete design. There are four elements to each collector—parabolic dish, receiver, aiming device and water injector. The 5 x 5 array of collectors has some plumbing to collect all the steam outputs into a single outlet connection, some plumbing to distribute the water from the cooling heat exchanger to each dish, the cooling heat exchanger is located beneath the structure, and the supporting structure can itself be a simple lightweight aluminum or steel structure since the weight of all the dishes and the wind forces will be small. It can be manufactured in a factory with the associated economies.

I am not sure of the optimal number of 5 x 5 arrays that would feed a single steam turbine. But 8 such 5 x 5 arrays arranged in a 3 x 3 array with one missing in the center where a small turbine and salt thermal storage unit could be located would maybe be the best design. That would require a steam turbine with an input of a maximum of 67,000 W of steam and a mechanical output at 25% efficiency of 16,750 W or about 22 horsepower. Then an electrical wiring harness would link
these distributed sources together as opposed to a high pressure steam manifold feeding a central, large turbine. Of course for small installations like a rooftop or fence line such a small turbine is required.

Estimated overall efficiency:

1. Parabolic dish collector 94% (is that about right for ReflecTech® Mirror Film?)
2. Receiver 90%
3. Water injector uses 10% so multiply by 90%
4. Line loss in plumbing manifold uses 10% so multiply by 90%
5. Steam turbine 25%

Overall efficiency based on conservative estimates:

\[ (.94)(.90)(.90)(.90)(.25) = 17.1\% \]

4. Calling a spade a spade

Introduction to the Einstein charade

Theoretical and high energy experimental physics is a towering skyscraper of hornswoggle. Why is that? Ironically people who don’t vow allegiance to the storyline of modern physics based on the twin pillars of Einstein’s theories of relativity and quantum mechanics are branded as crackpots. The nonsense in physics has been piling up since Einstein published his special theory of relativity in 1905. It must be a vast conspiracy involving some or many theoretical and high energy experimental physicists and must certainly have involved the great scientists of the early 20th Century, see the photo of the 5th Solvay conference in 1927, [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wikipedia:Featured_picture_candidates/Solvay_Conference](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wikipedia:Featured_picture_candidates/Solvay_Conference), who apparently founded the conspiracy.

Modern physics provides no simple mechanism for any of the basic phenomenon such as how charge generates an electric field, how magnetic fields are generated, what these fields are made of, its not “virtual” photons, there is no way you can arrange photons that are transverse waves for the electric and magnetic fields and account for Faraday’s lines of force or for the configuration of electric fields in capacitors, there is no mechanism for electricity, what photons are made of is not pointed out although they obviously are made of something, thermal energy is missing its mechanism, mechanical forces have no mechanism, basically, and astonishingly, none of the fundamental core phenomena of physics has a mechanism. Even mighty Newton’s Second Law, \( F = \frac{dP}{dt} \), the simplest of differential
equations, is lacking proper understanding and an underlying particle physics mechanism. Quantum mechanics is a mind numbing monstrosity of incorrect paradigm. Then QFT, QCD, the Standard Model, the fundamental forces, all just more high jargon, nonsensical, esoterica wrapped up in very complicated mathematics, until we arrive at string theory which is pure nonsense, where the operative word is pure. This is truly astonishing but in string theory it appears there is not a single sentence that makes any sense. The main techniques used are impossibly impenetrable techno talk jargon and copious use of proper names and acronyms for invented, synthesized phenomena. Whether any of the mathematics makes sense I can’t say but I can say the wildly esoteric mathematics used by string theory is unnecessary for describing Nature. Elementary vector calculus pretty much gets it done in describing the fundamental phenomenon, although linear algebra, probability and statistics, graph theory and discrete mathematics are also important and other areas of mathematics can be important. My personal opinion of the math they use is that it is as phony as everything else in string theory. What is mass, what is energy, what is the nature of space and time, all not understood and explained even though they all are simple ideas and must have a simple underlying explanation and a simple particle physics mechanism. Well the problem is clear, the universe is made of a single elementary particle, that I have discovered and named the N particle, and modern physics is not using that particle. The Higgs mechanism for “mass” is more absurd nonsense. Modern physics is just a mile high house of cards and people who believe in it as a mechanism for everything have no answers to the simple questions that beg to be answered. It appears many people today are going to be known as modern day phrenologists. The microscopic Laws of Physics are just the equations that describe N particle mechanics and dynamics. If you are missing the N particle you can’t find the mechanism underlying the Laws of Physics and you can’t invent the correct theory of electrons, protons, atoms and molecules.

What do I think about the “conspiracy”? I think it is a massive effort, a righteous and magnificent undertaking, started by Einstein whose purpose is to free mankind of conflict and warfare. I could be wrong on that but can ferret out no other explanation for the 20th Century physics house of cards. How that will obtain I don’t know. There were 5000 Nazi physicists who designed weapons for Hitler. Not too long ago ½ of all physical scientists and engineers on this planet worked on weapons design and development. The stringers are not designing weapons, albeit pretty obnoxious. And of course the physicists of the 20th Century have given mankind nuclear weapons.

Is this all just a delusion of mine? Well it could be but for what it’s worth that is what I think about the situation. According to the latest
version of string theory space/time has 11 dimensions and 7 of them are “coiled” up too small to notice macroscopically. That seems to me so absurd that I can’t believe an intelligent human being much less a scientist could really believe such nonsense but once you buy into time dilation and curved space and a four dimensional space-time fabric you might think that kind of absurd nonsense could be reality. If you look at it the way I do it is a really an epic comedy about mankind and his beliefs. The vector cross product, indispensible to the Laws of Physics, to angular mechanics and dynamics, to photons and electromagnetism, to the geometry and mathematical description on which physics is based, only exists in three dimensional space. (Getting ahead of the story: The most important force that gives rise to photons and gravity has the form $F = qv \times E/c$. It is really a pressure vector field distributed on the surfaces of electrons and protons that are spinning and in pressure form is $p = \rho q v \times E/c$ where $p$ is pressure, $\rho q$ is the surface charge density scalar field defined on the surface of an electron or proton and $p, v$ and $E$ are vector fields defined on the surface of a spinning electron or proton. This force for the most part only occurs inside atoms.)

5. Some basic physics of energy

Here’s an introduction to a simple theory of everything that is really a theory of energy.

The N particle Model (A microscopic theory of mechanical and electrical engineering)

Science is really just the process of constructing models. By model what I mean is in simplest terms a dynamic construction that has discrete parts that are in motion, i.e. move through space over time. A successful model provides the mechanism for some physical phenomena. For a model of the microscopic world that is about parts which can’t be seen, only imagined, this construction must be done through theoretical work. The proof of a model is in its explanatory ability at both the microscopic level and the well known macroscopic level.

A simple model underlies physics. It is simple because there is only a single elementary particle of which everything in the universe is made. That particle is neither created nor destroyed. The particle has the property of mass. The most amazing property of this particle is that it is in perpetual motion, usually at the speed of light. I have named this
particle the N particle. The N particle is the quantum of mass, the quantum of momentum and the quantum of energy. This model is really a classical model and can and must be visualized to understand it. When I refer to an object it has a precise location in space at an instant in time, when I refer to its spin it is an actual object with a precise size and geometry that is spinning. The Laws of Physics are simply the equations that describe the N particle mechanics and dynamics in space over time.

In this paper I resolve many of the important unknown problems in physics and lay out the foundation for a microscopic theory of mechanics and electromagnetism. This leads to is a new quantum mechanics. Quantum mechanics is the crown jewel of physics and chemistry theories. Quantum mechanics is the most important theory there can be. My quantum mechanics is based on my new microscopic theory of mechanics and electromagnetism and serves chemistry very well, providing profound insight into chemical phenomenon.

Time is a flow with a past, a present and a future. All objects are trapped in the present. Objects move through space over time. Time is nothing in a very real sense in that it is not an object. It’s not kept by some kind of clock that has a location in space. If there was no motion there would be no need for time. If there was no motion the past, the present and the future would be identical, indistinguishable. But time would still exist. The manmade unit of time used in physics is the second. The second is the physical dimension for time in the MKS system of units. It is impossible to define a beginning to time. Time flows at a fixed and constant rate and cannot flow faster or slower. This is the classical idea of absolute time used by Newton. There can be no mechanism hypothesized that would dilate time because time is physically nothing. Of course a physical clock can run faster or slower if it is acted on physically, i.e. has velocity, undergoes an acceleration, is exposed to an electric, magnetic, gravity or photon field, but not due to time itself dilating. Time dilation is perfect nonsense.

Space is the three dimensions wherein particles flow, that is have velocity. Particles move through space over time. Space is also nothing in a very real sense in that it is not an object. Space is three dimensions of nothing. The manmade unit of space used in physics is the meter. The meter is the physical dimension for distance in the MKS system of units. It is impossible to define an edge to space. Space cannot have the property of curvature. This is the classical idea of space used by Newton. There can be no mechanism hypothesized that would curve space because space is physically nothing. The idea that space itself could have the property of curvature is perfect nonsense.
All objects must be particles, either a single particle or a collection of particles. An object that is a single particle is an elementary particle. There simply is no other option. What is an elementary particle? An elementary particle is discrete. An elementary particle is a finite volume with a closed surface at the interface of the particle and the surrounding space. An elementary particle must have the property of mass. An object that is a collection of particles is ultimately a collection of elementary particles. The manmade unit of mass used in physics is the kilogram. The kilogram is the physical dimension for mass in the MKS system of units.

Objects can interact without contact through gravity fields, electric fields, magnetic fields and by the exchange of photons. Objects can interact through contact by classical mechanical forces and electricity. Action at a distance between two objects can only come about through the exchange of particles. There is no other mechanism that can be hypothesized. So there is only one possible mechanism for action at a distance, the exchange of particles, and that mechanism can’t apply to space or time since space and time are nothing.

When an object has velocity it has kinetic energy.

The universe is simple in that there is only one elementary particle of which everything is made. I have named that particle the N particle. The N particle is neither created nor destroyed. The most remarkable property of the N particle is that it is in perpetual motion. The N particle comes in three spatial configurations; a very small point like particle in electric, magnetic, gravity and photon fields, a dynamic growing and shrinking membrane in electrons and protons and a small thin shell sphere that fills all the space between atoms as a close packed foam. The N particle is also a point particle in electricity, mechanical forces and as a key part of covalent bonds. As a point particle the N particle is so small it is almost as if it has zero radius, is well approximated as a mathematical point, but that of course would be impossible since a discrete particle must be a closed volume. As a point particle the N particle traverses through space or matter at the speed of light. As a growing and shrinking membrane in electrons and protons the N particle the velocity of the leading edge of the growing or shrinking membrane varies from 0 to πc and has an average velocity of πc/2. It is as if in the membrane configuration the N particle has zero thickness, is a mathematical surface, but that would be impossible since a discrete particle must be a volume so must have some thickness. As a small thin shell sphere in the space filling foam the N particle spins on it’s axis and has angular velocity \( \omega_N = c/r_F \) where \( r_F \) is the radius of the N particle in the foam. I don’t know what \( r_F \) is but imagine it is \( 10^{-17} \)m or smaller. The moment of inertia of the N particle in the foam is \( m_N r_F^2 \).
as if all the mass of the N particle is on a zero thickness ring on the equator. The N particle has mass and is the quantum of mass. Since the N particle is in motion it has momentum and kinetic energy. I will refer to the mass of the N particle as $m_N$. I will refer to the momentum of the N particle as $p_N$ and $p_N = m_Nc$. I will refer to the energy of the N particle as $e_N$ and $e_N = m_Nc^2$ for all three configurations of the N particle. The magnitude of $e_N$ is unknown but very small and I would guess between $10^{-40}$ and $10^{-55}$ Joules. It is immediately obvious why Einstein’s famous equation relating mass and energy $E = mc^2$ is true. It is true for the N particle and everything is made of the N particle. There is conservation of mass simultaneously with conservation of energy, they are two sides of the same coin, due to the fact the N particle is neither created nor destroyed and is in perpetual motion. All energy in fields and composite objects like electrons and protons is the kinetic energy of the N particle.

Newton’s second law defines a force as the derivative of the momentum with respect to time, a flow of momentum:

$$F = \frac{dP}{dt}$$

The N particle model definition of a force is that a force is proportional to the flow rate of N particles through a surface, the flux and the constant of proportionality is the quantum of momentum the N particle always possesses.

$$F = p_N \frac{dN}{dt}$$ where $dN/dt$ is the flow rate of the N particle in particles/s

Since the flow of the N particle is also a flow of mass and energy since the N particle also has those properties simultaneously and continuously:

$$F = c \frac{dm}{dt}$$ where $dm/dt$ is the flow rate of the mass of the N particle in kg/s

$$F = \frac{1}{c} \frac{dE}{dt}$$ where $dE/dt$ is the flow rate of the energy of the N particle in Watts

It is immediately obvious that the mass and energy of an object increases when you apply a force on it and accelerate it. It is thought that Newton is wrong about mechanics and that Einstein is right but in fact if one realizes a force is a flow of mass and simultaneously a flow of energy then a simple integration of Newton’s second law in the $F = dP/dt$ format yields the same $\gamma = 1/(1 - v^2/c^2)^{1/2}$ as Einstein derived. So $F = dP/dt$ is universally correct and agrees with Einstein. The additional piece Newton would have needed to do that calculation and
derive the increase in mass and increase in energy with velocity is Einstein’s $E = mc^2$ relationship.

The N particle has two vectors associated with it, one for the electric field that I will call $E$ and one for the magnetic field that I will call $B$. They are at a right angle to each other. The small point like configuration of the N particle always has a linear velocity vector associated with it that I will refer to as $v$. The magnitude of $v$ is the speed of light. The orientation of the N particle, i.e. which directions $E$ and $B$ point in relative to the velocity vector $v$ determines what type of field is present. There are three possible orientations:

1. $\pm E$ parallel to $v$
2. $\pm B$ parallel to $v$ for the space between N and S facing poles and $\pm B$ parallel to $v$ for spinning electrons and protons
3. $\pm E \times B$, the cross product, parallel to $v$

There are seven possible phenomenon involved in exchange of point like N particles:

1. Electric fields.
2. Magnetic fields.
3. Photon fields.
4. Gravity fields. An object in a gravity field has two sides to it, the side facing the source and the opposite side that faces out into the space surrounding the source.
5. A mechanical force that comes in two kinds, either a push or a pull.
6. Electricity that comes in two kinds, one with the energy flow parallel to the electron flow and one with the energy flow anti-parallel to the electron flow.
7. A key part of covalent chemical bonds.

Electric, magnetic and gravity fields are continuous in three dimensions, fill three dimensions of space. Photons, mechanical forces, electricity and covalent chemical bonds are on a line in space over time, continuous in one dimension. The fields can have the property of appearing continuous because the point N particles are very small so there are many of them, approximating continuity with many discrete particles.

In an electric field $E$ is parallel to $v$ or $-E$ is parallel to $v$. Emission by positive surfaces is with $E$ parallel to $v$ and emission by negative surfaces is with $-E$ parallel to $v$. That’s the difference between a positive and negative surface. In capacitors there is a positive plate or surface and a negative plate or surface. An electron has a negative
surface and a proton has a positive surface. In a static field that is not changing over time there is a steady state with \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles going in one direction with orientation \( \mathbf{E} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) and \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles going in the opposite direction with orientation \( \mathbf{E} \) parallel to \(- \mathbf{v}\). The N particle space filling foam reflects point N particles in fields back to the source, setting up the steady state. It will be discussed shortly.

In a simple magnetic field such as that between a S and N pole facing each other where the field lines are parallel and point from S to N, i.e. originate on the S pole surface and annihilate on the N pole surface, the \( \mathbf{B} \) vectors are parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) or \(- \mathbf{B}\) is parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \). In a static field that is not changing over time there are \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles going in one direction with orientation \( \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) and \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles going in the opposite direction with orientation \(- \mathbf{B}\) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \). Emission by N surfaces is with \(- \mathbf{B}\) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) and emission by S surfaces is with \( \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \).

The source of a magnetic field is a spinning electron or proton. The N particles are emitted by electrons or protons normal to the surface and at the speed of light relative to the surface. The field that is generated is with \( \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{u} \) for electrons and negative surfaces and \(- \mathbf{B}\) parallel to \( \mathbf{u} \) for protons and positive surfaces. So it can be seen that monopoles can’t exist. The orientation of the \( \mathbf{B} \) vector relative to the \( \mathbf{v} \) vector varies from perpendicular on the equator to parallel or anti-parallel on the axis. In a static field that is not changing over time there are \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles being emitted with orientation \( \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{u} \) and \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles being received with orientation \( \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \(- \mathbf{u} \).

In a photon \( \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \), the cross product of \( \mathbf{E} \) and \( \mathbf{B} \), is parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \). A photon is a linear collection of N particles of length in space the wavelength \( \lambda \) arranged so as to yield the classical Thomas Young transverse wave of the electric and magnetic fields.

In a gravity field point like N particles are emitted by atoms and collections of atoms and reflected back by the foam in the surrounding space back to the atoms, a steady state for static fields. In a gravity field \( \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \) is parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) in the emission of N particles by atoms and collections of atoms and \( \mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E} \) is parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) for the reception of N particles by atoms and collections of atoms back from the field. In a static field that is not changing over time there are \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles going in one direction with orientation \( \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) and \( \frac{1}{2} \) of the N particles going in the opposite direction with orientation \( \mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \). Note the N particle in the \( \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) configuration is the non-superimposable mirror image of an N.
particle in the $\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$. The three vectors $\mathbf{E}$, $\mathbf{B}$ and $\mathbf{v}$ of the N particle enable this chirality.

In electricity there is a flow of N particles through an atomic lattice arranged on one dimensional lines of point N particles travelling like a photon through the space between the electrons and protons of the atoms in the lattice. The number of such lines is proportional to the current. The linear density of N particles on that one dimensional line is proportional to the voltage. Clearly the linear density of N particles on a line times the number of lines gives the flux, the flow rate, of N particles and therefore the flow rate of mass, momentum and energy through a cross sectional surface of a conductor.

In an AC current all the power flows in one direction, the hot wire. But the electrons flow first in one direction and then reverse themselves and flow in the opposite direction. So there are two kinds of current, one where the energy flows in the same direction as the electrons and one where the energy flows in the opposite direction to the electrons. These two kinds of electricity correspond to a flow of N particles with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$ and with $\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$. So a line of AC current one full cycle long has $\frac{1}{2}$ with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$ followed by $\frac{1}{2}$ with $\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$.

A mechanical force comes in two kinds, a push or a pull. A mechanical force is the flow of N particles through cue sticks, connecting rods, etc. In a push the flow of N particles is with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$ and in a pull the flow of N particles is with $\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$.

Then gravity, electricity and mechanical forces all involve a flow of N particles with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$ and a flow of N particles with $\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{E}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$. All photons involve a flow of N particles with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$. A photon is its own anti-particle, meaning an anti-photon is the same as a regular photon so anti-photons are also a flow of N particles with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{v}$.

The foam has a lot of properties. The foam fills all the space between atoms including the interstitial space in liquids and solids. The only place there is no foam is in the annular space of free electrons and protons and inside atoms. Free electrons and protons are liquid state thin shell spheres, as if with zero thickness, with a radius of $\frac{1}{2}$ the Bohr radius, $2.645 \times 10^{-11}$ m. Atoms are spherical capacitors with a surface made of electrons as the outer plate. Hydrogen in the $n = 1$ quantum state, the highest energy level in my quantum mechanics, has a proton as the inner plate at $\frac{1}{2}$ the Bohr radius and an electron at the Bohr radius. The most important property of the foam I call capacitance. Consider the earth emitting N particles as gravitons. It
would run out of gravitons if all it did was emit them. The same is true of a charged conductor that emits N particles as the electric field. It would run out of N particles if all it did was emit them. The foam reflects back the particles emitted by the sources of gravity, electric and magnetic fields, so in a static field there is both emission of N particles from the source to the field and reception from the field by the source. Then in steady states of emission and reception, free electrons, free protons, atoms and collections of atoms are both a source and a sink and the number of N particles in the matter and in the field are constant over time. This is also true for isolated electrons and protons. The foam fills all the space surrounding the electron or the proton and provides the property of capacitance to the naked electron or proton.

The foam also defines a frame of reference. The velocity of the N particles as electric, magnetic, gravity and photon fields is c relative to the stationary foam. The foam is gravitationally held in place around celestial bodies. The celestial bodies are in motion relative to each other. Then the foam reference frame is defined locally and two gravitationally bound collections of foam are in motion relative to each other because the celestial bodies they are associated with are in relative motion. What happens when a photon traverses from one gravitationally held clump of foam to another gravitationally held clump of foam? This is the question posed by Einstein in his special theory of relativity and his solution was that the speed of light is simultaneously c in all frames that are moving relative to each other but that time flows at different rates in those different inertial frames. We now know that is nonsense. What really happens when a photon traverses the boundary between two clumps of foam that are in relative motion is that the photon either speeds up or slows down depending on the direction of the relative motion, i.e. moving apart or coming together, and the photon is red shifted for moving apart and blue shifted for moving together. This is simply a Doppler shift that must take into account the foam and its interaction with \( \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \) N particles. Gravity is reflected back by the foam but photons go on forever and both are \( \mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B} \) parallel to \( \mathbf{v} \). In a red shifted photon N particles of the photon are converted to foam particles lowering the photon energy while changing its frequency and wavelength and the photon velocity is boosted to c in the new foam reference frame. In a blue shifted photon N particles of the foam are converted to N particles of the photon and the photon energy is increased and the velocity is decreased to c in the new foam reference frame. So energy is conserved in all these processes and it is due to the point N particle/foam interaction. I am currently working out details of point N particle/foam interactions. It must be done by theory. The basic principle is that momentum is conserved.
Another interesting property of the foam is curvature. The foam clumps that are gravitationally bound to a sun or a planet have the property of curvature due to orientations of the foam particles in the field. I think the foam particles are spinning with the same angular energy as the point N particles linear energy and are spinning with $\mathbf{E} \times \mathbf{B}$ parallel to $\mathbf{\sigma}$. The arrangement of the $\mathbf{\sigma}$ vectors of the N particles that make up the foam are the “curvature” of the foam. This accounts for the well known phenomenon of gravitational lensing.

There is a third property of the foam I call light cone conductance. I will not go into that here.

Here’s a tidbit on this “classical” theory of gravity. There is an interesting parallel between the electric field and the gravity field. It leads to a 5th Maxwell equation.

In the electric field we have Coulomb’s Law $F = \frac{q_1 q_2}{4\pi \varepsilon R^2}$. The analogous entity in gravity is Newton’s Law of Gravitation $F = \frac{G m_1 m_2}{R^2}$. In the electric field the energy stored in the electric field of a spherical single plate capacitor with radius $R$ and charge $q$ is given by $U = \frac{q^2}{8\pi \varepsilon R}$. The gravity analogue for the energy stored in the gravity field by a spherical mass $m$ is $U = \frac{G m^2}{2R}$.

The analogue of the electric field vector in gravity is a gravity field vector that I have named Newton Height or $\mathbf{NH}$ for short (or the vector field $\mathbf{g}$ if you prefer):

$$\mathbf{NH} = - \frac{G m}{R^2} \text{ (direction opposite unit vector } \mathbf{R})$$

The gravity analogue to Gauss’s Law for the Electric Field, Maxwell’s fifth equation, the Law for the Gravity Field:

$$\int \mathbf{NH} \cdot dA \text{ (closed surface)} = -4\pi G m$$

For the electric field we figured out the field strength and direction using Gauss’ Law and integrated the electric field energy density $\mu = \frac{1}{2} \varepsilon E^2$ over all of space from the surface of the charge to infinity in all directions to get the energy stored in the field. The energy density of a gravitational field is given by $\mu = \frac{1}{8\pi G} NH^2$.

Then for Newton’s law of gravity we have $\mathbf{F} = m\mathbf{NH}$ analogous to $\mathbf{F} = q\mathbf{E}$ and $\mathbf{F} = -\nabla U$(gravity field) analogous to $\mathbf{F} = -\nabla U$(electric field).
The foam has mass and is the missing dark matter in the universe. The gravitational field of gravitons has energy given by \( U = Gm^2/2R \) and is the dark energy.

Now let’s look at a simple circuit involving many of the faces of the N particle, the circuit I stated at the outset of water falling in a gravitational field, that applies a force on a turbine blade, that applies a torque to the armature of an electric generator producing AC electricity, that flows through a conductor with an in line capacitor and an in line inductor and finally comes out the other end as photons from a light bulb. We see gravitons flow out of the gravity field into the water molecules, increasing their velocity, mass and energy. Then the water molecules push on the turbine blades and N particles as a mechanical force flow out of the water molecules and into the turbine blade. They flow through the turbine mechanical connectivity and into the armature of the generator, then out of the generator as electricity, are converted to electric field particles in the capacitor, back to electricity after the capacitor, into magnetic field particles in the inductor, back into electricity after the inductor and finally are converted to photons in the light bulb. The many faces of the point N particle flow.

And finally let’s look at a favorite problem of mine, the protein folding problem. All atoms have dipoles and those dipoles are charge patches on the surface of the atoms. Moving the + and – dipoles of adjacent atoms in molecules as close together as possible minimizes the energy in the electric fields and maximizes the attractive forces between atoms. That’s why proteins fold. Hydrogen bonds are just very strong dipoles. The repulsive force is the exchange of thermal photons. Both emission and absorption of a photon by an atom is a repulsive force. So if you heat up a protein you increase the repulsive forces and separate some of the dipole couples putting energy back into the electric fields of the dipoles. This is a thought experiment of a microscopic configuration involving a folded up protein in its native configuration that has two small strings hooked up to each end of the amino acid chain. These strings can pull the protein apart from its globular three dimensional structure to a linear backbone of amino acids, doing force times distance work on the protein. Then we slowly and reversibly relax the tension in the strings back down to zero, allowing the protein to fold back to its native three dimensional structure. When a mechanical force is applied to pull the protein apart, point N particles as a mechanical force flow through the string, through the chemical connectivity of the protein, and end up in the electric fields of the dipoles of the atoms in the protein. When you relax the tension in the strings back to zero the protein folds and the energy that was stored in the dipole fields is released to the surrounding water as thermal photons, i.e. heat. This is entropy at work. The change in entropy is \( dQ_{\text{reversible}}/T \) where \( T \) is the
absolute temperature in Kelvin. A folding protein lowers its entropy, violating the second law of thermodynamics. But when a protein folds the electric field energy in the dipoles flows out of the protein and into the surrounding water as heat, increasing the overall entropy for the system of protein + surrounding water. So the entropy of the protein decreases and the entropy of the surrounding water increases and for the total system the second law of thermodynamics is obeyed. I claim with my new quantum mechanics I have the toolbox to fold proteins.

This is just an introduction to a part of the theory. For a somewhat complete model with some mistakes, a theory of electrons and protons and the new quantum mechanics it all leads to see: http://vixra.org/abs/0907.0009

Here’s an excerpt:

The Theory of Everything in a nutshell: There are only two particles that account for just about all important phenomenon, the electron and the proton (a neutron is a combination of an electron and a proton) so forces can only be on electrons and protons. Electrons and protons are the sources and the sinks for the electric, magnetic, photon and gravity fields. The four fundamental fields are made of point N particles. Electrons and protons are thin shell liquid phase spheres. When electrons and protons exchange point N particles over their surfaces with the four fields in the adjacent space forces and torques are generated on them, distributed on their surfaces as pressure vector fields. The fields have potential energy and the electrons and protons have kinetic energy when they have linear or angular velocity. We want to keep track of the flow of energy from field to particle and from particle to field. We can see the exchange process that generates the forces is the arrow of time for electrons and protons.

David Degner
Anchorage, Alaska
davidmartindegner@gmail.com

PS I can derive the magnitude of the elementary quantum of charge from theory. The quantum of charge is an experimentally obtained value in the existing paradigm. An electron or proton has a “luminosity”, the total of emission plus reception flux of the N particle as an electric field in units of power, of 12.34 W.
SCENE I . . .

CHANCE Moderation! God we were Three, Three-

MARX - Three Incredibly focused

CHANCE - Incredible Pieces of Shit! On the court we were clean as John Glenn, cool as a moose, but off the court... MARX We were three. It was a time. (beat) Chance, Marx, and the Swede. The Big Swede.

CHANCE Yeah, the Swede.

MARX I confess, I every so often do wonder about him.

CHANCE Do you? Really? You’re not in touch, are you?

MARX No, I found I couldn’t tolerate his mercurial mood changes and sudden deranged appearances at my doorstep. Thank god he moved. (sees Chance’s hurt expression) Okay, okay. He was scary. He scared Elvira.

CHANCE Yeah, so, so he scared Elvira, it’s not like he’d ever do anything. He was your friend, Marx!

MARX Chancy boy you’re a bachelor. You don’t know how it can work, in a relationship. And after all that business on Lennon Day...

CHANCE The fuck you saying man? I’ve been in plenty relationships, business, cards, women, bookies - He’s just in a bad way is all. Deg is. And in fact I am in a relationship right now.

MARX Really - that’s great news

CHANCE Doctor Chicken.

MARX Doctor Chicken? She’s a doctor named Chicken?

CHANCE Haha. ‘Its the company name, bro.

MARX Since when are you in a company?

CHANCE Not in, Marxie, own, not yet but very soon.

MARX I see. Is that what you wrote to me about?
Marx reads from the note.

MARX “The Life You Save May Be Your Own.” What does that have to with Chicken, Doctors, or anything else?

Chance stares off at the basketball court, following the action.

CHANCE Is that what I wrote? Seems like there was more.

MARX “It’s the fourth quarter, and we’re down, the life -” That’s a bad rhyme, ‘bro.

CHANCE Yeah? Shit. Are you English professor now? No? Oh, right, you’re a lawyer. Sue me. Oh wait, you can’t practice in New York, my bad! Or won’t, which is it

MARX Chance, you asked me to come, so I came. Now you’re giving me shit.

CHANCE I’m sorry, man, you know I’ve been close to Deg, and when I say he’s in a bad way and you just dismiss it

MARX Time out! You jumped into this riff about Doctor Chicken

CHANCE Oh. Yeah...well, that’s how I know about gluten.

MARX Well, good way, indifferent, bad way or any way, it’s not my concern. Chance, it’s all different when you’re married. Especially to a woman like Elvira.

Marx pulls out a small plastic container and spoon from his pocket and starts to eat. Chance inspects the contents.

CHANCE The fuck is that? What - the - fuck

MARX Unlax, Chancy, it’s just yoghurt

CHANCE Dude, whatever that is, it is not yoghurt, I’ve seen what

MARX It’s yoghurt with a few extras thrown in, Kiwi, Betel nuts, kelp extract, some seeds

CHANCE -Coach was right about you. You look like a normal guy, but you weren’t hatched locally.

MARX (offers a taste) Want some?

CHANCE You menace me with that shit again I’m gonna get one of those guys over there to slice you.(beat)So what’s her story then? I mean, Degmar’s big, is that what scared her? What am I missing?

MARX I travel a lot. Deg was always showing up unannounced. Elvira doesn’t do well with...surprises, perturbations to her equanimity

CHANCE What in the fuck is with this Tibetan bullshit? You’re back in the city Marxie for fuck’s sake so try not to upset, no wait, “perturb” the equanimity of my park head with words that irritate the shit out of me.

MARX They’re only words...never mind, you’re right. Sometimes I forget that what I have become from all my study doesn’t translate well
CHANCE Shut - the - fuck - up. That’s who I become. Look, look at that asshole.

MARX Who?

CHANCE The guy with the ball. He sucks. YOU SUCK!

MARX Ease off.

CHANCE Repeat after me: YOU FUCKING SUCK YOU CAN’T DRIBBLE.

MARX He’ll come over here and contend with you

CHANCE Did you mean fight me? Well, then say it! Stop talking like Father Mulcahy!

MARX Right. Anyway, it was some years ago, I don’t know, when did I see you guys last? Anyway, Deg came by one evening and he was really out there, flying high on something, running off about a theory he had

CHANCE In physics.

MARX Yes, that’s right, in physics. He was quite animated and was given to these violent gestures as he denounced the powers that be.

CHANCE He was always ‘demonstrative.’

MARX What, oh now?! are you making fun of me?

CHANCE I did go to college too. It’s just I use language to communicate.

MARX Meaning?

CHANCE I speak the language of my people. Here.

MARX Well for the record Chancy you don’t look Guatemalan, or Jamaican, or “ese”...Anyway, he always was demonstrative as you say. It’s just that Elvira -

CHANCE “- ese ?

MARX Lebanonese, Nepal-ese, Japan-ese, you know

CHANCE “Sleeze”? Guess not. I almost used her name.

MARX Whose name? For what?

CHANCE Elvira’s. For the franchise.

MARX What franchise?

CHANCE Doctor Chicken.

MARX I’m not following this at all.

CHANCE The company, bro. I didn’t think if we named it Bubbe’s it would get beyond a certain niche market.

MARX “Niche market?” “Bubbe?”
CHANCE Okay, okay. So I had this idea, right? Bubbe - you remember, my grandmother in Florida - had this great Jewish Fried Chicken recipe, right?

MARX It was okay

CHANCE Okay? You used to chew on the tin foil, bro!

MARX It was good, okay.

CHANCE So I thought, if Kentucky Fried and the Colonel could do it, why not me? I mean, who knows the city? Who knows Jews?

MARX New Yorkers aren’t big fried chicken eaters, and what makes you think they’d go to a place named Elvira’s?

CHANCE Yeah, right, well that’s why we didn’t run with it. She was always a little fearful.

MARX How do you mean?

CHANCE She was Marxie, don’t get all up about it. She won’t even drive.

MARX She has a license. (beat) Okay, she won’t even drive.

Both men laugh.

MARX Elvira is not fearful. She’s just cautious. An ultimatum of sorts was rendered. She likes things to be in a state of order, of calm, of peace.

CHANCE And you don’t, Mahatma?

MARX I do actually, and by getting my own space I can grant her the episodic serenity that my absence confers upon her - What?

CHANCE Are you actually writing that kind of shit? That you’re talking?

MARX I’m writing a series of zen conversations...in my private space...when I’m in the city. So are you really going into the fried chicken business, or

CHANCE Yeah so we got to thinking, Jews like success, and what better symbolizes success to them than a doctor?

MARX Maybe money?

CHANCE Yeah, but what you gonna do, call it Cash Chicken? Dollar Chicken? Fiddy Cent Chicken? No, you gonna call it Doctor Chicken!

MARX I think I follow.

CHANCE Whatever. It’s just weird, Marxie, you and ‘Vira have a nice apartment but you don’t work there, you got a walk down shit hole over in the Kitchen so you can write. When you’re even around. Sometime you got to tell me why the fuck you want to be near midtown (beat) Whoa! Did you see that shot, Game Over. Marxie wanna run with next? Come on.

Chance walks to the edge of the stage and converses with an unseen party as he looks back to Marx.
CHANCE Yo man, I had next, first up. Marxie come on, you still beat these yos even with shoes. Yeah, dude, we coming, we need one from the losers.

MARX I can’t play, it doesn’t feel right. Besides, these shoes. And of course the ankle. Chance how’d you know I had a walk down, by the river? Have you and Elvira been talking behind my back.

CHANCE What you mean we ain’t got no third? They went to get soda? Got to be some other guy, wait - see over there? By that busted hoop? Go ask him. Come on Marxie, start warming up - what? What do you mean behind your back? You’re out of the country so much woman gets lonely for a friendly voice.

SOUND of a PIERCING FINGER WHISTLE.

DEGMAR (O.S.) I see two pieces of shit.

Chance and Marx turn toward the other corner.

CHANCE Deg!

MARX (warily) Fucking Degmar? What is this, Chance?

Chance and Marx look at one another through Marx’s discomfort.

CHANCE AND DEGMAR The Swede Cometh!

DEGMAR enters. He is tall and Nordic in appearance, clean shaven with unruly hair. He is clearly overweight by at least thirty pounds.

DEGMAR Chance. Even Marx. I am always elevated in the presence of your unique company.

CHANCE The fuck, Marxie? You been like coaching him and shit? Deg, here you say, ‘the Fuck’s it Hangin?! How you doin!

Chance and Degmar embrace. When Chance releases Degmar, Marx remains aloof.

CHANCE I know, bro, he hasn’t been coaching you, you just see him and automatically start talking like an asshole.

DEGMAR We haven’t spoken. We haven’t spoken, have we Marx? It’s been in the neighborhood of what, twelve hundred and sixty three days? How are you?

The two men look at one another for a moment. Degmar assesses the park situation.

DEGMAR So either of you faggots think you can keep up with me. (to Chance) That better? (to the game offstage) Yo, throw that ball here.

A basketball is thrown into his hands.

DEGMAR Ok, you pieces of shit, we gonna play or what?

Degmar and Chance walk eagerly offstage in the direction of the game; Marx watches them go and sits.

Chance reenters.
CHANCE Come on, Marxie, this is necessary.

MARX What? I didn’t come to play! These..games..they’re all part of the past

CHANCE You came because I asked you to come. And now you need to play, it’s part of the game plan.

MARX What ‘game plan’?(consulting the note)Who’s down? What life? I feel reluctance

CHANCE Can I say ‘just trust me?’ Can I still say that, Marxie? See, no swearing. Marxie? Deg needs some exercise, the fat fuck. Sorry.

Marx rises and trails the other two as they walk off in the direction of the game.

CHANCE (to Degmar, softly) Are you really okay? For this?

DEGMAR Peak, Chancy, I am peak. Perfectly copacetic. Maintained. I am the missile of God’s arrow of time.

AS Chance’s gait slows as he digests this Marx overtakes him and SHRUGS in a comradely f

Lights down.

SCENE 2

1974

The same park bench. Near it is the rusty hulk of an old Cadillac, identifiable by its tailfins.

SOUND of a basketball bouncing on the pavement, growing louder. Indistinct male voices and grunts gradually clarify as Chance and Degmar enter.

A much leaner Degmar is dressed in a two piece suit and looks swank and trim and handsome. Chance is dressed in a flashy polyester disco-era shirt and bell bottoms, a four day beard, and is holding a basketball.

From the direction of the court come the sounds of a game in progress, occasionally louder, occasionally softer.

CHANCE Well, Dude, at least you look good today.

DEGMAR Graduation day, I looked in the closet. You should too, man.

CHANCE You showed your family Deg. I showed mine something else.

DEGMAR Yeah, the old man hasn’t had a drink yet, said he’s going to be there - I can’t believe it. Shit. But not Erik. Fucker.

Degmar gets a pack of Camels out and lights a cigarette, offering one to Chance. Chance waves it off.

CHANCE Erik’s always been a faggot and a drunk I can’t believe he didn’t fuck you up too. What’s with the smokes?
DEGMAR I was younger brother, but stronger - Fuck the fucking dean! Basketball season’s over, Chance - vice season begins.

CHANCE Dude, I am screwed. Fucking the dean will not unscrew me. And basketball ended in March.

DEGMAR It shouldn’t matter! So they flunk you because of that incident, you still A, have enough credits to graduate and B, still complete your major requirements.

CHANCE Deg, you sound

DEGMAR And C, most important, you were point guard for the first Brooklyn State team with a winning record in twenty years.

CHANCE I had help...

DEGMAR (sharply) Yeah? Where is that piece of shit by the way?

CHANCE Pictures. He said he’ll cruise by.

DEGMAR Oh, yeah, with his family. Talk about proud. I hope he leaves his mother home though.

CHANCE Law school, out of state, full ride - not bad for a small

DEGMAR Pre-season All American, though, definitely draftable if he didn’t, you know

CHANCE -fuck up his ankle. I know. I don’t think I could forget. Could you? ‘Pre’ season. Not bad for a

CHANCE AND DEGMAR -small forward with no jump.
Both men laugh.

DEGMAR Still..

CHANCE Who needs it, anyway? I still graduate, get a diploma, all that shit, I just can’t go to graduation, that’s the punishment. But I liked hearing it.

DEGMAR What?

CHANCE The way you itemized the argument. Scientific.

DEGMAR I am a scientist.

CHANCE You are a master of the space time quantuminium.

DEGMAR Continuum.

CHANCE What’d I say, Stiffly?

DEGMAR Dude, I am going to miss you.

CHANCE Yeah, me too. We’ll hang out this summer though. (speaking with Prussian tones now)Before you march off to ze Max Planck Institute.

CHANCE AND DEGMAR Jawohl Herr KommanErikt!
Both men Sieg Heil.

CHANCE Man, that is just so cool.

DEGMAR Yes, it is very cool.

CHANCE And you’re getting a ride too. You fucking stiff.

DEGMAR Do you realize we are probably the only three white boys in this city who both played D1 ball, basketball I emphasize, laid serious pipe, white pipe I emphasize, AND got scholarships

CHANCE (somber) You nazi fuck. I really hate you.

DEGMAR Yeah, I know. But I’m Norwegian. But seriously, Dude, if we constructed a polynomial equation, weighting appropriately number of girls fucked, numbers of games won, and numbers of joints smoked, we would, hands down

CHANCE True maybe, Dude, but it doesn’t matter - you still look like a nazi fuck. And now you get to study with them, no cash outlay. And because of this - dean shit -

DEGMAR Einstein, Bohr, Heisenberg - that part of the world has a wonderful tradition, dude.

CHANCE A tradition of murdering Jews you mean.

DEGMAR Chaim...

CHANCE You fuck - don’t call me that, today. Not today. Makes me feel all holocaust and shit

DEGMAR Chance, man, I’m studying physics, okay? I can’t help it if some of those geniuses had murderous uncles. I’ll tell you what, though, if while I’m there I hear any anti-semitic remarks

CHANCE Oh, and they’ll just up and say them out loud?

DEGMAR Well, you said I look like one of them, right?

CHANCE So what are you going to do?

DEGMAR Remember that time against Ionia? Three seconds to go, down one, you threw up a floater? What did I do?

CHANCE You hip checked that lane clogger into the stanchion and tipped it in for the win.

DEGMAR Case closed.

CHANCE Case not closed. He and his bros came after you and you took a pounding.

DEGMAR It wasn’t a pounding you needledick. It was more of a..roughing up.

CHANCE Whatever. Fucking Kraut. Gimme a smoke, asshole. Since you fucked up my scholarship, now I got to wait on a hearing. Fuck it, fuck business school.

Degmar complies and Chance clumsily lights a cigarette, tries to imitate
DeG’s deep inhale, and coughs.

DEGMAR I am sorry, Chancy. But we all take our lumps. As men. And I did not fuck up your scholarship.

CHANCE Well you were there, on the scene. Ah fuck! Like I suddenly care now? Like it matters? Fuck me!

DEGMAR Then go anyway! Attend the ceremony.

CHANCE You mean goose step down the aisles? And have the dean cough up another surprise? Nah...at least I helped one of us, you’d a done the same for me. (beat) I can’t believe you can actually played ball and smoked Camels -

He stamps out his cigarette.

DEGMAR Viking blood.

CHANCE Oh please don’t start on that ‘natural selection’ Nordic superiority crap, I’m gonna have to get Julio and Palmieri to come kick your ass. You know, from the lower races.

DEGMAR It was really noble, Dude. What you did.

CHANCE You are my friend. Friends do for friends without being asked.

DEGMAR Do they?

CHANCE It was stupid. And I got caught. For nothing. I had to do it, Deg, you know?

DEGMAR It wasn’t “nothing” for me. It wasn’t my fault Chancy, no causality involved.

CHANCE You know, Deg, you piece of shit, I wonder how it might have gone if I were the one on the ground, and you were the one suspended

DEGMAR Well, Newton would say that had I fallen off the pipe, my kinetic energy would have exceeded yours, given my greater mass, and likely broken bones.

CHANCE Asshole. I mean with the guard, I think I would have

From the right Madeline enters. She is a beautiful woman, 21, and is played by the same actor throughout. She carries herself fluidly, giving off the aura of a hippie goddess blessed with athletic grace.

She carries a picnic basket and wears a dress appropriate for an outdoor graduation ceremony.

MADELINE Huey and Luey! Fric and Frac!

CHANCE Uh oh, it’s the wife! Run, save yourselves! Run Deg!

All laugh. There is a pirouette of light embraces and pecks, first Chance and Madeline, the mechanics that of the forbidden. Then Degmar and Madeline, Madeline demonstrating somewhat more availability to Degmar.

219
Throughout the rest of the scene the men, and occasionally Madeline, pass the ball around with some skill and adroitness, usually to help emphasize a point.

MADELINE What a divine day!

CHANCE Careful Madeline, they enforce that sign you know.

MADELINE What sign is that? No Dogs in the park?

CHANCE The one about lewd and lascivious behavior.

A moment as Madeline and Degmar break off.

DEGMAR Chancy. A fine specimen like me, why it’s inevitable Madeline should

MADELINE Look at that suit!

DEGMAR Cute.

MADELINE More like handsome.

CHANCE Careful. Wife.

MADELINE Not yours, anyway. And maybe no one’s...

CHANCE Uh oh, a fucking news bulletin. ‘De-dit-dit-dat-dat-we interrupt this park broadcast.’

MADELINE Okay, just ram it, clown.

DEGMAR So, where is he? Your guy, your guy to be your guy forever?

MADELINE He’s with his parents, he’ll be here in a second, I’m to take a picture. Of the three.

DEGMAR (twirling his left ring finger)So it’s definite then? Aren’t you missing something? But what did you mean about ‘maybe no one’s’? Because I am at your service.

Degmar bends to the ground and picks up a large paper clip, which he works into a ring of sorts.

DEGMAR (putting the ring on her)Behold! Here my Valkyrie, Slayer of Wretches!

MADELINE He makes my spirit soar. And this is very touching. But where will it soar to? I read something last night. Disturbing.

DEGMAR Yes?

MADELINE “Medicine is a cruel mistress.” It was meant for guys I think, advice to stay single if becoming a surgeon. Because of the long hours.

DEGMAR And?

MADELINE Well I wondered if it applied to women too. Like to me, for example.
DEGMAR You a surgeon? That’s worth contemplating. Was there anything else? Because you’re still the perfect woman for

CHANCE Fucking kraut. Nazi. Keep it in your pants. She’s marrying Marx.

DEGMAR Your circumcision is showing, Chaim.

CHANCE The fuck does that mean?

MARX appears stage left, dressed in cap and gown. He enters with a processional gait, humming the Elgar march.

MARX It means, crude dude, that your morality is on your sleeve. Along with those oh so telling stains.

CHANCE Well, it’s the husband. Thank god.

DEGMAR The graduate arrives.

Degmar lights another cigarette.

MADELINE Hey you.

Marx moves over to Madeline for an awkward embrace for which he has to remove his cap, revealing a crew cut.

DEGMAR Mitt Gud!

MADELINE Oh dear.

CHANCE The hell is that? A buzz cut? Did you hit your head on a pole? Or is it cancer? Why not shave your head? What the

MADELINE Marxie?

MARX We’re starting something new, so I got a haircut. No big deal. Like Deg and his smokes. What gives? And you, Chance, shouldn’t be talking about shaving. (beat as all ponder that word)

CHANCE The fuck’s that supposed to mean? (fingers his 4 day beard) This? Or something else

DEGMAR For the record: I am smoking a cigarette because I want to.

MADELINE Why didn’t you tell me?

MARX It’s my head. And your lungs. I’m getting the better deal.

DEGMAR You sound just like your mother Marxie, officious and superior. And bald.

MADELINE You said “we.” We only wish his mother was bald, Deg.

MARX

Oh dear Madeline let’s not have a debate about a haircut. It’s done. It will grow back.

MADELINE But I might have wanted to cut my hair too!
DEGMAR And wear a sackcloth, but that would hide those curves

CHANCE I told you, can it you Nazi fuck. Keep smoking, you belong in a gas chamber.

DEGMAR I’m finding that word tiresome, Chance. Unlax why don’t you?

CHANCE Unlax? Fucking transplant from where? - Milwaukee? Why did you even move to New York you can’t speak the language. And maybe if I were allowed to get my fucking diploma I could. Asshole.

(He starts to walk offstage with the ball) Fucking graduation day bullshit. Gimme another smoke.

Degmar refuses. Chance tries to exit.

MADELINE Wait! Charles, come back, I want to get a picture.

Chance reluctantly stops and walks back. Madeline removes an Instamatic from the basket and arranges the three guys about the tailfins of the car. Marx is in the center, but Degmar is clearly the point of the picture.

MADELINE You know Chance you could have worn something, made a concession this one time.

The three guys share a glance – does Madeline know?

MARX Baby, shouldn’t I be

MADELINE Your missing hair throws the balance off, Marxie. When we look back at this years from now -

CHANCE - From my prison cell

DEGMAR - From Stockholm

MARX In the albums of our memories

CHANCE What? Where you gonna be, counselor? Also in jail with me.

MADELINE Pipe down, boys. On three, one, two, brownies!

The camera flashes.

MARX Hmm, brownies would go well with this.

MADELINE We agreed we’d play it straight, Marxis. Didn’t you say that lawyer friend of your father’s would be here?

MARX I’m not so sure about this law business…walking here I got to feeling a pull. A different kind of tug…spiritual you might say. It’s liberating.

CHANCE A tug? Like with a rub? Pulling of your midline appendage you mean.

MADELINE Chance, you’re not dressed up.

CHANCE I had a sort of argument with my parents and they’re not going so I figured fuck it. Who needs it anyway? I got my degree
(under his breath) I think.

MADELINE So what is it for you, business school?

CHANCE Maybe, kind of depends on a money thing. But maybe I’ll just start right in, get my feet wet, I know a guy makes pencils.

MADELINE Pencils?

CHANCE Special pencils.

DEGMAR Pencilnecks, more like.

MARX What kind of pencils?

(Marx purposefully adjusts the drape of Madeline’s dress and fixes a stray hair)

Sorry, Babe, I just had to make you perfect.

CHANCE Okay, okay, don’t laugh it’s a great idea. See we were taking all these tests, right? Starts right with the SATs? All through college. And the answer sheets have little ovals on them, right? And you have to fill them in completely?

MARX Uh oh..

DEGMAR Cute.

MADELINE What, Deg? What’s he going to do?

CHANCE So all they let you have is a pointy number two pencil, right? And you have to work it all around that oval area, right?

DEGMAR But being the Einstein of the neighborhood, you thought

MARX Max Planck to you. Nazi.

DEGMAR You thought, hey, why not

CHANCE I thought thank you for interrupting Herr Hitler, why not design a pencil that had a fat lead tip the exact shape of that oval on those standardized tests?

A beat of silence as this is digested.

MADELINE Oh, I see...sort of...like a time saver.

MARX It wasn’t me who hit his head on a pole.

CHANCE Helps with accuracy too.

DEGMAR How much to make a pencil, and how much you going to sell them for?

CHANCE If I make them for x, I will sell them for y, where y is greater than x.

DEGMAR Fuck me! You actually learned something, and I thought all you could do was dribble.
MADELINE But Chancy, I mean how are you going to market this, standing in front of Orange Julius? Or will you go to every school

CHANCE It’s just the seeds of the plan, Madeline, I’ll work it all out. But I got a guy can make them cheap. And he’s got a guy

MARX Well good luck with it, bro, if I can help you in any way

CHANCE Maybe with the next project, Marxie, if business school is too boring. See, I got an idea for a hash pipe made out of toilet fittings...

MARX Hey look, it’s Julio and them! Let’s go look like college graduates right there on the court.

Marx takes the ball and bounces his way on to the court offstage pulling Chance in his wake. They look back at Degmar and Madeline who wave them idly on.

MADELINE They’re such good friends.

DEGMAR Yes. We all are.

MADELINE And now I’m engaged to the intellectual one.

DEGMAR But you’re wearing my ring. Which one am I?

MADELINE Well Chance is, well you’re not the criminal one.

DEGMAR (with inappropriate sharpness)How do you mean?

MADELINE Well, this whole no-graduation episode

DEGMAR (relaxing)Oh that? You know? Who told you?

MADELINE Does it matter? It wasn’t Marxie, he’s so..formal and proper at times. It’s around. It’s you I’m surprised at. It’s not like there’s anything more, is there? Just that test. Boys are so stupid.

DEGMAR (quickly) There’s nothing more. And I? That’s ironic, because it’s you I’m surprised at.

MADELINE Oh? As a result of all this I now think of you as the ‘detached and ungrateful’ one. He’s suffering, Degmar, can’t you see it?

DEGMAR Ungrateful? If you only knew..

MADELINE Knew what, Degmar? I know Chance climbed into that professor’s office to steal the exam for you. Because you couldn’t get up the drainpipe being a big Swede. Don’t you see you’re the older brother

DEGMAR Norwegian, if you’re going to get specific.

MADELINE Whatever! He loves you like the older brother he needs. And he got it, and climbed back down just as the security guard showed up, and somehow he got caught and you got away, with the test, and here we are today.

DEGMAR You don’t know everything Madeline. I really needed to ace that exam. For Leipzig. For my future. For the future of the planet.
MADELINE The planet? You do have big plans, don’t you?

DEGMAR Absitively, Maddy. I want to change the world one fundamental particle at a time. And I need to do jump start it all in Leipzig.

MADELINE So clue me in. Tell me how I’m wrong. How did that night watchman catch a skinny little ex-Yeshiva boy who could outrun an all-Black team for a full forty minutes, and somehow miss the lumbering Swede?

DEGMAR Lumbering? There’s a word that cools me right down, down to absolute zero Kelvin. I’m sorry, Madeline. I’m honor bound.

(beat)But what are you doing with Marx? That’s the real question here. There are no physical laws of the universe, no Laws of Motion that should impel the two of you together.

MADELINE To whom, Deg? Honor bound Degmar, to whom?

DEGMAR You answer me first.

MADELINE Hulking over me won’t intimidate me, you know I like you. Well it is everywhere today, isn’t it? Marx is a take charge kind of guy in his way, and I like that. As for the rest...(she pledges her hand over her heart)...Honor.

CHANCE (O.S.)Hey Deg, come here once, Julio wants to tell you something.

Degmar walks reluctantly offstage as Madeline watches. Marx re-enters passing the ball to Madeline who fields it well.

MADELINE Nice pass.

MARX My girl. Lady. Mother?

MADELINE Let’s not jump the universe just yet, shall we?

MARX Well here we are.

MADELINE You Three Incredible Pieces of Shit.

MARX That sounds so cool coming from you.(beat) Madeline?

MADELINE Marxie? Serious now? Do we need to leave?

MARX Chance said something to me.

MADELINE Yes?

MARX You said something earlier. Before I came. About maybe being no-one’s wife?

MADELINE Oh that. I was just giving voice to that inner part of me that intends forever to be free, that’s all.

MARX That’s all?

MADELINE That’s all I know, Marxie. At least for now.
MARX But

MADELINE Let’s enjoy the moment, the day, the air, the friendship.

DEGMAR (O.S.) Madeline, Julio has something to tell you.

MADELINE What?

DEGMAR (O.S.) Here, Madeline.

MARX So what do you make of Deg, smoking rather much all of a sudden?

MADELINE It’s better than the rest of his family. I mean, they’re all drunks and crazy, right? So if he wants to smoke to achieve inner peace...

MARX But he’s an athlete. And I doubt ‘inner peace’ has anything at all to do with it.

MADELINE It’s a season of change, Marxie, I feel it around us.

DEGMAR (O.S.) Madeline!

Madeline holds on lingeringly to Marx’s hand as she moves offstage to the court.

Chance re-enters.

MARX Business deal complete?

CHANCE With Julio? Naw, no games no bets. And he’s not my pencil guy, Julio is into bigger cash operations. As you know. Naw, he just wanted to tell Maddy here (imitating Puerto Rican dialect) “tchee look like a fine Mommie today.”

MARX So what are you gonna do? About your parents and all?

CHANCE We had a bad argument, worse than usual. I can’t go home.

MARX So what then? You want to come over? You could stay in the basement, avoid all the relatives.

CHANCE I couldn’t see your parents, have to answer their looks. They remind me too much of mine. Only balder.

Degmar re-enters bouncing the ball low to the ground very quickly, a staccato beat.

DEGMAR Who wants to play?

CHANCE Who we playing?

MARX You guys nuts? We got to go to Graduation!

CHANCE Fuck you care? You can hide yourself under the gown, no one’ll see if you’re all pitted out.

DEGMAR We’ll play them. (points to the court) The Low Races.
CHANCE You are a real asshole. I’m not playing with you today.

MARX I concur.

CHANCE And that reminds me - why the fuck do you talk that way?

MARX Because I’m originally from the educated part of New York - The Island.

CHANCE Well fucking thrills, chills, and vi-a-bra-tions, you’re from the Island. So why did you move back here? I’ll tell you why, because your father pissed away all his money

MARX Deg, you better do something with him, he’s going to pop a gasket. How’s that sentence, Chancy, better?

Chance lunges half-heartedly and is lightly restrained by Degmar.

CHANCE -and you’re mother’s billing his treatment herself!

MARX Asshole.

DEGMAR Not a bad idea though, Marx. You, Chancy, need a drink, and my house is the answer to your prayers. Just one thing: don’t get into a theological argument with Uncle Valdemar. He’s from Germany.

MARX I think Valdie is safe on that score.

CHANCE Valdemar? Valdie? Jesus H. Christ, it’ll be like Buchenwald, Buchen-valdie! Where would I sleep - the oven?

DEGMAR They like you, Chaim. They’d never cook you. I promise. Upon my honor. Just show them your dick - it’s so small they’ll never be able to tell it was circumcised.

Half-meant flailing arms and jerky faux-fight motions propel Chance and Degmar off stage. Madeline presently returns.

MARX What’s that on your finger?

MADELINE The ring you never gave me.

MARX But I thought we were saving our resources, you know, for

MADELINE Marxie, come here, hug me.

MARX But where did it

MADELINE Marxie, come here - that’s it. Crush me.

Marx hugs Madeline tightly, but his eyes seek out the paper clip ring as

Lights down.

SCENE 3


As in Scene 1, the park bench is empty except for a dufflebag. SOUNDS of basketball, and different voices.
TRASH TALK 1 (O.S.) Whatcho you call that, old man?

CHANCE (O.S.) He’s in the moment. Asshole.

TRASH TALK 2 (O.S.) Asshole? I show you my asshole right now!

MARX (O.S.) Deg! Pass it! Oh shit

SOUND of a player hitting the ground.

TRASH TALK 1 (O.S.) Foul! Thas ours man, give the rock.

DEGMAR (O.S.) And count it! Two points!

TRASH TALK 2 (O.S.) The fuck you talking, Bigfoot? Was a foul!

Marx comes limping to the bench, yelling back to the game.

MARX Foul? You stuck out your leg, man!

TRASH TALK 2 (O.S.) Boxing out, bro, you can’t push me like that. ‘s our ball, yo.

MARX Yeah? Well go get your own sub, ‘bro. My ankle’s all fucked up.

DEGMAR (O.S.) Sub me too, I need a smoke.

TRASH TALK 1 (O.S.) The fuck is this nursing home shit? Thought we was playing a game!

DEGMAR (O.S.) You not hearing me for some reason...I’m having a smoke. You want one? No? Then shut the fuck up and be civil, maybe we come back on court and finish your schooling.

Degmar comes to the bench.


MARX ‘He gonna cut your ass you come back on the court.’ WITH A CAN OPENER, YO? He says “with a can opener.”

MARX AND DEGMAR Yo.

Degmar and Marx laugh. They are more at ease with one another after the effort. Marx removes his sneaker and massages his ankle.

DEGMAR Too bad.

MARX Same fucking ankle.

DEGMAR Yeah, from, you know, that game.

MARX Yeah.

DEGMAR Too bad. I mean about Madeline.

MARX Don’t, Deg, I’m still pissed at you you know.
DEGMAR Coach said to leave that shit off the court.

MARX Coach was talking about basketball. Not life.

DEGMAR Was he? I guess I know, Marxie. I still don’t know how I could have

MARX -Fucked up my marriage?

DEGMAR -Put a woman in front of a friend.

MARX Well you did.

DEGMAR Maybe I was psychotic, even then

MARX Yeah, well, that explains you but not her. Anyway. You were saying? About her? Something happen?

DEGMAR I don’t know I don’t keep up with the past, I’m just getting all sorted out again. I mean, looks like you need a doctor in the house, in the spouse, if you get me.

MARX And what do you need, Deg?


MARX You sure you’re all right, you know, with your...

DEGMAR My medications? Say it Marx, it’s okay. I don’t hold the grudge, I’m exerting rationality and purpose over my life now. Past behaviors are of no moment.

MARX Yeah well, Elvira is no doctor.

DEGMAR Right. I think she’s afraid of me.

MARX Probably would want to wrap it in some lettuce. Sprinkle cinnamon on it.


MARX Cucumber poultice. No, that’s uncool.

DEGMAR What?

MARX Making fun of our shared beliefs.

DEGMAR Wrong. You’ve got it exactly wrong. You take yourself too seriously, Marxie. Let’s wait one proper second and I’ll explain it to you.

Long pause as they sit silently, Degmar in the moment, Marx wondering.

MARX Deg?

DEGMAR Shhh, I thought you were supposed to be the spiritual one...at least you can still swear.

MARX You got quiet, I thought you were going to

DEGMAR I said a second. Oh, Marxie, I forgot! You don’t know about
the Second. Do you? The Universal Second. The constant I worked out in my Q-particle model.

MARX Can you explain it without overwhelming me?

DEGMAR One Universal Second equals one hundred thirty seven point zero three five nine nine seven Earth Seconds which are based on the transitional states

MARX And you derive that how? Not like I really care, you know, but just in case that ‘yo, after he cuts you, wants to know, you know, to time the bleeding.

DEGMAR So you have a sense of humor. Excellent! The Q-particle universe opens its arms to you. Always the kidder, behind all that solemnity.

MARX Me? The kidder? How -

DEGMAR Stop playing with me, Marx, come on.

MARX What the fuck are you talking about, Degmar? I thought you were

DEGMAR I am okay. I am back on the prolixin. I TAKE 5 MILLIGRAMS OF PROLIXIN EVERY DAY!!

MARX Jesus Deg! I can’t believe

DEGMAR AND THIS FUCKING FAIRY SHOULD TOO. That was a foul, Marxie, you shoved him before you went down.

MARX That’s no reason to tell all Brooklyn I need to be medicated.

DEGMAR Well that was for fucking with me, you know, and for that bad call you fairy

MARX I wasn’t fucking with you. I had always tried to be your friend.

DEGMAR Not always, though, not when I really needed it. But I said let’s inhabit only the future.

(beat)But of course you know all about the Q-particle, I mean, I do credit you in the preface.

MARX Deg? Degmar? What the fuck are you talking about?

A shout of “GAME” comes from the court and Chance limps over and has to move the dufflebag to collapse on the bench.

DEGMAR Curious. I am the heaviest, the most out of shape, and I manage to play uninjured.

CHANCE That’s cause you didn’t move, Stiffly. You just stood on the low post. The fuck’s in this bag, rocks?
DEGMAR Playing to my strengths, it’s only smart thinking. Some stuff.

Degmar grabs the dufflebag and puts under his feet.

MARX He keeps doing that, jumping from clarity to that same old physics mind fuck

CHANCE You just don’t understand it. Deg’s a genius.

MARX He’s not completely right though. Deg? Are you completely right?

CHANCE Marx!

DEGMAR Tell me Marxie, how do you answer: I pour water halfway into the glass, how do you describe the glass?

CHANCE Half full. But it depends if you’re pouring or drinking. And since I’m drinking

DEGMAR Not you, Jew.

CHANCE Suck out, Kraut.

MARX That’s so banal [ba nahl].

CHANCE It’s banal. Like anal.

MARX It’s banal, like Halal.

DEGMAR We’ll get to the Arabs later guys. Marxie, how’s the glass?

MARX Partly empty? Half empty?

DEGMAR So your interpretation of the entropy of that system, then, is...?

MARX I can’t claim to be original, but like Jodorowsky said

DEGMAR A physicist? I thought I knew them [all]

CHANCE He’s a director. Directed some bullshit weirdo Mesican avant garde pretentious bullshit

MARX El Topo. Anyway. You pour the water into the glass and ask a question. I drink the water, such as it is. That is my answer. My approach to life. Without questions. No more water.

DEGMAR A non-systemic solution. Excellent!

MARX How did I do, professor?

CHANCE Remind me, Marxie, were you ever not an asshole?

DEGMAR Fine, Marx, you get a “B.”

CHANCE Hah.

231
MARX And what would be the “A” answer, Herr Professor?

DEGMAR Clearly the glass is twice as large as it needs to be. Yes. It is now and then a mechanistic universe. Remind me how we got here?

MARX Chance called me

CHANCE Asshole sprained his ankle. Again

DEGMAR Wait once, that’s not it, give me a second - Right! The Universal second, right? Chance, Marxie here is trying to act all modest and what not

CHANCE Him? Modest? Jesus Deg, you sure you taking enough pills?

MARX Right on, bro. That’s the really good question here, maybe we should fill the rest of the glass with some more pills

CHANCE Why?

MARX -because he thinks I had something to do with his new model of the universe or whatever.

DEGMAR Oh, so you’re denying it now?

MARX Denying what? I know precisely nothing about physics, I took that one Physics for Poets class - I just realized, about the glass, you’re wrong?

DEGMAR How so?

MARX The glass is full, Deg. It’s half full of water, and the rest with air. You should word the question differently.

DEGMAR We’ll return to the glass Marxie, I’m now thinking back to when you told me to let myself give in. Accept my genetic programming. Let it carry me. Wherever it may.

A long silence. A shout from the court:

TRASH TALK 2 (O.S.) Yo! Bigfoot! Ball’s jammed in the heel, help us out.

DEGMAR Use your can opener, yo.

TRASH TALK 2 (O.S.) Come on man, we’s just tripping yo.

DEGMAR Okay, okay, fuck it.

He rises to reenter the court.

CHANCE When was that, Marxie? You told him to accept his genetic programming!!?

DEGMAR Quite some time ago, Chancey. But it helped me start. It’s okay, don’t get upset.

He walks off.

CHANCE Marxie?
MARX I am completely caught by surprise, I mean, Jesus Christ, that day

CHANCE When?

MARX You remember, back in, oh I don’t know, around when John Lennon got shot, we were all back?

CHANCE Yeah..

MARX And Deg, this very same Degmar, had swollen in size? And was smoking two packs a day? And was in most unhealthy state?

CHANCE Oh yeah, the Park Bench Energy Transfer. Ha - that was funny. Maddy wasn’t too pleased though.

MARX Funny? Well it worked.

CHANCE Oh yeah, it really worked. He really cut back, really got his life straightened out, nice going. Not. And of course the little matter of the side effect.

Degmar reenters bouncing the ball, making a swift chest pass at Marx that nearly levels him.

MARX Cool it! Well, so you say, but he did quit for a while. Deg, remember?


TRASH TALK 2 (O.S.) Yo man what is you malfunction. Give back the rock.

Marx passes the ball back to the court.

MARX Forget it, Degmar, it wasn’t such a big deal.

DEGMAR Maybe not, Marxie, but maybe it’s like the glass...a frame of reference phenomenon...when you’re psychotic, and are aware of it, frame of reference becomes crucial.

MARX Let it go, Deg.

CHANCE Say it Deg, tell it.

DEGMAR Boys, boys. All will be revealed. There no secrets between friends. Or Q-Particles.

Lights down.

SCENE 4


A disheveled Chance is huddled against the chill in a winter coat on the bench. SOUND of a DOG BARKING. Other AMBIENT PARK SOUNDS.
Madeline enters pushing a baby stroller, wrapped in thought. It is not until she sits at the bench that she recognizes Chance.

MADELINE Charles? Chance?

Chance stirs. Madeline feels his face.

MADELINE Chance! Oh look at you, you must be freezing. What are you doing here?

CHANCE Uh, oh, hi Madeline, how you doing. Oh you have the baby, better be quiet, I'll just get up

MADELINE What is this, why are you here? You've been here all night, haven't you? Marx!

CHANCE What? No, I'm meeting someone is all, just a meeting, see it's almost nine o'clock, won't be too much longer...Maddy?

MADELINE What happened?

CHANCE Really Maddy, Madeline, your hair really is light brown sometimes...you know John Lennon got shot last night? Made me sad, I came here for a while...where's Marxie?

MADELINE You're delirious, come on, I'm taking you with me.

CHANCE Where’s Marxie? He didn’t get shot did he?

MADELINE No, he’s here, Chance, in the park. Back from another esoteric journey into his own mind. He’s here somewhere, at least his body is.

CHANCE Madeline, are you upset with me?

MADELINE With you? Oh God no. Come on.

CHANCE No, wait, I really am supposed to meet Degmar, aren’t I?

MADELINE Ugh, you smell awful, you’ve been drinking, at least you haven’t regurgitated. And dehydrated. You’re coming with me. Marx!!

CHANCE I don’t want to impose, I’ll be okay, when Deg comes

MADELINE Come on, get up. Put your arm around me, I mean it.

Chance slowly stands and leans into Madeline who handles it easily.

MADELINE So, are you really meeting Deg? He’s in town?

CHANCE Yeah, he heard the good news, came in from Germany. Or was it Norway?

MADELINE Damn it Chancey, what did you take, or drink? You’re not making any sense. Marx, Marxie! Come over here and stop contemplating the early morning dew!

Marx enters and immediately grabs onto Chance.

MARX Whoa, that smells like an ashtray in a cesspool. Chance, you okay - what happened?
MADELINE What does it matter - he’s coming with us.

Chance slowly twists out of Marx’s grasp.

CHANGE I’m okay, now, much better. There. Just needed to sleep it off.

MARX Sleep what off?

MADELINE Okay my eye! You’re coming with me for a bowl of oatmeal.

CHANGE Hey, that’s a cute baby. Quietest one ever, what’d you do drug him? Seems bigger than last time. Is that blond hair?

MADELINE Yeah, well, growing is what they do. And I guess Marxie and I are both heterozygous for the blond allele.

MARX He has grown, hasn’t he.

MADELINE No more than is usual, within percentiles.

MARX Percentiles.

CHANGE Looks cute, Marxie, looks more like his mother though.

MADELINE Let’s go, sailor, come on. Marxie?

MARX I’ll be along in a moment, wife.

Chance and Madeline exit as Marx looks sharply after them. He very deliberately sits on the bench and adopts a meditative pose.

Degmar arrives from the opposite direction, surprised at seeing Marx. Degmar is much fatter, his loping athletic stride gone. He is anxious and smoking.

DEGMAR Marx?! What are you doing here? And up? A quark in dual unopposed states!

MARX Degmar. So he was supposed to meet you. Deg, what’s it been, almost a year.

DEGMAR Yes, Chance, that’s right. Where’d he go?

MARX You were here almost a year ago, still smoking, Deg, you really - oh my! Deg, what happened?

DEGMAR How do you mean?

MARX Deg! What do you weigh now, two sixty? You were what, two ten last time?

DEGMAR Bavarian cooking, Saxon beer.

MARX Sure, Deg, sure, but don’t you exercise, play any ball, something, run?

DEGMAR Did you know that there is a brewery there that makes Kosher beer?

MARX I thought practically all beers are kosher.

DEGMAR Tell that to the krauts - they are quite pleased with themselves. As am I.
(pats his belly)

MARX Deg, what’s going on? Seeing you like this is quite a shock, you are not in a healthful state.

DEGMAR But I am, Marxie! I am! My work is taking off! Soaring!

MARX That’s good to hear, my friend, but at this rate you’ll die before it’s published.

DEGMAR No need to exaggerate, I’ve just gained a few pounds.

MARX Fine. So. You’re back - what’s the occasion?

DEGMAR Oh, the usual, see the women of the family around holiday season. And anyone else who’s around. Jump to the next quantum.

MARX The usual. Just the next quantum.

DEGMAR Right.

MARX What state, Deg? Are we talking mental state, physical state, what? Because states of being are something I am familiar with.

DEGMAR I’m in a transitional phase, it seems some of the Herren und Professoren think my theories a bit farfetched. Unsubstantiated. We may refer to this as the ‘licking your balls in the corner of the cave’ state.

MARX You left? Leipzig? What about your work?

DEGMAR I felt there was a high probability distribution that I’d see you, my friends, quantumly speaking. My work can wait a few days.

MARX Is that a word? Quantumly?

DEGMAR Language, all language, is communication, like Chancey always said, and you know exactly what I mean. Correct?

MARX What are you doing here, Deg? In the park. Meeting Chance, who is not looking very well himself this morning.

DEGMAR It’s personal. Private. According to him, very mysterious.

MARX Deg?

DEGMAR I’m sorry, Marxie, I don’t really know

MARX It’s me Deg, we’re the three - what’s the issue here? Deg?

DEGMAR You are my friend, Marxie, but not like Chance. I realized in Leipzig one night - never mind. Secrets of life, secrets of the universe, secrets everywhere.

MARX Deg, I would do anything for you

DEGMAR - well that’s good of you to say, Marxie, but there really isn’t anything you could do
MARX -what did you realize? In Leipzig?

DEGMAR Well, I was spinning out a theory to a fraulein with huge jalobees

MARX Jalobees? You mean...gazongas?

DEGMAR Who’s originally from Milwaukee and dated the Jalobee Queen of Menomonee River in tenth grade?

MARX Okay, you.

DEGMAR And I was explaining an idea I had, a new model really, about my concept of a new particle

MARX What was her name?

DEGMAR Heidi. Her name was Heidi. Anyway at that time I had not yet

MARX What time of day was it, indoors or outdoors?

DEGMAR It was evening in a beer garten. Would you like me to go get some electrodes now? Good.

MARX I needed to be sure.

DEGMAR Sure of what?

MARX That this wasn’t another Valkyrie fantasy, or the Nordic equivalent.

DEGMAR You know Marxie, it shouldn’t be true, but it is.

MARX Okay, good, I believe you. I didn’t mean

DEGMAR Oh, not that - you don’t know what I mean.

MARX Deg. What do you mean?

DEGMAR I mean, you’re from Long Island and yet you have a meerschaum pipe stuck up your ass. I find myself speculating at times as to which of your parents put it there.

MARX Okay, I apologize. Do over. A new particle? Like as in fundamental?

DEGMAR New like in never before conceived. And it is based on a trilogy of sorts.

(beat)

MARX Deg? You were saying?

DEGMAR I said it. The trilogy. The three pieces of shit, who we were. Except you weren’t quite like us.

MARX I know. I wasn’t.

DEGMAR You weren’t there that night. Well, you were and you weren’t. Just like the Q-particle.

MARX I know. I’m still glad about it, you know.
DEGMAR I know. I know you are correct. But Chance

MARX Yes, Chance, he resented me. Right?

DEGMAR Resented you? Maybe a little. But no, resentment was the last thing on his mind. At least not for that.

MARX What then?

DEGMAR I mean, Marxie, what I’m trying to say here, is that by not being there you allowed him to be the hero. The absent particle providing a probabilistic space

MARX Time out, Deg, I’m not following

DEGMAR -A space to confer its own unique properties. You see?

MARX I’m afraid not.

DEGMAR He became the hero, amongst us. You allowed him that.

MARX But what does that have to do with - never mind.

DEGMAR I don’t mind.

MARX About explaining your theory, I wouldn’t understand it anyway. Physics for Poets, remember?

The ambient park sounds grow quieter and soon all is silence.

DEGMAR And are you, Marx? A poet?

MARX Not hardly. I am a student. So, you’re not going to tell me the big mystery, why you two were meeting this morning?

DEGMAR Chance wants to tell me something, it seems after you became a father he got somewhat...agitated. Maybe his mother started in on him, I don’t know. You know, I thought you were practising law.

MARX (laughs) You could say that I suppose. Madeline is right, though, I dabble, I don’t work. It’s hard on her I think.

DEGMAR How so?

MARX She is the earner, and the mother, and I get to study, to improve myself, to work on myself, to understand the universe in my own way.

DEGMAR There is only one way.

MARX So you say.

DEGMAR Well, not just me. It’s physical laws of the universe I’m talking about.

MARX Really? Well, that incessant thrumming of your hand on the bench, what is that?

DEGMAR It’s something I do. Like dabbling in esoteric mind fucks is something you do.

MARX Why?
DEGMAR It relaxes me. Does it relax you?

MARX Most certainly.

DEGMAR And Madeline? Does it relax her?

MARX Not especially, no. She speculates at times that I am drifting away. Complete nonsense of course.

DEGMAR Nonsense?

MARX Well, we have a family now

DEGMAR Yes. (his thrumming becomes more frenetic)

MARX I think not, Deg. I don’t believe it relaxes you. In fact, I’d like you to stop doing it.

DEGMAR Why?

MARX Think of it as an experiment.

DEGMAR Okay.

MARX Because you don’t really want to.

DEGMAR Okay. Counselor.

MARX In fact, I think it would be good if you could relax for a moment. Can you remember to do that?

DEGMAR Yes, your Honor.

MARX You have a good memory, don’t you Degmar?

DEGMAR I certainly do, your eminence.

MARX Was there ever a time when you forgot something? Degmar?

DEGMAR I’m trying to remember...

As Degmar is struggling with this Marx produces a distinctive FLUORISH with his right hand in front of Degmar’s eyes.

The thrumming motion continues albeit lessened.

DEGMAR Marx, are you well? What are you doing - so, okay, I think I can remember a time when I forgot something.

MARX That’s good, Degmar. With one word, tell me what you forgot?

DEGMAR Heidiger.

MARX Good, Degmar, very good. Now try to remember one more thing, one instance of forgetting something that you knew
DEGMAR Umm...okay Marxie...back in school, I'm thinking...I got -

Marx again performs the FLUORISH before Degmar’s eyes.

MARX You got it?

DEGMAR Yes, Marxie. It was when we were at practice once

MARX Just hold it, Deg, keep it inside you for now. How are you feeling?

DEGMAR I’m feeling good. Relaxed.

MARX Good. Do you see that tree over there? By the broken hoop?

DEGMAR I see it.

MARX Do you see the branch, it’s partly snapped?

DEGMAR Yeah, I see it, what are you doing Marxie?

MARX Your hand is relaxing now, Deg. Just relaxed. Limp. Like the branch. Do you remember how it moved nervously?

DEGMAR Yes, I remember -

Marx performs the flourish with dramatic weight and Degmar immediately stops the nervous motion.

DEGMAR It’s good to sit here, Marxie.

MARX It is good. Relaxing. It’s cool but comfortable. We enjoy each other’s company. We breathe air.

DEGMAR We do indeed.

MARX Air is good, it is clean, we are away from the street, the cars, the pollution of the city street. We relax.

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX It is good to breathe air. Our lungs fill with it. Are your lungs filling with air?

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX It would be good for only this air, this clean air, to fill our lungs, wouldn’t it?

DEGMAR It would.

MARX Without smoke. Air filling our lungs without smoke, it would be good.

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX And you have willingness to stop filling your lungs with smoke, do you not? Motivation. Pure will.

DEGMAR I am motivated. Willful.

MARX To stop smoking.
DEGMAR Why?
MARX Because you like the clean air, the clean air alone. Because there is no reason to smoke. Is there?
MARX Does your father enjoy smoking?
DEGMAR Yes.
MARX Are you sure? Are you sure they enjoy the sensation of acrid particle-laden vapor in their lungs?
DEGMAR They seem to enjoy it. They cough. If you don’t cough you don’t get off.
MARX That’s true, Deg, they seem to enjoy it. Do you like coughing?
DEGMAR No.
MARX And you are motivated. You are a scientist.
DEGMAR I am.
MARX So you will stop smoking. Because you have will.
DEGMAR I have will. I like to drink beer. I think I am thirsty.
MARX Does smoking make you want to drink?
DEGMAR When I smoke I drink, and when I drink, I smoke.
MARX They go together.
DEGMAR Like you and Madeline.
MARX Smoking and drinking.
DEGMAR Madeline and Marxie.
MARX Drinking beer.
DEGMAR I like to drink beer, it tastes good.
MARX And how does it make you feel, to drink?
DEGMAR Good. Content.
MARX Always?
DEGMAR Most of the time. Not always though.
MARX Is it the cigarettes, Degmar? Does the smoking affect the taste of the beer?
DEGMAR The smoking may change the taste, maybe, I don’t know. A molecular interaction. Madeline likes the taste of beer too.
MARX Yes, she does. Madeline likes an occasional beer.

DEGMAR But not whiskey.

MARX No Degmar, Madeline doesn’t like whiskey.

DEGMAR Never has.

MARX That’s right, Deg, she never has. How do you know that, Degmar? How do you know she never has liked the taste of whiskey?

DEGMAR She told me once. She said Degmar, I don’t want any of that.

MARX She was being honest with you.

DEGMAR Yes. Honesty. We are believers in honesty.

MARX When was that, Deg? That she told you about the whiskey?

DEGMAR In my kitchen.

MARX Madeline was in your kitchen? What was the occasion?

DEGMAR She was looking good, Marxie, but it was hot outside, and she came in to cool off.

MARX Can you remember when, Deg? When she came to your house?

DEGMAR It was hot, it was the summer before last, I was home for that conference at Princeton. “Marxie’s not around.”

MARX I remember.

DEGMAR “Marxie is in Turkey”, studying something sufficient

MARX Sufi. It was a Sufi enclave. How are you feeling, Deg?

DEGMAR I feel good, Marxie. It was nice in the kitchen. But Marx?

MARX Yes?

DEGMAR Madeline was sad.

MARX Madeline was sad? How so?

DEGMAR She said she was working too hard to come home to an empty apartment.

MARX Did you talk about it?

DEGMAR We did. We spoke about lives committed to research, to learning, to investigation.

MARX And it was hot outside that day.

DEGMAR It was. I made us drinks.

MARX I thought Madeline didn’t like whiskey.
DEGMAR “Drink with me Degmar.”

Madeline returns alone without the stroller.

MADELINE Sounds like reminiscing. Let’s go, Marxie, I’ve left Chance alone with the baby but I don’t trust him more than five minutes. Degmar, come on - Marx what’s going on here?

MARX Shh. Let me wind it down. Degmar, are you relaxed?

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX Do you remember clean lungs?

DEGMAR Clean air is good. I am motivated.

MARX Excellent. I’d like you to look toward me, now. Do you see me?

DEGMAR Yes Marxie. And Madeline. Hi Madeline!

MADELINE Marx - what did you do?

MARX Okay, Deg, I’d like you to resume your normal state of consciousness. When you stand up, you will feel refreshed.

MADELINE Marxie, you have a lot of nerve! Did he ask you to do this?

MARX Friends do things for friends without being asked.

MADELINE Do they?

MARX Okay, Degmar. Let’s get up.

Degmar rises and reorients himself.

MADELINE Deg? Are you okay?

MARX Of course he is.

MADELINE You’re a menace at times, Marxie. Living out your mother’s warped fantasy Marx Maddy!?

MADELINE A clinical psychologist whose claim to competency is only that she herself embodies every possible neurosis.

MARX Nice. Degmar, got a smoke?

Deg tosses him the pack.

DEGMAR Take them all. I don’t seem to want them.

MARX See? Thanks, Deg.

Marx extracts and lights a cigarette.

I’ll hold onto them.
MADELINE I don’t like this. Hypnotic manipulation is dangerous when practiced by dabblers.

MARX Dabblers? You think I’m dabbling here?

MADELINE It’s just surprising, you’re hardly the altruist. Let’s just go. Come on Deg.

DEGMAR Where to? I am actually quite content here, breathing the air.

MARX Let’s go, Doctor.

MADELINE We need to check on Chance. And the baby.

DEGMAR Perfect. Chance has something to tell me, so please ask him to return. I will wait. Patiently. You see, he and I don’t keep secrets you know.

All exit.

Lights down.

SCENE 5

1991. The Park Bench. Later that day. The guys are saggy and sore.

DEGMAR Exercise is okay, but it interferes with my mission.

CHANCE Which is?


CHANCE How does it interfere?

MARX I think we’re about to get non rational, here.

CHANCE Is it possible for you, Marx, not to be an asshole? Deg?

DEGMAR I don’t think so, no. He is genetically an asshole, down to the base pairs. Exercise tires me, diverts me from the work.

CHANCE What work?

DEGMAR The completion of the manuscript.

CHANCE What’s it called?

DEGMAR The Q-Particle Theory.

CHANCE Q-particle? After what?

MARX Queer.

CHANCE No. quaalude.

MARX Quahog.

CHANCE The fuck is quahog?
MARX A clam.

CHANCE That doesn’t begin with a ‘Q’.

MARX ...and probably has little to do with physics.

DEGMAR Three is the perfect number. Playing ball with you, my friends, passing it around, shooting, scoring, setting up plays. That’s what I’m talking about.

MARX Elaborate.

CHANCE Tell it.

DEGMAR The Q-particle is a classical particle. It is neither created nor destroyed.

CHANCE So it’s like the um..basketball..like you were saying before?

DEGMAR No. It’s more like the soul. If you believe that souls can move around. Marxie? Can souls move around?

MARX Many philosophical systems

CHANCE Hey fuckhead, even though you can’t practice law, you still sound like a fucking lawyer, you know that - how about yes, or no?

MARX Many philosophical systems believe in the transmogrification of souls, a recycling if you will

DEGMAR Exactly. It was something like that Marx once said to me. And I got to thinking, and after fifteen years, behold, the Q-particle.

CHANCE So the particle is

DEGMAR The Theory of Everything that I have developed, my model, the cause of my current rootlessness, is this: Electrons and Protons inventory and exchange the Q-particle.

MARX That’s it?

DEGMAR Simple and elegant.

CHANCE Simple.

DEGMAR Elegant. You see, the space between heavenly bodies and the interstitial space between atoms are both composed of a closely packed foam of spherical Q-particles. These I call neutrinos.

CHANCE I still like the idea of them as basketballs. You know, the big electrons and protons throwing the rock around

MARX Time out, Degmar. Neutrino is already taken, I remember that word from school.

DEGMAR The radius of Q-particles in the foam is much smaller than free electrons and protons, many orders of magnitude smaller than atoms. They’re classical neutrinos but if I have to copyright another name

MARX Maybe I could help you with that aspect
CHANCE Scumbag lawyer.

DEGMAR The space-filling neutrino foam, the Q-particle plasma if you will, is the missing ‘Dark Matter’ of the universe. The radius of these neutrinos can be calculated from the mass density of the dark matter and the mass of the Q-particle. If in fact

CHANCE Hey Degmar?

DEGMAR What?

CHANCE You’re my friend, right?

DEGMAR Right. Charles, I have always been your friend.

CHANCE Would you do me a favor?

DEGMAR Yes.

CHANCE Please stop perturbing my equaminity with this bogus psycho nut job physics rant

MARX Chancy! You understand nothing of his work! You flunked out of business school

CHANCE - left early

MARX - and have never had a successful business enterprise. You

CHANCE - Have too!

MARX -Oh really? Like what? - Doctor Chicken? What happened to the store, the ‘prototype’ for the franchise? Arson, wasn’t it? Didn’t Julio CHANCE

- Arson you talking about? We had a grease fire that caught, the damn hydrant had no pressure MARX - on a Sunday night on Labor Day weekend

CHANCE Fuck you, asshole. And anyway, it would have succeeded

MARX And what about Jumarco Enterprises, that incredibly

DEGMAR Boys. My friends. We’re drifting.

MARX I’m just trying to keep reality a participant in this conversation is all.

DEGMAR Reality? Whose? Yours?

MARX Everyone’s. The One.


MARX Sounds like you share that reality with your colleagues.

DEGMAR A supportive remark from a friend. What about you Chancy? Am I the reclusive psycho deserving of ostracism?

CHANCE You’re my friend, Deg. I don’t understand your work. But I worry about you.
DEGMAR I am in mind of the bit and the brace, the way Man has put beams together for millenia drilling holes and inserting dowels.

MARX What reality is that, Deg?

DEGMAR I am to science what Van Gogh is to painting. Am I meant to die in a world incapable of realizing my ideals?

MARX Deg, if your theories which sound a bit cracked to me are in fact provable, you should state your case to the so-called pedagogues who

DEGMAR Pedagogues? Indeed. You know their fundamental rule? “We don’t persuade by teaching, we teach by persuading.”

CHANCE Cool.

MARX Where’d you get that?

DEGMAR I feel we have strayed.

MARX From....

DEGMAR My avowed goal. For me the Q-particle Theory will enable us to achieve great things.


CHANCE Marxie, you are really such an asshole.

DEGMAR That’s the general, should I list the specifics: I can solve the protein folding problem of modern biochemistry, giving us the ability to design better drugs, and

CHANCE I am so down with that.

MARX Those kinds of drugs? To get high?

DEGMAR Drugs for people who take prolixin but are devastated by side effects. Drugs to numb the consciousness to the horrors of everyday life. Drugs to cure diseases. It’s all

MARX See?

DEGMAR -just a beginning. Groundwork.

MARX For what?

DEGMAR The ultimate project. Redesigning Man. Modifying the DNA sequences such that

MARX No way. No way you could do that. You must not.

CHANCE Einstein the Brooklyn lawyer speaks.

MARX But Deg

DEGMAR And after that, of course, we would need to redesign the food crops, because the improved homo sapien would live a longer time
MARX Ohh...kay. I think we’re finishing up here. Chance? Have you heard enough?

CHANCE Me? I’ve heard it all before.

DEGMAR He’s heard it all before.

MARX You what?

CHANCE Have heard it all before. You needed to hear it.

DEGMAR Like the man says. Would you boys mind if I strolled about for a minute? Good. I seem to be a bit stiff.

MARX AND CHANCE You are a stiff.

Degmar walks off stage.

MARX Me? Why?

CHANCE So you’d understand.

MARX Understand what?

CHANCE Why Degmar needs you.

MARX Needs me? Listen, Chancy, Degmar needs help. Serious help. Beyond a few New Age mantras or Ayurvedic techniques.

CHANCE So give it to him.

MARX I can’t.

CHANCE You have to. You owe it to him.

MARX Me. I owe it to him. I owe it to him? None of us are beholden beyond our insignificant selves.

CHANCE You asshole. You are the one most directly responsible. You “helped” him before, help him again.

MARX “Helped”?

CHANCE Hypnotized. Whatever.

MARX Cure psychosis on a park bench? That was just smoking.

CHANCE It’s your move now, Marx. You owe him.

MARX How do you figure that, Chancy? Using some of those business school analytic tools?

CHANCE You can fucking insult me all you want, Marxie

MARX You are such an asshole, Chancy, always were.

CHANCE Always?

MARX Always.
CHANCE You don’t mean that.

MARX Oh but I do! You were always hanging around the low lifes, scamming this, scamming that, looking for the angles

CHANCE Looked for the angles, that was me. Scoring angles more like.

MARX Exactly! you fucked up though

CHANCE When?

MARX Oh, like you don’t know? New Year’s Game. Remember? Remember that why don’t you.

CHANCE You motherfucker. That was an accident.

MARX An accident. Hah! Some accident...

CHANCE What do you mean, ‘some accident’ - I tripped.

MARX Tripped? Tripped?! You knocked that little bastard right into me

CHANCE - It was a fucking accident, there was no way

MARX - At a kind of crucial point in the game, I think.

CHANCE It just happened.

MARX Why Chancy? Why’d you do it?

CHANCE I tripped.

MARX Chance you cocksucker. At least tell the truth now

CHANCE Fuck you you fucking fuck. I am out of here.

MARX Degmar told me.

A tableau - they are frozen.

CHANCE What exactly did he tell you, fuckhead?

MARX This is chance for you to come clean. Chaim.

CHANCE Me? I should come clean? About what? You’re the one has to atone. Mordecai.

MARX For what?

CHANCE What you did to Degmar.

MARX What do you think I did?

CHANCE I saw you, Marxie. I heard you. Then she came. And then

MARX Jesus Chancy you need to lay off that speed, or whatever it is you’re using
CHANCE - and then she divorced you. Not the other way around. Like you said. She divorced you. Right as rain too.

MARX I see.

CHANCE Yeah.

MARX Did she perhaps tell you why?

CHANCE I know everything, Marxie. And you know I do. Remember? I was there.

Chance makes an abbreviated FLUORISH as we've seen before.

MARX I do? I see.

CHANCE Marxie, why did you come down to see me? Why did you come?

MARX You sent me a note. It sounded desperate.

CHANCE Was any guilt attached? Marx?

Suddenly SHOUTS come from the direction of the courts. "Fight." "Kick his ass." "Oh shit!" "Motherfucker's got a knife!"

Marx and Chance react and rush to the courts.

Lights Down.

SCENE 6

Park Bench - 1980. Later that day.

Degmar is sitting perfectly still on the bench, breathing easily and relaxed.

Sounds of a basketball game are heard, occasional SHOUTS of "Foul", "My Bus", "My Bad", "No!" and the like, none of which provoke any reaction.

Marx returns and watches Degmar for a moment before sitting down next to him. Degmar seems oblivious.

MARX Where are we, Degmar?

DEGMAR At peace, Marxie. Thank you.

MARX You're welcome. What are friends for?

DEGMAR Exactly. You know, I'm kind of watching

SHOUT (O.S.) Yo, Clyde, why ain't you on 'yo man? I can't be two places at once.

Degmar reacts strongly - laughing and stamping his feet.

MARX What?

DEGMAR Don't tell me you didn't hear it.

MARX Hear what?
DEGMAR A riff on Heisenberg. Can’t be two places at once.

MARX I thought that referred to measuring electrons or something.

DEGMAR So you weren’t meditating the entire time you took that class.

MARX Not the entire time.

DEGMAR People get it so wrong, you know. They think what he said is that you can’t observe something without changing what you’re observing.

MARX I’m not surprised. People like things to fit neatly into their models of reality.

DEGMAR Quite. Heisenberg was a dunce you know. He had one big idea, but when it came to applied physics, he was a disaster.

MARX So you say. What does this

DEGMAR Old Werner wasn’t talking about macroscopic systems, he was referring to subatomic systems, where measurements of momentum, spin, charge, position are on the order of ten to the minus twenty to thirty

MARX - Deg

DEGMAR -but people like to use it as an anti-scientific argument, the religious nutballs for example. “If you measure it and thereby change it, you have sabotaged your own work. There’s your science for you.”

MARX But I thought you said he was a dunce?

DEGMAR When it came to the atomic bomb, he was.

MARX What do you mean?

DEGMAR It’s no big deal, ancient history really. Hitler put Werner in charge of his A-Bomb project but ‘ol Heisenberg couldn’t make it work.

MARX I guess that’s a good thing, huh?

DEGMAR Who’s to say? Is the world better off this way?

SHOUT (O.S.)’Thas game, man.

DEGMAR That guy took what, fourteen shots and made four? Reminds me of someone...

MARX Yeah, Chance.

DEGMAR Where is he? I thought he was coming back?

MARX eg, I notice you’re quite relaxed here.

DEGMAR I am.

Marx takes something out of his pocket and gradually gets Degmar to focus on it.

MARX Where’d you get this?

MARX: Yeah, see it? I mean, Maddy wouldn’t like it.

DEGMAR: So get rid of it, I don’t need it.

MARX: But it’s nice, it feels good, well made.

DEGMAR: So keep it.

MARX: Do you see? She’s wearing a helmet?

DEGMAR: Yeah, like those frat boys wore at parties.

MARX: But you don’t need it anymore.

DEGMAR: That’s right I don’t.

MARX: Because it’s better not to smoke. Breathing clean air is better.

DEGMAR: Certainly it is.

MARX: Relaxing.

DEGMAR: Yes.

MARX: You are relaxed right now.

DEGMAR: Yes.

MARX: It’s just you and I, Deg, like before.

DEGMAR: ust the two of us, yes.

MARX: Maddy isn’t here.

DEGMAR: No.

MARX: Do you wish she were?

DEGMAR: Yes.

MARX: Why Degmar? Why do you wish Maddy were here?

DEGMAR: I like Maddy. She understands science.

MARX: That’s all?

DEGMAR: Yes.

MARX: Maddy is a doctor. She understands many things.

DEGMAR: Yes she is. She does. And she likes me.

MARX: She does, Degmar, I know. She has told me.

DEGMAR: She has?
MARX Oh yes. She has told me that she likes you very much

DEGMAR - That’s good

MARX - That she’s always liked you

DEGMAR She’s a good woman, a fine mother.

MARX She is a good mother. To our son.

DEGMAR Umm..your son. Maddy’s son.

MARX Did you see our son, Deg?

DEGMAR Yes. He looks like..Maddy. And like you.

MARX Do you think that’s odd, Degmar? That a boy looks like his mother?

DEGMAR Boys can look like their mothers. And their fathers.

MARX Maddy is a good mother.

DEGMAR Good.

MARX She doesn’t smoke. Or drink.

DEGMAR She’s a good mother.

MARX But she drank with you. One day. In your kitchen.

DEGMAR Yes she did.

MARX Then what happened?

DEGMAR We sat. We talked. We talked about you.

MARX About me?

DEGMAR About Marxie and his otherworldliness.

MARX Other worldly ness?

DEGMAR That’s what she said.

MARX What else did Maddy say?

DEGMAR I..uh..think..maybe you should ask her..maybe

MARX What else did Maddy say, Deg? You can tell me. We are all friends. We are family. We have no secrets.

DEGMAR We are friends.

MARX And Maddy told you something.

DEGMAR Maddy told me...something...
MARX Something important. Something private.

DEGMAR It’s hard for me to remember...exactly

MARX Concentrate Degmar! What did Maddy tell you?

DEGMAR She told me many things. She didn’t like your mother.

MARX Did Maddy say why?

DEGMAR Maddy said your mother was bossy and judgmental.

MARX I see.

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX Did she

DEGMAR -And that your father was disturbed.

MARX Maddy said that?

DEGMAR And that when she was over at your house she didn’t feel comfortable, and then she started, I don’t know, getting kind of weepy.

MARX Maddy? Maddy cried? Are you sure?

DEGMAR She cried and I put my arm around her. And she said she loved you, she thought, but she didn’t like your parents, and that maybe...maybe...

MARX Yes? Maybe what? Maybe what, Deg?

Maddy slowly enters unseen and watches the interaction. At times she is tempted to intervene but holds herself back in spite of the heightening tension.

Marx and Degmar are oblivious to her.

DEGMAR Maybe the whole idea of marriage was a mistake. That’s what she was thinking about. The whole mistress thing.

MARX Mistress thing? I was the shimmering crystal edge of pure faithfullness!

DEGMAR “Medicine is a cruel mistress.” She repeated that phrase to me a few times.

MARX Where?

DEGMAR In our apartment, I told you

MARX Were you in the kitchen now?

DEGMAR We were on the couch.

MARX And she was crying.

DEGMAR Yes she was.

MARX And then what happened?
DEGMAR Well it seemed like the most natural thing in the world for me to put my arm around her.

MARX And comfort her.

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX Did you like it?

DEGMAR Yes. It was very...relaxing. It felt good. She smelled good.

MARX Was that it, Degmar? There is more, isn’t there?

DEGMAR We were there for a long time. It was good.

MARX Then what happened?

DEGMAR I don’t really

MADELINE Enough!

Madeline steps around.

MARX How could you?

MADELINE Me?! I can’t begin to count all the violations of trust and

MARX Jonah’s not my son.

MADELINE Jonah’s not your son? He certainly is. Look at him.

MARX Look at what? Blond hair, 99th length percentile...

DEGMAR Marxie and Maddy. “Maddy and Marxie can’t agree, a-r-g-u-i-n-g.”

MARX Yes, Deg, Maddy is here. Do you want to be alone with her?

MADELINE Marx!

DEGMAR Sure, I like Maddy, I’ll sit with her if you want.

MADELINE Marx, bring him out of this, you

DEGMAR Maddy? You can sit with me if you want.

MARX Do you want to fuck her?

DEGMAR Fuck...her...Fuck..I don’t...Fuck ....who?...Maddy?

MARX Again.

MADELINE Stop it!

Madeline pushes Marx away and sits down next to Degmar.

MADELINE We don’t need to talk about...fucking. Just relax.
MARX You unbelievable bitch! God look at me, all those years of spiritual awakening wrecked in an instant!

MADELINE Degmar, are you relaxed?

DEGMAR I’m copacetic, Maddy. Where’s Marx?

MARX I’m right here Degmar, next to this traitorous cunt

Madeline smacks Marx across the face.

MARX - the one you fucked

Madeline swings at him again but he ducks out of reach.

MADELINE Degmar, just hold on a moment - Listen you wretch! We have to get him out of this

MARX Actually we don’t.

MADELINE And what? The Neurosis Queen teach you that too?

MARX If we do nothing he will eventually

MADELINE Some spiritual journey you’ve been on, God what was I thinking supporting your languid phoniness all

MARX When I was overseas? I was faithful. You weren’t. That is simply all there is to say.

MADELINE I will say this once: Jonah is our child, your son.

DEGMAR Marxie, where is your son?

MARX You mean your son.

DEGMAR My son? I don’t

Madeline gets up and points.

MADELINE Marx? I am going over to that Parks Policeman, and I’m going to tell him that you are a crazy rogue psychologist whom I overheard hypnotizing this large man into giving him head right here in the park -

Marx laughs uncontrollably. Madeline gets flustered but continues.

MADELINE In fact, I’ll start weeping and say you already did it once before today and I had to take my baby home I was so upset. See this, Marxie? It’s my Medical Society card - we’ll see who sounds believable.

Marx continues to laugh.

MARX Yeah? Well what about these, Maddy? Matching wedding rings? The guy will laugh in your face when I tell him this about me catching you fucking my best friend.

MADELINE Friend? You don’t have friends you preening self absorbed putz!

DEGMAR Hey Maddy? Marxie? I’m feeling thirsty. I would like something to drink.

256
MARX Well, Frau? Going to service him once again?

DEGMAR Maddy? Are you there.

MADELINE I’m here. Degmar. Right here with you. We will get something to drink in just a minute, just as soon as

Madeline attempts to help Degmar out once again, but this time as Marx tries to interfere we hear the SOUNDS of a bouncing basketball and Chance enters dribbling it.

CHANCE ‘Yo, Marx, what’s up. Scuffling in the park with your wench, or is this foreplay? What’s with Degmar?

MADELINE Chancy?! Where’s the baby? I left you

MARX Wait till you hear this, Chancy, you won’t

CHANCE Your mother popped over and freaked when she saw me, you know, I haven’t taken a shower or anything, I think she actually leaned in for a whiff, you know

MARX -You won’t believe what this cheating bitch did. She’s been fucking Degmar.

SILENCE as Chance stops dribbling. A long beat.

CHANCE Fuck me! Listen to Mr. Evolved talk!

MARX Amen to that, loser. It’s emes.

CHANCE No fucking way!

Marx holds out his arms as if to say ‘behold.’

CHANCE I need a drink.

DEGMAR I am thirsty as well.

MADELINE We’ll get something shortly. Degmar, I am going to slowly bring you into the present

MARX (sneer) -into the moment - What do you know about this stuff, Madeline? Doctor?

MADELINE I know you don’t have the decency and education to confine your anger and paranoia to me. This so has nothing to do with Deg

CHANCE What the fuck, Degmar? What did you guys do to him?

MADELINE Ask the Brooklyn swami.

CHANCE Swami? What did you do to him?

DEGMAR Nobody has done anything to me. I am thirsty. Marzie, can we get something to drink?
CHANCE Just get up and go to the fountain, it’s working I think

DEGMAR I’d like to get up - I just need a little help -

Degmar struggles with rising.

CHANCE Marx, what the fuck is going here?

MADELINE Tell him, Marxie, tell him what you’re doing. What are you doing?

MARX I was just trying to understand how two people I cared a lot about could fuck me over.


MARX You’re wrong, I’ve always been completely devoted [to you]

MADELINE [Devoted] is not an emotion, Marxie. You’ve never shown one. Since we’ve been together. I always thought it was kind of cool, your detachment and reserve, qualities that doctors aspire to.

MARX But then something changed, didn’t it?

CHANCE Listen you two

MADELINE Chancy? Do me a favor. Take this bottle and fill it with water from the fountain, for Degmar. Okay? We need to talk.

CHANCE What about Deg

MADELINE He’s fine. He’ll be fine. He’s relaxed, we’ll take care of him.

CHANCE He better not be spouting eastern mantras when I get back here

MADELINE (laughing)Chancy!

CHANCE - or sound like a speaker at a medical convention. I mean it.

Chance walks off.

DEGMAR There goesChance.

MARX He’s getting you water.

DEGMAR Excellent. I am thirsty.

MADELINE You know Marxie, not that it’s an excuse, but sometimes people need human companionship.

MARX What am I - a Nathan’s Relish Tube?

MADELINE I don’t know what you are. I really don’t.

MARX How did this happen?

MADELINE Can we just put it behind us?
MARX But he’s not my baby!

MADELINE Oh would you stop! He so looks like you.

MARX What?!

MADELINE Detached earlobes, no cleft chin, looks like he may even have your widow’s peak

MARX That’s all bullshit.

MADELINE If it means so much to you we could test-

MARX Well, when you had sex, did you use [protection]

MADELINE [It so] wasn’t like that, we never fucked, okay, we just

MARX Oh. Now I feel better. Not that I believe - Hey, is that your mother?

MADELINE Where?

MARX With the stroller, waving - maybe you should go see

Madeline waves offstage to her mother but it is apparent she is not seen.

MADELINE Don’t do anything - I’ll be right back.

Madeline exits.

Marx takes up position next to Degmar on the bench. His manner exudes pure evil.

MARX Just the two of us, Degmar.

DEGMAR You were arguing. It’s funny, it didn’t seem important, no that’s not right, relevant, or something.

MARX Degmar, there’s just one more thing. Are you still relaxed?

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX Your family. Your father, brother, uncles, cousins

DEGMAR The men of the family.

MARX The men. They all drink heavily don’t they?

DEGMAR They drink heavily.

MARX They all have disorders, personality disorders, mental disorders, criminal records, don’t they?

DEGMAR You know they do, Marxie - thirty six out of thirty eight Nygard men are not setting good examples.

MARX How does that make you feel?

DEGMAR Feel?
MARX Feel.

DEGMAR Hmm. Resigned I guess. Sad.

MARX Good. You should feel resigned.

DEGMAR I should. I do.

MARX Because that is your programming.

DEGMAR My programming?

Chance slowly returns with the water bottle. He senses that something important is going on so he hesitates just out of earshot, watching.

MARX Your programming. Encoding. In your DNA.

DEGMAR My DNA is fixed. As is yours.

MARX Quite right, Degmar. Just remember one thing.

DEGMAR Which thing?

MARX You must remain true to your genetic programming. You can’t outrun it.

DEGMAR None of us can, can we? Can we?

MARX No we can’t Degmar. We will be true to our programming. embrace it.

DEGMAR Embrace the madness? Embrace the alcoholism? Yes...

Madeline enters and joins Chance, and they begin to approach, concerned.

MARX So, how are we feeling?

DEGMAR I feel good.

MARX Do you see that branch?

CHANCE What’s doing, Marx? He okay now? What were you saying about programming?

Chance hands Degmar the water bottle but Marx stops him.

MARX Do you see the branch, Degmar?

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX I want you to come back to the present. Look at the branch.

DEGMAR I see it.

MARX Good. I Want your eyes to focus normally. Look at this water bottle.

DEGMAR Ah, water. Good.

Degmar reaches for it.
MARX When you finish drinking you will be back to normal, Degmar, back to your old self. There will be no smoking.

Marx shares a look with Chance and Madeline. Degmar downs the water and gradually becomes restless.

DEGMAR Okay, we’re in the park. So you two pieces of shit want to play some ball or what? Oops, Maddy, I’m sorry. It seems I suddenly feel...vulgar.

Lights down.

SCENE 7


Degmar, Marx, and Chance sitting on the bench, Degmar is sweaty with labored breathing, his arm wrapped in a makeshift dressing.

MARX We’re beyond kale and cucumbers here, Degmar. You need stitches.

DEGMAR It’s only a cut, Marxie, I’ve inflicted worse on myself at various times.

CHANCE Oh Deg…

MARX Come on, Deg, let’s go to a doctor.

DEGMAR You know I don’t trust doctors.

MARX None?

DEGMAR None.

CHANCE Come on Degmar, I know there’s one you trust.

DEGMAR I don’t trust doctors. The PhD’s are all about protecting their string theory cosmology, and the MDs are all about money and pills.

CHANCE I thought the pills were helping you

DEGMAR Well it took them long enough, didn’t it? How many years was I riding mania and psychosis like the wind

CHANCE I called her.

DEGMAR Who?

MARX You don’t mean Maddy I hope? I’m going to leave

CHANCE The fuck you are! We are staying right here.

MARX When did you call her - we just walked off the court!

CHANCE Before. When I arranged this.

MARX You didn’t know Deg would get cut.
DEGMAR Uh oh, Marxie, sounds like Chancy here is stepping on your turf, mystical premonition shit and whatnot.

MARX Chancy?

DEGMAR Tell him.

CHANCE Nothing that cool, boys. I saw something in the paper and decided, well, you know

DEGMAR The paper?

MARX What paper?

CHANCE Was a tiny story, easy to miss it, and you know how he was always so...self effacing and

MARX What are you talking about?

Chance removes a slip of newspaper from his pocket and shows it to Marx. Marx reads it and shows it to Degmar. They are quiet.

DEGMAR Aw. Shit.

MARX Amen.

CHANCE Yeah.

MARX Doesn’t say what he died from.

CHANCE He was always chewing that tobacco, wasn’t he?

DEGMAR Only coach in the conference looked like he had a golf ball in his mouth.

MARX In the Northeast of all places. I mean, who chews tobacco in New York?

CHANCE Baseball players.

DEGMAR Nascar drivers.

MARX Yeah, and Coach Kane. He was from West Virginia though, originally. A Mountaineer.

DEGMAR A saint you mean.

MARX A man.

CHANCE A mensch.

MARX He was a great coach.

CHANCE He was more than that. He was like the father we all wished we had.

MARX AND DEGMAR Yeah.

CHANCE He always told us to forget the grudges, they’d only interfere with our happiness.
MARX Okay, Chancy, let’s not get too maudlin here

DEGMAR Why do you have to be an asshole - Chancy’s trying to have a moment of respect.

MARX Maybe we should go to the funeral

CHANCE Was last week.

MARX Why didn’t we get something from the Team Alumni? They send all this fund raising nonsense by all the time

CHANCE You remember Coach - No Big Deal.

DEGMAR No Big Deal is right. Wish those string theory assholes would understand that concept

CHANCE Deg? Are you maintaining here

DEGMAR Fuck maintenance, homeostasis, physics, fucking coach

MARX Uh oh

DEGMAR Uh oh is fucking A One right on, that’s right, better watch out, Degmar is going to cut loose right now -

Degmar leaps off the bench and begins pacing, making circles around the bench and occasionally pausing to thrum his fingers the way he did earlier. His agitation is palpable.

CHANCE Come on, Marxie. Look at him. He has no place to go. No hospital will admit him so long as he’s on his proper dose

MARX You don’t know that, look at him, he’s ready to pop

CHANCE His family’s all scattered, Erik is dead, his sisters left for Oregon

MARX No way.

CHANCE Marxie. Please. Just for a few days to try it out. You could

MARX Out of the question. Elvira

CHANCE Not there Marxie. In the Kitchen. He could stay at your monastery.

MARX Jesus Christ Chancy, the man is unstable

DEGMAR I AM unstable! The whole modern edifice of string theory and quantum physics is based on instability and variable states

CHANCE Degmar! Deg! Remember - Physics for poets, okay?

DEGMAR (gradually lowering his voice)Okay, okay, okay. okay.....

MARX He’ll wreak havoc.


263
MARX What are you talking about?

CHANCE Genetic programming, remember? (looks at his watch) I guess she’s not coming. She and I talked over the years you know.

MARX Oh really? About what?

CHANCE About whether what you did, that hypnotism shit, could have really put him over the edge, destroyed his will to fight it.

MARX Fight what?

CHANCE The battle for sanity, stability, all that.

MARX Yeah, well...

CHANCE Well what, Marx?

MARX Well he deserved it! He fucked up my life.

CHANCE No, he didn’t. I did.

MARX You?

CHANCE

DEGMAR Me. Him.

MARX What are you talking about?

CHANCE The game.

MARX What game?

CHANCE The New Year Game. Where you fucked up your ankle.

MARX Yeah, you pushed that guy into me, I remember

CHANCE I threw the game.

MARX You what?

CHANCE I threw the game. I helped Julio’s boss make some money.

MARX You what? You fucking threw the game? What the fuck

CHANCE I needed the money. You remember how we lived. They paid me a thousand to queer the point spread. And I saw a chance. I’m sorry it fucked up your ankle.

MARX My ankle?! It fucked my career! I could have gone pro if it weren’t for

CHANCE I know. Deg knew too.

MARX He knew? I don’t fucking believe this

CHANCE Over the years, man, it changed me, it ate at me
MARX I don’t believe it. After I broke that ankle I was never the same, started gaining weight.

CHANCE Marxie, I know. I am really sorry.

MARX It fucking changed me. I mean.

CHANCE I know, man. Maddy and I talked about it.

MARX About what?

CHANCE About whether you’d snap out of it, you know, forget the pipe dream.

MARX I could have played! Bill Bradley got up less than me.

CHANCE Dude, Bradley was taller, and a better shooter.

MARX I could have played!

DEGMAR Maybe. We’ll never know ‘cause now you blow.

MARX You shut the fuck up. You knew! I’m glad I did what I

CHANCE You don’t know shit. Maddy understood. She stood by you even while you were becoming a weird fuck.

MARX What are you talking about? She loved me.

CHANCE She saw the signs, my friend, and she was worried. She had some older brothers, remember.

MARX But she married me even

CHANCE -after all that. All your weirdness senior year.

MARX Weirdness?

CHANCE Yes. You were like the Phil Jackson of the team, the zen master in the corner.

MARX And Degmar, you incredible piece of shit, you knew?!

CHANCE AND DEGMAR Yes.

MARX Son of a bitch.

CHANCE Maddy must have known too, she was pretty intuitive.

MARX Yeah, but no way she wouldn’t have told me, I mean were engaged and

CHANCE You’re wrong. I’m pretty sure she knew but she’s not here to say. Anyway, that’s why I stole that test.

MARX That philosophy exam? For him?

CHANCE I owed him. He knew, Marx, and kept it quiet. He and Coach had some kind of conversation.

MARX Coach was in on it?!!
CHANCE Coach realized what I had done, he confronted me and Deg when we got off the train after the game, coming back to the city.

MARX But

CHANCE You went for an XRay with the trainer, remember?

MARX Shit.

CHANCE Anyway Degmar and Coach and I, but mostly Degmar, man, he was persuasive, you know how he could argue.

MARX Shit.

CHANCE Yeah. He told Coach he’d guarantee a winning season.

MARX Shit, Chancy.

CHANCE Yeah. That’s why Julio started calling me Chance, too.

MARX Shit.

CHANCE So you need to cut Degmar some slack here.

MARX He still fucked my wife, Chancy - shit, I can’t even call you that, Charles.

CHANCE It wasn’t that black and white. Maddy loved Deg for stepped in and helping me out. She knew I let myself get caught that night.

MARX - you mean with the guard, the night watchman.

CHANCE -right. With the guard. I could have outrun him but then he would have caught Deg. So I slowed up and let him nail me.

MARX And Deg got to go to Leipzig. Fucking Chan - Charles.

CHANCE Payback.

MARX Shit.

CHANCE So don’t be so hard on Maddy either.

MARX Why didn’t you ever tell me?

CHANCE I’m weak, man. I fuck up everything I do. Every scheme falls apart.

MARX -No, Chancy, you’re just an inveterate optimist, your glass if half full, remember?

CHANCE (shaking his head) Nah, every deal costs me money, if I pick a sure thing the horse dies. No, I couldn’t stand to lose one of my only friends.

MARX I would have helped you out.

CHANCE Charity? That was never my name, Marxie, and you know it.

MARX Shit.
CHANCE You’ve probably said that word more today than in your entire life.

MARX Well, except maybe for Lennon Day.

CHANCE Yeah. Crazy energy and anger that day.

MARX What a fucking mess.

CHANCE Not really, Marxie, more of an opportunity.

MARX For whom?

CHANCE For you. To set things right.

MARX I don’t know, Chan - Charles.

CHANCE Degmar? Sit down once.

DEGMAR Sit? Why?

CHANCE I think Marxie wants to tell you something

DEGMAR - something about what?

MARX - I don’t know about this Chan

CHANCE - about a girl with big jalobees. Right Marx?

MARX Umm

DEGMAR Big jalobees? Just big. Marxie, or gigantic?

MARX Umm - they could be as big as you want Degmar.

DEGMAR Viking warrior steel encased rocket ships?

CHANCE Have a seat, Deg, and listen.

DEGMAR Okay, I’m sitting. Now what about those jalobees?

MARX Degmar, it’s good to see you.

DEGMAR It is?

MARX Don’t make things harder for me. I see you’re doing that thing with your fingers again.

DEGMAR Umm...

MARX I’d like you to stop for a second, okay?

DEGMAR A universal second, Marxie? Or a standard earth second? Have I explained the difference

MARX A universal second, Deg, one hundred thirty seven point zero three five nine nine seven Earth Seconds which are based on the transitional states.
Degmar relaxes and smiles.

DEGMAR You remembered.

MARX Deg, I am your friend. And I’d like you to think back to something I once told you.

DEGMAR Sure thing.

MARX Can you see my hand? In front of you?

DEGMAR Yes.

MARX I’d like you to think about “genetic programming.” Do you

CHANCE Marx, is this going to work?

Marx shrugs a ‘maybe, maybe not, but let me try’ gesture. Chance backs off.

MARX Do you remember that?

DEGMAR Yes. You can’t outrun your genetic -

Marx rises almost out of himself and summons all his energy, experience, misguided feelings of love and hate and duty, and uses the FLUORISH maneuver with his hand.

DEGMAR -um, your gene, geneti, what was I going to say, I can’t seem to remember

CHANCE I don’t know Marxie, it can’t be that simple, it’s

MARX I don’t know either, but you asked me to try.

DEGMAR Marxie, I’m trying to remember something but I can’t; can you help me?

MARX About what, Deg?

DEGMAR About, about, um

CHANCE Coach?

DEGMAR Yes, that’s it! About Coach.

CHANCE He taught us well.

DEGMAR He did. Marxie?

MARX Yes Degmar?

DEGMAR No one lives forever, do they?

MARX No they don’t Degmar.

DEGMAR But they can still live on, right?

MARX We all go on living, I guess, Degmar. Chance.
CHANCE Come on, guys, I'll walk you to the subway.

DEGMAR Where we going?

They all rise.

MARX I've got a view of about one molecule of the river...

DEGMAR Excellent.

They walk off.

CHANCE So, either of you bitches hungry for some Doctor Chicken?

End.
Inquiry concerning graduate school

Hi Professor Dartière,

I sent you a copy of my Book, The N-particle Model, back in 2000. You might remember it because it had some nice watercolors of trout on the covers and as I recall I sent copies to the entire Cal Tech high energy physics group.

I am both a paranoid schizophrenic and someone who has invented a new theory of physics and chemistry to replace modern physics. I was actually psychotic when I wrote and distributed that book. As you might expect that is not good and those experiences have been painful although interesting from a psychiatric perspective. I am quite stable now on a medication that has worked for me long term in the past. It is one of the older anti-psychotic medications and the problem that resulted in my recent psychosis was trying newer medications that do not work very well with me. In looking back over my periods of psychosis, I was never a danger to myself or anyone else, and you finally have to look back on it with humor and be able to laugh about it. My Dad was a Lutheran minister and Professor of exegetical theology. He once told me Albert Schweitzer thought Jesus was a paranoid schizophrenic. In my psychosis I was a Jesus like character acting out in a massive conspiracy started by Einstein to bring about an end to warfare and conflict among mankind.

A brief history net of mental illness:

I graduated from Cornell in 1974 with a BA in Biology, concentration neurobiology. I was a pre-medical student but had a GPA of 3.16 and did not get into medical school despite very strong performances in biochemistry, genetics and physical chemistry. On the MCAT I scored 98% (715) Science, 98% (715) Quantitative, 79% (605) Verbal and 34% (495) General Information and I felt that was a moral victory.

I went to business school to get an MBA in finance and investment analysis but dropped out after three semesters because MBA stuff is mostly mindless garbage. Although economics, finance and marketplaces are very interesting the MBA program is low level stuff. But it was a useful experience and I learned a few things.

I worked as a research associate in bacteriology at UC Berkeley for a year, auditing courses there for two years, developed a model of Gram (+) prokaryotic cells as cell chemical computers, but did not interest anyone in that model at that time.
I am single, never married, no children and with only myself to provide for have been able to spend most of my time doing theoretical physics and theoretical chemistry. I have a new theory of mechanics, electromagnetism, relativity and quantum mechanics that has taken me 21 years to construct. It is very difficult to propose a new relativity and quantum theory because the established theories are considered proven experimentally.

To popularize my work I am planning to get an undergraduate degree in physics and then if necessary go to graduate school. I’m planning to join them first and then beat them. I need 30 credit hours to get a BS in physics, two years part time. The University of Alaska Anchorage does not offer a degree in physics but does offer the course work in mathematics, electrical engineering, computer science and physics I am interested in taking.

Back to the motivation of this email. It is my belief that modern physics is mostly nonsense and string theory is pure nonsense.

I have taken two semesters of introductory physics, one semester of modern physics, one semester of physical chemistry and audited a one semester course in electromagnetism. In math I have taken the three semester calculus sequence, linear algebra, differential equations, probability and statistics and discrete math. I have strong A’s in all those courses.

Would you advise me that I need to get an undergraduate degree in physics and possibly even need to get accepted to graduate school to make forward progress and be able to gain recognition?

Sincerely,

David M. Degner
180 Fulcrum Drive #1
Anchorage AK 99504

PS The attachment is the first page of a paper I am writing that will be about 100 pages.

2-13-2007 10:14 PM

Do you blush?

Hi again Professor Dartière,

I have not heard from you and imagine you may be a little shy. So I’ll open up a little more of myself to you.

I would so love to have an open and honest conversation with a female theoretical physicist. But that is not now possible under the rules you physicists have inflicted on me and also on yourselves. That is a pretty heavy burden to bear but not bad in comparison with a stroke, a heart attack, cancer or debilitating depression.

You know of course that I have the correct theory. And I know of course that you are a bullshit artist.

I am lonely and have sought out finding a mate on eHarmony. I do not have the advantage of being a professor at a distinguished institution like Cal Tech or Cornell and telling the whole world I am single in the NY Times.
Here is my Introductory Profile on eHarmony:

The one thing David is most passionate about:

- Doing work in theoretical physics, chemistry and biology. It's challenging, fun and rewarding to do. I believe we can solve all physical problems for all people on the planet earth through modern and near-future technologies.

The three things which David is most thankful for:

- High intelligence, the ability to work with my mind with creativity, originality, intensity and effectiveness.
- I am tall, handsome and physically attractive.
- To be alive and healthy and a part of this planet's amazing ecosystem.

The most influential person in David's life has been:

- My physical chemistry professor as an undergraduate biology major. He is one of the world's leading theoretical physicists and chemists. He instilled in me through my performance in his course the confidence I could work at the highest level in science.

David's friends describe him as:

- Intelligent
- Spontaneous
- Perceptive
- Thoughtful

Three of David's best life-skills are:

- Creating romance in a relationship
- Continuing to expand my knowledge and awareness
- Finding pleasure and contentment in simple things

The most important thing David is looking for in a person is:

- The capacity for intimacy of hand, heart, mind, spirit and soul.

The first thing you'll probably notice about David when you meet him:

- The fact I find many things in life very funny.
The one thing David wishes MORE people would notice about him is:

- My ability to articulate in simple terms complex ideas.

David typically spends his leisure time:

- Although doing theoretical science seems like leisure time because it is so much fun to do, when not doing science I like to watch news and sports on TV, listen to music, some talk radio, gardening, cooking and walking.

The things David can't live without are:

- friendship
- commitment
- intimacy
- intellectual productivity in both science and art
- cracked green olives

The last book David read and enjoyed:

- Wins, Losses, and Lessons by Lou Holtz. The book was a personal recollection of experiences and wisdom that Coach Holtz recounts in his simple, honest and straightforward way. It was an inspiration to read on many human dimensional levels.

One thing that only David's best friends know is:

- I can be succinct.

Some additional information David wanted you to know is:

- I can summarize many of my core beliefs in a simple poem I wrote: Why are we here? What is our purpose? How should we lead our lives? Why: Unknowable, incomprehensible, unfathomable. What purpose: To pass on the joy we find in being, the dynamics you know. How: Without fear, with love, compassion, charity and mercy, without impiety and above all else with wonderment.

Since you may still be single I thought I would show you my profile.

I am not a paranoid schizophrenic by genetics. My mental illness derived from a single night of using PCP, a bad street drug, when I was 22. I have been psychotic, do not know fully what that means in terms of biology, but am quite stable now and believe I will be in the future.

If I leave you with only one thing I hope it is a good laugh, at me, at yourself and at the world situation.
Best,

David

2-20-2007 10:40 PM

Your writing skills are rather inferior to my terrible genius

2-22-2007 12:30 AM

Just a little blush please^137.036 (I've gone corny, I apologize, or is that horny)

On a lofty plane
in this grand play
when two begat one
you I will slay
and by you claim
the intense satisfaction
of the rising and setting son

4-19-2007 5:59 AM

My last communication since you are not responding

Hi Professor Dartière,

I will not bother you further unless you contact me.

The attachment is the last chapter of my screenplay.

If you would like to "Get out of Dodge", and come up to Alaska for a week, traveling incognito, we could stay at a 4 star hotel at Denali and do some hiking in the awesome presence of that magnificent peak.

Sincerely,
David Degner

7-29-2007 4:51 PM

1. antanemic@anistonavenue.com

7-29-2007 7:43 PM

2. strokesman@qdflw.com

8-2-2007 7:12 PM

3. diobol@cerealize.com

8-2-2007 11:45 PM

4. swordick@oneparkplacekc.com

8-3-2007 7:27 AM

5. tazia@wiznature.com
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Date</th>
<th>Time</th>
<th>Email Address</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8-3-2007</td>
<td>11:01 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:reeducation@theascidiangroup.com">reeducation@theascidiangroup.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-7-2007</td>
<td>5:10 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:gazement@flatout.com">gazement@flatout.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-7-2007</td>
<td>9:46 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:porotype@tomdinwiddie.com">porotype@tomdinwiddie.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-7-2007</td>
<td>6:48 PM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:blacklists@ci-group.com">blacklists@ci-group.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-8-2007</td>
<td>10:23 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:dertrum@tshirtengine.com">dertrum@tshirtengine.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-10-2007</td>
<td>12:56 PM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:whorishness@tifosigear.com">whorishness@tifosigear.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-11-2007</td>
<td>11:23 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:calamopitys@eigo-to-go.com">calamopitys@eigo-to-go.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-11-2007</td>
<td>12:26 PM</td>
<td>pre <a href="mailto:obedient@mitertulia.com">obedient@mitertulia.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-11-2007</td>
<td>5:02 PM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:possibleness@annahunter.com">possibleness@annahunter.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-11-2007</td>
<td>9:34 PM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:yugoslavia@mudtrap.net">yugoslavia@mudtrap.net</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-12-2007</td>
<td>12:18 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:departs@fantasyparade.com">departs@fantasyparade.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-13-2007</td>
<td>9:34 PM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:gallomaniac@thegreengenie.com">gallomaniac@thegreengenie.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-15-2007</td>
<td>3:53 AM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:subsextuple@gsupersonals.com">subsextuple@gsupersonals.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-15-2007</td>
<td>11:44 PM</td>
<td><a href="mailto:corvidae@tradewindshr.com">corvidae@tradewindshr.com</a></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8-16-2007</td>
<td>3:01 AM</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
A more current version of virtual reality, or is that reality?

Dear Annette,

In this journey of life we always wonder what the outcome will be, each of us wants the best possible outcome for themselves, their mates and their children.

I have put in a lot more work in on my screenplay. The current version is in the PDF attachment. It is shaping up and I hope good enough for publication in three or four more months. That's about all the longer I can wait, to meet my future, that I dream of, that I think about, and when finally I am able to consummate pure beauty.

If I was not a natural physicist I would have been in computers. Combinatorics and modern computer science are incredibly fascinating areas of intellectual inquiry. But as a theoretical physicist I have always been comfortable knowing all you really need to know and use intuitively is the multiplication rule, the addition rule, the algebra of factorials and that software is just sequence, selection and looping, i.e. Turing machine state prescriptions.

Life is to enjoy to the fullest,

David

poetry is interesting, and informative, and reassuring, if not a little obnoxious

i dreamed again
of beauty i had always sought
i really didn't know what i was in for
i knew she would be special

remarkable
dynamic
very perspicacious
sexually sublime, even transcendental
what functions would i give to her
1+1=1 and 1^137=1

in her i would only again confide
in her i would always abide
not by pride but its inverse
she knew numbers well
in her bosom i would swell
and never again in the depths of agony would i dwell

8-18-2007 5:59 AM
   24. procarpium@unionattorneysnw.com

8-18-2007 9:13 AM
   25. impartibility@myhhi.com

8-18-2007 11:45 AM
   26. overlover@themusicward.com

8-20-2007 11:42 AM
   27. centroacinar@booksbydoris.com

8-22-2007 11:25 PM
   28. apoembryony@chinesebibleonline.com

8-27-2007 1:05 PM
   29. culturization@ninglings.com

8-30-2007 1:37 AM
   30. sprays@antibodyome.com

8-30-2007 9:36 PM
   31. kynurenic@cawthonhollums.com

8-31-2007 8:11 AM

Formatting and adding a TOC in Word

1. 361/137
   If you are modest
   and I am shy
   Is it a currant of air, or water, or fire?
   a currant of peace, and love and joy
   If you are modest
   and I am shy

2. Sperm and egg, egg and sperm
   Well look out each morning
   over the Saint Elias expanse

   277
While in your bosom our children arise
It’ll be time off, to start a family
How many?
(3, 4)

3. \( \frac{1}{\infty} \)
At first we did not speak
we felt out and touched
feet, nose, ears and souls
Each sensation a new delight
and when our time finally arrived
We disappeared, hidden in the present
destined to infinity together

9-4-2007 8:02 AM
PDF with covers and TOC

Professor Dartière,

It is a little bit embarrassing, quite embarrassing actually, what is on the cutting room floor. Your discretion would be most appreciated.

Best
Mr. Degner

9-4-2007 8:05 AM

PS

I have about 15 pages to go on a natural law, world government and a non-lethal enforcement mechanism.

9-2-2007 3:03 AM

32. puttees@sweetcarrots.com

9-6-2007 10:49 PM

33. diamantine@bossfurniture.com

9-10-2007 8:32 AM

34. nullable@masantrepo.com

9-10-2007 8:44 PM

35. reinspected@lafogatamex.com

9-11-2007 9:38 PM

36. incomings@abhand.com

9-12-2007 10:01 PM
Just alone in my room dreaming of pure beauty

Dear Annette, Dear Dr. Dartière, Dear Professor Dartière,

My work is complete and if you have finished your toenails, and have let them dry, maybe you could do something equally as useful for me—insert my work in the Internet so that in 3 or 4 weeks the entire world knows me. (Ferrari red is preferred)

I am not opposed to cheating so the attachment is a Word document (MathType for the equations). You can do any editing you feel appropriate, convert it to PDF, and get it into circulation. I trust that is possible but will include PDF if our document structure is not as robust as we would hope for. If you need an email address for me use davidmartindegener@hotmail.com, password aristotle715.

I was really impressed you had Planck’s Blackbody Radiation Law in your first few footnotes in your book. It will be interesting to see what you can write when the reigns are off and you’re not holding back punches.

Smitten but capable to drive through Destruction Bay one more time alone,

David

PS My current goal is to get a new Ford F-250 with 18 inch wheels, the 5.4 liter V-8, the low ratio rear axle, 3.73:1, a superb sound system and satellite radio, dark green with tan cloth interior, and drive out of this God forsaken hole Alaska, with you in the passenger seat. It will always be a little embarrassing that you are smarter than me, but I will try to provide biological counterpoint to that biological intimidation.
Raining and warm

I am quitting the cigarettes Honey. I apologize for being such an ass.

Dog's names

A red Doberman male named Friedel and a yellow lab named Lily. What will the progeny look like?

That straight jacket by the Cornell police doesn't have to be used

I really don't know what I am motivated by,

I think it is only truth and love,

I am a fisherman,

and I cannot resist fishing,

especially if there is a big one in the hole,

and especially if it is the most beautiful hole imaginable,
far from pedestrian view,
as if only for me,
a treasure of Nature,
symbolic of your beauty but a simpler embodiment of Nature,
I really hope you don't want to have me locked up,
I imagine we must be destined together,
to raise a family and all of that so essential to the biological experience,
are your eyes hazel or blue?
9-26-2007 2:17 PM

The smartest woman in past history, Ayn Rand
I don't know if my work is drivel or the best pen play in history
and I don't know if my chance with you is zero or one
but I guess as a right of journey
I have to somehow enjoy this uncertainty
with only my vision and I think also yours
9-26-2007 3:00 PM

Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha

I heard about Chavez giving an 8, that's 8, hour speech
now I imagine one could read my book 3 times in 8 hours
and I imagine that it includes about all that is knowable
can you imagine Lubos at our dinner table discussing epistemology, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha, ha
9-26-2007 3:52 PM

Catch a brown trout, it's really embarrassing Honey, I want to be a politician (of sorts, as in spiritual advisor)

His book broke in early October. By January it was a world storm. A vision for all of mankind had been encapsulated and to all intelligent viewers it was the final battle of the final war. Everything had changed in only two months. In the new arena the intellect and the logic were in highest regard. Hermann Hesse would have realized his dream of a mankind, playing the game of intellect for fun and sport, rather than conflict and war.

David formed a new political party. Seizing an opportunity, and knowing his intemperance for politics, he addressed the world over NPR in an unedited speech, on January 10th, 2008.

"Now as the inspiration of the Brown Trout party, patterned in the spirit of Teddy Roosevelt's Bull Moose party, I have the capacity to propose a political candidacy for us in the 2008 election. I am going to ask Hilary Clinton to run for president. She has made some mistakes in the past but she also has the experience and intellect we need at this point in time, provided of course that she adopts The
Sands of Time as mankind's goal and recognizes the few principles on which it rests. Hilary is a natural leader. She is of the highest intellect. Also she is a lawyer and a bit innumerate of game design, of which I am the expert, but I will advise her. I propose she asks Newt Gingrich to be her running mate. Newt is the smartest politician in the playing field. He is the most knowledgeable of history. He is a first class intellectual. And I will ask Hilary to ask Colin Powell to become the first five star since Omar Bradley to be in charge of Operation Swords into Plowshares. And I will ask Hilary to ask Barack Obama to be the Secretary of State for the 8 years of her administration. Then he will get the experience needed to be president and likely will be president in 2016."

"So I put before you a ticket with Hilary, Newt, Colin and Osama."

Of course they all got on board. They could both get their rocks off and do some good. With mankind emancipated forever from oppression no one was likely to complain. David and Annette went down to the Virgil Creek Virgin, in downtown Dryden, to have a few cold ones.

"Honey you are starting to use too many words."

"Get Lubos to tutor me."

9-26-2007 7:00 PM

I can't resist this

"What do you think about Bill cheating on me, I know you are rather harsh on that sort of behavior?"

"That's between you and Bill Hilary. I only hope you have been orgasmic."

"Do you think that little dick Ahmadinejad ever gave a woman an orgasm?"

"Certainly not in the ass."

"I like you David, we are going to fuck everyone who doesn't get on board universal peace, justice, freedom and liberty so bad they won't know if its a jailhouse rape or just getting double-fucked by two black studs."

"You know Hilary I hadn't realized your full depth."

9-27-2007 3:45 AM

50. flushy4@coreyjennyandmason.com

9-27-2007 1:59 PM

51. rancid@degiaimogroup.com

9-28-2007 9:45 AM

An unrepentant sinner

A woman of your refinement
that was impossible for me to know previously
if you can only teach me lessons when I am wrong
and reward me when I am right
Really on fire up in here in Anchorage but clear blue skies

I am one too
that’s me and you Honey
I have these lascivious, these erotic fantasies
of complete intimacy, sexually and intellectual, in poem, in prose, in dialogue and in art
transcendently to abiding love
I imagine, I think, I feel and I hope you do too

It’s really only biology
within the rich texture of our general mind that is connected to our pleasure
and within our capacity for love and intimacy
where did this gift, this reward, this exultation to being, come from?
Tē must be the Creator!

how could our paths cross?
how could they not cross?

Symmetry always

He showed me a way
a little foreign to me
a little confusing
we shared humor and passion
we shared the traverse and the final ascent
although from opposite paths
it was sublime
I am a little pedantic

Sublime sZhlTm

So rieved, so sensual, so pleasing to the senses to be beyond imagination. Derived from the lime, the most magnificent of the citrus. Using the etymological humor of as to go beneath is to emphasize what is above and even exult in it.

Hold-em

I'm all in. I've got three Queens and two tens. What are you holding?

An epoch

Fellow human on this planet earth,

Stand up and be counted in mankind’s final battle of the final war, where we with your participation can emerge victorious. I would like to set off a chain reaction—a chain reaction affecting our minds, our goals, our aspirations, a chain reaction demonstrating mankind’s highest vision. As humans we have come a long way in a short time, with the recorded history, the written word really only going back two or three thousand years. Let’s now take that step forward and implement Universal Peace, Justice, Freedom and Liberty. I define UPJF&L succinctly as no armies, no weapons, no trade restrictions net of scientific safety, including adult pornography, adult recreational drugs, adult gambling, and adult prostitution, no travel restrictions net of having a communicable disease, no borders, every last one of us live where we want to and can afford to and no involuntary transfers of wealth by governments from any individual or group of
individuals to any other individual or group of individuals, no subsidies of any kind, no welfare of any kind, everyone carries their own weight.

If each person receiving this email forwards it to six other individuals then in less than thirty-one hierarchical steps over one billion people online will see this message.

Hallelujah, hallelujah, we will at last be free and will never turn back on that emancipation from the shackles of human suffering we have been embedded in from our evolutionary past and that still oppresses so many. Let’s solve human suffering ASAP!

Emergent on the plateau of aesthetic design

A screenplay titled A string theorist meets the fisherman's son, including a Theory of Everything, a new quantum mechanics, a reduction of chemistry to engineering, a microscopic theory of electric, magnetic, photon and gravity fields, a theory of mechanical forces like in a piston of an internal combustion engine, a steady-state pollution free solution to the energy problem, a solution to the terrorism, conflict and security problem for all mankind and for the rest of time, until the sun foes red giant and we fry, a plan to reduce the work week from 40 to 30 hours while obtaining a higher standard of living, and much more including religion and philosophy is available here as a PDF download.

A screenplay by David Martin Degner for free:

A string theorist meets the fisherman's son. 3.12MB PDF

www.davidmartindegner.com

56. progestin@kainuunkirja.net

mluto/ialfti.wordstuuuse.net

57. untile@dotcomimpact.com

58. undevoutness@aknotchabove.com

59. antimask@thelasalles.com

Am I in for r&r?

285
m2r^2 = m1r^2

"Of course it’s me darling, who the fuck else do you think it could be?"

"I’m a little dense at times.”

“You are, albeit under the crucifying stress of between what you have and what you want.”

“YOU know Honey, even though I am the Bold Ruler I do have a few insecurities.”

“I’m busy, don’t bother me with them right now.”

“OK Honey, but you know reality is some times a little hard to find.”

“I don’t want to hear any of that crap out of you again darling. Reality is so transparent it is tautological to anyone with common sense. I know you have as much common sense as anyone. I’ll be back for dinner. What are we having?”

“Steamed clams with drawn butter and lemon, garlic bread and tomato, cucumber and pepperocini salad with blue cheese, olive oil and red wine vinegar.”

“See you for dinner.”

Sometimes it is hard to be honest, but it's not too bad

I wonder how you could be single and so far without children. I wonder if you have been lonely and if you have been for how long and what that was like for you. And most of all I wonder if you are still lonely. I wonder what it is like to be a female physicist of such accomplishment. I wonder how hard you have to work to understand something. I think physicists have to have inner steel, but I am sure yours is different than mine and I wonder how that represents itself.

I saw your John Stewart interview and imagine you are very sweet and a truly nice person. I imagine you don’t even swear.

I know I have been lonely and so far deprived of being a father. I remember listening to Ben E. King in 1987, two years after discovering the N-particle. I dreamed then of a woman who would stand by me. I thought that dream would be realized in several years. Now twenty years later it has been a long journey. It has been a brutal campaign.

With you at 48 and me at 54 we are not generational apart, although my formative childhood experiences were in the 60’s and yours in the 70’s and the difference in the world between 1960 and 1980 is rather astonishing. It seems that for me with what I have been through in life to meet you without children and single is a miracle.
I know maybe I have raised your brow with some of my correspondence. I don’t have anything in particular to say about that but will point out that on the low doses of Prolixin I take I am an extraordinarily stable and strong individual.

I don’t know how and when this strange stuff associated with our communication will end, but I, for one, can’t wait.

David

PS A note about my health. I have been addicted to cigarettes on and off for the last 4 years. I smoked from 15 to 35 and then quite up until 50. I can give them up but haven’t been able to quite yet. I don’t have any pulmonary disease now but know using tobacco is crazy and I am beating myself up over it. I think I will always smoke marijuana. I was a good swimmer in high school and have some great lungs. I am 60 pounds overweight due to the caloric intake of Budweiser. I am not an alcoholic, but when you are alone like I am it is difficult not to drink beer daily. When I don’t drink I lose 8 pounds a month, and with exercise could lose it even faster. I have high blood pressure and high cholesterol but both go away when I get below 245. I am currently 280. In good shape, with a little kraut paunch, I should weight 220. I am 6’4” tall. I have always loved walking and cycling and look forward to getting in better shape.

10-18-2007 2:35 AM

Permutations of play

Well, of course, I am a fisherman

I never wanted to mount a trophy

catching it, holding it, releasing it, or taking it home and eating it were always my only goals

With only my memory to capture the image, no camera needed or desired

when I kept them I put them in the freezer

And showed them off to fellow fisherman

10-18-2007 5:33 PM

They have once use peppercorn grinders at Costco for $3.86, blades don't go dull, never have to be refilled, elegance in design

I guess you have noticed there are one or two grammatical errors and one or two mistakes in content in everything I send you. It is not because I am sloppy, maybe because I am a little stupid, thick German lout I am called by ex-friends who are refined Jewish professionals, but it does reflect I work fast, am an artist and always looking for the edge, so go over it some times.

It’s hard to think about you seriously, in this virtual world that to put it mildly is bizarre, but it is seeping into my veins what it would be like to have you with me in my life and for you to have me in your life. About the latter I can only speculate, about the former, it really hasn’t sunk in yet. It is so different from the past, a welcome relief to the loneliness I have felt and also a fulfillment of my lifelong dream.

If you can imagine me, drinking a few beers at the end of the day, listening to some good music, scrolling through the incredible number of photographs of you on the Internet (modest for a celebrity, but on the border for a physicist, albeit of impeccable taste and
quite artistic), a glance or two at a favorite free porn site and THEN writing to you in email with minimal editing, always doubled over in laughter, that I sure hope you share. I should be whipped.

10-18-2007 6:57 PM

Open this one Honey for a few laughs, and a few shared ones too

Dear Annette,

Honey, I am drunk now, as drunk as I ever get, which is nothing like passed out or blacked out but more like laughing and with relaxed inhibition.

I know you probably have a few insecurities and a little baggage so I will show you some of mine. I have only had one one-night-stand in my life. She was a waitress and sexually desirable. I was 22 or 23. I am really very shy about exposing my organ to woman the first time, the rule in force in one-night-stands. Well she gave me a blow job but I still couldn’t get it up all the way. After giving up on sex I was lying there thinking what a fine piece of ass she was and finally got a good hard on and put it to good use. The moral of the story is I have to be in love to be capable of sex. I have observed that at least 95% of men need no such motive. It’s not because my libido or testosterone level is lower than anyone else’s, as I verified in high school, but because monogamy is the highest expression of sex and monogamy is based on love.

I actually have not had sex with a woman since July 1983. I may or may not need Viagra or Cialis. If I do it would not be more than about half the time. But I think I only need stimulation. Could you please provide some of that?

It takes a little while to be honest and not wearing a mask. The peace, love and joy of a relationship unencumbered by any mask other than individual dignity the reward.

You know I really don’t know if you are a better physicist than I. When I make discoveries it seems like I am alone, without peer, on the frontier. But that always seems absurd. I have recognized your superior intelligence in those heroin syringes you provided. But in the design of things I sometimes feel alone, all by myself, with no human able to walk along side me. I do not know if this is because of experience or innate ability and I am sure not due to delusion. I imagine the former since in innate ability I could not be anywhere close to the top. But I am not sure of that and always had such high goals I never doubted I could go to the top, albeit only acquiring that appreciation measured with performance over time.

Well Honey, we should certainly have some interesting things to talk about and explore. I hope you are having a very nice night tonight.

David

PS Your 59 insertions of heroin have made me an addict. Could I be to blame? And I’ll bet you love clams. I do.

10-18-2007 8:26 PM

Do I just have to spread my legs?

“What exactly do I have to do to provide stimulation?”

“Well that’s a complicated question Honey. It’s a fairly broad spectrum of images and physical contact.”
“What about my need for stimulation?”

“Well that’s a complicated question Honey. It’s a fairly broad spectrum of images and physical contact.’

10-19-2007 5:14 PM

I really am all in

I get this uneasy feeling writing to you. Like am I stalking this poor woman? I know I am not but am not quite certain you feel the same way. I know you know I am in no way dangerous. But there is this little twinge in my gut associated with each communication.

The attachment is the only photograph of me other than my driver’s license since college graduation. I was 26 and at UC Berkeley where I audited courses for a couple of years. I am also going to show you my current driver’s license photo taken in late 2006 when I was close to 300, despite that I find it embarrassing.

You have beautiful, gentle eyes. I never really had a preference, but now realize I prefer blue eyes. I have your book here and just took another look at your photo on the back cover. And I ask myself what else would I like to add? I guess only that I sure hope I am not making a fool out of myself. It reassures me to know if I was a woman of your distinction and discretion would mostly find it amusing.

10-19-2007 5:30 PM

Two little magnetic plaques I have on my refrigerator

10-20-2007 8:53 PM

I see no reason to not untie myself, so that I will do

Dearest Annette,
I have reviewed our correspondence. I have shown you the good, the bad and the ugly. I have embarrassed myself in front of you but I have also been proud in front of you. I hate to embarrass myself, the more beers I have drunk the worse I am, but I am completely naked in front of you. You know I am yours for the taking.

As a man, reduced to the core fundamentals by circumstances in life, I realized all I need is a hard on and a clean asshole. That’s astonishingly simple, and although I state it with humor it is surprisingly true.

I know I should not even fish this hole. But when you are naked intellectually being naked physically is not so much further.

Oh gosh I know I am going to regret this! A woman is curious about her man’s penis before physical contact. Oh gosh I know I am going to regret this! Mine is #.##” long, about ##% among all males, and #.##” in circumference, about ##% of all males. That has always made me shy, because my feet (17D), my hand and wrist size (XXL), my height (6’4”) and my intelligence (IQ on Army entrance exam 143) are all around 98% or 99%. Can you see how it makes my shy to not have a really large penis relative to all my other measurements? But I have always known penis size does not correlate to feet size, hand size, height or intelligence and of course I have seen thousands of penises in locker rooms and I know analogous biological rules represent woman. And of course it's not the meat it's the motion. Oh gosh I know I am going to regret this!

Oh gosh I know I am going to regret this! Oh gosh I know I am going to regret this! Oh gosh I know I am going to regret this! I can determine from your photographs and interviews, in viewing you lips and mouth, that your pussy is exquisite. That’s just part of my dick and cunt developmental biological theory of mankind. You know I was quite subtle and circumvented that embryological truth in my screenplay but you know it is true and funny. I think your pussy is just about perfect, a little on the small size, capable of vigorous interaction and capable to deliver children by natural birth and not needing a cesarean section. I look so much forward to you having orgasm with me glued to your clitoris with my mouth. To impregnate you is my goal.

It’s a little more complicated about weight and libido. I was never fat until I got on the Prolixin in July 1984. When I came out of psychosis in August 1984 I started drinking 12 beers daily and in 6 months went from 220 to 280. I got down to 247 in 2003, but was up to 340 in March 2006. The Prolixin might affect my libido and because of that I may need Viagra. At 55 I don’t have so many spontaneous erections and seem to need physical stimulation to achieve a good hard on. But I am not sure if all I need is the stimulation of a partner.

The main reason I tell you all of this is because I could fall in love with you completely. Email relationships are a little weird. With me at 54 and you at 48 I really don’t know what is appropriate behavior but imagine it is quite different from the repertoire of behavior one acts out at 22.

I have always had monogamous relationships, and always felt the learned consummate pleasure in a monogamous relationship worth far more than the excitement of a one-night-stand.

I can stop drinking and smoking and get down to 220 and be physically attractive again AND also physically healthy.

You know, having been able to discover almost all of physics and chemistry, those accomplishments give me rather strong belief in myself. As you know I want to do much more and to be a leader for mankind.
Well, you know now a lot about me. I have told you my penis size, I have told you about my mental illness, I guess those are the only two things about which I have a few hang-ups.

How do I feel being completely naked and transparent in front of you? Only like a man in love with a woman he wants to share the rest of his life with and wants to raise a family with.

You know I am yours for the taking
know I am not faking
Carnal and intellectual rewards making
we are awaking

David

PS I just put up a Matisse “Femmes et singes” screen print on the wall in my all purpose room. I live in a 775 square feet one bedroom condo. I raise marijuana in the bedroom and live in the large living room. I have two tables, one with my computer in front of west facing windows, and one with my arts, crafts, working and writing table. I have two executive chairs, one at each table and my TV and stereo. On the walls I have my Michael Simon’s trout and char watercolors, James Prosek’s trout of North America, a periodic table and two Matisse and two Picasso paintings. My bed is a king size Simmons World Class called a Newton Plush. On that lofty plane we are going to share consummate pleasure.

10-21-2007 7:22 AM

Sunday morning in Anchorage

How do I feel being so completely naked in front of? In fact I feel clean. And I feel proud. And it does not embarrass me.

I told you about my physical dimensions because if we had a normal relationship you would kick the tires and take it out for a spin after 3 or 4 dates. That’s about how long it takes for a modest, high quality female to want to have sex with me. I was really dirty. I always waited until they came on to me first, forcing them to initiate contact. Of course as soon as I am hard I take over. Since you haven’t had a chance to take me for a test drive I opened up on what you can expect to find. It seems important to me biologically and I imagine you probably want a pretty fine penis. One additional technical detail. Penises are not circular but flattened cyclones. My width is # and ##/#", pretty large for a white guy. Width is far more important than length. I always had highly satisfied customers who came back for more. A humorous side note. I was in a serious relationship starting in the summer before senior year in high school, so had unlimited sex for about 7 or 8 years. I once had sex 4 times in one day with my girlfriend (she was sore) as a freshman in college. And during my junior year was in love with two women at the same time and had sex with both of them on the same day and in the same bed, just took a shower in between.

I guess you have known about me since 2000. Back then I sent you a copy of my book and also a letter that you probably remember. And I contacted you again this past February 13. Of course it’s all fishing, both to get laid and to get recognized.

I read your Preface and the first 38 pages of your book. What a nice style you have. You certainly have a lot of friends and had help from many people writing your book. In contrast my work was almost a solitary effort, those heroin injections the only feedback I have had. You know I want to win six Nobel prizes and change the world. To be alone
for so long on this journey has been the most difficult aspect. I hope you and our first child will be in the audience when I deliver my Nobel address to the world in December 2008. I am going to have a few 3 by 5 cards with a few notes and deliver it mostly through improvisation. The musical theme will be from Pat Metheny’s Still Life Talking, Last Train Home. It is my second favorite melody with my favorite Pachelbel’s Canon in D major. I am going to have 6 beers shortly before the address. That’s when my mental energy peaks. It was after 6 beers when I interpreted Newton’s second law that a force is proportional to the flow rate of the N-particle and the constant of proportionality is the quantum of momentum of the N-particle. That’s where physics begins. But it took me quite a while to figure out Einstein’s $E = mc^2$.

I think I have done everything I can do. I hope my work can become popularized over the Internet, especially with the undergraduates. I think one would have to be pretty smart to read and understand everything in my book. The scope of my work is astonishingly broad.

Thank you for those heroin injections. I have found my work these last 4 or 5 months very difficult and stressful. As an artist you have to put it out there and can only hope for a favorable response so one feels exposed to a high degree.

David

10-21-2007 4:35 PM

I can't walk past you

Dear Annette,

I realize all I have to do with you is be honest and sincere. I realize you let me find that simple truth and gave me the time to do that. I am an extraordinarily fast learner, but on any path integral, as we know from the fundamental theorem of integral calculus and in a conservative field all that matters is the starting point and the end point.

To be honest and sincere is not at all hard for me. I really don’t have anything to hide.

Of course I will want to play games with you, like how much Peacock plumage is it proper to display to a woman you have never seen or met? Oh gosh, I embarrass myself.

Honey, I am sometimes laughing so hard writing this, I have had 11 Budweiser’s, I only hope you appreciate my humor that is rather large. I imagine you do because laughter is the best medicine, that quote from Benjamin Franklin.

I consider myself a genius. You always wonder if geniuses really exist. I think that history tells us they do and they lead mankind’s ascent to an extraordinary degree. I think it has to do with one mind always leading the way, in punctuated episodes of history. There was never anyone like Muhammad Ali and there will never be another one. That is rather rarified air but it seems a natural role for me to assume, schooled in the school of hard knocks and not the Ivory towers, although I was there a student as an undergraduate.

The four foremost geniuses in my mind are Benjamin Franklin, who discovered charge and designated it positive and minus in 1752, Newton, Maxwell and Faraday. They are quite distinct in the content of their work. Franklin and Faraday are regarded as the greatest scientists who were illiterate of higher mathematics. Newton and Maxwell are #1 and #2 as theoretical physicists, highly accomplished in mathematics, and about that there is no dispute. Franklin was so much more than a scientist. I have a copy of his Farmers Almanac. He reminds me of my father and grandfather, a little on the simple side, like also I find the Greeks.
Being smarter than my Dad, who was smarter than his Dad, all three of us the smartest in our large families, you can see evolution in operation, it moves so fast but in such a subtle way it is difficult to observe but finally also difficult to not observe.

Are you the smartest woman on the planet and the smartest woman in mankind’s history? I imagine you might be. The way you butter up that dimension stuff, I’m having my 12’th beer, and with a straight face, AND sincerity, makes me sure you can fake an orgasm but I know you will never fake one with me, and I hope I will assist in your multiple orgasms.

I am going to do some counting now. I have made love to nine women and turned down about a dozen. All had orgasms but two need oral sex to have orgasm. One was wildly multi-orgasmic, she really was fun. But she didn’t have a dirty mind. I have only, with the exception of a one-night-stand, fucked really nice girls who are thinking about commitment and not sluts in the least, although it is remarkable what sluts we all are.

Well you can tell I’ve had 12 beers. All I really want to say is that I realize I only have to be honest and sincere with you. A simple pleasure.

Love,
David

PS 59 is a good and lucky number. 60 is unobtainable perfection. You have given me 59 injections so maybe the 60’th will be meeting you in person. Where do you want to live? I want to base my company in Dryden, NY. I like a rural atmosphere. I know of small creek waterfalls so beautiful, hidden from pedestrian view, around Ithaca, that we can share together. Do you fish for trout?

PS2 My grandfather died at 95 and gave sermons up until 85. My Dad died at 73 of a brain aneurism and was teaching a 5 hour per day intensive course in Greek at the time. It was a real tragedy. He could have gone on to 85 working hard. On the other side my grandfather died of heart disease but at 86. My mother is 83 and sharp as a whistle. So I am hoping to work until I am 85 and live to 95 and see grandchildren.

PS3 I penned the following a couple months into my first psychosis in fall1981. My goals go back a long way, even to 6th grade. It’s of course very strange to have been psychotic. The complexity of my psychotic episodes are beyond comprehensation. I know you know it is in no way genetic. And I know I will be stable since I am on 5 mg Prolixin and that titers my slightly tweaked dopamine system. I have been treated as a stereotype, a fat, delusional paranoid schizophrenic, by health professionals and family for over 25 years. The level of humiliation I have felt in that is astounding. But I have never been burdened with the small thinking of stupid people. My Dad stuck with me most of the way. I wonder what that dead bastard will think of my work. He was pretty open minded, and appreciated Martin Luther, and gave me the middle name Martin, and I was born on Martin Luther’s birthday, but I don’t think he had any idea of what I was really up to and what I intended to do. He did, when I was about 36, tell me he thought I was a genius. Michel Fisher told me I was born with the brains but that genius is 99% sweat. To be told I am a genius by Michael Fisher in science and my Dad is really all that ever mattered to me as I face the insecurity of the future. Gosh Honey, I am falling for you so hard right now I am crying.

Have a nice day.
My 12 beer imagination

Of course I would never want to be a politician. What I look forward to is doing the Oprah Winfrey show. Before you come on stage, with child in arms and also pregnant with our second child, I am going to ask the audience what kind of woman the Bold Ruler would like to have for his own?

“Would it be the smartest woman on the planet?”

“Would it be the sexiest woman on the planet?”

“Would it be the best looking woman on the planet?”

And I respond, somewhat humbly, but also proudly:

“all three for me.”

Then Oprah asks “who is this woman?”

And then you enter the stage, in a divine paduasoy, with our child in your arms and one on the way in your bosom. Over the course of the show our child gets hungry and you bear a breast and nurse him or her, your turgid breast for the world to see, our child suckling you. I’ll never get trapped in notoriety or celebrity and I know you never will either, although the number of photos of you on the Internet is a little modest. To be treated like royalty, with no secret service, no armed guard, only by virtue of contributions to mankind, will be an honor.

PS What size are your feet? I want to see you in 4” black spikes and hot, red lipstick.
Dear Annette,

I have been sober for three days. I guess it may be obvious which of my emails were written under the influence. I do not have to abstain completely because I am not in any way physiologically addicted to alcohol, but do need to curtail drinking to once a week in order to lose weight. I started drinking beer at 14 and started drinking beer daily in 1984. Over these past 23 years I have averaged about 12 beers daily. I have looked up what my blood alcohol is after 12 beers in about 3 hours with some food at my weight and it is 0.10 – 0.12%. I am in good control at that level and don’t consider that level very biologically deleterious but also you have seen some of my emails so know I am a little silly (and probably obnoxious) when at that level. After drinking I have a big meal and then sleep it off. The two big problems with that lifestyle are being overweight and getting poor sleep. Why I have done it all these years is because I am alone, working at home on science, and after a day need to relax and relieve stress. Poor sleep is also stressful. I had always planned to curtail drinking and get in physical shape when I got some recognition and possibility for a more normal life.

So now I am wondering if you are for real and this is the time I have been anticipating when I need to stop drinking. Well I want to stop drinking for myself and in any event will need to shed the pounds to present an attractive package. So whether you are real or not I am going to stop excess drinking.

I know you are very perceptive and that’s a little scary, although I love that attribute.

I came out of my last psychosis last December 1st, when I awoke sane. I have a complete memory of all my psychotic episodes in a similar fashion to which we have a memory of our sane lives, some things standing out, some things of not much value and forgotten. That means that once I have sanity back I can sort out what has been going on in just a few minutes, an all or none type switch. I was 320 at that time and stopped drinking. In two weeks I worked out the internal structure of the electron respecting the electric field and the meaning of the fine structure constant. I consider that a pretty fine piece of work. The previous March the last thing I did was derive the fine structure constant from the energy in the electric field of a free electron and the rest energy of the electron. So despite being psychotic for 8 months I picked up where I had left off and did some very intense work, some of my best, shortly after coming out of psychosis.

Now from what I know about most schizophrenics psychosis’ (and I don’t know too much but who does?) that should not be possible. My psychiatric nurse practitioner told me the most common symptom of psychosis is an inability to concentrate, a sort of high level of confusion. I have never had that problem, psychotic or sane. Also most people who have been psychotic have little or fragmentary memories of psychosis. I have an excellent memory of my four periods of psychosis. I wrote my book back in 2000 when psychotic. I have never heard voices or hallucinated. About 65-70% of psychotics hear voices. I did not believe anything that I thought violated the laws of physics when I was psychotic. My delusions seemed to me technologically possible. As I told you in my second email back in February I do not fully understand the biology but I think in 10 years it will be understood and I look forward to working on some of those problems in neurobiology.

I am having a lot of difficulty giving up the cigarettes right now. I quit for 15 years so know I can do it.

After coming out of psychosis in December at 320 I got down to 265 at the end of August by drinking only about ½ the time. I have been drinking a little heavily since then and got back up to 280.
Writing the screenplay was inordinately difficult for a number of reasons. First of all it is hard to write something you hope people will find interesting AND useful, although I certainly am not an accomplished writer compared to Kafka, Hesse or Ayn Rand. My screenplay is mostly a vehicle for my science, my technology, and my military strategy. I also perceived while writing that people may be interested in me as an individual at some point in time due to my scientific accomplishments. Of course I am hoping they perceive far more than just my science.

I did just about no work in high school and the barest minimum in college. I never studied philosophy, wrote only 5 or 10 short papers total in high school and college. I got a B+ and A- in my freshman English courses at Cornell. I could never be a Robert Oppenheimer or Abraham Pais. But I think I have found a niche for myself especially by presenting an integrated, broad scoped work in the form of my screenplay. I believe I have figured out the few simple elements that underlie science, the energy problem, terrorism and security for all people, the seminal military strategy, the basis of religion, some ideas in economics and public health care.

About my ego it is a little weird. I have never known anyone my age who I thought was smarter than me in science. As I recall at Cornell I thought the pre-med students were the smartest students. But I did not know those few exceptional individuals in physics with the exception of meeting Dan Fisher while I was taking prep chem from his Dad. I got an A- from Dr. Fisher and he told me I would have gotten an A if I handed in all the homework. I did about 4 hours a week on the problem sets and didn’t have to study for the final. I felt that was pretty good since some students put in 20 hours a week on the problem sets. His problem sets were extraordinarily tough. I asked Dr. Fisher for a recommendation to medical school. In an interview with him he told me I was born with the brains but genius is 99% sweat. One year later I became mentally ill after using PCP and everything changed.

The electric field of the electron contains $\frac{1}{137^2}$ of the energy of the electron. That means the N-particle spends $\frac{1}{137^2}$ of the time in the field and the rest in the electron. And inside an electron the N-particle spends $\frac{1}{137^2}$ of its time as a point particle and the rest as a dynamic membrane and that gives rise to a total flux of the N-particle of 12.34 W. Connecting those two looks simple, that it should even be trivial, but I can’t see it yet. The step I have to make is going from 12.34 W and a radius ½ the Bohr radius to a field of 27.2 eV. But it is also a profound step and I think rather deep in terms of the structure of the space filling neutrino foam in the field.

Love,
David

PS Can I be in love with you really at this point? Probably not! But I can love everything I have seen. And I can love to hope it is true.

10-26-2007 5:45 PM

63. incoherently@rhpc.com

10-27-2007 4:20 AM

Of course I'm going to write to my Honey

Dearest Annette,

Well, yes, I can be remarkably incoherent. That is part of the learning process. And thank you, it strikes me as rather amusing too. But before you understand something you are trapped in a state of incoherence. Of course that's no excuse
to just ramble aimlessly about, as if adrift without a rudder. Your steady, loving right hand on the rudder is needed.

I am starting a new project that should take no more than two months. It is to write up my work in a simple, clear, precise, pedagogically sound way. I have not been able to do that so far because I have always been so enmeshed in discovery I had not yet put everything into perspective and I have had a lot of other projects and also some distractions. I particularly want to lay the foundation for chemistry. It is astonishing even a small ion like carbonate is not understood, much less phosphates so important to biology. The theory of chemical bonds and intermolecular forces is right out of kindergarten. It all reduces to surface and charge. The kinetic theory of gases seems to me incredibly stupid, completely incapable of explaining wind and sound, the most obvious phenomenon in need of an explanation. The liquid, solid and gas phases are not understood at the microscopic level. That means thermal phenomena are not understood.

I am going to point out that an object that does not have a surface exists in our imagination only. Atoms without surfaces is intellectual suicide. Time dilation and curved space are philosophically and physically absurd.

Well Marvin Gaye just came on the radio, that sexual feeling. And I was thinking about this paragraph I was about to write and am writing now. This afternoon I was wondering to myself, how many notches has my Honey collected over the years? My imagination got working and I thought of how attractive you are and how many men you have come in contact with over the years, many of whom must be quite attractive, and I embarrassed myself thinking how many it could be.

Love,
David

PS I would be utterly astonished if 360 PPM carbon dioxide has anything to do with temperature, weather or climate change. Watching people trying to understand those important phenomena without understanding atoms, molecules, liquids, solids, gases and thermal energy is really funny. But the carbon dioxide level is an important and essential piece of the biosphere and does correlate in an interesting way with climate and in particular the net photosynthetic and metabolic biological activity on the planet.

10-27-2007 5:01 AM

Where is this leaking out from?

“‘I’m glad you got over trying to show off, trying to impress me, and generally behaving like a schoolboy.’”

“Thanks Honey but you had pretty strong indications I would come to my senses.”

“There’s always a few doubts about your stability and sanity David. I recognize your artistic temperament.”

“You know I started out as a scientist and ended up as an artist.”

“And I started out as a virgin and ended up as your whore.”

“Very funny Honey.”

“And stop using that supercilious and condescending Honey with me.”
“OK.”

“Honey bunches.”

10-28-2007 6:01 AM

Blue sky till morning

Dearest Annette,

I thought it would be informative to tell you about my friends and my family. I am not striving for clarity or coherence here, just want to show you some of what it has been and is like for me.

I have contact with only three people, my mother by email, a neighbor Nelson who moved in last fall, a retired auto worker, got his 30 in at GM, has an IQ of 89 and has bought 1000’s of hookers over the years, and we have a few beers together a couple times a week, and Kevin Hearts, my only friend. Kevin comes over two to four times a week and smokes pot and has a beer and stays for 15-30 minutes. I have a brother Cain who is 7 years younger who lives up here. And I have two sisters, Mary who is a librarian and lives up here and V who is a secretary and lives in St. Louis with my mother. My older brother Dan drank himself to death in 2001. My Dad died in 1998 and my mother is 84. My sister V has one child, M, who is 17 and has been divorced for about 15 years. Mary couldn’t have children and her husband, Jeffy, left her several years back. M is the only grandchild in this large family except for a son Cain fathered when he was 17 in a one night stand with a black lesbian he picked up in a bar. She lived on welfare and eventually child support caught up to him. He does not acknowledge the child in any way.

I loaned my brother 47K back in 2001 and 2002 when he was unemployed and when I was psychotic. When he finally got back to work in the last year and I asked for repayment he told me to go fuck myself in very harsh and threatening terms. I have had no relationship with V in 17 years. Mary and I have no more relationship. Mary is a cold hearted bitch. Cain is a virtual Nazi, is violent, and has been married 4 times, with the longest lasting a year or two and the shortest less than 24 hours. He has had countless restraining orders against him and is always getting in fights with his women although he has never struck them. He has had 3 DWI’s. He physically assaulted me twice in the last 15 years, both times drunk. He is shorter than me by about an inch but far stronger and can kick my ass rather easily.

Since I only have my Mother left from my family I have tried to have a relationship with her. I guess she treats me like a delusional crank. Although I have tried to engage her in conversation on numerous issues she never entertains me as if she doesn’t want to entertain a fool. She treats me as if I have no value and no capacity to earn income in the future. It is hard not to like your Mother and be grateful to her but the first thing I am going to do when I achieve success is to never contact her again. She is a Nazi, cold hearted bitch like my sister Mary.

Since I became mentally ill at 22 I have never been able to work much and only worked about 6 months in my life since then so I did not qualify for SS disability. I got on SSI in 1986 that at that time was $357/month and now is $623/month. SSI is supplemental security income. Well you can see you don’t get very much AND they means test you at that sub poverty level. Now I also get $362/month from the state of Alaska. I’m sure you can see the significant financial stress I was under. No one in my family ever gave me a penny since they knew of my mental illness in 1984. No one in my family would even provide shelter for me. But I was only in a rescue mission for one night and never had to sleep on the street. They are the cheapest, stupidest, most short sighted, Nazi bastards in
the world. I attempted suicide twice because I did not have money and did not have pot. Of course I was not in great mental shape either.

In 1986 I finally received SSI and I got a back payment of about $3000 and I bought a trailer in a trailer court in Ft. Wayne where my parents lived at the time. I started raising marijuana and eventually got some good seeds through the mail from Amsterdam and produced some exceptional quality pot. I had a good connection through which I wholesaled my product and ran an efficient operation, getting up to 30K for the last year. It was the first time in my life I was free of financial stress. I also went to school at IUPU in Ft. Wayne, repeating the calculus and intro physics sequences.

Since I had a lot of confidence in my scientific potential I wanted to get out of commercial farming ASAP and did that in 1991, when I moved up to Anchorage. I had saved about 70K. My Dad laundered the cash for me and I invested it, under his name, in stocks and bonds, while still receiving SSI, that I never wanted to be on, hated every second of it, and always wanted to get off ASAP.

In 1995 I invested in two 4-plexes with my brother in law Jeffy. They were each 170K and the down payment requirement was 116K. I came up 82K and Jeffy came up with 34K. I told Jeffy I wanted more than half equity since I was coming up with more than half the down payment. He said he wouldn’t do that. I said then I want you to do the same for me down the road. He said you know I’ll do that. About a year into joint ownership he bought another rental property and didn’t even tell me. When I asked about the agreement he made for future joint ventures he denied making that agreement. Then he and Mary started J&M rentals, when I was executing it to be D & J rentals. He even told me I was lucky he would be a partner with me at all and that his managerial skill was vital and I should be thankful for it. Well he really fucked me but to his credit he divorced my worthless Nazi sister, and I hate to be so venal, but I am glad that cold hearted bitch is alone and I know she is mostly miserable.

The 4-plexes got sold when I was psychotic, incurring a 20K realtor fee and a 30K tax liability for my mother. There was 75K left and I used that to pay off most of a 95K credit card debt I had run up mostly loaning money to my brother, but also buying my F-250 in 2000 and for a road trip of 18,568 miles I took in 88 days in 2003.

So after everything has settled I have only SSI and APA to live on, still owe 15K to the credit card companies, but do own my truck and my condo.

I have found my parents and siblings so astonishingly cruel and self absorbed that I think I will end up hating all of them. I look forward to my Mother never seeing my wife or children but knowing I am married and have children.

It all really strikes me as rather humorous at this point in time. I’ve got to tell you a little more about my brother, he’s such a loathsome prick, and what I am planning to do to him. He really was cut out to be an SS officer. He moved up to live with me after high school at 17. I was in Anchorage. He didn’t graduate from school. I was floundering around at the time, still functioning, but was mortally wounded from the PCP experience and couldn’t use my intelligence effectively. That by the way is the number one stress that drove me psychotic, the inability to use my intelligence as I had up until the night I used the PCP. That’s the worse stress there is. Well anyway I got my brother into the community college to learn welding technology. He got into inspection, never an AS, but started making over 100K a year as an inspection technician. He also started using cocaine, just blow, never crack and never shot up. He lived a fats life, coke, expensive woman, night spots and vacations in Hawaii. By the way my brother has an 8” dick. He still uses cocaine or at least has up until the last I knew that was in 2003. He put in 20 years on the slope, the last ten as a QC engineer for BP. I respect his accomplishments to be a highly competent engineer, one of the best in the world in inspection, without even graduating from high school. I do hate Cain and came to the realization that if I could do
it without jeopardizing my welfare in any way, I would put him in a wheelchair for life. When someone steals 47K from you in my position you realize what right and wrong really boil down to. But obviously for 47K I would never in the slightest way jeopardize my freedom.

So this is what I am planning to do to Cain when I become successful. First I am going to put him under audio surveillance so I can listen to him. Then I am going to sue him for the debt he owes me. I want to hear his verbal tirade when he gets the summons. I am going to make a screenplay out of the audio record. When I moved up in 1991 I lied about my time of arrival so I could get the Permanent Fund Dividend. Cain committed fraud by signing it as a required witness. I am going to turn myself into the PFD people and repay all the PFD’s I received since then, about 20K. And in that process I am also turning him in as a fraudulent witness. The audio record when they get a hold of him and he figures out what must have happened is going to be priceless. And after a few years of all that I am going to put it up on the Internet as a screenplay for the whole world to see what a natural SS officer is. Of course I don’t have to do any of this except for sport.

In my next email I am going to tell what it is like to be treated as a paranoid schizophrenic by health care professional, none of which that I have interacted with are as smart or as knowledgeable as me. Psychiatrist’s use the term no insight for psychotics. Astonishingly my psychiatric nurse practitioner after 16 years and all the rest of the many psychiatrists I have interacted with, have no insight into me. Furthermore what they think they understand about me is wrong.

I find all this incredibly humorous at this point in my life. A lesson received and a lesson learned.

Well what can I say that would be cheery? I’ll never have to see any of them again. Sorry.

Love,
David

PS About my Dad. Exegetical theology doesn’t even rise to the credibility of paranormal phenomenon with me. He was completely nuts upstairs respecting that stuff. All in all he was just too cheap to support in any real way a son with some severe problems.

As you can see I am a self made man.

10-29-2007 9:42 AM

An additional note

What I wrote yesterday was very depressing to me. That is about as depressed as I ever get. In that cauldron I lived and worked all these years, with only the enjoyment of my mind for personal reward and pleasure. Sorry to have to expose you to all of that.

10-30-2007 12:11 AM

64. immigrants@realtytotal.com

10-30-2007 1:12 PM

Some pretty unusual symmetries

Dearest Annette,
You might wonder what I did when I was psychotic and what my delusional reality was. It was extraordinarily complex but there were a few underlying themes.

I was psychotic four times, two in the early 80’s and two in the last years here in Anchorage.

2. February 1984 – August 1984
3. sometime in 1997 – March 2004

All the psychosis’ started the same way. That is the belief that I am under surveillance. In all those psychosis’ I thought I could be imaged by IR that could see my body and motion and also by audio surveillance. Eventually in each psychosis I also thought my mind could be read by magnetic fields. In the first two psychosis’ I thought Reagan’s MX missile defense program was the cover for the surveillance. In the second pair of psychosis’ I thought the string theorist were reading my mind. In all four I thought the national defense laboratories were my people and in on everything. The goal of all four was UPJF&L. That operation had the code name big melt in the first two and clean sweep in the second two. Since I was under surveillance I got to act. I gave countless speeches dissecting every problem we as humans face. I wrote very many poems and felt I was going to be one hell of an Oscar winner, especially since I also wrote the script.

In all the psychosis’ I thought there was a woman of astonishing virtue waiting for me. In the first two it was a girl named Celeste Steel. I met her in fall 1975 after graduation. At the time I had a long term relationship still underway, and had fallen in love at the same time with another girl, Kara. Celeste asked me to pick. I chose Kara. About two weeks later I stopped in at Kara’s apartment on a Sunday morning before work and she had another man in her bedroom who had spent the night. Kara showed up where I worked apologetic. I told her our relationship was permanently, completely and irrevocably terminated. Then I realized what a finer woman Celeste was and decided I wanted to marry her. Celeste left town and I went back to my steady long term relationship trying to figure out how to marry Celeste. Then I used the PCP and became mentally ill. Two years later I was working oil field in Bakersfield and called up Stanford, where Celeste had transferred, and they gave me her home number in Northwest LA. I called and she was home, just having graduated, and we set up a date, me driving in to her place and staying at her house in the guest room. I remember driving in to LA on 5 and wondering to myself what had happened to me with the PCP, was something still wrong with me, and I didn’t know the answer to those questions. Well something was wrong, I was no longer stable. I could not articulate a rational path through life at that point.

Well I met Celeste and our chemistry was very strong, as it had been at first in Ithaca. Of course I had decided I wanted to marry her two years earlier. She was in a steady relationship and told me he was her first, he was an Texan, he had a motorcycle and he was in New Zealand for the summer and she wasn’t sure about their future. We had a very nice weekend and I went back to Bakersfield. I wrote a letter, about a page or two, handwritten, asking to marry her, and sent it to her apartment in Palo Alto. That’s the part about stability I was lacking. You can’t just pop into someone’s life again after two years and ask them to marry. It takes somewhat more control and strategy than that. She turned me down and said she had thought of coming up to Alaska to visit but after proposing like that there was no future.
In my first psychosis I thought she was still really a virgin and waiting for me to complete my mission. The poem in my book, *Oh joy, of purest white*, for dream of beauty that cannot leave, forevermore I bow to hold and grace my soul upon your heart, was composed and written for her in September or October 1981. When I came out of that first psychosis with a shot of Prolixin in June 1983 the worst aspect of it was realizing that love was a delusion and I was alone again. In the second psychosis all those same delusions came back.

In these more recent psychoses I thought Monica Riverstein was the woman of astonishing virtue waiting for me. I thought she was the one who could feel comfortable and able to read my mind because that level of intimacy is possible for a married couple. When I went on my 18,568 mile, 88 day road trip in spring 2003, I was looking for her all along the way. I saw a seminar by Monica at Chicago on 5-17-1999 and at that moment it crystallized in my mind she was waiting for me. At the time I was working on my book. I sent her some letters, my books, and eventually in December of 2003 on Christmas eve, left some highly disturbed messages on her recorder. In the last psychosis I again thought Monica was waiting for me and I sent her a 20 page or so document I also sent to the members of the supreme court and to President Bush.

On February 22, of this last year I sent the following to the head of the physics department at Chicago:

Subject: This is a little embarrassing but true

Hi there head of the physics department,

I am a 54 year old theoretical physicist and am diagnosed paranoid schizophrenic.

In my delusions, while psychotic, I thought Professor Monica Riverstein was in love with me. You know of course that those string theorists are full of the biggest load of hornswoggle ever. She sucked me right in. I had several emails to her, left her several phone messages and sent to her a couple of books and some psychotic non-descriptor material.

This is naturally somewhat embarrassing to me.

I hope you can pass on to Dr. Riverstein that it was all as harmless as bug spray.

Sincerely,

David Martin Degner
180 Fulcrum Drive #1
Anchorage AK 99504

PS Does her lucky husband have a smile on himself every day?

I don’t know if Monica has shared any of my behavior with you or if she kept it private. It was love and duty that got me through all those psychosis’.

Well now let’s look at the present. I have the same goal as I had when psychotic only now it is real. I think a woman of astonishing virtue is waiting for me. And that apparently is reality. To say the least those are some pretty unusual symmetries.
I have come a long way these past 11 months. It seems a life time of work is coming to fruition. It seems my lifelong goal of finding a partner and mate is to be realized in as optimum a scenario as could be possible. Although with recognition and when physically attractive I am sure I could find a woman in her late twenties or early thirties that would be very inferior to someone your age. To not be separated by a generation is to have a most blessed, most ideal relationship. Sometimes miracles come true.

Love,
David

PS If I stopped taking Prolixin I would likely become psychotic again in something like 6-8 months. And to recover from that psychosis would require getting back on the Prolixin for about 5 weeks. That gives you some idea of the stability of the underlying chemical processes involved. Psychosis with me is an all or none phenomenon and when sane I am one of the sanest persons on the planet. I think I was actually rational when psychotic within the belief system of the delusional paradigm. I think that is singularly atypical of schizophrenic's psychosis. And I wonder about Jesus. Was he psychotic between his emergence at 30 and his death at 33? Was he really crucified? If he was psychotic was it environmentally induced as mine was and not a paranoid schizophrenic by genetics? As far as I know just about all paranoid schizophrenics have had very difficult childhoods and were really fucked up people. I am very atypical in that regard also, the simple reason being I am not a paranoid schizophrenic, rather an individual who became psychotic due to a chemical accident. A pretty unusual experience.

10-30-2007 7’00 PM

Some more unusual symmetries and other odds and ends

Hi again,

A few other important central themes. I never disclosed any of my mission while psychotic to anyone including medical personal. It was all a top secret mission. So in my psychosis’ I was alone with the mission, like I have been until July 29’th this year. When I was psychotic no one could tell I was psychotic. And I thought my friends, siblings, parents and medical personal were all in on the mission and playing along. I thought the environment that I saw, on the road, on TV, on the radio, pretty much my entire environment was orchestrated and communicating with me. I communicated quite a bit with license plate numbers and letters. These kind of ideas are called ideas of reference and are common in psychosis’. My belief that my mind was being read is a variation of another common symptom of psychosis, that is called the belief ones ideas are being broadcast. I was not paranoid when psychotic, thought I was at the nexus of the final struggle between good and evil and that good was going to win by a large margin, in fact in a clean sweep, every last person finally on board, so I actually thought most people were for me, but I did think evil people were out to get me by denying me success in my mission for UPJF&L. Hilary was the leader of evil.

When I first became mentally ill in March 1975 the morning after using the PCP I awoke paranoid, depressed and with a thought process disorder I likened to a loss of analytical skills, three completely new experiences for me. Six very difficult years later, in August 1981, I became psychotic. I ask myself, did the environment over those 6 years precipitate the psychosis or was it a purely a chemical perturbation type of thing? I do not know the answer to that question but think it was just chemistry. I was suicidal and depressed throughout some of that time but also went to Berkeley, audited courses, enjoyed my mind, had
another relationship and fell in love again, so there were highs and lows. But I had lost stability and the ability to think long term and strategically. I was unable to use my mind effectively in business school. It was the middle of my first semester in business school when I became psychotic.

What I am disclosing I have never discussed with anyone else other than a few comments when sane to medical personal, family and friends. This is OK with family and friends since they don’t want to be exposed to that kind of crap but I think practically malpractice by doctors.

Well more unusual symmetries. I am still working alone, believe it is in concert with others, believe there are a few non random communications in my data stream, and believe I am the last soldier, in the last battle of the last war, where good wins out ultimately and finally over evil.

In my first psychosis I worked out a QM based on tetrahedrons and that is all I remember of it. I thought nuclear weapons and nuclear power were in fact the burning of nitrogen with oxygen to produce nitrogen oxides. I thought heavy metal catalysts and conventional high explosives were used. The burning of nitrogen to oxides in the atmosphere is an exothermic reaction but kinetically limited by the abundance of oxygen. I believe there was speculation before the first atomic blast about the prospect of igniting the atmosphere. In my recent psychosis I built a small “nuclear” device and mounted it on a Estes model rocket. The main explosive was kerosene and nitrate fertilizer, about 15 grams, mixed together with white glue as a binder and stabilizers. I mixed a gram of gold dust in with it as the catalytic entity. I built this warhead out of a liquor bottle pouring thing like they have in bars. There is a 3 inch, 3/8” diameter tube in which I packed the explosive mixture. As an igniter at one end I placed a 22 caliber lead shot bullet that would go off when the rocket engine fires at apogee to discharge a parachute. Between the rocket engine and the warhead I packed match tips and iron oxide. The nose cone that went over the pouring tube weapon I packed with thermite I made from cut up aluminum foil and burned steel wool. Then I painted it and put its name on: The Temptress of the Tigress, referring to Monica.

In my first psychosis I designed a flag to become a world flag when we achieve UPJF&L. It is an about 24’ open aluminum boat, filled to overflowing with people of all cultures and ethnicities. At the bow is a Chinese man with sunglasses pointing straight ahead. I was at the stern with my hand on the control arm for the outboard engine. The sky is blue and without a cloud. A red sun shines in the corner and there are three sea gulls in the sky. On my Estes rocket a made a small flag like that with colored pencils and glued it on the rocket. The rocket is now in a cabinet. I am scared to have it on my work table because I think it might explode. I do not know if it is capable of exploding. On the engine as a kind of name tag is my arena, what I thought the fundamental elements were with which we dissect Nature: space, time, plus and minus, the dynamic and the discrete.

Now if you can imagine what it would be like for a human to believe all these delusions you might be able to get a little insight into my psychosis. There were extreme highs, emotional highs, laughing and crying, tough periods, but I was never suicidal when I was psychotic. I was in love and looking forward to the mission being over and getting with the woman in live with me.

Why when I first became psychotic did I think my mission was to assist in implementing UPJF&L? Well that is what I always wanted to do starting in 5th or 6th grade. It seemed obvious to me at that age what needed to be done was to put end to warfare and conflict among people and solve all physical problems through science and engineering. Now 45 years later I have produced my screenplay in an effort to do that. I was looking over the list of people, alive
and dead, who were mentioned in my work. A pretty nice set I must say. Currently I really mostly hate the Bush’s, the Clinton’s and all their ilk but in any pervious era of time I would be building weapons and part of the system. There is a lot of complexity in the future if my screenplay catches on. When we meet I will be plucked from the current suspended animation chamber and will be able to function in a more normal fashion so all that complexity should be easy to deal with at that time. Right now I don’t know what else to do other than write up science. I imagine the undergraduate students would get a kick out of my work. I sure hope so. If this is all a bust it will be a tremendous disappointment and then all I can hope for is to get my science published. I interpreted untilte@dotcomimpact as that the screenplay will get out and become widely dispersed. My personal view of how to preserve the impact is to not do any interviews, not have any pictures taken, no public interaction, except writing editorials for the NY Times. To remain as a lone, mysterious genius seems to be the best way to play the hand.

Writing up science is hard work for me but not nearly as hard as trying to write about that which you do not yet fully understand.

You know I was just wondering if Einstein wrote a letter for me. I imagine he would have in the event someone like me comes along. But maybe he would have thought that plot line not possible.

I have always wondered if the atomic weapons given to the military are real or duds loaded with plutonium pits. If I had to guess I would say they were real, at least up until the end of the Cold War, so I guess that would mean they still are real. But in thinking about Heisenberg and Yukawa during WWII it seems Teller and Sakharov might have sold those mindless political types a bunch of duds. I saw the first hydrogen bomb contained 22 tons of material. Have you seen that demonstration where on a table are set mouse traps, each with a pair of ping pong balls on top, and you throw a ping pong ball on to that grid and set off a chain reaction. I saw that in 6th grade science class. And I got introduced to QM and quantum numbers for a description of atoms in 5th or 6th grade by a friend paging around in a book on that subject that was on a resource table at the back of the class. I remember thinking how abstract it sounded and also wondering if I would be smart enough to understand it.

It is quite therapeutic for me to write these emails to you. I hope you find them interesting.

I’ll close with an excerpt from my second email to you on February 13th:

I would so love to have an open and honest conversation with a female theoretical physicist. But that is not now possible under the rules you physicists have inflicted on me and also on yourselves. That is a pretty heavy burden to bear but not bad in comparison with a stroke, a heart attack, cancer or debilitating depression.

I thought in addition to being sincere that was kind of funny.

When I lie in bed at night before falling asleep, I imagine you are there, at my side, what a pleasant fantasy.

David

PS Since coming out of psychosis in August 1984 and getting stabilized on Prolixin I have never had an intelligent conversation with anyone concerning science. I have never been asked by anyone how my work is going. And I have
never been given an encouraging word. When people think you are nuts that is what happens. I bear a lot of resentment to my Mother in that regard. Also since my brother stole the last of my savings, as of last fall I had no more savings. I have received about 6K from my Mother in the last year, about 4K for truck repairs. She won’t make a loan to me instead makes me ask for money and considers it down the drain. This is incredibly degrading to me. I have been under a lot of financial stress again. I wanted her to get a home equity loan on my condo, that is in her name and I can’t qualify for a loan, so I could be free of financial stress for a couple of years, and she refuses to budge, leaving me flounder under financial stress. She never sees a solution, only a problem. She thinks I have no economic value. I have had to start raising marijuana commercially again after all these years to pay the bills. I only need about $400/month in addition to SSI and APA that total $985/month.

addendum

I don't know why I said the following:

Since coming out of psychosis in August 1984 and getting stabilized on Prolixin I have never had an intelligent conversation with anyone concerning science. I have never been asked by anyone how my work is going. And I have never been given an encouraging word. When people think you are nuts that is what happens.

It's not true. I took classes at IUPU, talked to professors, and talked to my Dad about my work quite a bit. He circulated the first copy of my paper to some scientists when he was in Taiwan in 1996 or 97 and they were in his classes at the Lutheran seminary there. One was the head of a physics department. They both returned the works to him without comment. I told my Dad it must be the way I am saying it not what I am saying. I thought there was a conspiracy started by Einstein from first discovering the N-particle in December 1985. I thought it was in the middle of the road and should have been discovered around 1905. But I also wondered how many people believed in QM and SR and GR. Seems like intellectual suicide to me. I took the first 4 weeks of EM this fall. I asked the professor, a Dr. Karen Rurwort, is the phenomenological basis of how charge gives rise to electric field understood and if so why isn't it included in a course in electrodynamics. She said she would respond after class and was nice and seemed sincere. She stated she had only 5 minutes of QFT, babbled for a few seconds about ground states of the vacuum and then, after a little verbal exchange aimed at trying to find out whether she was being honest or not, said it is a matter of philosophy like also the nature of mass. In an email I sent her telling her I had a new QM she responded: QM is not a theory in need of fixing. It has never let us down. I walked away realizing she was serious and a minor technician, a moron, who thinks she has a good handle on physical reality and that I am a crank. At least she had a nice ass.

Wet and warm in Anchorage and almost November 1st

Dearest Annette,
I really enjoy Lubos’ blog, I hope we will be good friends some day. Yesterday he had a blog on religiosity vs wealth. I posted the question “How did the stuff in the Big Bang get there?” and precipitated a few rude remarks. I answer that question with God, the Creator, who the hell else could it be? My brother Cain doesn’t believe in God and just says why don’t you just say you don’t know how matter for the Big Bang was created there is no need for a God, we are simply embedded in a state of not knowing where and how and why we are here. And that seems pretty reasonable because it is true. But the idea, the thought that brings me instantly to a God, is the absurdity of physical existence. Why should any matter exist? Physical reality has always seemed, and transparently so, astonishingly absurd. To not perceive that is to be stupid even like an animal. To not answer that question with a higher being is an error in logic. It’s just completely impossible for the universe to exist without a higher authority who also is the creator AND we can not comprehend God, that in my screenplay I stated as I had always considered the mind of God unknowable.

I always appreciated that Genesis 1 begins with cosmology. I never believed that God created the heavens and the earth and all its beasts in 6 days and rested on the 7th. But I did appreciate the question Genesis 1 was attempting to answer, simply where do we come from, how did we get here?

My brother Cain also has no ethics and does not live by a code of conduct. I never really thought much about either early in life. I behaved honorably enough to satisfy myself and never really faced a moral choice. In love I thought all was fair and I do have some reservations in thinking back about some of the things I did, like being in love with two women at the same time, picking between them, and then dumping one in a rather harsh way. The one girl I did that to was a transfer student to Cornell. She was in the school of Human Ecology that we referred to as home economics, a slight step up above education majors but not by much. She was a straight A student and a nice girl. I had only had sex with two other women at that time, my first experience at 15, and my high school girlfriend, and she was the second woman I fell in love with. She was not a virgin and never told me about any previous loves. Of course I didn’t tell her I was in a long term relationship with another woman simultaneous with my relationship with her. My long term love was in school 90 miles away enabling me to finesse all that. I dumped her at the end of the fall semester and she couldn’t even finish the finals, dropped out of school until the following fall. I think I actually felt that was somewhat a proper response by her and didn’t feel much or any sympathy, might have even been a little proud, as if flattered. When I eventually lost in love and got dissed by two women I loved, albeit only because of becoming mentally ill and losing stability and strategy in the hunt, I saw the irony of it, and felt I deserved it after what I had done earlier in life.

When I first became psychotic in August 1981 I became very aware of a need for impeccable ethics and an honorable code of conduct to live by. And I think we can state that this seems consistent with a belief in God and that we are in his image. That’s my conundrum uno, what is our relation to God/we are Gods. If you consider yourself a God than you should behave accordingly.

I have conundrum quarto:

Some people do not believe in God. I ask them what do they believe in regarding the Nature of the Creator? Their answer: Nothing. The riddle that is the solution to this riddle is in the form of two questions: What do you mean by nothing? If you believe in nothing do you believe in right and wrong actions?

I did that when psychotic in summer 2006 and did not include it in the screenplay. In looking at that now I ask does moral behavior require a belief in God? Justice
is mine sayeth the Lord. I wonder what W. thinks of that when they hold executions in Texas. Back before I actually thought about it I was for organ harvest of child molesters. After thinking about the death penalty I find it incredibly cruel and unusual, incredibly immoral and a clear violation of Christianity.

Apparently, from Lubos’ blog, the majority of people in the west do not believe moral behavior requires a belief in God. We have also had a continuity of warfare from the beginning of recorded history and no doubt from the beginning of biological time. I say this to point out the relationship of man’s opinion of morality and God and the actual historical evidence of moral behavior. I think these opinion polls and rampant and proud atheism only indicate many people have not been challenged in life in such a way as to have to think deeply and clearly about these issues.

Changing topics here, as I pointed out in the Addendum email, sometimes I can say the opposite of what is true and what I really want to be saying. When you write you sometimes think of the reader, quite often in fact. You wonder what will they think when reading something you write? That stuff I say about being a weapons builder as my highest scientific obligation and Teller has great balls and in previous lives I would be a weapons builder and general is just the mask I wore for my screenplay. When I repeated that lie to you I realized how untrue it is. I imagine if I lived in the Mideast at the time the Bible was being written I would have been one of the authors. And I imagine if I lived in the 15th century in Germany I would have been like Martin Luther. I rebelled against religion, my Dad, and school in 5th grade and never regretted it at all and never thought I was wrong to do that. I imagine if I lived in the 19th century I would have worked on electromagnetism. And I imagine if I was Einstein, I would have seen the goal and designed a game much like his. And I imagine in WWII I would have been at Los Alamos. And I imagine if I was in Germany or Japan in WWII I would have been like Heisenberg or Yukawa. (in looking over that I am pleased to be David Martin Degner, living in the here and now of 2007)

You probably know about Moseley dying in WWI with a bullet to the head. (to not appreciate the 10.2 eV photon is incredibly stupid) I never even considered at any point in my life sacrificing my life in war. I always considered all conflicts in the time I lived in to be wrong. And I would never put my life on the line for the wrong behavior of my fellow man. In WWII one of my Uncle’s was a doctor in the service stateside, another an electrical engineer in the service stateside. I imagine I would not even have been exposed to front line action in WWII. And I knew I would get a student deferment for Vietnam. I was in the lottery and my number was 233. They were taking up to about 67. I felt I should be a conscientious objector but they required a 10 or 20 page essay and to me it was simply three words: war is wrong. Additionally I did not think I could do a desk job in the service as a CO. I think if I was drafted I would have just dropped out of sight, much like someone on the lam or a drug dealer. I did not want to go to Canada.

I really am looking forward to the Jews confronting reality. I find their stealing the Palestinian homeland the most egregious behavior imaginable. That they wrap it up in righteousness is why I have hit those bastards so hard. I really don’t know if my Dad actually hated Jews, he certainly never said anything approximating that to me, and I think he was almost incapable of hatred, as I am, but he also thought deeply about human behavior and was wise about mankind’s real Nature. (by the way I never have considered myself a sinner and never felt any need to repent) I posted a comment on the RF about my views on Israel and Lubos responded vehemently: You’re ideas don’t even belong on the planet in 2007. I will destroy you. He then deleted my post and his response.
My two best friends at Cornell were Jewish, Allan and Dan Ess. (they were also my last two friends, breaking off the relationship in 2003 when I was psychotic) Allan was pre-med and we were in many classes together. He became a plastic surgeon. Dan was a high school valedictorian from Queens and went to the University of Michigan law school. They were roommates and lived across the street from each other at I think it was 69th and 172nd in Queens. Allan’s mother had been in a concentration camp during the war and her first husband died there. She objected to him hanging out with Gentiles and when I visited Allan and Dan in NY I did not go in her house, stayed the whole time at Dan’s home. We were on the same floor freshman year. They thought I was stupid at first and the cultural differences were great fun. A couple Jewish city slickers from NYC in the school of arts and sciences and a big German boy from the farm country in the school of agriculture. I got very high marks on the first pre-lims in chemistry and biology, beating both of them and that got their attention. Cornell at the time was 44% Jewish students and had a lot of blacks too. I don’t remember ever talking about the 1973 war with either of them, we never got into any of those issues, and considered all of us on the same side, that is the side of reason. With Vietnam going on and the Cold War plowing ahead I never even understood the history of the Arab/Jew conflict but did wonder why the Palestinians wanted to destroy an independent sovereign country and were terrorists. They both joined a fraternity, Gamma Sigma Pi, that was almost all Jewish and I spent a lot of time over there. The Jews were the smartest people I came in contact with at Cornell and I found that very intriguing. I prided myself as having good friends on both sides, also having friends in the hot-shit, jock, fraternities that had had up until that time had no or very few Jews. One of my friends who became the president of Fiji, one of the most prestigious on campus, told me I shouldn’t hang out at GSP. I did not join a fraternity. I had steady love making and that was what mattered to me most and where I spent most of my social time. All those fraternity boys horny with blue-balls not getting laid much looked pretty juvenile to me. I always left the parties with my girl friend at 11 PM and went back home where the greater enjoyment in life was to be realized. And I loved going out to dinner with my girlfriends and talking.

We moved to Ithaca where my Dad accepted a call to Trinity Lutheran Church in 1967. We built the parsonage in the summer before my sophomore year. I worked construction on that for $1.25/hour. The girl I fell in love with two years later lived across the street. Her name is Denise Joy and she was a skinny red head. While building our home she used to bring lemonade over for us about 10:30 in the morning. We were installing the pink insulation one day when the carpenter I worked with said “Wouldn’t you like to lay her down in that bed of insulation a lick out her red pussy?” or something quite similar to that. Since I was 14 and a virgin I thought about that, already knew what act cunnilingus was but had not yet seen or touched any of those parts of a woman, and I said something like “yeah, that sounds like a lot of fun.” It struck me as a somewhat curious remark because insulation is itchy and the last place you would want to perform such an act. But it got me thinking about Denise. The neighbor had horses and Denise and I and the neighbors would go riding the horses in a gorge in the valley below us where we would go swimming. Denise was an accomplished softball player and horse rider. We started dating in the summer before senior year. She was a virgin and still cold as ice, had never been sexually aroused. Well of course the first thing we did was get her pregnant. Her parents, my parents, her and I had a little conference on what to do in my Dad’s church office. The parents concluded the best thing to do was get an abortion and that one could be arranged through the Presbyterian minister after a certification of pregnancy by a particular Ob-gyn. I was a little surprised an illegal abortion was so easily available. It was $350 and Denise and her mom drove down to Philadelphia from Ithaca were a D&C was performed by a black doctor.
About 6 weeks later we thought she was pregnant again and I started researching how to perform an abortion at the public library thinking we couldn’t up come with another pregnancy so soon after one abortion. You can probably appreciate that if you know the desperation many woman went through back then and all the home based abortions attempted. Thank God her period came and after that she was on the pill, available without parental consultation through Planned Parenthood.

What do I know about you? I first became aware of you in your seminar at UCSB when you had fallen and broken a bone or two while climbing. I think I was already in love with Monica. I remember you saying something like are there more dimensions than the four we know and love? Then I sent you a copy of my book in 2000 at Cal Tech. Then I sent that letter to you. I was fishing around for some kind of reconciliation with you theorists in that letter, saying that maybe the atom and the inside of the atom are three-dimensional but outside atoms more dimensions are possible. At the time I did not have the ether right at all so those remarks are interesting. I do not remember what I thought about curvature in gravitational field at the time but I of course thought it was a problem in three dimensions of space. Then I next heard your interview on New Scientist. I was astonished when the interviewer said how good looking you were and how you looked like Jody Foster and impressed you seemed not at all insulted and not requiring to point out that was an inappropriate remark and embarrass him for a normal male reaction. The next thing I saw was your NY Times interview. When I saw you were single I immediately perceived some opportunity and also wondered if you put that in there just for me, although that was just an inkling. I also had the physics poster set and saw that you had been a runner up in the Courant Chess Fair but I could never reconcile the picture of you and your friend who became a chemistry professor with your other photos. I think it didn’t look like you and the hair was darker. I read you were from the Southside, the first captain of the math club as a junior. Your John Stewart interview showed to me an easy and relaxed manner and I particularly noticed how poised and careful in nuance your lips moved as you spoke and made gestures. Of course I have seen all your Internet photos. I think there was one of you, black and white, maybe when an assistant professor at Berkeley, from a different angle and earlier than the other photos and with different hair. I detect a little geekishness in that and your Courant photo. And I saw in Wikipedia that you were Richard Feynman’s best student. I just returned from your entry in Wikipedia to get Feynman’s correct spelling and you definitely are a little geekish. Your photo collection shows a nice diversity and complexity. There was one that I lost, of you standing in a light suit like outfit in front of your blackboard and behind you desk. Your hair was different and I think it the most recent you have done. I saw that Y in the upper right hand corner on the blackboard, over your shoulder and thought you must be referring to me, that it’s being there could not be accidental, as if I am standing on your shoulder. If I was psychotic and thought that it would be an idea of reference.

Am I missing something serious? Will my screenplay go unnoticed? Will we meet? When? How? Is it possible there is no chance, no hope of succeeding?

Love,
David

PS I especially like the photo of you squatting on a lawn in front of a bush and a front staircase in light blue jeans and light blue top. Your breasts are lovely as is your smile.

10-31-2007 1:04 PM
Whoops

Oh Heavenly Father,

I have told my woman I have never sinned,

and I know that is a lie,

please oh merciful Father in Heaven,

help me to stop sinning

10-31-2007 1:18 PM

Now if you don't get feedback it's less fun
ty and ulu

XXXX

10-31-2007 7:03 PM

How can this be one fucking paragraph?

I discovered the N-particle in December 1985. I did not disclose any details to anyone until 1996 when I sent a preliminary copy of my book to my Dad in Taiwan for the scientists in his class. The reason I did not disclose it is simply because I wanted to maximize its benefit to me. I had learned that disclosing your ideas to someone can be like a female giving up her virginity thinking a man is in love with her only to find out he just wanted to get laid. I did propose correspondence with a fellow student at IUPU and the chairman of the physics department there but they both declined without having seen any of the details. I sent a letter to Dr. Fisher in 1993 telling him I had a new QM but no particulars. He responded in a very nice three page letter that I would be treated as a crank if I had any new fundamental theories. He declined to review my work, the point of my letter, and recommended I get Linus Pauling's book on QM. I actually have a used copy of The Chemical Bond that I got at a bookstore on University Ave. when I was in Berkeley. I'll bet you know what store I mean. It was three to four blocks down from campus on the right side coming from campus. It was a large store and had an upstairs that was above the back half of the store with a high ceiling in the front half and they had used and new books. I also got a copy of Ole Maaloe's book on prokaryotic cells there, a classic in microbiology although somewhat obscure today. I recall three bookstores on University Ave. One on the right, also a big store with upstairs stacks, only I believe two blocks down from campus, on the corner, and the third a lovely little store, on the other side of the street, a few blocks further down University, also on the corner, very small and with used books crammed in everywhere all the way to the ceiling, and open till midnight or maybe even later. I have always loved books, reading and especially libraries since about 3rd grade when I think I first walked to a public library in Milwaukee, despite never having read many books. I read like a couple Tom Swift and the Hardy Boys and Nancy Drew (I read those because I was interested in the female mind. I stole an exhaustive book on The Human Female Sexual Response by, could it be Masters and Johnson? It was a medical text and I think I stole it from the Ithaca Public Library when I was fourteen but it might have been from one of Cornell's libraries. Honey I want you to know how I am doing on the beer front. I am on my fourth beer. I have drunk twice in the last ten days and this will be the third time. In that book they erroneously reported the male instrument was an average of 4" in circumference when erect, making me
feel a little inflated. And I found out only 4% of woman engaged in anal sex with their partners. I found that hard to believe. I wondered if I was a deviant but concluded that they were, not me. If you can imagine me back then with a ruler and a string, a perpetual hard on, fantasizing that I was calculating PI by construction, then you can see how funny it is. The book ended up on my Dads bookshelves in his study. He had about two or three rooms with books covering the walls and more in the barn. I never considered one of them to be worth reading.) whereas my older brother Dan and my younger sister Mary read every one in those large series and could read those books in a single day. My sister Mary, the librarian still read a lot. Even while you are there visiting with her! I actually consider myself quite an accomplished library lover and library aficionado. I used to steal any books I thought would be more valuable in my personal domain than the library system. Since the libraries were not exactly concentration camps it was pretty easy to do. I went down to NYC with Allan and a friend Oaks and we visited one of the local libraries. Allan had worked it all out. You get a dozen books and check them out. They put that little card in the back cover pocket. You leave the library showing the cards in each book to the guard as you leave. Then you take out all the cards in the books, put the books in the back seat of your car, go back in the library and select 12 books for your home domain, insert the 12 cards and leave with the goodies. I got books on trout fishing, chess and sports cars. Oaks, my somewhat psychopathic best friend in high school selected Blake, Milton and Shakespeare and I can't remember if Allan even wanted any books. The Internet takes away that romance with libraries and that is the only thing about the Internet that I regret. I also in my library have What is Life? by Schrödinger and Michael Turing's paper from I think 1933. The Ft. Wayne Public Library is the 25th largest in the US. In the downstairs stacks they had all the little books by everyone from Einstein through to the thirties, a really nice collection of the books from that formative period. When I came out of psychosis in August 1984 I lived in a 200 sq ft room with a shared bathroom down the hall. It was pretty depressing. The Mt. View local library was only three blocks away. I found a little book, can't remember its name, and in it the author stated if you can comprehend EM without knowing its mechanism you should ask that question. He did not know the answer but found this the most perplexing phenomenon in need of an explanation. In fall 1985 when reading those classical books I came to the conclusion they did not know the mechanism underlying the electric field. I got out my college text, Sears and Zemanski 4th edition, opened it to the electric field definition chapter and looked at the equation that defined the electric field, just Coulombs Law with a q taken out. Within not many minutes I hypothesized a particle, point-like, translating at c, with a vector associated with it. I immediately realized it would account for why electric fields are attractive for unlike charges and repulsive for unlike charges. In not more than 10 minutes I asked if the magnetic field is also in there where could it be hiding. When I saw it was transverse to the electric field particle E vector I immediately knew I also had photons. I knew I had the tiger by the tail. It took two weeks to see what gravity probably was. I wondered if Dr. Fisher was being honest with me. It was not due to paranoia, just due to my read of the Landscape of 20th Century physics. The Landscape would seem to be an environmental contributory factor to my psychosis in 1996 to 1997 but I don't think it was. I just was on too low a dose of Prolixin and unfortunately did not recognize that. I was taking 2.5 mg as I recall. And then sometimes 2, and sometimes 1, and for periods of no longer than 2 weeks, sometimes none. I started thinking I was under surveillance around 1997. When I saw and heard Eva on the Internet live on 5-17-99 I thought I was under IR surveillance. I had been waiting for communication with the physics community to increasing degrees for 12 years. First I probed at IUPU, then Fisher, then my Dads students, every time listening to Michio Cock and Bull on Art Bell, and finally flipped out. My first, second and fourth psychosis' were all or none, I became psychotic in one day, remained psychotic the entire time, and came out of the
psychosis’ overnight. The third was different in that regard. After publishing my book in 2000 I came out of psychosis and sent Monica a letter saying I had thought she was in love with me and somewhat apologetic. But I did not realize that as a problem with the dose of Prolixin I was taking. When I said I was not a sinner I meant I have never been envious, never been jealous and never been venal and never certainly wanted to hurt another human. I really don’t think I have sinned and never felt any need to repent and ask for forgiveness. But I also realize the wisdom if you have not sinned cast the first stone. I’ll bet you don’t think you have sinned in fact. It seems not too hard to do. The problem is the ruthless killers obsessed with ideological struggles, precipitous, strategically innumerate, who accept collateral damage. I would like to put all prison guards and all members of the judiciary in a small cell 23 and ¼ hours a day, with death hanging over them, for twenty years, and after that experience ask those dumb motherfuckers what cruel and unusual is. I perceive most crime to be due to genetics. But I think the environment is also highly contributory to the difference between what we have now and what is possible in a fair society where work with your hands was more rewarded and not subjugated to a slave wage. I look forward to finding out as much about you as I show myself to you. To put together the psychological and sexual history of your circumstance in life looks pretty interesting. I can’t say anything at this point, but I am sure you want an intimacy like I want and have tried to relate to you. After looking you up on Wikipedia this morning I found your quotes on Wikipedia. I would think you feel as I that life is a great blessing from God. I lost sight of that a few times in my life, not intellectually but I think just by chemical perturbation of the machine. I very much doubt you have ever been seriously depressed and imagine you are source of much strength. I do wonder how you could be 48 and single and not yet with children. I wonder what you share with your sisters. I can imagine a few good chuckles among you girls about me, yourselves and the world situation. I am about to open my eight beer. I am cooking eggplant parmesan. I love to cook but mostly only cook for myself, deprived of the greater satisfaction of preparing a fine meal for your spouse and eventually family. And I’ll bet you love clams as much as I do. Piss clams with butter and a cold draft beer.

“Wouldn’t he ever shut up?”

“Almost like perpetual motion Diana.”

“Hopefully he’s got that same motion where it counts.”

“Claims to, I’ve got my fingers crossed.”

“When will you find out?”

“As soon as his screenplay breaks I’m taking a one-way ticket to Anchorage. He’s cooking lasagna. Claims his is some of the best on the planet, just like all his other claims. Uses Tillamook extra sharp white cheddar, mozzarella, fresh grated sheep’s milk Romano, feta and cottage cheese, with Johnsonville hot Italian sausage.”

“I’m so happy for you. I know you are going to be so happy and so fulfilled. Is he a little kinky?”

“Actually he is and isn’t. Never been kinky before but has not had sex in twenty-three years and now wants to be a little kinky with me.”

“You’re not embarrassed are you?”
“David never embarrasses me, only himself. His propensity to do so seems almost deterministic”

“Diana do you think in the tree of life, where our physical brain is the highest entity, our memories and the logic and rules we use to sift through those data structures could be represented in any useful and meaningful way on a computer, or do you think that level of physical reality is in God’s domain and unknowable, indescribable, and not reducible to calculation, therefore existing only in the human mind?”

“I would be interested to know what David thinks about that. I think he says no fucking way ever in the future of mankind could it be reducible to an algorithm and data structure, however sophisticated and complex. I think he would say the experience of life is totally unique, he’d bullshit you a little about it being some exotic function of $3 \times 10^9$ base pairs, but after that he would say every memory, every mental image, priceless, although not all equivalent, and I think he’s just horny and wants to get laid. Let you go”

“Bye.”

11-1-2007 10:11 AM

Ho-hum, tweedle-de-dom, what’s in store today?

Dearest Annette,

That Lubos is an arrogant little prick. I’ll excerpt my posts and his response:

Are not SR, GR and QM dramatic changes in philosophical summaries, even cataclysmically so? Would not Socrates, Plato, Archimedes, Aristotle, and Euclid be string theorists today? And Homer a Nobel Prize winning author?

LM: concerning your first question, yes, it's exactly how I calculated the 20-year figure. I doubt all of the ancient guys were at the level of string theory.

David Martin Degner | Homepage

It seems more probable that most string theorists are minor technicians in comparison to those "ancient guys".

David Martin Degner | Homepage

My Dad spoke German, English, Latin and Greek and received a Masters form Washington U in St. Louis and PhD in Classics from the U of Chicago. We had a few discussions about whether the Greek scholars were smarter than people today, is it the other way around, or are we about the same? He thought the Greeks were smarter, even dramatically so. I thought people today were smarter. In looking at Newton, who wrote in Latin, as was the practice for scholars back then, and in particular his religious beliefs, he was an utter fool compared to Socrates, Plato and Aristotle, all of whom had a far more intellectual and real world scheme.

If my Dad and I couldn’t figure it out maybe it will never be known. My Dad said reading Homer at 15 was his most stimulating educational experience. I was exposed to the Iliad and the Odyssey in high school, don’t recall reading either outside of class, and pretty much thought it was tripe. I think my poor Dad pretty much gave up on me at that point, he didn’t of course. In a high school English course he helped me write a paper on Cicero’s De Natura. We discussed things
and he typed it up, choosing most of the word structure. The English teacher called my Dad up to ask if he helped me with it since it was singularly better than any of my other performance in her class. He told her he did help but was repeatedly amazed at my grasp of the ideas and that a father helping a son on such a project was good pedagogy. He also wrote papers for me for English, Psychology and Religion courses at Cornell and told me his Dad wrote papers for him when he was in school. I think that was the only paper I wrote in high school, if you can believe that. As a freshman at Cornell I went in to the graduate student teaching my English class after the first paper was assigned and asked how do you write? At first he didn’t know if I was serious. I got a B+ in his course. It was English 159, The Literature of Reason and Unreason, Malcolm X, Eldridge Cleaver and others. Although I am a pretty good scientist my Dad was quite a bit smarter than me outside of science and technology. My Mother learned Excel at 80 and is good with numbers and likes to read the WSJ and follow the markets. She is hardly capable of abstract thought and not much of an artist. I guess I must have gotten a dose of quantitative skills from this descendent of dairy farmers.

My Dad started treating me as an intellectual equal by the time I was 12 or 13.

At Cornell I cheated extensively but only on a few science tests. In the genetics lab, the incredible pain in the ass drosophila torture, I only attended one lab, identified the phenotypic properties of my unknown fly, went to the library and looked up where all those genes were and made up all the experimental results. I was one of the top students in genetics, attended all the lectures, and actually considered myself probably the best in the class. Genetics back then was the hardest course for biology majors, like physical chemistry is the hardest for chemistry majors and EM is for physics majors. I took the same physics course the physics majors took. I attended one lecture. So stifling boring I never attended another class. I took physics my junior year. Allan had taken it his sophomore year so I did not even gave to go to the labs, I just copied his entire lab book over to mine and handed it in. I would open the book the day of the tests since the tests were in the evening. I got an A the first semester and a B the second. I remember thinking deriving the Biot-Savart Law was difficult and that Gauss’s Law of the electric field the most mysterious thing I had ever come across.

The #1 pre-med student at Cornell, Andy Israel, was on my floor in the dorm as a freshman, as were Allan and Dan. Andy was Jewish too. Andy was a chemistry major and had straight A+'s except for p chem from Dr. Fisher where he got an A, and freshman English where he got B's. He took p chem in his junior year and Allan and I took it our senior year. Andy loaned me his problem sets, answers, notes and tests and told me it took him 20 hours a week to do the problems sets. I asked Andy why he worked so hard since I couldn’t really see the point of it. He told me he wanted to be an intellectual. He and I had a lot of mutual respect. I only put in 4 hours a week in p chem. Allan and I were as Dan put it, stripped to our waists in competition, since that was the only course either of us had to take that semester. We were both cheating in all our other courses. Allan always thought he was smarter than me and I always thought I was smarter than him. I can still remember the day Michel Ellis handed back the first pre-lim. He announced the high was 85. I got an 80 and Allan said that’s excellent Dave. Then Allan got his test and had a 36. I started laughing and I know he must have hated it. Allan got a 715 Science and 685 Quantitative on the MCAT. I had 715, 715. Andy got 755 Science and 705 Quantitative. Dan Ess got a 753 on the LSAT.

My Dad was accepted at The U Nebraska medical school, where my Uncle Al went (and my Dad told me Al didn’t study much) but chose the Seminary instead.
He attended one of the Concordia Colleges as an undergraduate and got his Masters and seminary degree following that. His first congregation was in Breckenridge Minnesota, up in the NW corner on the Red River. I was born in Yankton SD. We moved to Milwaukee when I was about 5 where my Dad at first taught Greek and Latin at Milwaukee Lutheran High School and after a year became a professor at Concordia College in Milwaukee. He attended U Chicago to get a PhD while a professor and head of the foreign language department at Concordia College. For summer school he would take me along for the day of classes in Chicago. I would wander around campus and saw my first Playboy in the old downstairs campus bookstore. It was my first glimpse of a female breast.

My Dad was most unusual. There can't have been very many like him. We had VW's back when America was car crazy with big Detroit products. He got a 1963 VW van with no interior or windows and made it into a camper that could sleep six. Can you believe that? There was one child on the bench front seat, a canvas and aluminum rod bunk bed over that for another child, the double bed in back for my Mom and dad, and a double overhead canvas and aluminum rod bunk bed over that for my older brother and I. My grandpa helped in the construction. Everything was custom made. My Dad cut holes in the back for windows. Then summer came, and the six of us set off to see America and California. We kids would play Monopoly in the back on the table. Of course there were no seat belts. Since my Dad had five brothers and two sisters all over the country we could visit all their families, stay for a few days, get a shower, than tool down the road and camp out in the National Parks and Forests.

My Dad was really into bicycles. He road one to work in Milwaukee and got in the paper for doing it. Professor that rides a bicycle to work. He would have a suit and pants on and put a little spring steel clip around his right pants leg so it wouldn't get caught in the chain. In 6th grade I had to play the piano for 45 minutes a day for one year to get a new 10 speed Schwinn Varsity. The one I got was lime green. My older brother Dan, two years older, who turned out to be gay, had a 5 speed Schwinn Collegiate and we used to go on 22 mile one way bike trips to the farm we lived on when we first moved to Milwaukee, near Freistadt, were we would camp out. Now driving from the heart of Milwaukee to the farm land surrounding it was for a 12 year old like Magellan going around the world. Every spring my Dad and I would repack the wheel bearings of all the bikes, of course using leaded gasoline to was everything. You put a little grease on your finger tip, stick a small ball bearing to it, and insert it in a greased race. When you get done you have to adjust the free play exactly right, too tight or too lose will ruin your races.

My Dad was a Fulbright scholar and I remember him going to Europe for the summer and coming home with many photos of Italian and Greek architecture and culture.

He told me once he was a loner. I didn’t know what he meant exactly and wondered about that. I wondered if I was going to be a loner. I don’t think I am a loner but it certainly has been a remarkably solitary existence I have led these last 25 years.

I’m going to change topics now Honey. This is pretty funny. If I do not succeed in igniting a revolution I think most female theoretical physicists who were single, and maybe a few that weren’t, would fuck me just for trying to do what I am trying to do, as if a kind of reward for a good effort.

I showed you the email I sent out to try to get my work into circulation. I sent that to the Cornell History and Science and Technology faculties, The Harvard History of Science faculty, the U Chicago Classics faculty, and about 150 physics
graduate students at UC Berkeley. I also made a few posts on Lubos’ blog and CR4, an engineering forum. Response has dwindled to near zero and no one is downloading my free PDF. Does that mean I am failing and will not succeed? What can I do now and what should I do now? The only thing I can think of is to write up a paper for publication. But it doesn’t seem I can get it published and it seems I can get nowhere by anything I can do.

Well you’re not getting any younger and I really want to knock you up since I am hoping for 3 or maybe more children, taking them of course, one at a time. I don’t know too much about menopause but know many women are fertile to 50. I guess it’s even possible you have had some eggs frozen so are able to conceive with your own eggs after menopause. Maybe we’ll have seven children.

When I sent you a copy of my screenplay in the mail last spring I checked the mail box each day with a little anxiety, thinking it may have been returned. I was relieved when 8 or 10 days went by and that didn’t happen.

It has been fun to tell you about my childhood experiences. Bringing back those memories is therapeutic for me and reminds me what a rich and vital experience my parents gave to me. Since I became mentally ill in spring 1975 it has been a difficult life but there were always good challenges too, really good challenges to put it mildly. Of course I love my Mother but dealing with her is also infuriating since she assumes I am nuts and have no economic value.

If this was to go on for a lot longer it would be quite difficult for me. Maybe I cannot win but I cannot give up.

You know Honey, I think you have set some kind of Guinness world record for extracting so much from a man with so little communication. I can’t wait to see you naked, literally and figuratively.

Love,
David

PS As you may have surmised I am an astonishingly arrogant person, even singular in the species, and I think it is justified by my intelligence. I am laughing so hard I can hardly type this.

11-1-2007 10:57 AM

66. lensing@freecreditreport.com

11-1-2007 1:45 PM

I did embarrass myself, I was thinking like twenty

“Did you get a chance to look at David’s last email?”

“I did. Annette do you think he even knows the meaning of the word humility?”

“It’s astonishing, he has virtually no humility at this point in time.”

“Do you think you can teach him some?”

“I do but it’ll take time. I imagine waiting outside the delivery room will make him very humble. Although he wanted to be a surgeon earlier in life I don’t think he could be in the
delivery room. Then again maybe he would want to deliver it himself. Either way I know he is going to be oh so humble.”

“Can he cry?”

“Only tears of Joy.”

“What do you think people will say about his psychiatric history?”

“No psychiatrists will even venture a word. They'll all be so terrified to be exposed as secondary thinkers they'll not say much, and certainly no degrading type analysis. No one will ever doubt his self diagnosis. In fact his preeminence in psychiatry may become a legend. He knows more about psychosis than anyone in history although he hasn't studied any other cases yet. He'll get around to it and also is interested in bipolar psychosis. Strangely, but also incredibly humorous, every time he was in a psychiatric institute, the nut house, he was nuts and released cured while still completely nuts.”

“That is funny. What do you think it was like for him to be so consummately denigrated for what must have seemed like an eternity to him?”

“He always saw the light at the end of the tunnel.”

“Do you think your chemistry will be good when you finally meet?”

“I can't believe it would be other than white phosphorous. My body aches to make love to him.”

“Is he still overweight?”

“That doesn’t bother me. But it will take a little finessing to get him to feel comfortable. I am going to offer to get on top the first time. He'll find that a little kinky as I will but it will be a lot of fun. He'll find that highly amusing after sending me an email whose subject was Do I just have to spread my legs?”

“Is he strongly attracted to you physically? You're not exactly a centerfold.”

“He thinks they are disgusting sluts and not at all what he find sexually attractive. He loves my nose, and my eyes, and my mouth, and my ears, and my hair. I think he would prefer a slightly larger ass but I also know he finds mine thought provoking and stimulating.”

“How does he feel about your breasts?”

“He thought they were terminally evolved, like cats, that in his biological lingo means have achieved perfection. All the women in his family had big tits and he finds them mostly gross. It will be interesting to see how our daughters turn out.”

“It really is joyous to see your happiness and to see you realize your lifelong dream. Do you think David will change diapers?”

“He might even stay home and change all of them. He could never sit in an office 8 hours a day and can do any corporate duties in a few hours a week. So actually I may be the one who goes out and he might be the stay at home Mom.”
“Did you tell him how many lovers you have had?”

“I did. I used the credit report idea you suggested. He was surprised it was so low given my exposure to males at work and the fact he thinks an active sex life is vital to holistic health, but about what he thought it would be, knowing I have to be in love or something close, or at least exploring the prospect of, to be intimate.”

“He told me he had to be in love to engage in sex and at the same time told me how big his dick was.”

“Do you think he lied about the size?”

“How can he I'm going to find out? But I'll bet he rounded up and not down. You know Diana I like the metric system but when it comes to dicks six inches is more meaningful and visualizable than fifteen centimeters.”

“Like Fahrenheit, correlates to our experience. Temperature in Celsius has no visceral meaning to me.”

“David invented a way to compute factorials using positive real numbers as the argument. He did it when psychotic and can't remember how he did it. Check this out Diana. He calculated $1 / \sqrt{e}$ is $.625! \cdot .444! \cdot 2! / 5!$ and that it is accurate to a couple per cent. You know factorials better than I do. How would you take the factorial of a real number?”

“Just break the real number into a $p / q$ and take the factorial of both and divide the result.”

“Clever, hadn’t thought of that. He’s actually thought a little bit about integers and real numbers and $p / q$. He worked out some kind of new definition of reals when psychotic and wrote it up in what is going to be a priceless creative work. It was about 5 pages, about his emergence from the long journey he had been on triumphant. He awoke on a lush forest floor. There was a babbling brook near by. He awoke with the sun shining through the trees. He heard a brook gurgling. He went to the brook and washed his face in the cold, pure water. He drank from the brook with his hand as he had done as a teenager fishing for brook trout. In a clearing was a deer feeding. And he attacked the foundations of algebra and the foundations of number theory.”

“Was that work lost?”

“He left a copy of it on his brother Cain's, neighbor's, Bob and Cindy Bluse, dresser when psychotic. The computer record was lost as many of his other works and almost all his psychotic poetry. She was his best female friend but the relationship ended in his last psychosis when he left a message on her phone that threatened to turn her into the DEA for selling him bad weed. It was part of his psychotic act and probably sounded pretty disturbing to poor Cindy, whom he really liked. She couldn’t see the truth about his motive in that act, ironic since David is the very last person who would ever turn anyone in for any drug related commerce. He hopes she’s still got it.”

“Are you worried about his drinking?”
“Not really although the genetics is quite ominous. His Dad told him that he would never have drunk so much beer if it hadn’t been for the burden of mental illness. Unlike his siblings, uncles and cousins David never needed to drink and never drank to excess. At 300 pounds 12 beers is not really excessive. An individual has to be responsible for their self and David agrees with that more than anyone. But to be alone on the frontier required drinking beer daily for him for many years. His Dad told him he himself could have been an alcoholic but David never believed that. They shared a bottle of whiskey together in 1977 when they drove from Ft. Wayne to Ithaca going through Canada in the old Dodge pickup with a trailer in tow. They bought a fifth at the duty free shop on the Ambassador Bridge in Detroit. They finished the bottle off by the time they got to the border in Buffalo. Back then you could go through borders drunk and no one really paid too much attention. Boy would I love to have a record of their conversation.”

“One of the hardest things on David will be that his father never saw him succeed. Also the fact David was psychotic when his Dad died will always be painful. When he was psychotic he thought his Dad was the one who enabled his mind to be read and that his Dad was still alive, second only to Eva Silverstein in importance to the mission.”

“Oh gosh Diana, I have never been more sure of anything in my life and also feel as if I am about to go over Niagara Falls.”

“What does he think about that little squirt Lubos?”

“David wants to get two cases of Pilsner Urquell and get Lubos so drunk Lubos blacks out and then analyze what Lubos’ real Nature is. David basically thinks Czechoslovakia should be a part of the German Empire.”

“What does he think about Pollack’s?”

“Even worse than Catholics.”

“Does he use the n word?”

“I don’t think he ever will with me, and certainly never in public, but I do know what he thinks about some of the n behavior in America. It’s not a joke at all. The level of violence and criminality in the black community is the most egregious insult to being human David observes in America. Necklacing in South Africa was the cruelest behavior he has observed, finding the gas chambers of Nazi Germany even humane in comparison. The astonishing level of violence and suffering in Africa seems to David impossible to live with without solving the problem. Since he knows it is a genetic problem he is planning to provide a sperm bank for husbandry. He thinks in two generations he can have blacks on par intellectually with whites and better athletes and with bigger dicks to boot. He thinks the American black X is almost genetic suicide, like a 50% survival rate. He thinks you can easily drive genetic improvement with sperm only since sperm provides both X’s and Y’s. That’s good because egg collection is quite invasive and not nearly as simple as a man jerking off into a cup.”

“Is he worried about public outcry to his lesson of genetic reality and solution?”

“He wants to make his opponents look like reactionary religious lunatics. So he is going to sugar coat the pill as only an accomplished doctor can. You can almost see David, the proctologist, stretching on those XXL
surgical gloves and getting out the KY. All that being said he knows everyone is going to have to come in contact with scientific reality. You saw the hard porn and his real aspirations and intents in the unexpurgated copy I sent you. Where will the tongue of Jesus end up?”

“Annette that is so funny. Got to go. Talk tomorrow.”

“Tomorrow.”

11-2-2007 12:21 AM

67. dermatoneurology@travelscotworld.com

11-2-2207 3:30 OM

Back from the airport, going to hears Nelson’s tale

Dearest Annette,

Check out what I slipped into Lubos this morning. I think it’s really funny. If he bites and takes the question as anything other than a joke it will be hilarious.

Hey Lubos, since it occurs to me you might be, I’ll ask the question the RF readers really want to know the answer to: Are you the smartest person on the planet? Would you know that if you were? Is it obvious like Muhammad Ali and Gary Kasparov or almost impossible to determine like a temperature for the earth? How do you string theorists determine the pecking order amongst yourselves? I’m German and would find it rather amusing if a Czech was the smartest human.

David Martin Degner | Homepage

I no longer play chess and doubt I ever will again since I no longer enjoy exerting the kind of mental energy it takes, it seems like work. I reached my peak in the fall following graduation in 1974. This brings me to my friend Cut Herbert Kline. He had long blondish hair, was athletic, a goalie in soccer and a good skier. He is the smartest individual in mathematics and probably outright the smartest that I knew well. He got 600 Verbal and 780 Quantitative on the GRE’s and I got 610 Verbal and 770 Quantitative. He was a mechanical engineer and the last person in his class with a GPA of 1.81. He was the worst student imaginable. He was a member of Fiji and a real woman killer. We were pretty good friends at one time and the last I saw of him I was psychotic in Berkeley in 1981 and he gave me a $100 bill and told me to get out of my apartment or some such thing. He and I had as girlfriends two Chi Sigma sisters. Elsa, his girlfriend, was the most attractive female on campus. She was Jewish, big tits, and smart, a chemical engineer. Her best friend Kara is the one I fell in love with, the fall after graduation. She was voted the best body in Chi Sigma. Cut and I were big time pot smokers and were very competitive in chess. A local psychiatrist, Jack Snoweski, Jewish, Harvard undergraduate, Yale medical school, friend of my Dad, wrote recommendations for me for medical school in fall 1973 and fall 1974. I went over to his house in the evening both times and we played chess. He was on the chess team or club at Harvard and I think even the captain. He beat me 4 in a row in fall 1973 and I was pretty embarrassed. In fall 1974 I beat him easily 4 in a row. Also in fall 1974 Cut and I decided we would have to have a regulation tournament, first to break 12, for what we called the Whole Ball of Wax. If you can imagine what arrogant fucking pricks we were, so fucking full of testosterone as to almost be on steroids, it really is funny. We played one game a day. Back
then I played Queens pawn opening and Cut always played King pawn. I likened myself to Spassky who played Queens pawn against Fisher in 1972 in Reykjavik. Shortly after that I saw the Kings pawn opening was superior (probably why Bobby Fisher played it) and was using that when I beat Jack Snoweski. Cut and I went back and forth with few draws up until 6 to 6. Then I figured him out and crushed him 6 straight, drew the last game and won 12 ½ to 6 ½. He used the PCP along with me and we were living together along with a couple Canadian hockey players who got the PCP from a friend in veterinary school in Toronto and they sold dimes as THC and were the lowest scum imaginable. I can’t bring myself to tell you this, no I’ll go ahead. They would get some girl, all use PCP, and then gang bang her one after the other. I came out of my bedroom one night and a couple of them were waiting in line naked outside a bedroom where the sex was going on. Amazingly they had some very fine girlfriends and the man I caught Kara with was also a hockey player. She ended up marrying his brother.

The reason I brought up chess is if Lubos and I were the same age we could have had some fun chess matches. I imagine he could beat me. I never memorized too many openings. Allan was a really good chess player and placed 4th in a NYC wide competition in high school. I did not learn how to play chess until my sophomore year at Cornell so was pretty far behind Allan. We never played serious chess but on one occasion I beat him 8 or 9 straight in 5 minute chess. On a few other occasions he defeated me handily in 5 minute chess.

I have just taken a four hour nap. When I get exhausted, mostly from poor sleep associated with drinking, I get a little fearful, a little paranoid and pessimistic, thinking I may not be in touch with reality. I wonder am I making a fool out of myself?

Just checked the RF, Lubos didn’t bite. Is that in bad taste to make a little jab at him as a Czech and me a German? I find doing stuff like that almost irresistible and find it personally only humorous. I don’t even acknowledge political correctness in thinking but I realize boundaries in communicating and always want to appear thoughtful and intelligent. Is Ed Witten the smartest physicist? I saw a picture of you with Seth Lloyd. I haven’t read his books but know the topics he addresses and find him impressive. I remember Heisenberg went to visit Bohr in Copenhagen either close before the war or thereabouts and behaved in a bit of a Teutonic fashion. The Americans were worried about the Nazi’s building an atomic weapon. As I understand it Heisenberg focused on nuclear power not explosives during the war but that was not known until after the war.

Getting back to feeling exhausted. I imagine it possible many string theorists worked out the same science I did and went even further in fewer years and that they are quite a bit smarter than me. I had quite a bit of hardship and started at zero in December 1985. I had long forgotten both calculus and physics. I was alone and drank beer daily, neither the optimum for intellectual productivity, or maybe it’s just the opposite. I always peak in mental energy in the first 6 or 7 beers. And when I get up at 1 or 2 AM the following morning, after coffee and a little while to get going I do some of my best work of the day.

I am contemptibly lazy about acquiring knowledge through studying. My science was fun to do because I never had to study much to do it. It was mostly trying to figure things out, a creative enterprise.

I attended Mt. Olive parochial school. It was across Washington Boulevard from our home so I could walk to school which was nice. In the class was another student Jim Weinmann. His Dad was a minister too and also a professor at Concordia College. He and I were the smartest two in a class of about 30. He always scored the same as me or maybe I was just a little higher in the Iowa
Achievement tests in math, where we were both around 96% usually but he did just as well in verbal and I always scored around 80% in verbal tests. I was a little faster in 3rd grade doing the multiplication tables. His Dad accepted a call to Breckenridge Colorado and they moved there when he was in 6th or 7th grade. Mt. Olive was K-8 and MLHS 9-12. He went to Harvard and I met him there when visiting my sophomore year. He wanted to be a lawyer and go to Boalt Hall at UCB since he was interested in the kind of law that helps people and causes and not the corporate screwing type. We were casual friends and both knew of course that we were the smartest kids in the class. He is the one who showed me a book on QM at the back of the class in 6th grade. He was a straight A student but I had already rebelled. The third smartest student was Brian Carson. He was about 80-85% in testing. We went together to MLHS my freshman year and were on the swimming team together. He was a pretty good friend and went to UW Madison in biology, didn’t get into medical school, got a PhD in neural anatomy, then got into medical school, became a neurosurgeon, and practices in Boston and teaches at Harvard Medical School. His Dad was a plumber. My best friend was Mike Jeremy. We hunted together, made explosives, made toy boats for the bathtub and generated hydrogen gas in my basement workshop to fill balloons with that we would ignite. He became a pilot, has been a captain for something like 20 years, and flies to Amsterdam for Delta. Another student also is a pilot with Delta. Not bad for a class of 30 German Lutherans. None of the girls were smart. I had female teachers for K-4 and male teachers after that.

As you probably see going to school and especially at Cornell it was really just intellectual sport. As a pre-med I did not have to take p chem did it just for sport. The sport was to see who’s smartest. In p chem there were about 55 students, no blacks and no females and mostly Jews. I did not even have to study for more than an hour for the final. I got a 75 ½ on the final and the high was 76. But there were 30 points of definitions and I missed 12 points there and imagine on the problems portion I had the highest score. It was a three hour final, enough time for a good test. I thought I was the best student in the class although there were some other very strong students who had a little higher test averages. After that experience I decided I wanted to be a physical scientist in my 30’s after getting rich in medicine. I didn’t even get a single interview for medical school in two tears of application. I had a 3.3 overall in science and a 3.0 outside of science. It really didn’t bother me too much when I didn’t get in since I got interested in finance and security market analysis. I wanted to get rich ASAP and then have time to think seriously about science.

We used A. P. French’s little book on SR in my physics course at Cornell. I saw how simple SR was. I didn’t have the slightest inkling Einstein could be a bullshit artist. I thought chemistry and physics were mostly over and that the only remaining frontier was biology although I knew that meant reducing biology to chemistry and physics.

Dan was the oldest in my family, two years older. He was terrible in math and never did mechanical work like all the other males did on both sides of the family. He attended a few years of college at SUNY Cortland and also more recently was trying to get a BS in Social work at UAA. Mary was two years younger than me and got a degree in design from the Cornell School of Human Ecology. Then she got a MLS at Ball St and has been the Eagle River librarian for the last 21 years. V attended Valparaiso but did not graduate. She married a polish lawyer and they had one child, M, now a junior in high school in St Louis, taking physics. He’s quite smart but my Mom told me he had a B+ in physics at the midterm. He doesn’t know yet what he wants to be, enjoys languages, history and literature. He was a finalist in the geography spelling bee in St Louis and was really involved in a robot building contest you probably are aware of. They all went to Atlanta for the finals. Cain is the youngest, 7 years younger than I. We played
together since he was a baby and he idolized me as a youth and we drank a lot of beer together. He’s smarter than most of the degreed engineers he works with and I think he is working for BP again. His level of technological competence is very high and I think is the #1 QC engineer for the slope. The word abrasive does not adequately describe how rude he can be. He has a 1993 Porsche Turbo Carrera and once went 201 on the Glenn highway. When depressed a couple times he told me the only thing he is really good at is fucking. Stealing 50K from me and then telling me to go fuck myself was pretty egregious.

I took my neighbor Nelson to the airport a couple weeks ago. He had won the lottery to hunt brown bears on Kodiak Island, one the highest forms of hunting on the planet. He was flown in by float plane and dropped off in the wilderness. He called yesterday and said a storm came through with 60 MPH winds. His tent got blown down at 6 AM. I’m picking him up at the airport in about an hour. We’ll have a few beers this afternoon and his story should be pretty good.

Also when I am exhausted I feel the burden of this very unusual relationship we have. All though I can’t imagine it is other than your procarpium I am anxious to see resolution.

Next time Kevin comes over he’s bringing his digital camera and I’ll get some photos to you. I ordered various seeds from an exotic and rare seed source on the Internet. My tree tomatoes behind the computer display in front of my west facing window are really interesting. And I just started some succulents, called Desert Roses. I use cactus potting soil for those. I have a nice crop of marijuana to harvest next week. I’ll send you a picture of that. I hope the FBI isn’t listening in.

I have a lot of self confidence, but not an infinite amount. Or is it? Every time I get good sleep I awake rejuvenated. So if that pool of well being fills up again every time I sleep it is in a way like an infinite source.

My Dad had blue eyes and brown hair. My Mom had brown eyes and black hair. Mary’s eyes are brown. Mine are hazel. Cain and V’s are blue. And Dan’s I think were blue. Your eyes appear blue or hazel. I wonder if you are German. That’s not important in any way but would be kind of neat.

Off to pick up Nelson at the airport.

Love,
David

11-3-2007 3:21 AM

68. medicopsychological@seepei.com

11-3-2007 7:41 PM

How many ways are there to love a woman?

Dearest Annette,

I was trying to do a little dialogue of us when we meet with me picking you up at the Anchorage airport. It was quite difficult. I churned out 5 pages and determined it was rubbish. And I tried a little of you and your sister that I think you and her might have found amusing but I can’t do you and me. And to even try is a mistake.
You might wonder why I took the approach I took as an undergraduate, just some kind of intelligence sport. I knew to understand biology required a good scientific basis and felt I had a good foundation in the principles from the courses I took. I considered that stability, maturity and wisdom were what I needed along with a foundation in the scientific principles as a pre-med student, not technical details and too much empirical knowledge. When I recovered enough from the trauma of the PCP in 1978 and went down to Berkeley I was focused on the problem of what is life, thought that was not yet known, as I still do believe. I thought the place to focus on was Gram (+) prokaryotic cells since they are to biology as hydrogen is to chemistry, the simplest representation of the phenomena. Back then and even today theoretical biologists are few and biology is mostly an experimental wet chemistry undertaking. I came up with a model of prokaryotic cells that was a cellular chemical computer, a chemical Turing machine, that I called the nucleic acid mainframe and the thermal code. I thought that was to biology as QM was to chemistry and SR, GR and QM were to physics. It seems to me cells are rather complicated and there is much opportunity for the theoretician. I still think my NAM and TC model is important to biology.

In a lot of my communication over the past 3 months I have had to drink beer to get sufficiently uninhibited to communicate. Now I prefer to not drink beer when I communicate. I guess to some extent a person relieved of normal inhibition reveals quite a bit about themselves when drinking. So you know what a complete nutcase I am.

I have always been impatient and always tried to do things fast. So in that respect this long drawn out experience I have had in life was contrary to my Nature and therefore difficult.

In analyzing the 66 injections of heroin you must be a probability of 1. You know I am probability 1 for you, yours for the taking. I guess that is how I would describe getting married as a physicist. It is the act of making a commitment for the rest of your life. I interpreted your overlover@themusicward.com as making that commitment.

My website has been up one month. It doesn't seem to have caught on as I hoped for. I am hoping you can somehow remedy that and get it popularized by "word of mouth" over the Internet. The only thing I can do at this point is write up a succinct paper and try to get it published.

I guess you appreciated in my intellectual sport how much it is like athletic sports, with much statistics, much competition, stereotypical characterizations, like white quarterbacks are better than black quarterbacks, that is a biological fact.

I have a lot of questions. The boundaries of who knows SR, GR and QM are nonsense and the boundaries of who knows string theory is nonsense? I can’t imagine any physicist could not recognize ST as BS. The same would go for the mathematicians. I find it hard to believe anyone could take SR, GR and QM seriously but it seems even many physicists do. It seems most chemists believe in QM. I wonder if Seth Lloyd does? I wonder how long it took me to figure things out compares to the enterprise of 20th Century physics? I wonder if I have anything new? I wonder if some of the modern drugs like the cholesterol and blood pressure ones required and utilized the correct QM? I wonder if the Russian’s getting on board with ST that preceded the collapse of the USSR was a major success for Einstein’s game?

I would like to put together something like Los Alamos in Dryden NY. I am planning to offer my scientists and engineers 51% of any patents they develop.
am hoping to get the best people available on the planet by making such an attractive package for them, a beautiful rural setting in upstate NY and access to Cornell. I am hoping to revolutionize drug design and biotechnology with my atomic and molecular models. Dressing atom surfaces with charge, complex dipoles, is the first order of business. That one I may keep proprietary instead of the patent route. I am hoping to solve all drug addiction problems in 5-10 years by developing safe recreational drugs. To tell you how I feel about the people who would impede me in that undertaking I would really just like to kill them, in a painful death, but that of course cannot be done. I don’t think it is necessary and hope the revolution in thought I spark with my screenplay will allow a rational response to these medical problems that are also issues of privacy. I look forward to discussing all these issues with you and wonder what you really work on, what role you would want in DS&E and what challenges you respond to and want to address? We will have a nursery in my company so woman can bring babies and children to work and nurse them throughout the day.

I do want to set up DS&E as a non-profit. I don’t know how much personal wealth I want to retain. It seems if I was not a millionaire and worked for $5000/week like all my top scientists and engineers that would give me a higher respect with both my employees and the general public. My parents never needed much material wealth, always had what they needed, and I think I would prefer that non-materialistic outlook on life. It seems Jesus like, Robin Hood like, and of strategic value in my goal of UPJF&L. To capture the imagination of mankind and to provide a vision of the Garden of Eden, God’s promised Heaven on Earth make this strategy seem optimal.

I do not know if it is a good thing or a bad thing to accumulate vast wealth and pass it on to your children. I have always hated spoiled kids and there were always many of them. I think the highest contribution a parent can make for their children is genetic. The second highest contribution is to provide a stimulating and happy childhood, so that by 14-16 they are quite mature and wise. I think you provide the Nurture in a way that is fun for child and parents and that it is quite natural to do that. I think what you aim for is strong, stable individuals with high self-esteem but I also think those behaviors are mostly genetically determined. Michael Jordon was not only the most gifted guard in NBA history he also had an outstanding competitive spirit to match, as did Ali. That is not a coincidence. It is genetically determined and requires effort and training to reach full phenotypic realization.

I wish I was 20 years younger. That’s not an uncommon wish but of course not reality. But I think I could be a good husband and father and that makes me feel quite young.

I have had 4 beers here Honey, so you know what I am about to say is not due to the influence of ethanol. I am wondering what our sex life is going to be like? Since I haven’t had a sexual relationship in 23 years I am some kind of a virgin. And I was thinking of you today, all the woman I ever had sex with were dumb compared to me, although I would try to delude myself to that fact. Having sex with a woman of your remarkable intelligence and knowledge is almost scary. It really will be quite different to have sex with such a smart woman as yourself and such a geek. To know physically a woman who is an equal intellectually is the sexiest thing I can imagine.

I can not write poetry for you now, especially when sober. All my poetry, or at least much of it, is a little corny and a little obnoxious. Here I go.

When I think of sublime
I know in all your places I will rhyme
I know in each I will die time after time

Love
David

PS Here is my 5 pages of our dialogue. Its fairly lame but will let you know how a practice in the aim of developing better work.

I arrived at Ted Steven’s International Airport 10 minutes early. I was at a seat at NW Orient’s baggage terminal. She had taken a one stop in Minneapolis flight from Syracuse. I saw her first as she approached. She was not taller than I thought she would be but not shorter either. I arose to meet her.

“Doctor Dartière I presume?”

“David”

I placed my hands over her cheeks, drew her to me, and kissed her, gently, a little too short for me, but to let her know how accessible, and how easy and how intimate our relationship would start out as and always be. We just looked at each other, glancing away and coming back, not knowing what to say. Her single bag arrived and I picked it up and we walked out to my F-250. I put it in the bed of the truck and she got in the passenger side. I selected Robert Cray, Strong Persuader, knowing it would embarrass her a little bit but also letting her know how I felt.

“I've been thinking about meeting you for many months.”

“David you are so unusual I almost feel I am committing myself to an asylum.”

“Only one devoted to your pleasure my dear.”

“What did you get on your SAT’s”

“Very funny. 800’s.”

“Honey do you think we were destined to be together, not by cosmic coincidence but by actual determinism?

“I doubt if that could be true. But it happened so is a probability one event. From your life experience could you ever imagine it was deterministic?”

“I have known since early in life I wanted a woman of your distinction and biological stature as my own. So that is certainly deterministic. How it all came together seems like some rather unusual rolls of the dice.”

“Does that mean it is deterministic or just stochastic?”

“I really don’t know. It seems like a miracle to me but I never believed in miracles.”

“And I never believed in Cinderella.”

“I am looking forward to your Newton Plush. To be in the room you have worked alone all these years is going to be fun. Your poetry, while mostly corny, also evoked a few sexual feelings.”
“Do you smoke marijuana?”

“Not that often, like it, and get a little horny.”

“Do you like martinis, wine and beer?”

“Enjoy all three. Are we going to go out tonight?”

“We can walk to the Whaler, a nice bar, in the strip mall adjacent to my condo.”

We arrived at my condo in East Anchorage. She walked up the steps ahead of me. I wondered if she had known how lonely I had been walking up those stairs alone these many years.

“I’m going to take a shower.”

“I cleaned the bathroom Honey, that I would do only for you, if you can understand bachelor bathroom etiquette Honey.”

“I can.”

“You can put on one of my T-shirts. They’re all cotton, and voluptuous on the female frame.

“OK.”

When Annette came out of the bathroom with my XLXT undershirt on I realized her sensual delight. She wasn’t wearing panties.

“Honey lets have a few Budweiser’s before going out.”

“Do you really care about anything now more than you and me?”

“All my lofty ambitions for mankind seem inconsequential to me right now. All that matters is you and me.”

“You sure would never send me a missive that was incontrovertible. Were you playing hard to get, when you know I was for you so easy?

“I just wanted to reinforce that there are no certainties in life.”

“I disagree. You have always known you could have me just for the taking. That seems like certainty for you”

“But I didn’t know what I was to find, that was my uncertainty.”

“That being said when I discovered you were a consummate artist I found you completely irresistible, even as you call it in a deterministic way.”

“I came as you did to art after hard science. Like you I did not fully realize the creative side so vital to be on the frontier of science.”

“Are Matisse and Picasso your favorite painters?”

“Along with Monet and Van Gogh.”

“To be the first is to be the best is mostly true. Oh gosh darling, I love your art work so much it stimulates me physically.”
“Let that percolate and we’ll go over the Whaler and have few drinks.”

It was a few days later. It was 4:57 AM. I was up working. Annette was still sleeping. She yawned, a little grumpy, not yet completely used to my work schedule and habits.

“What the fuck do you think about in all those hours you are up by yourself darling?”

“It is almost sacred, just me and God wondering how man should behave here on this planet.”

“I have felt that many times but imagine less intensely than you have.”

“When humans are suffering it seems to require an immediate response. The focus on ourselves by America all these years seems cruel beyond imagination when there are people starving.”

“Is it about what you found as the hypocrites in 6th grade.”

“That’s all it is.”

“Changing subjects why do you feel no humility and are so singularly arrogant? Wouldn’t that seem in contrast with your Jesus like ambitions.”

“It’s simple. I have never been humble. Never even knew what humility is. Humility is foreign to my being. and I never saw any need for it.”

“What do you think about your arrogance?”

“I have always considered my kind simply justified by intelligence. About those many people that are so arrogant and can’t justify it with superior intelligence I am looking forward to meeting them in competition in the free marketplace. I want to put every inconsequential chief executive officer out of business. I detest their unsupported egos. Some of them are so deranged I think I should just be working on killing them at times.”

“What do you really want to do?”

“I want to kick the living shit out of all the florid, innumerate ruling class and all their sycophants.”

“Is that possible?”

“It’s going to be for me. I come from humble beginnings. I have no need for wealth. With you beside me I am going to be able to that. We are increasingly so, despite the emergence of the Bill Gates and Google boys, a have and have not society. The concentration of wealth is increasingly a problem.”

“Every CEO in America is going to hate you.”

“They’re all morons and I am going to devastate them. In the scientific-engineering hierarchy we only need a few at the top. I know how I can beat everyone economically. It’s little more than Wal-Mart strategy implemented by German #1.”

“Are we going to be millionaires?”

“No. And our children will not be spoiled in any way and will have to provide for them self. I want to stand proudly before the working people of planet earth and say I am not a millionaire. It’s beyond lethal strategically. Our children with their genetic endowment
will all be high achievers. Of course they will all work for Degner Scientific and Engineering. You know Honey I hate spoiled people worse than anything and I don’t want our children to be in any way spoiled.”

“Darling you are such lunatic it is arousing me. Let’s go over to the Whaler for a few drinks. When we get back and are intimate I want to get on top for our first experience.”

“That’s a little kinky Honey. Did you come up with that yourself?”

“I talked about it with my sister.”

11-3-2007 8:42 PM

I need feedback!

Annette’s grade book

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Friendship</th>
<th>A+</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Commitment</td>
<td>A+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To cherish</td>
<td>A+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To honor</td>
<td>A+</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To respect</td>
<td>A+</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Estimated probability of experience

| Intimacy         | A+    |

11-4-2007 9:11 AM

If I aimed an IR camera on you would any places be warmer (and probably wetter too) than other places?

Dearest Annette,

The reason I use dearest instead of darling, or dear, or honey is because I imagine that is how a soldier in war addresses his wife. And I imagine myself on the frontline. And think the special emphasis is made because a soldier faces dying so every letter may be the last.

I’ve got to show you the responses to the Kraut bait I posted on Lubos’ RF:

Well I can’t find it. There is this old fart Gene Day and he is a toady and sycophant, like the other small collection of regulars. One of them, Rae Ann, who has a blog called Vicious Mama, actually accused me of having a two inch dick, back in July when I attacked the RF. I made a good response to her then, “that she appeared to be interested in something and could email me for the actual dimensions.” I realized now that I should have responded “Honey, you are confusing width with length.” I don’t think she is getting fucked. Back to Gene Day. He was an undergraduate and graduate student at UC Berkeley in physics. I think he is around 70. I don’t know how this could be possible but it is as if he takes ST as serious science. He certainly believes in SR, GR and QM. Since I
put reality right under his nose and he failed to recognize it I think that makes him a moron. Does that seem fair and balanced? He said my German superiority was showing. Another post said the Germans didn’t find Jewish intellectual superiority so amusing. And another said Czech beer is better than German beer so why shouldn’t the Czech’s be smarter. I find this hilarious. I’ll be honest with you. I think an important reason we won WWII is because German’s are the largest contributor to the American melting pot at 30%. I suppose that is getting lower due to immigration.

I always wanted to start a university, something like Cal Tech, with a high faculty/student ratio. But I think that would not be a worthwhile undertaking given the fine university system we have already. And with DS&E located in Dryden we can be associated with Cornell.

My friend Kevin Hearts is going be my CEO. He is an expert at Excel and deals with large amounts of technical data. He is in inspection like my brother Cain. Those guys are like cardiovascular surgeons, complex piping, reactors, and manifolds the stuff they inspect. He was in the technology undergraduate program and could get a bachelor’s in technology with about 30 more hours. He is a highly accomplished outdoorsman and hunter. He is divorced and a bit of a rutting pig about selecting women. If he is in the Dominican Republic teaching UT he buys an all night girl for $80. He was in New Orleans staying at one of the best hotels and walked in late at night with a black hooker right through the lobby and didn’t care what anyone thought. He has had two somewhat lengthy email communications that both turned out to be somewhat elaborate con games that ended with “if you send me the money now I will see you at the airport in a few days.” One was from Algeria and the other Russian. He also had a relationship that started through eHarmony and has tried other Internet services. He has three children and has custody of them, Kathy a senior in high school, Penelope a sophomore and Sam in 6th grade. His wife was a fertile Catholic, a slut, and had 4 previous children he also raised. She discovered cocaine at 42 and became the whore of an older cocaine dealer Kevin and I called Coke Daddy. He really stuck it to her in the divorce.

There are something’s I haven’t gotten around to yet. Electrochemistry and batteries is one of them. Oxidation/reduction is the important phenomena. Thermodynamics is another. I don’t want to work on interpreting the oxygen spectra. I think a battery based on phosphates is possible. It would be an aqueous system and involve polymerization. I think my energy solution, small dish collector farms on non-arable land, is in fact a relatively simple and straightforward solution. I have not much idea if I can get a patent on the DAVEST. I believe I can patent my atomic and molecular models and that will underlie a big chunk of biological and EE nanotechnology. I saw about ½ of physicist are in solid state physics. I don’t know what they really do. When you don’t have the slightest idea what is really going on at the microscopic level it seems you are handicapped even made almost impotent.

There are bacteria that get their energy by reducing Fe+++ to Fe++. At active sites of enzymes is a metal ion that undergoes presumably a red/ox couple in implementing catalysis. I’m not sure how long it will take before there are practical results but the terminally evolved vehicle will use a non-toxic, non-flammable energy source like fatty acids or carbohydrates, in an aqueous reactor and produce electricity, a biotechnology fuel cell. The only alternative that can compete with that is a good battery so filling the fuel tank will be charging up. Then no liquid fuels are required. Can you get sufficient range? Some eels and fish can sense electric fields and produce high voltages. It is possible to covert hydrogen to hydrocarbons using atmospheric carbon dioxide as the carbon source. If you can do that it really changes things. Membranes have a very high
dielectric constant and can store a lot of voltage in a small distance. Neurons are batteries that need recharging and that is why we sleep. The real phenomena are not understood and I think will be important in the energy problem. Mitochondria and bacteria are interesting in that they can store energy in electric fields by pumping protons across the cell membrane, achieving charge separation. The etc is interesting. To be honest, I would be astonished if I cannot build a biological like battery. It seems biology tells us that is eminently possible.

I know eMaam will solve many problems and reduce the work week significantly. It is essential for public health in the modern world. It is the solution to the terrorism problem in some sense but also it is required there be no political motivation for terrorism, all conflicts resolved. If there is motivation there will always be terrorism.

Craig Venter is interesting from what little I know of him. I think he might be weak in theory. But I admire his belief in genomics of bacteria being so important. To make liquid fuels from hydrogen and atmospheric carbon dioxide would likely require something like a biological reactor of bacteria that transport hydrogen in and export a liquid fuel. I saw he was a medic and saw some really bloody duty in Vietnam. And I like his arrogant style. His wife is a microbiologist. We're going to have great fun together.

The mechanism of conduction in graphite and nano-tubes is coupled oxidation/reduction that propagates like dominos. That is also the key to the structure of benzene. Chemists don't know their asses from holes in the ground.

The relationship of labor to production has been highly perverted by low wages in foreign countries. We need a minimum wage for the world to remedy the problem, around $12/hour.

I am for universal health, optical and dental care for everyone on the planet and ASAP. You have to size up the problem and then address it. I want to challenge every medical school in America to build a university hospital in a third world country both as a care giver and medical school. I see a much larger role for nurse practitioners, hoping they could even be surgeons. We need to encourage males to be nurse practitioners and vets.

I don’t know what to do about the gun problem. I was raised with them and respected them and loved playing with them. But the number of gunshot fatalities in America is absolutely astounding, the fucking Wild West. Legalizing drugs will solve the gang and drug related gunfire. I’ve got to tell you this one Honey. When psychotic in December 2003 I bought a .410 Winchester lever action, $49, with nice engraved stock. A neighbor who was a Native paranoid schizophrenic was at my condo drinking beer with me. I had purchased a box of 25 bird shot. It was about 9 PM, dark out, and we went out on the back porch with the loaded gun. The first thing I did was shoot out a metal halide light on the back of the strip mall across the alley from me. Then he took a few shots. We came in and I shot out my 35” TV. I pumped about three shots into the CRT face. The last shot I took that night was putting at a 1.75 liter Monarch vodka I had placed on the corner rail top of the porch. I fired from the hip. Amazingly no neighbors called the police. I didn’t do anything dangerous as I never would when psychotic. The last thing you want to do if you are playing Jesus is injure another human. I considered it an Oscar winning stunt. The only thing I did when psychotic that was dangerous was drive in a reckless fashion a few times. I feel fortunate to not have an serious accident. The fastest I went was 95 but in town, on ice, with traffic signals it was quite dangerous and singularly so in comparison to anything I have ever done. I thought it was safe at the time due to delusional beliefs.
I want our children to attend public schools. Meeting with common people is an important part of education. Since I am hoping to assemble hundreds or maybe even thousands of PhD’s the Dryden School System will have some intelligent kids. I think high school calculus and physics should be taught by PhD’s.

I wonder what you want to do and where you want to live?

You know, I am on my 6th beer, I imagine you see the world very much like I do. I think the solutions I see are obvious and in the center of the road.

You'll find this pretty funny. When I was psychotic I thought I would be known as The Bold Ruler. I thought everyone would only refer to me as BR or Bold Ruler. I thought I would have a license plate BOLDRULER. It would enable me to never get stopped for speeding and would be the singular most distinctive license plate. Then all the high school students start getting replicas made. The cops are confused. You cannot pull over the Bold Ruler. I thought the planet earth would be renamed The Sovereign Empire of the Bold Ruler in recognition of my impact on the course of human affairs.

I want to put an end to gang violence. I want to do that by showing how a real man leads his life without ever being violent other than self defense. Jim Brown does great work in that respect.

Well my poetry is corny, and obnoxious, but also I can’t hold it back:


Oh Athena, of such sensual image
let me worship at your alters
each a manifold of Heaven
let me satisfy my animal desire
in shared passion and pleasure

Love,
David

PS You know if the opposition really requires it to get dirty think of the book you can make with our dialogue as part of it. You could use the unexpurgated version of my screen play with the porn, the n word, and my experience jerking off as a child, everything that would have embarrassed you or I. You could add your own creative work and scientific work and produce a large volume that might absolutely paralyze the world. Fuck all those stupid assholes on this planet. Take no prisoners. You and I could disappear in the present. Boy that would really be funny.

It was six weeks together. Annette was pregnant. Sex was so much more appreciated with also an intellectual perspective that was an important part of our unique and deep relationship. She got up with me now at 2 AM. Her habits had merged to mine. Those early mornings hours were always my best and now working with her alongside were richer and more productive than ever. It was 2:57 AM, the 17th of December. We were sharing a joint and our first cup of coffee. James Taylor was on.

“How did you really feel about how I came on to you?”

“The artistry was unmistakably but it was also torture, waiting to realize my lifelong dreams, of both a mate and Mother of our children and a realization of a lifelong of work in science and art.”
“You were well known to the string community for many years. But your work in the last eleven months was far and away your best work. It is even astonishing in many regards. We interpreted it as a crystallization phenomenon just like you recognized each new element of design episodically in time, as a sifting of order from disorder. I know it took you many years to figure things out.”

“Have I defeated entropy?”

“That’s precisely what you have done darling.”

“You know I would like to tag a lot of unattached female theoretical physicist when you are pregnant and recovering from pregnancy.”

“Would you actually be capable of doing that?”

“Of course not, just pulling your leg. I wanted to see if you thought men should act as honorably as women. I agree, they should, absolutely.”

“And besides you can always give me a blow job or hand job however pregnant you are.”

“I will always provide consummate physical pleasure for you darling. You know you are self depreciating in an unusual and humorous way, as if you find life a comedy and yourself a clown at times.”

“I agree with Benjamin Franklin, humor is the best medicine. Charles Krauthammer’s four determinants of mental health are to play, to think, to work and to love. I added to laugh and to compete.”

“Did you like my names?”

“Jenny and Mason were quite nice. I don’t like Corey. Do you like Manfred?”

“For a middle name it is OK.”

“Do you like naming things? I always get stage fright when I have to name something. Then an instant later an idea comes to me. I develop it a little and it is named.”

“UFPL&J and eMaam are genius.”

“I thought so to.”

“What do you think they will call your particle?”

“I hope the N-particle, as it is imprinted in my own mind. I fear they will call it the Deg particle. That would be somewhat embarrassing but not bad in comparison to a heart attack, a stroke, cancer or debilitating depression.”

11-4-2007 10:14 AM

How dirty do you want to get?

Hi again,

It actually could be quite effective if you utilized all data available to you. If that could include works I did when psychotic, like my phone messages to Monica, my works to Michael Ellis, my dialogue with you, and a super-partner relationship of your contribution it could be the seminal design. If everything I have done on
my computer is available it would be even funnier. Go in at night, drop the bomb, and disappear.

I haven't thought before about psychos like abortion doctor murderers and such but don't want to end up like the founder of Hustler, George Wallace, Martin Luther King or John Lennon. No one knows what I look like and I imagine you are not recognized. Are you so fed up with all this shit we have to deal with that you can fantasize like I do of just bombing the shit out of all those stupid bastards and disappearing?

In that scenario I would like to live up by Whitehorse or in rural Alaska or in the Adirondacks.

How stupid can people be: Intelligence is a function of socio-economics OR precisely the opposite, socio-economic status is a function of intelligence?

When you get right down to it everyone is really paralyzed in PC, even Lubos and my Mother. There should be an additional acronym IPC for Interpersonal Political Correctness.

Honey, lets just fuck everyone and disappear. You've got all the elements of design available to you, my contribution the key ingredient that you can weave into your magnum opus.

David

11-4-2007 11:12 PM

Batteries

Hi Annette,

I was a little drunk in the last email. I guess it would be like eloping. Do you want to elope?

I think I want to spend a lot of time on bioenergetics. I want to build a battery for vehicles. Bacteria and mitochondria are very interesting. Through the electron transport chain protons are pumped out of the cell leaving the interior net negative and the outside net positive. The interior negative charge tries to get as far away from each other as possible. It therefore lines the interior surface of the membrane. The positive charge on the outside is glued to the membrane to the electric field of the interior negative charge. Then a bacterium is a parallel plate capacitor, with energy stored in the electric field in the membrane. The membrane is about 100 Angstroms thick. The voltage is about 1 volt.

Charge separation is a phenomenon that as far as I know only occurs in biology. There are no experimental chemical systems where charge separation occurs.

Excess charge just blasts through other atoms and molecules. That is a key principle.

How do you get energy out of this system? The only thing I can think of is you let in a proton and accelerate it to a kinetic energy of 1 eV. H2 is the highest energy bond in biology at 4.33 eV. The AMP, ADP and ATP bonds are around 1 or 2 eV. So I imagine a proton pore is a linear accelerator, producing a 1 eV proton.

There is an idea that permeates both chemistry and physics about energy barriers, energy wells and energy surfaces. All these ideas are irrelevant to the real problem and stupid science. ADP and a phosphate are bound to the protein by electrostatic interactions at the active site of the protein complex in a precise geometry. A 1 eV proton collides into that
system driving the up hill reaction and a red/ox couple, in that process converting kinetic energy to chemical bond energy.

I haven’t worked on any of this hard yet. But I see three intriguing elements of design: membranes, protons and phosphate polymers. I see the key physics is capacitors and linear accelerators.

I really can’t tell how big the conspiracies are. There seem to be a lot of dumb shits that believe in nonsense. On the other hand it seems the science should be rather mature 102 years after Einstein and many people should be in on the deepest level.

Action potentials are flux of K+ and Na+ across membranes. And Ca++ also goes through membrane pores. These are related at the phenomenological level to proton flux across membranes. So I am also interested in those phenomena.

I think I have more in my arsenal than Howard Roark, Hank Rearden and John Galt. But Atlas isn’t going to shrug.

For when I pick you up at Ted Stevens International Airport I have selected Frank Sinatra.

David

11-6-2007 2:50 AM

?

Dearest Annette,

Maybe it is not possible to overturn Einstein and QM. If that is the case what I am going to do?

Love,

David

11-6-2007 3:22 PM

I hope the answer is yes

Dearest Annette,

Lubos had a post on Maxwell a few days ago so I asked two questions:

Does Gauss’ Law for the electric field apply to the electric field surrounding an electron? What is the displacement current made of?

LM: Dear David, Maxwell’s equations apply everywhere - you must just avoid places where quantum mechanics and other forces become too important, e.g. extremely close to the electron. The displacement current is a term in an equation. The question what it is made of is analogous to the question what is the number Pi made of. It is made of pure spirit combined with Maxwell’s heritage.

David Martin Degner | Homepage

Although I would like to point out the potential energy in the Schrödinger equation uses Gauss’ Law without any modification after he addressed me as Dear I am not able to make any more posts. I imagine “made of pure spirit combined with
Maxwell’s heritage” is a compliment of my work and also an assessment of theoretical physics in the 20th Century.

I have noticed some non-random elements in Lubos’ blog. Three that pop to mind are Lucky, U(8192) and 2 or 3 or 4 or 5.

I like Bob Park’s WN and make replies from time to time. He usually responds in a highly humorous fashion. Here’s what I sent last Friday:

**BB Kings birthday was coming up. As a special surprise his wife got each of her buttocks tattooed with a letter B. On BB’s birthday she bent over, pulled down her panties and showed her tattoos to BB as a surprise.**

“Who is Bob” he responded.

Dean Dripscol, a friend of mine up here for many years told me that one and I thought it was pretty funny. I always have a few typos. The correction should be:

**“Who is Bob?” he asked.**

Dean is Irish and drinks a lot and got married for the first time at 51. We are the same age. We dropped out of touch last fall. He has an encyclopedic knowledge of music and trivia. He can recite the Fibonacci sequence faster than I can. He tried calculus in college but couldn’t pick it up and dropped out of school and hitch hiked to Alaska. He is highly anal retentive and has a sister who is a certifiable obsessive compulsive. He is a water treatment plant operator on the Slope for BP. He has such an extraordinary memory and stores only junk it is astonishing. I wonder what it would be like to have such a brain. I am planning to build artificial trout streams around Cayuga Lake and get cold water below the thermo cline for refrigeration and fresh addition of water. About 90% of the current in those streams will be recycled. I am planning to put them in a beautiful park like setting with nice landscaping. There will be small cabins at each. People will come like to a vacation cottage and camp out and enjoy the environment. The fishing will be catch and release, barbless single hooks only, ultralight spinning and fly fishing. They will be open year around because the Cayuga Lake water will be a heat source in winter. I am going to offer Dean a job managing those water resources. Some of the cabins will have bunk beds and sleep 8. They will be an ideal place for a bunch of high school students to get a few kegs and have some fun. There will be California kings in some for couples. I am going to especially encourage high school couples to enjoy them and newlyweds. The cottages will have running water and showers.

Since each stream will be independent it will be possible to have a pure bred population that breeds in each. There are many rare trout that are being lost. I want to in my stream parks save all the gene pools in need of saving, like zoos with endangered species.

I think these stream collections will be successful economically as a new kind of theme park. The fishing is going to be extraordinarily good.

I also want to build an indoor trout stream in a giant greenhouse, possibly a plastic membrane. In the summer heat will be a problem with that. It will require ventilation. I want to study the complex ecosystem of the trout stream in this experimental setting. Little is known about many of the organisms, mostly insects, in this ecosystem. I’m going to call it the Bug House since there will be hatches going on throughout the year.
In the headquarters of DS&E on the ground floor entrance will be my collections of sports cars.

I want to hire my sister V as the executive secretary. She can handle all the payroll and accounting from her PC.

I would like to hire my brother to head up my hydrogen pipeline division but after what he has done to me that will not be possible. That is very sad. I can’t see how reconciliation would ever be possible.

I might want to offer graduate degrees in science and computer science. Right now my plan for organizational structure is a board of directors of which I am the chairman.

I would guess you 5’ 5.5” tall and 111 pounds. I would guess you are 33.75”, 26.25” 33.475”. This last comment here is also after 6 beers. Your Ideal Ratio appears to be .777777777…… I actually used to prefer .6666666666………… I hope I am not offensive and distasteful, somehow salvage both humor and respectability, and present my waggish Nature.

The only conclusion I can draw respecting my Mother is that she thinks I am nuts and delusional. She has never once asked how my work is going or given me a word of encouragement. It’s hard to know what to think about that. Fran Asad, my psychiatric nurse practitioner, whom I have seen for about 15 years AND half of that time was psychotic thinks the same as my Mom does, that I am delusional about my science and a crank.

It is difficult to stop drinking in my current circumstances. That does not bother me as much as the cigarettes. And that brings me to individual responsibility. It should seem that after what you have shown me I should have the strength to defeat both. But I have not done that yet. In the last 11 months the longest I have quit beer is 14 days and the longest tobacco 7 days. I can relate to Humphrey Bogart, Rod Serling, Yul Brenner, Bob Woodward and Oppenheimer as an artist or scientist using tobacco. I don’t want to suffer their fates. My Dad gave up the pipe at 55. He inhaled.

I have also been fat since 1984. It is quite remarkable how you are treated when fat as opposed to when physically attractive.

You know when you reject religion, your Dad and school in 5th grade it requires a certain calculation. That calculation is that they are all lunatics, some smart, the rest just plain stupid, like my teachers and most everyone I met. You might think that is surprising for a young man in the 5th grade. But it was so fucking obvious all that Jesus shit they tried ramming down my throat was pure nonsense, without any scientific reality, just complete religious fanatics. I couldn’t even imagine how such absurdity arose, and I don’t even think absurd was in my vocabulary at that time.

“You know Kevin she is both a geek and has a small ass. I actually never knew either.”

“I think all people are the same when it comes to sex.”

“Could she actually take down any older man not in love in the world?”

“Like a fox. But she only wants me. She actually showed me the spectrum of delight I would share with her in her cryptic emails.”
“Am I going to have to go before the congress as CEO of DS&E?”

“That baby’s all yours Kevin. They’re probably all smarter than you in using the language but your technical knowledge is far superior to those innumerates. We’ll go over the few principles everything has as its basis before all hearings. After that it’s just pulling the trigger. You’ve shot Dall sheep from 500 yards. You have a grizzly rug from your hunt on the Peninsula. You’ll be more than entertaining dealing with those dumb bastards.”

“The key element of design I already perceive is that the highest pay scale in DS&E is $260,000/year. How do you think I feel running this enterprise for such a paltry sum in comparison to other CEO’s?”

“How do you feel Kevin?”

“I think I’m worth a couple million annually.”

“What do you think of the Japanese who have a ratio of 5 in executive compensation versus assembly line workers?”

“I feel clean not being a millionaire but don’t expect others to share such humility. I give all my employees 51% of patent rights. Let’s boost your salary up to 2 million annually to be renegotiated every year.”

“It’s a deal. You don’t have to shake my hand.”

“What would you rather leave for your children, self-confidence, self-esteem, and maturity or 10 or 20 million?”

“That’s easy for you to answer but hard for everyone else. You know your children are going to be extraordinarily accomplished, hoping for a Gauss or Kasparov, and you in your relationship with Annette will probably have children smarter than either of you. I would suggest as Chairman of the Board you give yourself 2 million in annual compensation and that you give Annette as Group Leader Theory 2 million also.”

“Kevin I am looking forward to you being a wall of data in congressional hearings. You’ll have your wireless Excel and Power Point up for those dumb bastards. Remember when you told me about kicking to death a coyote you trapped. I want to trap those bastards and kick them to death.”

“I am looking forward to it.”

Back to reality:

“We’ll take California 20 over to the Redwood Highway.”

“X xxxx xx xxxx xxx xxxx xxxx xxxxxxx.”

“I’m becoming, how should I say this, excited, feeling a strong physical urge.”

“Give me your hand.”
I placed my hand in hers and she placed it on her stomach, then slipped my hand slowly into her pants over her panties. Her pussy was wet. I massaged her through her wet cotton briefs.

“Oh David, X xxxx xx xxxx xx xxxx xxx. X xxxx xxxx xx xx xxxx xxxx xxx.”

“I’m looking for a secluded pull off.”

“X xxxxx xx xxxx xx xxxx xx xxxx xxx, xx xxxx xx xx xx xxxxx, xx xxxx xx xx xx xx xxxx
xxx xxx xx. I withdrew my hand from her pants and took the wheel again as Heidi moaned. Her wetness on my finger tips turned me on. I put some Mozart on, down low. After a few miles, a few minutes, there was a small road on the right, Observatory Ridge. I turned right onto Observatory Ridge, a small, gravel, observatory access road. ¼ mile back I found a level, secluded spot, and parked.

A half hour later we got back on the California 20.

“Do you know I can feel attraction for you again now, xxxx xxxx x xxxxxx. That’s hard-wired right, no source of guilt, precisely the opposite, to exult in, to enjoy completely. We are off to a good start, xxxx xx xxxx X xxxx xxx. X xx x xxxxx xxx xxx.”

“I believe love can be based on, be defined by, six phenomena: friendship, intimacy, commitment, to cherish, to honor, and to respect.”

“I am on all six with you.”

“I liked your selection of six human attributes. They define completeness for me.”

“I’m over your six.”

“What are you thinking about right now?”

“Xxxxxx xx xxxx xxxxxxxx xx xxxxxxx. ”

“X’x xxxxx x xxxxx xxxxx, xxx X’xx xxxxx xxxxx xx.”

Love was simple, complete, symmetric, elegant, beautiful and of high utility. At 51 I had found it again. Thank you, God, Big Doggie, thank you, thank you, thank you so God damned much, it embarrasses my cynical view, it crowns my opus, finis coronat opus.

“Finis coronat opus.”

I marveled at the symmetry of Heidi’s last two exclamations and my two last thoughts. Poetry in motion. Xx xxx xx xxxx xx xxxx xxxxxxxxxx xxx xx xxx xxxx. I started a poem:

**Three Stops and Four Tops**

I xxxxx xx xxxx xx x xxxxxxx xxxxx, xxx xxxxxxx x xxxxx xx xxx xx xxxxx xx xxxxxxxxx. I xxxxx xx xxxx, xx xxxxxxxxxx. Xxx xxx xx xxxx. Xt xxxxxxx x
xxxx, xxx xxxxxxx x xxxxx xx xxx xxxxx xx xxxxxxxxx. I xxxxxxx xx xxxxx, xxx xxxxxxxx
Oh sweet, lovely Heidi, it doesn’t seem fair, xxx xxx xxxxxx, xxxxxxx I xxx xxx xxx one.

“Where would you like to stop for lunch, fast food OK?”

“How about a Pizza Hut or similar with all you can eat salad and pizza?”

“That’ll be easy to find.”

Another poem was coming to me. I realized the commitment attribute Heidi had made. I wanted to write a poem. It’s title would be Knowing.

I already know, you will always say yes to me,
I already know, you will always flow for me,
I already know, I’ll know you in every way,
How do I know, because I already know, you already know me too.

“Do you want to have children?”

“More than anything else.”

“Will you marry me?”

11-6-2007 3:38 PM

Although embedded in dialogue there is no uncertainty in my intent

Will you marry me?

11-9-2007 8:03 AM

My favorite part of the day, writing to you

Dearest Annette,

You are almost the only person in my life and certainly the only one of singular interest. You know me better than anyone else. You are the only one who knows me. And I wonder what you think of me?

You would know my strengths and weaknesses. You would know where I rank in physics and chemistry accomplishments.

If it is not true and you are not interested in me as a mate I guess I would just be very disappointed and have to set my goals on finding someone else highly intelligent and physically attractive. I wouldn’t be heart broken emotionally because we have not yet met and are safe and secure in this cyberspace. But it would really be a large disappointment.

The thing I find most attractive is your age. A woman at 48 is like a man at 54 in some ways. It is the last time to have children and still be in a normal cycle. It’s pretty clear woman were intended to have children up to menopause. I’ve looked at Don Imus and Larry King and having children with far younger wives at their age and especially do not want that, although if that is what I have to settle for I
would be able to do that. Life is best shared with someone your own age and with similar experiences.

The fact you are apparently the smartest female on the planet in your age bracket, or certainly one of a few, is of course just what I would like to settle for.

And you really are beautiful. The Greeks had all kind of ideals, the ideal building, the ideal sculpture. To share life with such human beauty is an ideal.

And also sexual beauty.

So for me to find you at this point in my life seems ideal for some very important reasons.

I was very athletic as a youth. I played flag football in 6th, 7th and 8th grades. We were Milwaukee Lutheran school champions all three years. I played offensive guard and defensive end. I did not make the team in softball or basketball but would go on the bus with the teams and sit in the stands as a fan. I started swimming competitively in 9th grade and was not very good at that age. By the end of 11th grade I placed 4th in the sectionals in the 50 free with a time of 24.3 seconds. In 12th grade I was the best swimmer on the team with a 23.6 the first meet of the year. A good high school swimmer today is around 22. The fastest anyone has gone is about 19.96. The 50 free is the fastest swimmer, the most explosive, up and down the pool once. You need to explode off the block, hit the water right, churn to the other end and nail your turn. I was 10-1 in the 50 my senior year. If I worked hard at it and in an intelligent regimen I could have been a good college swimmer. The very best in the 50 are my size but have even greater upper body strength. I turned over slower than others taking 16-17 strokes per length of the pool compared with a more typical 19-22 strokes. Swimmers make the best lovers and of the swimmers the one you want is the one who swims the 50 free (in my humble opinion).

I approached swimming like I approached school. Swimming practice is physically grueling. I was the tallest and most physically talented my senior year. I was also the laziest in practice. You have to try out to make the team and after a couple weeks the coach posts the list of those who made the team. The coach was a short little fuck only just out of college, had swam at IHS, went to UNC and swam there, and had a brother on the team who also was a little fuck. Neither was very smart but I think the younger one might have become a dentist.

Although I was the best swimmer on the team when the list was posted my senior year I didn’t make the team. The coach hated my guts and thought I was a bad influence. I explained the situation to my Dad and he came down to the coach’s locker with me there too and told him he was behaving like a tyrant. So he let me on the team. He once said in front of the team if he had my body he would be a national champion. In one of the last meets of the year I didn’t want to swim and was forced to so I dogged a race. That kind of competitive showing had the two coach’s so pissed off when I got to my locker they were trying to open it and throw all my stuff on the floor. I can’t remember if I threatened to punch the larger, older coach out but they got out of my way fast knowing I could drop both of them in seconds and that was the ignoble end of my high school swimming career. Some coaches are the most Neanderthal individuals conceivable.

Work habits are very important. I work in an episodic fashion. There will be a several week to several month highly engaged creative effort after which I reward myself for weeks to months with beer. Then I refocus on a new challenge. Being psychotic of course fucked things up pretty bad. But now sane I can see I am just about complete in my work, can see how it is cumulative and see all the pieces of
a lifetime of effort fitting together. There are two different types of work. Learning calculus from an instructor as opposed to figuring out what you don’t yet know. On the former I work at lightning speed with very few errors. I took the two hour final in physics at IUPU in 1987 in 42 minutes and got 197/200. The professor said I knew it was easy but this is ridiculous. I can answer those simple questions as fast as I can write. I know a lot of dumb people object to this but it is most important to learn fast and think fast while getting top scores of course. I have not had as rich an exposure as you have had to human intellect but consider myself a lot faster than anyone I have known. For doing creative, original work you get to let out that speed but only in episodes of discovery, episodes of crystallization, that are dispersed over many years. Those periods are breathtaking and the Natural reward for the effort made. So really I am the laziest person on the planet. I try to take the minimum number of steps required for any undertaking and I try to do them as fast as possible and I try not to have to do the same thing twice. Its fun to figure things out and only writing it up seems like work.

The project I am undertaking now is to produce a paper fit for publication in a scientific journal that will be the foundation for physics and chemistry. I finally have enough perspective to do that and hopefully to do it well.

3x10^8 m/5.29x10^11 m is the same dimensionless ratio everywhere physics is done in the universe. That’s pretty interesting.

I wonder what your ego is like. I know you must have a lot of pride, self esteem, self confidence, i.e. ego, to have accomplished what you have in life. Mine pretty much is I came, I saw, I conquered, take that you bastards. I imagine in thinking about it that a woman’s ego is realized in her man’s accomplishments to some extent. That seems Natural enough because women are more often in a supporting role rather than the leading role. Bill became president with stand by her man Hillary first.

When Hillary acts like a hawk it is almost too funny to take seriously. Of course the stakes are astonishingly serious. I imagine that the entire nuclear arsenal on the planet is now duds. I imagine that in a nuclear exchange the world could be divided into theaters that rely on modern communication to know what is going on in the other theaters. So after the buttons are pressed the outcome can be fabricated. I can just see Hillary and Vladimir, each addressing their country and telling the people how they were forced into all out nuclear exchange and how they had prevailed. That’s certainly the trap I would lay for the bastards if I was in a position to do that, for instance working at Los Alamos.

The nuclear physicists are in my estimation utter swine and we never should have built either a bomb or a nuclear power plant. The entire development should have been only for scientific research and of course isotopes in biology and nuclear medicine are essential undertakings. There is a series of lectures given by prominent older scientists before their death to be played after their death. I saw Teller’s when he was in his 90’s. He said he didn’t regret a thing and closed with the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle. The only way I, if in his position, could make that statement is if I knew I was fucking the bad guys so bad they will be sore for the rest of their lives. If I just built a lot of fucking bombs that would seem like the dumbest accomplishment possible.

I wonder if no one expected someone like me to come along. The Old Testament prophesized the coming of Jesus. I think the reason the Jews didn’t get on board is because they were the high priests, the ruling class economically and did not want to face brutality by the Romans. In a Revolution the chicken shits are despised. But I am not sure if in the theoretical physics game that was the expected resolution, as Lubos would say the goal is not to find a Savior.
I think I can now write a paper the cannot be denied publication

My nephew M is a junior in high school and taking physics. I have tried over the last 11 months to have a meaningful relationship with my Mother. I have finally realized that is not possible. Not only does she think I am nuts I don’t think she likes me as a person. I also have no relationship with M’s mother my sister V. Since it strikes me it would be great fun to correspond by email with M as he is learning physics and since neither my Mother or sister even think that is the case you can see how difficult and denigrating it is for me.

I think when I emerge on the world stage I will no longer maintain a communication with my Mother. Of course I will have no sibling relationships since they have all broken off relationship with me. And I am going to sue Cain for the money he stole from me. And I am going to turn him in for fraud for witnessing my fraudulent 1991 Permanent Fund Application. And God help me Honey, I am going to have to record his audio response. I want to get an expert in surveillance to do it for me. I am going to fuck Cain so bad for stealing my life savings he is going to be extraordinarily pissed off. You can’t even imagine what a horrible human being he is. This is going to be my little “fun” project.

I had loaned my truck out to an Iraq vet who I met when psychotic in August 2006 at API. He used it to ram a police vehicle and the truck was in impound for 6 months. When I got the truck back there was $3000 in repairs required. Since I had run out of my own funds paying off the credit card debt I had to borrow the money from my Mom. I also had other one time expenses, new stove, depleted physical stores from the periods of psychosis, and an IRS bill for $1200. She put me through the ringer for those funds and was unable to find any solution to my short term financial crisis. Just yesterday I harvested a nice crop. I will be able to provide for myself again now and when I look at what little value she perceived in me I want to have nothing more to do with her. She seems to behave that way just because she is stupid but I know I must be deluding myself about that. She really must find me a distasteful person, a delusional paranoid schizophrenic, a yuk.

Kevin took some photos of me and my condo that I will send tomorrow or later today. Kevin thinks I am probably nuts, but also thinks I am very smart and that if what I am producing is correct it might appear as it has appeared, i.e. as crackpot science. He has no comprehension of the complexity I deal with daily. I told him you wanted to fuck me and were communicating in cryptic little emails. He didn’t seem to acknowledge that could be real but Kevin is non-judgmental almost to impassivity.

You know how I want to emerge from my past? Smelling like a rose.

Love,
David

PS Checked and this email took 203 minutes to compose. I also had coffee, took a shower, flossed my teeth, did the dishes and made breakfast in that time.

11-9-2007 8:33 AM

Amazon.com Sales Rank: #4,291,643 in Books

One copy of my book The N-particle Model has been sold on Amazon. I even know who it was sold to. It was sold to a woman who got interested in me through eHarmony. We communicated by email quite a bit before she told me
she had herpes. Of course that's death to me. I guess I would make an exception for you in respect of a life long commitment. If you have not sold any books you are unranked. So I know about how many books are in Amazon. And I know how many get added over time. I wonder if those who have sold exactly one copy is degenerate for long. I am definitely the tail dragger. I'm sure you have seen the 5 star review by Celeste L. M. Joy. It's beyond hilarious.

My music this morning has been Beethoven's 9 symphonies.

11-9-2007 8:45 AM

You've got to check this out!

Rae Ann who accused me of having a small penis on the RF has the following blog:

http://viciousmomma.blogspot.com/

Scroll down and check out the October 19th post.

11-10-2007 1:15 PM

o, o, o, Honey, I can't take anymore!

Dearest Annette,

You have probably detected a little schizophrenic behavior regarding me and my relationship with my Mother. I received a birthday card from her yesterday. The dear doesn't have a mean bone in her body. I never really had much of a relationship with her when my Dad was still alive. When I called it would always be a little awkward for her and I to talk and she would just put my Dad on the line. I realize an astonishing thing about my Mother is she doesn't care if I am a great physicist or an utter fool. She loves me either way as if it is even irrelevant. I think Jewish Mothers are a little different in that regard and are even notorious for being involved in their male children's intellectual development. My Mom just made pickles and cooked great meals. And what would you really rather have, a great dinner or some jive about Shakespeare? And to be honest, I know I am right but she can't know that, so I have to be large enough to be treated as a crank, even by my own Mother.

Do I appreciate the magnitude of everything? I think I have a pretty good handle on the essential elements. I had to take out string theory as a charade. All scientists worth anything can see that is pure bullshit. I see it as pretty funny people who believe in SR, GR and QM know ST is a charade. That is a nice design element. And I had to take out SR, GR and QM, but treating those as believable and acknowledging many people do believe in those theories, those after all are the paradigm's I am replacing with truth. I didn't touch anything in the Los Alamos goals and addressed the nuclear threat as real and outlined The Sands of Time as the solution although I would find it hard to believe Los Alamos hasn't laid a trap for the idiots who run our country and our world. The current Iraq War reinforces the need for that. I imagine the German chancellor, the physicist, is doing W so bad in the ass it is comical.

So the stakes are astonishingly high but I am 55 years old and look forward to emptying my bomb bay. I think I could be a charismatic leader and the strongest possible proponent for reason. I guess I will have a lot of celebrity and will always need to choose my words and compose my thoughts carefully in all public discourse. Then again maybe I could be reclusive and my writing alone will do
the work. By Nature I think I would prefer that but also love to talk and express myself and my opinions and think I could be highly effective as a public leader, picking my openings for radio and TV spots and writing editorials. I think I have the moral and intellectual high ground and when people recognize me for my accomplishments I will be able to say just what I think about everything and be listened to. Some will find me a racist, some an Anti-Semite but I can put an end to that fast. I am really glad I didn’t use the n word. The PC respecting use of the n word is the highest achieved in a linguistic phenomena of our society. Astonishingly no one seems to realize the biological basis of man. The blacks are in a total state of denial about biological reality as are American Natives. DS&E Human Husbandry Division to the rescue. I really should impregnate all women on the planet as an act of improvement for the species. The average IQ would increase by 25 in short order. And I would only have to do it once. Can you step in the river once? Can you step in the river twice?

That’s all pretty funny but in 10 or 20 years I'll bet over half of pregnancies are with sperm from sperm banks. There should be an ethical marketplace and I wonder if Universal Health Care will cover the cost. It will be the best investment a Mother can make.

I wonder what the Catholic Church will say. It would probably be pretty easy to get some of those priests to be sperm donors, just have some young boys in the confessional with them.

If there is anything I can do to avoid having to write up more science I would do it. It boars me to tears to have to write up science right now, but it is also a challenge and will give me a project for the next month or two. I am really for the first time in a position to do that effectively.

I named my homepage Chain Reaction. That hasn’t happened yet. If that could happen and save me from having to work anymore that would be welcome.

I hope you saw that clip on vicousemama. I thought it was hilarious. My brother Dan was gay, very handsome and a very good waiter. When he was down in Key West he would put a little squeezing ring at the base of his dick so he had a semi-hard on. Then he would wear short gym shorts for lunches without underwear and have his dick kind of half hanging out. I'll bet the actor in that clip, Peter, is gay. They have that peculiar humor to do stuff like that, especially to older straight women.

If it is not possible for me to conquer the world being you’re live in gigolo, doing the cleaning, shopping, cooking for you at your place in Cambridge looks pretty entertaining. I could watch Martha and Oprah each day and tend to the domestic duties. When we have children I could take care of them all day while you are teaching physics, and prepare a nice breakfast for you every morning before you go off to work and dinner for you every evening when you return. You could say you got sperm for your children from a sperm bank and please refer to me as Ms Dartière. We could get a breast milking machine so I could give a bottle of your breast milk to the babies while you are at work and can’t nurse. When your fellow faculty and graduate students come over I could spend two or three hours in the kitchen preparing the spread. I could serve the drinks. You could tell them all I am retired carpenter who became your Nanny. To be honest that looks like a lot of fun.

I asked Bob Park how he liked my BB King joke. He responded: “That’s pretty subtle.” I don’t think he got it at first. I had to ask how he liked it to find out if he got it. Maybe I should call it the o particle instead of Ö particle. Then I could start
with that joke as my introduction to the o particle. And I could close with “o, o, o, Honey bunches that hurts?”

The design possibilities appear limitless but not infinite.

Love,
David

PS Just read part of D. Gross’s summary of the 1938 get together of theoretical physicists in Warsaw, the last before the war. Lubos had a link to it.

11-11-2007 10:32 PM

Skunked

Dear Dr. Dartière,

Since my efforts to arouse you seem to have left you semi-comatose I’ll have to stop now.

It’s been fun.

I am going to write a good paper and try to get it published.

Maybe when I come in the front door I can catch that big one a fisherman dreams about.

Best regards,
David Degner

11-14-2007 11:25 AM

69. banks@amhr-club-of-texas.com

11-14-2007 6:13 PM

Gentle ryhmes of time

Hi Honey,

I’m glad I can keep communicating. I imagine you will be at my side for all the years to come.

I’m in pretty good shape. I can see what I want to say now in a good scientific paper. For various reasons, that I think where quite real, I have never before been able to write a good paper fit for publication in the Landscape of the present. I see how I can embrace SR, GR and QM as highly useful paradigm’s only needing to point out that they are not correct phenomenologically. So I illustrate the correct phenomenology, show the connections to current paradigm’s, and then develop the equations, starting with Newton’s Second Law and Einstein’s E = mc^2, then Gauss’s Laws.
I even see how I can take out the nuclear paradigm and the Yukawa meson
theory of nuclear interactions. I consider the theory of forces, that I had correct
in my books in 2000, the highest part of physics. They are the Arrow of Time.

I am going to start with E, B and hv. Then I will show g is an EM phenomenon.
I will point out E, B, hv and g are the windows into electrons, protons and
atoms. If you have the window closed you cannot perceive physical reality. (go f
yourself if you want to be stupid!)

The level of determinism is astounding. I think you boys call it light cone stuff.
No two collisions are identical. On spin axis and off spin axis absorption and
transmission as a function of precise geometry must be used to interpret such a
collision dynamic reality. Between those two statements lies the determinism
paradox.

With my new QM I will account for most of chemistry. In particular order,
organization and I, s and g phases. I will examine salts, metals and molecular
entities such as biological molecules. The greatest achievement will be to
understand protein folding. The attractive and the repulsive forces precisely
defined. I haven’t worked out all the geometry of those yet in terms of dipoles
and IR exchange and that actually is the first problem I want to work on when
emergent from this cocoon.

You’ll find this a little kinky. When I fall in love I want all my fantasies to be
about the woman I am in love with, you, not based on previous experiences. Now
programming your fantasies is to some extent possible and to some extent we are
trapped in our past, but not for the most stimulating fantasies. My new fantasies
are painting your procarpium, turning it from receptive red to glowing glistening
gold and palpitating to perfection in pleasurable pink.

My completed screenplay will be an asset when I achieve recognition. In my
scientific paper I do not need to point out ST is nonsense, only that it is wrong
because g is part of EM and QM is phenomenologically wrong. And when people
read my screenplay I can say it is fiction. I can be the ultimate ST piece of shit.

I think I can give up the tobacco soon. It is the only thing that really bothers me
a lot although I also know I have to stop drinking beer daily. When I gave them
up in 1986 I didn’t want another one until 2003. I have been at times a heavy
smoker and at time quit over the last four years.
I get this feeling I should put some more time in on the He vacuum spectrum. I have spent a lot of time on it over the years. I can’t recall when I last worked on it. The 54.4 eV part, thought to be He+, is really a two electron process of He at the H radii. The rest of the spectra is given by three places for all lines but one by \( \frac{5}{3} \times 24.6 + 13.6/n^2 \). You have the singlet doublet phenomenon that seems not hard to interpret, a down electron and single electron quark processes and two electron quark processes. Two electron processes seem required for the O spectrum too so I imagine that is a general theme. But red/ox are single electron processes albeit always coupled to another red/ox.

How would I interpret my intellect and achievements relative to my peers? Well of course that is a pretty complex question. At Einstein’s age of discovery I was working on the problem of life and considered the cell model I came up as a greater achievement then Einstein’s work. But I wasn’t right upstairs at the time and a year later was nuts. As soon as I discovered the N-particle I thought it should have been found around 1905. It would not surprise me if I can be the best chemist in history. In technical physics I doubt I could be #1 but did not have the head to head competitions as an undergraduate to know that. I have actually been thinking about the energy problem almost since 6th grade. I always realized the technological ascent of mankind was first the steam engine and then the internal combustion problem. I always saw fossil fuels as finite and polluting and a big long term problem. I have thought of every possible energy source and transformation process. I believe my small parabolic dish collector farms are the solution. I also believe my eMaam is the solution for both 911’s and Timothy McVeigh’s. I believe I am the seminal military and political strategist. I hope my screenplay will be a seminal work, not as a literary tomb, but as a political work. I think the highest arena of philosophy is politics and that I have aptly stated and named those goals. I hope it will capture the imagination of mankind and be irreversible in effect on history, the transition to UPJF&L. When you take all those diverse activities I think I may get singular recognition as a modern genius. Am I really a genius? You have a pretty good estimate of that. You know how many mistakes I make, how slow, but also fast, I am. You know I am the laziest rutting pig in history, albeit a sloth with grand deigns.

So Honey I guess what we are really looking at here is my shy German spirit of youth, meeting your modest bloom of womanhood, and I so look forward to immersion in the sensual and visceral and complete loss of intellectual decoy and caricature.
Invigorated, again, irrepessibly, I can only hope,

David

PS Oh Athena, pure Joy of Heaven, pleasures my goal, souls shared, entangled in bliss, Oh Zeus, pure Source of Reason (if not unreason), pleasure my goal, spirits merged, enmeshed in bliss …

11-15-2207 9:35 AM

Thinking bout my Honey

Hi Honey,

That He vacuum spectrum is given by $24.6 - 13.6/n^2$. I think that is just a coincidence like $he/4\pi^2 = 2.685 \times 10^{-54}$. I think I worked out the He spectrum perfectly at one time when I was psychotic and that the resolution of the problem was the correct mass defect determination. The He vacuum spectrum is all two electron processes. And its singlet-triplet, not doublet. I’m a little hesitant to undertake a rethink of the whole He problem now but it would also be an awfully nice result to have. I haven’t worked on it since sane this past year.

I know I have to do a nice job motivating Moseley’s Law and X-ray phenomena, most importantly X-ray diffraction. Since I know almost none of the X-ray diffraction technology, know it is based on Bragg’s Law, and that is the situation with much of my work, like also thermal phenomena, it requires a somewhat delicate treatment. X-rays and thermal photons are important parts of the EM spectrum and pretty straightforward to motivate with my QM.

I recall a Feynman’s quote on the wave/particle duality something like that the reality is it is neither and something not yet discovered.

I really am not technically competent anywhere. I need to point that out before ramming in and laying out a new theory of gases. I have only spent minutes thinking about the kinetic theory of gases, had forgotten even it was Maxwell’s work, and haven’t reviewed thermodynamics, although it is a rich source of empirical data. But my QM is quite a nice model and I need to do a really good job outlining it.

I am really getting a lot of good ideas now for this undertaking.
You know Honey I have to write to you frequently. It’s because I am so damned lonely. My loneliness was never before so acute as it has been these last 11 months sane. Of course when I first contacted you last February I didn’t know if I had a chance. I knew you knew I had the correct model and that gave me some confidence. I also knew what a nut case I had been and that would be unavoidable as part of any relationship. Since I have always thought my mental illness was due to a chemical accident and not genetics I believe I will give rise to very fine children. And I appreciated that it just might be possible for someone of your intellect to perceive all that. Now you are the only person who knows me, my Mom thinks I am nuts as do my siblings, Kevin probably thinks I am nuts but really is non-judgmental to impassivity and Nelson doesn’t know anything about my mental illness but realizes I am not recognized in anyway now although he doesn’t even understand anything about what I work on.

I am wondering about our “chemistry” when we meet? I am currently a fat pig. From what I can tell that is death regarding attractiveness to almost all attractive woman. But I know you know I will be able to lose all that weigh in 6 months and I will then be highly attractive. So when we first meet you will have to accommodate as best you can and that I am now a slob. And I can’t get on top until I lose about 30-40 pounds. That’s a little kinky.

When we appear on Oprah in about a year to year and a half I will be at 205 and looking good. I really do want you to nurse our child on the show. I think woman should be able to nurse children anywhere. And I think a Mother nursing her child is a beautiful sight. I know you might not want to do that and maybe it is just a childish fantasy, but I want to reach over and uncouple the support of your Paduasoy and bear your breast. Can you imagine the expectations about our children? One thing you can be sure about, they are not going to be spoiled. What if our kids wanted to be rock stars?

Although this seems surreal in that it is so different from the past I also feel you bared yourself to me to quite a large degree and you must be as real as everything else.

“So darling why don’t you write the fucking paper already so we can meet ASAP.”

“I am focused on that now Honey.”

“How fucking long do you think it will take you? You’re fucking work habits fucking leave something to be desired.”
“Four to five weeks, maybe six.”

“If you spent more time writing up your science and less fucking filling my fucking email inbox it would get done a lot fucking faster.”

“I am not only trying to write up my science I am trying to get to know you better and for you to know me better too. I am figuring out what this new reality means to me and how I should behave in response to it.”

“OK Dr. Freud, just hurry the fuck up. Do it like you have always done everything. Put together the pieces one at a time. Do a little very day, more on some days, take a break, then get back to it. In no time it will be looking good. All you have to do when finished is email it to me and I can see you get published in an appropriate journal.”

“What are you going to do after writing to me today?”

“I was thinking of having a few beers.”

“What time is it?”

“7:30 AM, I have been up since 2.”

“David do you see a fucking problem with fucking drinking beer at 7 AM in the fucking morning?”

“Not really.”

“Do you fucking know why you drink?”

“To be relieved of the oppression of thought.”

“OK wise guy, what are some of the other reasons?”

“As a reward when feeling good and having gotten something accomplished. To laugh. To relieve stress. To get to sleep. And less often when feeling bad to feel better.”

“How often would you like to drink when we are together?”

“Once or twice a week, maybe less”

“Could you fucking do that?”

“I think I can.”

I see now what I have to do respecting 20th Century physics. I have to run through the china shop and not break a single piece. In the past I always wanted to break every piece. After me that shop will become a museum.

Leon Lederman stated QM is the best scientific theory ever and underlies 30% of the world economy. I wonder if he really believes that. Also Roald Hoffman appeared impossibly stupid and told me my work, he was sorry to say, felt like crank stuff. I am going to have to operate under the assumption everyone believes QM is overwhelmingly right, proven and true although I find it
astonishing anyone who has thought seriously about a scientific problem could buy into that pile of horseshit.

Love,
David

“You’re on the right track here darling. You can’t act like a paranoid. Your screenplay will make end up making them all paranoid. It is going to be the greatest comedy in history. You should be dropping that bomb on them shortly after your paper is published in Science.”

“Will you be able to edit the graphics?”

“Got people who love doing that. But we want you to do them all with your extra fine point Lamy in black ink. Just spend a little more time with them so you can achieve a nice artistic depiction.”

“No one wants to change a word you write. Then also you realize your control as artist. We can always do better graphics and even add some. That would be normal.”

“You know Honey until you came into my life I lived only for the prospect of meeting someone like you. That was subordinated to my scientific struggle for recognition since I had completely given up on finding a mate without recognition.”

“You know you are like an arranged marriage. I’m like a bachelor on the frontier who advertised in an Eastern paper for a bride, offering myself as a hard worker who is going to forge a good life out of the wilderness.”

“This is terrible Honey but beauty is essential to me to have in a woman. No matter how smart a woman is if she isn’t physically attractive, and by that I mean beautiful to me, I don’t consider her for a second. Are you that way too? It seems rather ordinary a biological phenomenon and inspires mankind’s best art, poetry and sculpture.”

“You really are irresistible David.”

“The highest level of determinism is finding a love like ours. But the pathway to our meeting seems so improbable, so stochastic. Then again it only took me 40 minutes once I opened Sears and Zemansky 4th ed to the definition of the electric field to have the tiger by the tail.”

“You know Elsa, that amazingly attractive chemical engineer I was in school with as an undergraduate didn’t have a child until she was 42. Susan Sarandon didn’t have children until a similar age and then had several. Also Kathy Gifford who married a disgusting piece of male puke. I can kind of see how a woman of high ambition and high standards could get to your age without being married and without children. I am not nearly as interested in how that came about as I am in reveling in the pleasure of discovering you without children and even without a previous marriage can only be some kind of miracle.”

“Do you think your lifelong dreams are like mine although different too?”

“I do think that.”

“Are you going to be like a virgin after 23 years without a relationship with a woman?”
“Honey they say you never forget how to ride a bicycle. I might need training wheels.”

“Oh gosh darling you are such a fucking reclamation project I must be Mother Theresa.’

“That’s awfully romantic.”

“How big is your beer belly exactly? Is it huge?”

“It’s not huge, but it’s not just a little paunch either. I can lose 10 pounds a month without any problem so will be down below 220 in 6 months.”

“My new fantasy is going to be me doing the Michelin Man or the Pillsbury Dough-Boy. David you would not believe the things women have to go through in life.”

“I am grateful to God for your mercy.”

11-15-2007 9:43 AM

RF post. Does it mean I am permanently trapped in adolescence?

Cat fight on the RF. That little cinder of bliss Cynthia and that frustrated bitch Rae Ann. Cindy still has a sex life, Rae Ann is always embarrassed buying KY and zucchinis. Rae Ann has no functional brains in science whatsoever but Cynthia appreciates obscure minutia of mathematics and has insights into string theory that are astounding.

Girls I couldn’t resist this, I apologize to you both.

David Martin Degner | Homepage | 11.15.07 - 7:23 pm | #

Older men gobbling up younger women is biologically pernicious and very offensive. It is the primal behavior of animals. It treats woman like possessions rather than equals. All societies that permit it and promote it should be condemned.

David Martin Degner | Homepage | 11.15.07 - 7:31 pm | #

11-15-2007 9:53 AM

I have been thinking about sticking a good one in her ass for awhile

After that comment Rae Ann made about my dick size back in July I have been looking forward to this. Gosh Honey, I am so juvenile and horrible. The liquor store is about to open.

11-16-2007 12:18 AM

How could anyone write so many fucking emails?

“What did you do today darling?”

“After emailing you Nelson and I went shopping and after that I drank beer and then passed out. My work for the day was completed when I got the Roma tomatoes and cucumber at Fred’s.”

“Are you drinking beer again now?”
“I’m on #6.”

“You’re not worried are you?”

“Not really. I have never known anxiety sane. As near as I can tell my drinking has no deleterious biological consequences, no physical damage, but the excess calories are a problem.”

“Do you ever get exercise?”

“Not since getting on Prolixin in 1984. Before that I always got good workouts. After that I got none. Also I got fat. They both correlate to getting on the Prolixin.”

“Then the reason you are fat is also you get no exercise in addition to the carbs of a dozen Budweiser’s daily?"

“I used to love working out. In Berkeley I would go up in Tilden Park and run the ridge peak trail each dawn. Up on the peak, looking out over the Golden Gate Bridge, at 5 AM was an exhilarating experience.”

“Do you think the Prolixin has something to do with the transition in your life from high physical exertion to couch potato?”

“It’s a factor to be sure. But the associated behavioral modification of drinking daily and its caloric impact is also there.”

“A lot of people change as they age. So that’s a factor too. What kind of exercise would you like to get?”

“A daily brisk walk of three to four miles in the country. I haven’t been able to run since getting fat, or ride a bike. I used to love both. I was actually a pretty good climber as a youth, negotiating some incredible gorges fishing for trout. At Cornell as an undergraduate I always took the stairs down two at a time. With excess weight I lost the flexibility and balance I used to have. I hope I can get it back and am sure I can although I know also I am 55 not 25.”

“I would actually also prefer a brisk daily walk. Through one of your headwater gorges in Upstate NY would be most preferred. I’m sure you will feel quite athletic, albeit not a teenager, when you lose weight and lead a healthy lifestyle.”

“I like a vertical challenge. Are there good hills in Upstate NY?”

“Some of the best. You’re going to love it.”

“You know Honey I used to fuck on the floor, in back seats of cars, on the grass outside, and now I am thinking of having sex with you, out on a trail by a stream, at 6 AM on our morning hike, on the grass along side the trail.”

“Would you need Viagra for that?”

“It embarrasses me to say, but I think I would.”

“Do you think the confluence of everything in your life resulted in your ability to be a consummate artist, almost as if a conspiracy of circumstances?”

“It’s kind of strange but that’s how it seems to have worked out.’
“What is the most deterministic behavior in the physical universe and why?”

“Protein folding. 25 or 50 thousand atoms arranged as a perfect crystal.”

“Do you know the highest evolved protein?”

“RNA polymerase in prokaryotes and RNA polymerase I in eukaryotes.”

“Why is that?”

“It’s the head of the Turing Machine. It interprets time in biology. It does that through my NAM and TC transcription mechanism.”

“What’s it like to be as smart as you are?”

“I’ve sure had a lot of time to think about it. Almost miraculously the environment has propelled me to be a genius on demand. Of course you know my error rate and in front of you I am not a genius. I feel like a mature Matisse or Hesse, but I am going to kill Hitler and not have to use the Luger on myself.”

“You’re really going to like the modern communication and illustration potential of physics in 2007. Models of your atoms in nice animation will be on all the major media shortly after you publish. Do you really want me to nurse Mason or Jenny on Oprah?”

“I am taking your Paduasoy down Honey. Everyone on the planet is going to see your turgid breast. Remember my Mother is from dairy farmers.”

“Just don’t stick your hand under my skirt and tickle my clit on air.”

“You know darling, I see what an absolutely astonishing asshole you are planning to be. I have been hanging out with those wimps and sycophants in physics for what seems like an eternity. I’m glad you have got the domain name The Bold Ruler. As the woman behind the husband who plans to be asshole #1 on the planet I feel completely emancipated from previous prejudice.”

“I knew you were a whore for me.”

“I like being your whore darling.”

“And likewise your master Honey.”

“Do you think you can actually drive evolution with sperm collection only?”

“Couldn’t be simpler. When your average dumb bitch realizes she could give rise to an Einstein just by using my catalog we will rapidly evolve.”

“Are you going to have gay sperm donors?”

“No fucking way, those queer bastards have to emerge naturally, by some kind of mix up in the DNA mechanics and dynamics, not by catalog purchase.”

“How big do you think dicks are going to get?”

“I haven’t decided how I want put it in the catalog but no doubt it will be one of the most sought after traits.”

“I could call my sperm bank Dicks and Cunts by Design but of course will use appropriate euphemisms.”
“In one generation we could have an average IQ of 125 and an average dick length of 7 inches.”

“The women will be chosen to be multiply orgasmic.”

“You have got to stop this shit David, I am dying of laughter.”

“Seriously though, it requires the wisdom of Solomon.”

“It requires maturity and stability and also honesty about biological experience. At 55 I have a lot of insight into biological experiences. I have had the chance to interpret a lot of human behavior. As humans we seem so often to deny our true Nature.”

“I’m tired darling, got to go.”

“Talk to you tomorrow.”

“Honey bunches.”

“Of love.”

11-16-2007 7:15 PM

Day 1

“Do you think the drinking is becoming a problem?”

“I’m afraid it is. Denial is apparently a part of alcoholism. I’ve basically been drunk since coming out of psychosis in August 1984 and have drunk beer since age 14. It’s about the problem of time. Drinking is a way of killing time. Why would I want to kill time? Do I not really enjoy life?”

“What can I do?”

“Not too much. It requires individual responsibility. But you’re being in my life does provide a lot of good motivation to be responsible. I’ve had a secret fear that I am going to lose the battle and auger in. After 4 or 5 days of sobriety I feel good and get good sleep again and feel I can easily defeat it. Then around 4 or 5 in the afternoon the temptation to drink comes over me. If I can just get through those few hours late in the day I can succeed.’

“Do you ever feel trembly or get any physical withdrawal?”

“Nope. I get depleted of mental energy due to the sleep perturbations. I feel almost suicidal at points and a fear comes over me I won’t be able to obtain recognition and that the light at the end of the tunnel is a delusion. The only remedy is sleep but often my response has been to drink more.”

“There are two levels of drinking, once a day and twice a day, about 12 beers each time. Twice a day I term destructive drinking because you feel like shit so much and I am just about disabled when I do that. That’s what I did yesterday. I followed up writing to you in the morning with all day drinking. Then got up at 9 PM, felt like shit and started drinking again, and wrote you the second email. Once a day is what I have mostly done all these years and I can get my work done at that level.”
“Do you embarrass yourself when drunk?”

“Not too bad. It’s mostly just been with you. It doesn’t embarrass me to show you what I am like when drinking. You might even be able to psychoanalyze the change in intellect and see into my real interior. Just thinking about that has aroused my sense of humor for the first time today Honey.”

“You know darling you can probably knock out a pretty good paper in less than two weeks even drinking once a day. Are you going to drink today?”

“I’m planning on not drinking but have made that plan before and broken it. Knowing how much better I will feel tomorrow morning if I don’t drink is motivating.”

Three hours later.

“I’m determined to quit drinking Honey.”

“You’ll be feeling a lot better tomorrow. I think the loneliness and isolation of your journey and especially now with almost no support would drive almost anyone to drink.”

“What do you do to relax? Do you like to read or watch TV?”

“I read the RF and watch Bill O’Reilly but mostly just listen to music and think. Drinking at the end of the day was always how I let go and could stop thinking and laugh.”

“Is it hard for you to imagine what it will be like to emerge from this trial and be together?”

“It is so different than my current reality and such a transition from many years alone it will be quite an adjustment, probably like getting released from prison.”

“It’s not that far away. Keep that vision in your mind.”

“Think about me.”

“Good night Honey.”

11-17-2007 12:01 AM

70. commanding@gallivantingtravel.com

11-17-2007 10:50 AM

71. ekenndy2@dabyzsoft.com

11-17-2007 2:19 PM

Today better than yesterday

“How’d you sleep?”

“I lay in bed over 4 hours before getting to sleep. Then I only got 3 or 4 hours of restless sleep. It’s par for the course. But that’s better than if I had drank.”
“Where you actually depressed yesterday?”

“Yes although induced by the drinking, a hang over more or less as opposed to the chemical imbalance kind. I really don’t get depressed.”

“How are you feeling now?”

“Not bad, much improved over yesterday but still a little ways to go. It takes 4 to 5 days to fully recover from drinking and get a good nights sleep.”

“My goal when I got up this morning was to quit the cigarettes today. But I am about to light one up now with coffee. Smoking actually just about terrifies me and it does depress me to be addicted to nicotine. When I floss my teeth I ask myself why even bother if you are smoking. I know I can beat it but not quite yet but also only a day or two or three more and I will get through a day without a smoke. The first day is the hardest. The first three hard. After that it is not too bad. In 2003 I was diagnosed with emphysema. I had quit cigarettes for 18 years but had been a heavy pot smoker. I exhaled 60% of my volume in the first second and for my height and age it should have been 77% so that looked pretty bad. The X-ray said COPD. It had come on rather rapidly since I blew an 80% a couple years earlier. My oxygen level was always normal even in the tread mill test. I quit smoking pot for 6 months. I had a number of asthma attacks that required ER visits and nebulizers. I went in for PFT after 6 months and then blew a 74%. The asthma and emphysema cleared up even though both are not supposed to do that. The doctor told me emphysema could only be confirmed through biopsy. You don’t recover from emphysema so I apparently don’t have much although I have heard all cigarette smokers have some emphysema. The level of anxiety associated with an asthma attack is astonishing. Sitting in the waiting room of the pulmonary physician with a lot of people on oxygen thinking I had emphysema is a memorable experience. I attribute my lung problems back then to be due to mold and also the pot smoking. There is mold associated with the humid indoor growing environment. You’d think it would be impossible to smoke after those experiences. When psychotic I though cigarettes had been made safe by taking out all the chemical pathways that lead to carcinogens.”

“How much do you smoke?”

“Roll about 25 Bugler’s a day.”

“You’ll be able to give them up soon, maybe tomorrow. Just take it one day at a time. How did your marijuana crop turn out?”

“Excellent. I got 13 ounces so have some to sell. I smoke about ½ ounce a week.”

“Do you think you will always smoke pot?”

“I think I will. I don’t think it causes cancer or emphysema although the question of emphysema is unresolved. There’s confusion about both issues. Most people don’t realize what smoke is chemically and equate all smoke with pulmonary disease. But that is wrong from the standpoint of chemistry.”

“Have you given up on trying to communicate with your Mom?”

“I have. It is not possible to have a meaningful relationship with someone who thinks you are nuts and delusional. I have noticed a lot of spoiled children think of their parents as friends. I never had that kind of relationship with either of my parents although I always enjoyed my Dad’s company. I pretty much gave up on my Mother in 3rd grade and only tried to have more of a relationship with her since coming out of psychosis in April 2004. She actually insults me by not responding to any of the issues I bring up. I guess I was right in 3rd grade. I do send her very nice hand crafted cards for Mother’s day and her
birthday that she really gets a kick out of. She and my sisters seem incapable of empathy that is in marked contrast to their demeanor or self image. It seems cruel to me but I know they don’t look at it that way. It’s hard to know what they really think. My family has treated me like warm shit the whole way through my life since being diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic in August 1984. Not only did they refuse to support me financially my brother in law and brother took advantage of me financially. I guess you can see my portrayal of my family in the screenplay is my ideal and how I will treat our children, not the actual experiences I have had in life.”

“Fran Asad, my psychiatric nurse practitioner is like my Mother. The first thing you have to do to understand someone is to understand their intellect. You need to interpret their talents and abilities, their strengths and weaknesses and the environment they are embedded in. Fran thinks I am a delusional crank. Then she has no insight into me, into the complexity of the issues I deal with, into the situation I find myself. Dumb people can only draw conclusions by stereotypical analysis. They are incapable of perceiving the intrinsic qualities of an individual. The stereotype of being a paranoid schizophrenic is singularly the worst possible. I am looking forward to suing Fran and Southcentral Counseling for the neuropathy in my feet. On the Zyprexia I went from 247 to 342 in a year and a half and my blood sugar went from 77 to 151 without an intervening test. I slept 17-18 hours a day and drank a case of beer daily. At the end of that period I was suicidal again. The neuropathy bothers me quite a bit when I lie in bed awake but mostly I just worry about it getting worse. I haven’t had a blood sugar level since spring 2006 and since I am still obese I worry about that. Sometimes the neuropathy seems to be a little better and sometimes a little worse it’s that kind of phenomenon. As a result of Fran having no insight into me she is also incapable of seeing that I am psychotic when I am even though it looks obvious to me. It is really malpractice in my estimation but admittedly my case is complex and I am more often grateful not to have been in a dangerous accident when psychotic and ended up in jail and still psychotic. Since I was a Jesus like character when psychotic I of course had no intent to ever hurt anyone.”

“You know what really matters now is for you to not drink and smoke.”

“I do know that.”

“How are ideas for your paper coming along?”

“Good. I realize the dimensionless numbers, the number of N particles in an electron, the fine structure constant, the number of cycles in a photon with energy of an electron and c over the Bohr radius with seconds dropped are very special. I know why they have to be the same number wherever physics is done irrespective of the units used for mass, length and time locally. I can illustrate what they mean phenomenologically and can derive each and prove those derivations mathematically by showing they reduce to identities. I can derive the mass of the N particle two or three ways. I’m going to start the paper by stating the SM hypothesis of photons mediating the EM forces is wrong. Then in a few minutes of creative vector analysis I will show what electric, magnetic, photon and gravity fields are made. That will falsify the photon hypothesis in the SM and the inclusion of gravity in EM will falsify GR. Then in the next paragraph I am going to go into the mechanism of the electron and derive the elementary quantum of charge and show the meaning of the fine structure constant. Then I am going to point out electrons appear as points because they are liquid phase and have zero thickness. Then I am going to do H and the H spectrum, then the hydrogen molecule and higher atoms. Clearly spelling out the forces and force balance on electrons and protons is going to be highlighted as the Arrow of Time.”

“It looks like it is shaping up nicely.”

“All atoms and molecules have dipoles and these are the attractive forces that condense them into liquids and solids. They do that by negative patches getting close to positive
patches that simple mechanism being the self organizing force. Helium has the smallest dipole and the hydrogen molecule the second smallest. The repulsive forces are thermal photon exchange. You can determine the amount of energy in the dipoles from the heat of vaporization. I think you can determine the amount of thermal photons from the entropy, \( dQ_{\text{rev}}/dT \), although I haven’t done that calculation yet. The thermodynamic data should allow all down quark and up quark angular energies to be known. Water has far and away the highest heat of vaporization. Only the F-H bond is shorter and more polar than the O-H bond. The dielectric constant of water at 80 is also quite interesting.”

“How are you feeling right now?”

“A little ragged with only 3 or 4 hours of sleep. Pretty bad actually.”

“Just concentrate on not drinking again today. That will be success for the day. Can you do that?”

“I can.”

“Is your sense of humor still subdued?”

“It is. It’ll take a good night sleep to feel fully OK again.”

“I know it is a pretty big challenge to give up drinking, give up smoking and write the seminal TOE but you’ve responded to the challenges you needed to face up to in the past. Every day of sobriety you’ll feel better. Since I am now the only one in your life you can lean on me.”

“Thanks Honey. Changing subject, have some of my remarks about sex been offensive and in poor taste?”

“Some have been offensive and in poor taste to me but not too bad. I realize the deprivation you have been through and also the effects of drinking on your level of inhibition and control. I prefer gentleness, humility and honesty. I also am 45 years old and have an imagination too. Some of your carnal poetry and dialogue is pretty stimulating. All in all you have been mostly amusing, even quite humorous at times.”

“Do you have plans for Thanksgiving?”

“Nelson is going to come over and I am going to cook a turkey. Green Bay and Detroit play in the morning and Nelson is from Detroit so that should be fun. There will be a temptation to have beer.”

“Do you think you can have beer once in a while?”

“I don’t know since each time I approached that junction in the past I thought I could drink once in a while and then it always decayed into daily drinking again. I also have more resolve for sobriety then previously and see I can’t be breaking down time after time.”

“What time did you get up this morning and how did you kill time today?”

“4:50 AM. It’s currently 2:10 PM. I had coffee, showered and flossed, had breakfast, did the dishes, made dinner, I’ve been writing to you all day and watched two football games.”

“Maybe I’ll write again this evening.”
“Think of me darling.”

11-17-2007 10:14 PM

72. uniflorous@tibiagame.com

11-18-2007 3:41 PM

Snowing gently in Anchorage

“Did you get a nap?”

“I did, almost 5 hours, light, restless sleep but I am feeling a lot better.”

“What are you listening to?”

“I was listening to Coast to Coast but just put on some Pat Metheny.”

“Did you ever wonder when you feel depressed from drinking that it might be permanent and not go away in a few days, like irreversible brain damage? Then you might be suicidal like Hemingway.”

“I have thought of that and that is a scary thought. Also the fact all 5 uncles on my Dad’s side were alcoholics. And both of my brothers and my sister Mary. And many cousins, certainly not all. And dopamine has something to do with pleasure and reward and alcoholism. And I have a tweaked dopamine system, apparently producing too much so that to maintain normalcy I have to titrate off some of the dopamine receptors with the competitive inhibitor Prolixin.”

“Do you know what is so interesting about neurons? The membrane potential. There is a 70 mV potential across the cell membrane of neurons. That’s about the same as the potential across bacterial and mitochondrial membranes that pump out protons and make ATP letting in protons that is about 100 mV. But bacteria and mitochondria are very small and neurons are very large. Cells are capacitors with the cell membrane having an exceedingly high dielectric constant. I don’t understand it but neither does anyone else in my estimation.”

“Changing subjects for a second darling. You have known, or certainly strongly suspected modern physics is pure BS so you have been suspicious of everyone who has ever had correspondence with, including Gerard ’t Hooft, Michael Dine, Warren Siegel, Michel Fisher, Roald Hoffman, your professors at IUPU. You wondered what the graduate students at UCB really thought when you sent them all your book in 2000. You know how some people on the RF seem to know who you are and you assume Labos knows who you are and I do too. You saw Mark Thomas’ home page and the 10^54 and 10^40 reference. You can probably imagine that every string theorist has worked on the real problem and written up a real thesis on it. How do you think your 22 year struggle with the N particle will compare with their work?”

“I have wondered about that. I imagine I could be dead last in the number of years it took to get to the stage I am at and that I am also not at the highest level of accomplishment.”

“Would that be a blow to your ego?”

“Not really. It looks like I get to act like I am first and receive the recognition as if I am. I can live with that and do that and acknowledge my real rank. I hope my atom sizes has not been done by too many people. I do know I am going to get to patent that and it is going to be worth a lot. I didn’t have that intensive graduate school experience like everyone else, in fact not even the intensive undergraduate experience in physics. My
work was integrated into a recovery from mental illness starting out at zero, having
forgotten calculus and physics when I discovered the N particle and being financially
destitute. I was psychotic for 7 or 8 of the years I worked on the problem. I was interested
in other things and always was trying to get into chemistry, molecular modeling and
biology. I have always been interested in a wide spectrum of problems, not only in
science, but in computer science, engineering, economics, finance, military strategy and
governance. I believe my small dish parabolic collector farms are the solution to the
energy problem. My education in the school of hard knocks has been valuable to me if
not the most efficient approach to theoretical physics. I am hoping to emerge as the
wealthiest human in history. I will offer great compensation packages to many smart
theorists, better than any other incentive available. I can live with those accomplishments
knowing there are better theoretical physicists than me. And of course with you at my
side it will always be difficult not to feel I really won where it counts.”

“Are you going to be a good actor?”

“Amazingly that is what I did when psychotic with the same goal, UPJF&L. I can be
quite a ham, self deprecating and very charismatic.”

“No doubt darling, you’re the man. When would a person be more required to act?”

“We have to remember that though partly tragedy and epic it is also a comedy.”

“Lubos’ preoccupation with crackpots doesn’t make sense to me. It seems to me to focus
on crackpots is nothing more than a waste of time. Although I enjoy Lubos’ blog it is in
many ways a pretty childish undertaking and between his blogs and the comments one is
nauseated by all the intellectual pretense and sophomoric behavior. It looks to me the
theorists offer no real solutions to any real problems. But then also they cannot yet speak
to some extent. I know of no technological contributions Einstein or Feynman made to
the life of the common man and that appears to be true about all of theoretical physics
contributions to the real economy too. Of course I appreciate some of the design of
theoretical physics and my relationship to that effort. I wonder what Michael Ellis really
thinks about protein folding and drug design and what they are up to down at the IPST. I
wonder what particle physicists and solid state physicists really think about. I listened to
Brian Greene on Coast to Coast and was not impressed by his intellect but I guess he is a
mathematician and his strengths wouldn’t come across in conversation. I have his first
book but could not even read any of it. I don’t think Brian Greene has the common sense
to design anything of value.”

“It’s pretty confusing to be honest.”

“It’s about 1 AM. I’m going to turn in.”

The following morning at 6:25 AM.

“How are you feeling this morning darling?”

“Pretty good actually. I wrote a good poem on the restorative power of sleep when
psychotic.”

“It must be a little weird to have put in so much work when psychotic, almost all of which
is lost except for your memory of it.”

“You’re going to have to figure out the psychotic state. There has to be more to it
biologically than is apparent.”

“That’s where I was going with neurons as capacitors with a membrane potential. The
energy density is about the same in bacteria and neurons and neurons are so much larger
so contain that much more energy. That energy reservoir is what the action potential rests on. Sleeping restores that energy level on a daily basis. If you go without sleep for a week you can become psychotic. If you have excess dopamine initiating too many action potentials so those neurons lose their energy reservoir and therefore their ability to function properly that is in fact what I think psychosis is. Most of the brain is normal when psychotic but a part of it has depleted energy reservoirs. You still sleep.”

“How do you describe the energy stored in cells that have a membrane potential?”

“The interior of the cell is negative. So it is like a volume with a charge density. The positive charge is like a surface of charge surrounding that volume. The role of the membrane is obvious. So at that level we can treat the cell as a classic EM problem. As far as I know charge separation only occurs in biological cells although my model of conductors is also a capacitor model with an interior volume of positive charge coated by a surface of negative charge. Of course the charges in cells are discrete atomic and molecular ions and the mechanism must be interpreted at that level. It’s in water so OH⁰ and OH⁻ are at the base but it is a complex chemical system. This also has to do with consciousness that Brian Greene said he would like to work on after ST.”

“Honey Last Train Home just came on. I actually get so inspired, by music most notable, but also by thought and creativity, I get goose bumps and a mental rush. Do you get mental rushes?”

“Do you mean an actually feeling in your brain?”

“I do. It is the rarest phenomenon my brain produces. I imagine I have 20 or 30 orgasms compared to one brain rush. I first started getting them in college. I would be walking between classes. I would be feeling good, full of mental energy. Always only when alone. I would think how powerful my intellect is, how much fun that is, what a tremendous opportunity there is to use my mind, and I would think about being a doctor and this little spurt, like a very mild orgasm goes through my CNS and lasts for only a second or two. It leaves me feeling exhilarated to be alive. I’ve gone years without them but still get them, although so infrequently I can’t remember the last one.”

“That’s pretty unusual darling. Is it pleasurable?”

“Second only to orgasm albeit quite a bit milder.”

“Sounds like some kind of newly emergent brain phenomena that maybe others don’t feel yet. Have you ever told anyone about it?”

“No. You are the first.”

“That’s a new one to me darling. Do you think it is a unique biological experience?”

“Well it couldn’t be completely unique but I’ve never heard anyone else ever talk about it. I do think it is almost unique to my mind.”

“Do you think our children will have it?”

“I’m sure it is a distinct and reproducible neurological phenomenon and must have a genetic basis. You know I also have little body hair and I have always told people that is because I am so far evolved from the primates. I always say that as if it is a joke but I really believe it.”

“Is evolutionary order embedded in current populations? So there would be a spectrum from oldest evolutionarily, most primitive, to most highly evolved, most advanced.”
“I believe that is true and also that so far in history only mate selection can drive that process.”

“That’s pretty interesting behavior, spanning from gays and lesbians whose mate selection produces no progeny, to monogamy, that seems to have arisen recently in mankind’s history, to the Saudi King and Amir of Kuwait with hundreds of wives.”

“You don’t need a single lesson in biology to be able to observe blacks are a lot more like gorillas than whites are. Interpreting mankind’s emergence from Africa to spreading out over the entire globe is a fascinating evolutionary process. I think the genetic data accumulating about human populations will be tricky to interpret. I think the decline of the Greeks was a loss of the high fraction through genetic devolution. Since only the high fraction can make meaningful sense out of physical reality having some critical mass of the high fraction is an important parameter in a society’s success. The genetic pools range from numerous small Alaskan Native tribes, the small white population of the Jews, all the way up to India and China. India had a genetic caste system when the British arrived. Now ½ medical school entrants are the unforgivable or whatever that lowest caste was called. The treatment of women in India is still barbaric. China is the most fucked up government on the planet net of the Muslim and Arab lunatics. The impact of climate and disease are very important. It seems colder weather is better for higher biological evolution. Of course recorded history is not very old, only a little over 2000 years for Western Civilization, and the rapid technological ascent of the last few hundred years is the most rapid change in history and almost a frenzy today. It seems everyone treats women horribly except whites but even there the amount of male on female domestic violence is astonishing.”

“I can see you are feeling much better today than the last couple days. I was worried about you. The challenge is to stay off the booze.”

“Do you know what I have found most stressful in life?”

“What is it?”

“Being deprived of a relationship with a woman. I think that is what beer was invented for.”

“I imagine that might explain about ½ of beer consumption. The other half is man and woman drinking beer together and having fun. You could probably write something of a fucking thesis on the subject with your observations of others and personal experiences dating from age 14. You thought your mental strength and maturity were your greatest assets to be a good doctor, wisdom about man and his real inner Nature. To actually understand why we act the way we do is incredibly hard to understand. The fact all American presidents are big time killers of innocent people and all presidential hopefuls vow the same immoral behavior, even outdoing each other in hawkishness, demonstrates how beliefs and ideology can justify violent action and how our American society embraces it.”

“It seems sometimes diplomacy and politics plods along in a sequence of stalemates, draws, infinite cycles of being checked and moving out of check. Can you imagine people playing out drawn configurations without realizing they are stalemates? You can even imagine people so stupid they just have two kings on the board and keep right on playing. Then at other times bold strategic moves are made, the Germans and Japanese trying to take over the planet the last notable efforts. The stalemate of MAD implemented by the physicist on both sides is of highest strategic significance. To me there is a secret to atomic weapons that is embedded both in science in having the correct model of atoms and in history as players in Einstein’s game. I know the first two atomic weapons were real and were used. The hydrogen bombs being real I have always had a problem with. I imagine Teller and Sakharov laid both sides. I think if you built a bomb too big to be
used that would be the one you had to build and didn’t have to build. You would tell everyone you had built it, would set off some real ones to demonstrate their reality and could build all duds since they would never get used. I don’t know what to make of Iran. I saw the Cosmic Variance post on Saudis beating a woman who was gang raped for being in a car with a strange man and then throwing her in jail for 6 months and giving two gays 7000 lashes for committing sodomy, Ahmadinejad’s remark about gays at Columbia, the host of other violence against women and gays and others too by Arab and Muslim cultures, and wonder what is going on in Iran with respect to nuclear development. China’s military ambitions seem anachronistic but in a world with weapons on all sides they choose to pursue that path. I wonder what impact my screenplay will have.”

“Given the pedestal we are putting you on everyone is going to read it. Do you want to go back and change anything?”

“Not really. It’s an artistic work and complete. It really hurt to take out the quality porn, the anal references, and my experiences jerking off as a youth.”

“Putting all your psychiatric history in was pretty brave.”

“I didn’t see how I could leave it out. And if it emerged later it would undercut me. This way I can use it even as a strength, a significant biological adversity that I had to overcome.”

“Do you ever actually lose control of yourself and your actions at any point?”

“Only once and it was in a pretty minor way. It was fall 1980 in Berkeley. I was with the girl who had turned me down for marriage the previous spring and in a public place and under a lot of stress. I started throwing my clip board and writing pad on the floor, picking it up and throwing it down again and saying I can’t take this. She rushed off embarrassed. That is the only point in my life I actually lost control. The only dangerous thing I did when psychotic was speed and there were only three incidents that could have been dangerous. It’s hard to evaluate how dangerous they actually were, I can’t go over 95 in my F-250, but 95 is fast enough to have a fatal accident and I did some of that in town in traffic and on ice.”

“Do you think God was looking out for you?”

“I don’t believe the Laws of Physics are ever broken so not in the sense of any Divine intervention but I certainly feel lucky and grateful to God. I imagine you have never lost control or done anything dangerous.”

“Except in my relationship with you where I have tossed caution to the wind.”

“Very funny Honey.”

“Is it getting painful to think about me without actually seeing me, being with me and being able to talk?”

“Writing this paper is like a condemned mans final meal for me Honey.”

“Very funny David. I know it’s just the other way around.”

“Why do you hate writing science up so much?”

“Technical writing just isn’t a turn on, only a necessary drudgery.”
“You’ve read a lot of original papers and know how differently everything ends up when in good pedagogical order and being taught in classes. You’re a pretty good writer and are in good control of what you want to say. Are you a perfectionist? They say a lot of perfectionists are alcoholics and they drink out of failure to achieve perfection.”

“I guess I am a perfectionist of sorts although with my work habits that might not seem possible. Everything I do that I consider work and requires effort I want to do well. In arcs and sparks I had the highest lab scores out of 60 students and was very good in working with my hands. In the hard science courses I took and took seriously, albeit not very many of them, I wanted to be at the top of the class. When I write I make a lot of revisions and corrections, attempting to put out high quality work through a recursive process of successive refinements. In artistic efforts I exert a lot of effort at a very detailed level. In theoretical physics only the perfection of simple truth is really satisfying and until it is achieved you have to consider yourself a failure. All that really means is to have a common sense mechanism for phenomena and a few equations to describe their behavior.”

“How do you think stochastic behavior arises?”

“Consider an atom or molecule isolated in a gas phase emitting and receiving a spectrum of thermal photons. Say the arrival of photons on the surface of the atom or molecule is equally probable from all directions. Given a photon impinging on an atom or molecule what the atom or molecule does is deterministic. But the outcome of each interaction is a distinct event reflecting the income trajectory and therefore appears as a random event like the input photon trajectory. Similar arguments can be made in liquid phases and collisions with other atoms and molecules and thermal photon exchange.”

“Although you are a stickler and like to exercise precise control I’m glad you aren’t anal retentive. That’s more annoying then almost anything to me, other than taking yourself too seriously.”

“Do you think field phenomena like reflecting N particles back to the source like in an electron or proton respecting the electric field is completely deterministic?”

“I imagine the only way an electron or proton could decay is to not have a close packed envelope of neutrinos. I think the neutrinos in a gravitational field are organized and attracted to the gravitational source with an internal pressure. So I think they clump around suns and planets. And I think they are in those places all close packed and electrons and protons get back every N particle they send out as an electric field. In interstellar space I do not know much about the neutrino foam. Is there an edge to the “Universe” into empty space along with photons, the “Universe” growing ever larger as if into an infinity of space?”

“Bores probably annoy you too don’t they Honey? Do you think I will be a bore?”

“Bores come in two varieties, not being able to share intellect and not having any. Astonishingly they are indistinguishable at times. You both have intellect and share it well.”

“Does bored stiff engage your mind in its original sexual connotation?”

“The poor woman.”

“Did you ever have a woman pass out on you while having sex?”

“Only once, she was a drunk. I didn’t figure it out until I had finished and then was surprised because it was a really good fuck”
“What do you do all day?”

“What watched a little of Face the Nation and Chris Matthews, two football games, Kevin came over, I told him you were definitely communicating with me and had sent 71 cryptic messages that couldn’t be traced to any other source, he said it was probably a fat guy with a cigar at the other end, Nelson came over at noon and had a couple of beers, he told me an interesting story of this pioneer who came up here and built a nice log cabin and recorded weather for 30 years, he built everything with hand labor and I thought of how easy life is for us today, my Mother called for little talks during the Packers game and some conversation after the game and I’ve been writing to you all day.”

“Now you’re boring me to tears darling. Just kidding.”

“Are you going to be able to stay off the beer?”

“Yes, right now I feel very little temptation.”

“Are you going to have beer on Thanksgiving with Nelson watching the Packers/Lions?”

“I haven’t decided yet. If I say I will I look forward to it as a reward for a period of sobriety. Looking forward to drinking again is of course at the root of the whole problem.”

“I don’t know if you can drink once a week and be productive the rest of the time.”

“You know Honey on Fox one morning was a story about a woman suing Meet Me for Lunch, a dating service that offers high class monthly lunch dates and costs $1500 because they sent her a lawn maintenance worker and had promised an architect and also she suspected some of the dates were just actors getting paid. The two female Fox legal analysts were discussing the merits of the suit. The first thing one of them said was they should certainly screen out unemployed people and alcoholics. That was pretty amusing because I though to myself, I am unemployed and have been for almost a life time and I am an alcoholic. The reality is I have always been engaged in intellectual work so never considered myself unemployed and although I never considered myself an alcoholic because I never would pull more than a 0.10% or 0.12%. I also realize that may be denial and maybe I am an alcoholic and must not drink at all.”

“Just take it a day at a time and think of me as often as you want to.”

“Talk to you tomorrow.”

11-19-2007 2:46 AM

73. grovelled@clubtoronto.com

11-19-2007 7:04 PM

A relaxing evening with Miles

“How are you feeling this morning?”

“Pretty good, very good actually.”

“What did you do when you got up?”
“Checked my email. Then went to Merriam-Webster and looked up grovelled. My favorites were: to lie or creep with the body prostrate in token of subservience or abasement; wallow in self-pity.”

“I thought you would find that pretty humorous darling.”

“How are you at defining words?”

“Terrible. That’s why I go to Merriam-Webster so often. Yours that are only in the Unabridged are priceless. How do you come up with that kind of stuff?”

“You know how much fun words can be and expressions too. It’s just fun to do. You have a fairly simple working vocabulary. So did Hemingway. Do you use the language intuitively and by feel as opposed to a structured approach?”

“I do.”

“Do you think you are a good writer?”

“You both have to have something to say and to say it effectively. These are distinct entities, having something to say requires figuring something out whereas writing it up is a skill. Having something to say also requires humor, irony, satire and other creative intangibles. As a skill to be a good writer requires practice.”

“Did you read the RF this morning?”

“I did. It is to me as soap operas are to some women. Since Lubos claims no less than encyclopedic knowledge of all of science and almost everything else too and since he is so prolific his posts are highly entertaining. He had the number 27/13 in a post today. That’s 2 and 1/13 and 2^13 = 8192, about how many things I can juggle at a time. The regulars and various new characters that make comments are beyond hilarious. As near as I can see most are motivated by wanting to show how smart they are. Others like a little more creative use of the language. They ruffle each others feathers and put on gaudy displays of plumage. Some are highly technically competent, some illiterate of science and innumerate, some young, some old, some rational, some completely nuts. Lubos follows the comments closely throughout the day and makes quite a few comments to the comments, like a mother hovering over her children.”

“Be honest with me darling. Who do you think the #1 person of interest is in physics today?”

“I guess it would have to be me.”

“When were you first ignored?”

“September 1980 by the professor I disclosed my cell chemical computer model to in August 1980.”

“What kind of shape were you in at that time?”

“Not good. I had attempted suicide the first time in July 1980. 5 and ½ years after taking the PCP and 13 months before becoming psychotic.”

“Paranoid, depressed and a thinking disorder.”
“Yup. Also grandiose. I had become a theoretician and thought I was the greatest theoretician in biology and thought biology was the hardest science. I was totally enamored with this Turing machine model of cells I came up.”

“How stable were you?”

“Not very. But I thought recognition and financial reward were right around the corner and would rescue me. I guess I felt in a way like a lost sailor adrift in the ocean with only a life preserver, hoping for rescue.”

“I became psychotic in August 1981 and came out of the second psychosis in August 1984 stabilized on Prolixin and believing I was both a genius and a paranoid schizophrenic. I also knew the disease started with the PCP and that it was not genetic. Neither being a genius nor believing it was not genetic was able to hold me up in those incredibly depressing circumstances. That’s when my family and social security did nothing for me. I attempted suicide the following May for the second time. The most difficult things were not having money, not having a comfortable place to live and not having marijuana. Marijuana could lift me out of depression and I always dreamed again of science when high. My mother thought my problem is that I smoked marijuana. I wanted to return home since I could not support myself and was living in a 220 sq ft basement room with a shared bathroom down the hall. It was the cheapest place to rent in Anchorage and was $225/month. My dad told me my mother had said if I came home she would have to go to a mental institution. It was a very difficult situation and suicide is the alternative I choose with those reasons. In December of 1985 I discovered the N particle and haven’t been suicidal since except in response to acute health problems where that would be almost normal.”

“I didn’t disclose any of my work publicly for 14 years, from December 1985 to December 1999. So I also ignored everyone else for a long time.”

A two hour break.

“Honey I just returned from Fred’s. Nelson and got the turkey and other stuff. I’m cooking. Had to get a 20 pound one but it was only $.49 a pound.”

“Are you feeling like drinking?”

“No.”

“Getting back to thinking you are the man in physics. When did you start thinking that?”

“Shortly after discovering the N particle.”

“Did you think Einstein was a bullshit artist at the same time?”

“I did.”

“Did you tell anyone other than your Dad at that time?”

“Outside physics recitation at IUPU I had the assistant professor, Saul Segh, a young Egyptian, against the wall in conversation and I said something like you know Einstein is a big time bullshit artist with time dilation and curved space, that’s all just nonsense.”

“What did he say?”

“I believe in SUSY.”
“I followed him to his office and told him the electron has a smoother surface than a babies butt and that QM was nonsense too. He said it explained all spectra and couldn’t be wrong.”

“About I year later I cornered the chair of the physics department in his office and stated that all higher physics was bullshit therefore don’t you professors have to tap people on the shoulder at some point and admit to the game. He responded that he did not know of any deeper theory. Also previously he had told me there were no contradictions in SR. I had him for modern physics. I couldn’t study for the final because it had become such nonsense I couldn’t force myself to memorize it. I remember when I quit. It was on the difference between fermions and bosons respecting some sine and cosine functions. I didn’t attend the final since it was 200 points and with a 0 on the final I would still get a C. He called me and asked why I wasn’t at the final since I had an A in the course. I explained it to him. Then I added that the Heisenberg Uncertainty principle was pure nonsense. He said something like that was a good approach or a good thing to think. I told my Dad what I did in the modern physics course because grades were entirely irrelevant to me and only knowledge and new work by me was important. He said that was Pyrrhic victory.”

“How did you feel being at IUPU as an undergraduate at 34?”

“I thought since I was there it was the most distinguished physics department in the world.”

“Did you confront your Dad about the same time with Einstein’s conspiracy?”

“I did. I explained the whole thing to him. How my discovery was in the middle of the road back then. How his theories are physically and philosophically absurd. How after WWI everyone got on board. And how QM extended the charade. He said if it was true he would have known about it.”

4 PM. Just back from Costco. Watching Laura Ingrham hosting the O’Reilly Factor.

“Do you think I’m real?”

“You’re definitely real.”

“Do you think I could be in love with you now?”

“I suppose it could be possible but in almost all normal relationships love requires a few dates, although you can be in love at first sight. It would be easier at 45 than 25 to fall in love without actually meeting a person. Of course intimacy is a major part of being in love. To have not yet met, to have not yet been intimate, it may not be rational to think you could be in love with me now.”

“I could be doing it out of duty, for Queen and country.”

“I doubt you would do that but I suppose it’s possible.”

“You treat me as a woman who is also a physicist. Is that order important?”

“It is important. I’m looking for a woman to share love with. Being a physicist is awfully nice, even almost too much to imagine, but not required. Do you feel the same way about me?”

“It would be hard for me to be attracted to anyone but a physicist. Of course there are a lot more men than women physicists so that is somewhat easier for me to accomplish than you. But I like your order very much. I find very strong intellects attractive if they
are strong men too. Artistry and humor make life rich and rewarding so are important too.”

“So do you think I am a good writer?”

“You have a certain captivating style in all your various designs. You’re not going to be a Kafka, Hesse or Rand but have no pretenses about that. When you look at all the garbage people read and is on the NYT best seller list I think inserting your screenplay into politics it is going to be really funny. I am glad you took out all the stuff that would embarrass me, you and your Mother. I know being naked is part of the experience for you. I appreciate that basically you are trying to write a modern Bible without it’s even being recognized as such. You really want mankind to find the highest utility in your work and you see that as possible, reasonable and even necessary.”

“What if Einstein’s play requires a simulated nuclear world war and that it is not possible for you to overturn 20th Century physics?”

“If that was the case we could end this game now so it would even be cruel to perpetuate at this point without the possibility it can happen.”

“What if Einstein’s play requires a simulated nuclear world war and that it is not possible for you to overturn 20th Century physics?”

“If that was the case we could end this game now so it would even be cruel to perpetuate at this point without the possibility it can happen.”

“Do you think it can happen?”

“I do.”

“Why is gravity always an attractive force?”

“For the same reason covalent bonds are. That requires on RH end of axis absorption and transmission elsewhere. That also should account for transmission of gravity to the surface in a cumulative way in planets and suns and also why it as if the entire sun or planet is at a point and why we standing on the surface feel attraction from all parts of the earth.”

“Would the gravitational flux through the center point be the highest but net zero since it is radial symmetric?”

“I think that must be the case.”

“Do you think the center of the earth is hot because of nuclear decay?”

“No I think the heat is left over from the earth’s creation when it was spit out of the sun as a large, massive, blob with the composition of the earth and the crust is a good insulator and we are in a steady state of heat flux from the sun.”

“If that was the source of the planets the orbits would start out highly elliptical, and decay to almost perfect circles like they are today.”

“Do you think astronomers and cosmologists don’t know their asses from holes in the ground?”

“That’s exactly what I think.”

“But if you are wrong it’s no big deal because of its inconsequentiality and because it’s just a pet idea of yours.”

“I’ve never heard any concept with an attractive mechanism but that’s all exactly right.”

“Are you feeling like drinking?”

372
“No. I feel like not drinking.”

“Is it kind of hard to be a strong man when you have to take life one day at a time?”

“It’s not that bad. I’ve just about killed another day off. I feel better today than yesterday.”

“Are you going to listen to Coast to Coast tonight?”

“I am.”

“Do you like those nutcases?”

“Some are highly amusing, some so boring they last about 5 minutes.”

“Talk to you tomorrow Honey.”

“Enjoy the night David.”

11-20-2007 7:52 AM

1.34687243695002661

“Morning darling. Did you sleep well?”

“Best in a long time.”

“I read Sean in Cosmic Variance on Sidney Coleman’s passing. He didn’t give his birth year. He did not say anything about how he died. This morning on RF Lubos’ first paragraph:

Sidney Coleman 1937-2007

Very sadly, Sidney Coleman died on Sunday night. In sleep. Apparently peacefully.

I couldn’t copy Sean’s first paragraph from Cosmic Variance, apparently those paranoids somehow have it blocked. It just shows how stupid Sean is. He is a nauseatingly arrogant prick. He did have a few good Coleman quotes but also “Plenty of people aspire to be profound and playful at the same time; Sidney could pull it off and had the technical chops to back it up.” Technical chops, Jesus Christ that’s an elegant phrase! His anatomy of a paper in three parts made me want to puke. He is so pompous he tells the “revolutionary scientists” how they should present their work and closes with “hey Dude, you are no Einstein, really you’re not.” Of course he didn’t get married until his early 40’s, married some dumb Hollywood slut and is only a research associate about to have to face up to his real calling in life that is to teach physics in a community college. He actually posted the wedding music selections and some of the themes as if to show how cultured and sophisticated they are to everyone. They’re both fucking atheists. And he’s a cosmologist!”

“Do you like ad hominem attacks?”

“Love em and find em irresistible.”

“I thought you did darling. You know we are all on the same side, even if believing in Einstein and QM.”

“Of course, I guess that’s even part of the beauty of it.”
“You know I wrote a paper and sent it to Sean when he was at Chicago in summer 2006 when psychotic. It’s a priceless piece. I hope he saved it because I have no copy. In it I showed what the densest possible matter was (a \[ n \rightarrow \infty \] neutron that collapsed to the electron radius of 2.645/1836), gave it two names, weberony and weberiny, I can’t remember if one was matter and the other anti-matter, and calculated the gravitational force of the smallest black hole, an assembly of 13 neutrons, one in the center and twelve equivalent nearest neighbors, close packed.”

“How did you come up with those names?”

“I said it was a tribute to Wilhelm Weber the German physicist who worked on magnetism. But the deeper meaning was a parody based on a Weber barbecue grill as a symbol of the alter of sex. Weberiny was me in Monica and weberony was Monica on me.”

“Oh gosh David, when I think about you being nuts and how little I have been exposed to psychiatric histories, it is both a learning experience, a horror show and in the end a comedy.”

“I also sent Lubos a nice document in May 2006 when I first became psychotic again.”

“Do you think everyone saves that stuff?”

“If they’re smart enough they do. Those works are priceless art.”

“More so than you think darling.”

“What do you think about the dialogue you write for me?”

“I realize you can’t make love to a manikin.”

“I’m glad you are sober but also dream and have imagination.”

“Back to men you are attracted to. Is tall, handsome and athletic a requirement?”

“Not tall but handsome and athletic a must. Tall will be an additional treat, like if I turn out to be German. Do you really have any preference on my ethnicity and genetic extraction?”

“To be honest I would have to say just about none. I’ve always considered anyone except an Oriental eligible?”

“Why not Oriental’s, their woman are among the most attractive on the planet?”

“Oriental men have small dicks and I don’t want to give rise to hybrid male children with small dicks.”

“Are you serious?”

“I am. When you look at interbreeding it’s always a big dick with a small pussy. So black men can marry Orientals but never do Oriental men marry black woman. Native Alaskan woman have small pussies too and interbreed like flies with white and black men. Older American men finding young Philippine wives is more of that. Also it’s shameless exploitation of people in poverty. Since it is a good opportunity for the woman I am not opposed to it but I think the progeny will be inferior and have problems. Of course the Philippine men they leave behind compete for a smaller number of women meaning someone gets fucked.”
“You know David, your outlook on biology is so amazing and so hilarious it is almost riotous. You have the dirtiest mind I have ever been exposed to or even heard about but I also realize how dirty biology is. Since you now only have fantasies for me it’s almost flattering although always a little embarrassing.”

“Very funny Honey.”

“What are the best hours of your day?”

“The first four hours in the morning. I have coffee, smoke pot, shower and floss, get wired and then make a nice breakfast.”

“What are you having for breakfast now?”

“Olives stuffed with garlic and jalapeños and tomato juice.”

“What kind of coffee did you have?”

“Got some new stuff at Costco yesterday. Kirkland Sumatra French Roast bean.”

“How was it?”

“Excellent, you always hope when you try a new variety you will like it. I have been drinking their Columbian bean but they were out of it yesterday.”

“What are you listening to this morning?”

“George Benson and Pat Metheny.”

“You know Honey 4 weeks ago Sunday I strained my back and abdomen pulling my bed out to hand the Matisse serigraph. For a couple days I thought I might have to go to the ER if it got worse but it never did. The back pain went away in a couple of days but the abominable pain has persisted and been causing me some anxiety and just seems to be going away finally today.”

“You sure tell me a lot about yourself. I guess the only thing I don’t know is if you use Preparation H?”

“I don’t Honey.”

“Oh Christ David, that wasn’t a fucking question.”

“In atoms do all electrons and quarks spin RH?”

“I believe they do.”

“And the proton stack LH?”

“I believe that’s right too.”

“What are the implications for gravity?”

“I guess emission and absorption of gravitons is RH for electrons and quarks and LH for the proton stack.”

“What about neutrons? Do you think gravitons are emitted and absorbed by neutrons or don’t they even get inside the proton stack?”
“I don’t know. Gravity could work just fine with the gravitons not interacting with neutrons their only contributing inertial mass and not field interactions.”

“What is the root of resistance in electricity?”

“I really don’t know. It’s conversion of electricity to thermal energy, that’s about all I know other than it is a function of current and not voltage. I find it interesting how all the energy in an AC circuit comes out of the white wire and in the part of the circuit that carries current but little energy because the voltage difference is near zero, the black wire, there is apparently no resistance.”

“Do you see what the physicists have done? They have stayed a step ahead of the engineers and chemists the whole way. That’s the robustness of the QM paradigm.”

“Do you want to drink today?”

“I don’t want to drink today. I’ll let you go. Write again this evening.”

“Have a nice day darling.”

11-20-2007 11:17 AM

1.34687243695002662

“Are you back already?”

“I am. I wanted to clarify what RH and LH mean respecting the spins of electrons, quarks and protons. A spinning thin shell sphere has two seemingly equivalent ends, one RH and the other LH. The force qv x E/c determines which end emission of N particles as E x B occurs on determining handiness. It’s the RH end of electrons and quarks and the LH end of protons. So if emission and absorption of gravitons occurs at the RH end of electrons and quarks and the LH end of protons the force will always be attractive.”

“How many gravitons are in the field of an isolated H atom?”

“About 1.3, but I haven’t reviewed that calculation yet. It’s based on U = Gm^2/r for gravitational fields just like U = q^2/(4pi epsilon r) for electric fields.”

“I was just on the RF again and saw links in some comments to Narcissistic Personality Disorder and Paranoid Personality Disorder in Wikipedia. I looked both up and got a little apprehensive when I read the first two diagnostic criteria for NPD.”

1. has a grandiose sense of self-importance
2. is preoccupied with fantasies of unlimited success, power, brilliance, beauty, or ideal love
3. believes that he or she is “special” and unique and can only be understood by other special people
4. requires excessive admiration
5. strong sense of entitlement
6. takes advantage of others to achieve his or her own ends
7. lacks empathy
8. is often envious or believes others are envious of him or her
9. arrogant behavior

“I don’t think I have any of the next seven. The truth is I don’t think I am grandiose in my sense of self-importance rather just appreciative of my innate abilities. And I do not think I am preoccupied with fantasies, I think I am preoccupied with possibilities that are quite real. I guess I can be arrogant, so 1 out of 9 is a good score.”
“I look forward to seeing you in on stage, acknowledged for your accomplishments, so released of the restraint of intellectual modesty of any kind, and letting people have it right between the eyes.”

“I hope I can live up to expectations. I think it will be just doing what comes Naturally.”

“The criteria for PPD were:”

1. Suspects, without sufficient basis, that others are exploiting, harming, or deceiving him or her
2. Is preoccupied with unjustified doubts about the loyalty or trustworthiness of friends or associates
3. Is reluctant to confide in others because of unwarranted fear that the information will be used maliciously against him or her
4. Reads hidden demeaning or threatening meanings in benign remarks or events
5. Persistently bears grudges, i.e., is unforgiving of insults, injuries, or slights
6. Perceives attacks on his or her character or reputation that are not apparent to others and is quick to react angrily or to counterattack
7. Has recurrent suspicions, without justification, regarding fidelity of spouse or sexual partner.

“I don’t have any of those behaviors. There was a link to schizophrenia. I took a glance at it and it is not what I would say about schizophrenia. It really would have been fun to be a psychiatrist or at least to have become one if not practiced, all they really do in is dispense pills in a semi-random, semi-rote fashion and seem to have little insight. I do not know if that is true of all their relationships with patients or just mine.”

“Is it possible you could still be a complete nutcase?”

“Well it is said anything is possible Honey but I have never believed that. I don’t see how it is possible I am a nutcase since I am so accomplished as a scientist and so rational and reasoned. I was even rational when psychotic just operating within the massively delusional paradigm I was under complex surveillance.”

“I hate to have to point this out to you David but you are going to be the most interesting case in psychiatric history.”

“Do you have any psychological damage from your experiences?”

“I don’t think I do. I have a certain chip on my shoulder respecting how I was treated as a mentally ill person but it is a remarkable property that the human mind when healthy can overcome psychological adversity in the past and just write it off. Sleeping, dreaming and consciousness, the three Naturally occurring states of the mind, performing that feat.”

“Do you think Jesus really was a paranoid schizophrenic and died crucified on a cross after Pontius Pilot washed his hands?”

“It’s hard to say. So many of the accounts are obviously fictitious, like feeding 5000 people above the Sea of Galilee with two loaves of bread and five fish and other miracles, that it is difficult to discern historical fact from fiction. I think there is no doubt he lived 2000 years ago, history has to be right on that. All that remains is if there was a conspiracy, how many, what did that have to do with the account in the Bible. Now the writers of the Old Testament were in on a conspiracy, there can be no doubt of that either. They were motivated by high ideals and wisdom. They wanted people to live peaceably without violence against each other. They tried to do it through writing, a laudable way to go about it.”
“What if all the authors were lunatics who believed God was doing His work through their hands?”

“Like a delusion?”

“Exactly.”

“That would be like believing Einstein was serious.”

“Could Jesus have performed any miracles?”

“No.”

“Could he have been nuts and believed he could have performed any miracles?”

“I don’t see how that would be possible either.”

“What would the belief in God be like if you didn’t know any science?”

“The Greeks had the idea of deterministic behavior of small parts, atoms.”

“Do you know anything about Hinduism and Buddhism?”

“Just about nothing. My lawyer ex-friend Dan Ess, (Valedictorian in high school in Queens, English major, 3.57 GPA at Cornell, B+ in Calc I, 753 LSAT, Michigan Law School) told me once he had been a practicing Zen Buddhist for 10 years. I thought to myself what a dummy that is some horseshit I could have sorted out at 10 or 11 years old. Although Dan has a very good heart and is as rational and reasoned as anyone you could meet, he is annoyingly a pragmatist, and when I was psychotic he grated the shit out of me as a seeming supercilious snob. Eventually when psychotic, all 4 times, I thought he was my arch nemesis, a worthy opponent, but the center of evil. I actually thought he was the last soul that was going to have to be saved in Operation Clean Sweep, along with his wife and younger brother. I’ll tell you more how bizarre some of the psychosis was in the future. It’s difficult to approach the complexity of my psychosis with the language and it is going to take time for me to get a handle on that.”

“There’s no rush and it is fascinating to me. How are you going to cook your turkey?”

“I emailed my Mom this morning. Here’s an excerpt:

Nelson and I went to Fred’s yesterday and I had to get a 20 pound turkey because that was the smallest they have. But it was only $0.49 a pound. It just fits in my stainless roaster. It has a pop up timer and is self-basting. I think I will cook it at 325, breast up, cover on for the first 2 hours, and it should take 3.5-4 hours. I’m making Mary’s sausage stuffing in a side dish. The celery was $0.88 a pound. I haven’t made green bean casserole in years either.

“In her reply was:”

A 20 lb. turkey is going to take longer than 3-4 hrs at 325. If it done a little sooner you can always let it stand and it gets better, but if it isn’t cooked it is awful. Start at 400 degrees with lid off - it starts the browning process, baking process, and kind of sears the skin. After about an hr. maybe less depending on how it looks, turn oven down to 325. Then you can put on the lid, but put it on a little crocked or if the lid has the vents on it, leave them open. No doubt you know that you defrost it before putting it into oven. The directions are usually on the turkey, if not you defrost in the refrig. and will probably take at least two days so start now.
“I guess you can see who knows how to cook a turkey and a little of my Mother’s style!”

“That’s hilarious. I can see where some of your tendencies concerning pedagogy derived.”

“Can you write me a corny poem really fast? No editing.”

“Honey I am a ham
I know this is spam
I’m really on the lamb
but for you I can cram”

“That’s not bad. How long did it take you?”

“Starting with the thought and lead in and composing and typing it up about 50 seconds to a minute.”

“When are you going to start on the paper?”

“Friday morning.”

“I’ve got a class.”

“I’ll write again this evening.”

“Bye.”

11-20-2007 8:57 PM

2.34687243695002661

“What do you think it would be like to have gone to Cal Tech physics undergraduate, Cal tech PhD theoretical physics, and been a professor at Berkeley, Cal Tech and Cornell?”

“I really can’t imagine. It’ll be interesting to find out.”

“What do you think it would be like to be in front of a classroom of graduate students or a large audience of physicists or the general public?”

“I really can’t imagine. It’ll be interesting to find out.”

“We’ll have fun when we meet. One thing you’ve alluded to or made reference to is celebrity. I think the last thing you ever would want to do is be in the public spotlight. Your ideas fine, required, but you not your persona. Celebrity is kind of like decadence. It is somewhat vain, somewhat grooming, somewhat acting, very self conscious behavior, all stuff you would probably not really want to do.”

“I think you’re absolutely right Honey. I want a very private life, almost reclusive, and want to concentrate on raising a family and doing science, both done out of the spotlight. Of course the celebrity as #1 physicist is unavoidable. But to shun publicity is definitely my very strong preference.”

“Your screenplay and your paper are almost all you have to do. All you have to be is the seed. The rest will take care of itself.”

“Bill Gates does quite a few appearances and gets through pretty good.”
“He’s also got a 50,000 sq ft home with a couple movie theaters. What kind of home would you like to have?”

“A romantic and comfortable modest residence in a rural or small town setting, quality but not large or decadent.”

“If you can develop DS&E into an industrial juggernaut you still can keep a low profile, just have a company spokesman and CEO.”

“Of course you will have to give a Nobel lecture and the annual day of Wonderment speech each July 8th.”

“You can do all those things and maintain privacy and a recluse lifestyle.”

“Do you worry about making a fool of yourself in front of me?”

“Not really.”

“Is that because I am a woman?”

“I suppose it is Honey. I wouldn’t spill my guts to another man ever.”

“Have you ever spilled your guts to anyone before?”

“Not like I have with you.”

“Do you feel like an exhibitionist?”

“Not really. Well, a little bit.”

“I realize you have been very open on many topics without much regard to anything but honesty so you feel somewhat exposed. You did it to yourself darling and are going to have to live with it, it’s really just amusing.”

“Have you thought of my position? You are not married and don’t have children and I am not married and don’t have children. I have exposed myself to you quite a bit too. It’s difficult for me too.”

“You know Honey I haven’t really thought about your feelings of exposure and need and vulnerability. I guess that is due to our current relative positions, you near the pinnacle of physics and me an unknown. But I also don’t feel like an unknown with you so I guess it’s just the peculiar circumstances of our dialogue.”

“Well have a lot to talk about.”

“Today Lubos closed a comment to a comment with “the world is going to hell.” I don’t understand that sentiment. It seems to me we are on the brink of realizing Heaven on Earth. There have never before been more opportunities for design. Artists have never needed anyone to tell them to paint or write so I don’t see why scientists should need any support to do their work either. I know it is not the same doing science in the modern world as compared to the old days when a few men working alone coaxed out the secrets of Nature, the privileged experience I have had. But I also think at the end of the day every design has to be done in one mind first, not arrived at in a conference or by a committee. Many people see only problems and not solutions and even capitulate to thinking there are no solutions. And I’ll admit in my grand designs I have so far yet to be acknowledged and have had no success so far. Well it was a hard set of problems and took a long time so that seems to be expected.”
“Did I tell you I ordered some seeds from Great Britain? Blueberry, one of if not the best strain, 19.5% THC.”

“How much were they?”

“$92 for ten seeds.”

“What do you think when you watch me negotiate the maze?”

“Smart mouse, smells cheese, never goes down the same wrong corridor twice and when in the right corridor explores all the branches.”

“How is the sobriety going?”

“I got tired, a little depressed, a little hopeless, this late afternoon, a little impulse to drink. I got a 2 hour nap and feel much better.”

“What do you think about the Lisi paper and response?”

“The paper was indistinguishable from and other string paper to me and just appeared as the same pure nonsense. Lubos treats Woit and Smolin like traitors and put Lisi in that class too. He must feel they are taking advantage of the noble effort made by theoretical physicists. It’s always been hard for me to listen to the string theorists describing other peoples work as nonsense. I saw Gross’ comments about those French twins who scammed a PhD in theoretical physics. He said their papers were nutty and a few other pejorative adjectives I don’t remember. As long as they all believe in SR, GR and QM it just looks funny to me but Lubos sure doesn’t think it is funny.”

“Do you think there is and always has been a plan to keep SR, GR and QM secret forever and that if its not you it wont be anyone to come along as a “savior”?”

“It does look like that. But ST has to be exposed as complete hornswoggle. It’s too gaudy, too flamboyant, too much plumage, too much pure nonsense to stand up and that always had to have been part of the plan. But it looks strategic dovetailing with SR, GR and QM being real. That dumb bitch Karen Rurwort over at UAA tried to pass ST off as serious science to me but Lubos sure doesn’t think it is funny.”

“What are you having for dinner?”

“Pork egg rolls with Kikkoman soy sauce, grapefruit juice, tomato juice with salt and Tabasco and ice water.”

“You are a little anal retentive darling. You’ve got to be a little embarrassed about some of that peacock plumage you displayed when drinking.”

“Not really, all I have to say is I was just drinking.”

“Don’t drunks reveal their real Nature?”

“That’s just nonsense Honey. All drunks behave like assholes although each in a unique and peculiar way. It’s the most common phenomena there is. If it reveals anything about mankind’s Nature it is that the chief property of mankind is that we are all assholes.”

“And bullshit artists.”

“What do you think it would be like to have gone to Cornell pre-med undergraduate, not gotten into medical school, become mentally ill, get a PhD in the school of hard knocks and spent 21 years inventing a new physics?”
“I really can’t imagine. It’ll be interesting to find out.”

“What do you think it would be like to be in front of an array of biometric surveillance with the entire world watching your every move, giving countless improvisational lectures on many topics, composing hundreds of poems, many pages of prose and delivering sermons to the whole world?”

“I really can’t imagine. It’ll be interesting to find out.”

“We’ll have fun when we meet.”

“How are you doing with the smokes?”

“I’m having difficulty. I’m quite addicted but also know I can quit.”

“You won’t be the first person to die of lung cancer or emphysema.”

“I have no intention to keep smoking, just wasn’t able to do it today. Since I quit for 18 years I was back to background on cancer. Since I have only smoked on and off for 4 years this time I don’t yet have a heavy risk of lung cancer or emphysema. But it really bothers the shit out of me to smoke. It’s crazy in fact.”

“Honey Coast to Coast is coming on.”

“Talk to you tomorrow.”

11-21-2007 7:57 AM

Meet me for Lunch

“Good morning darling.”

“Good morning Honey.”

“How’d you sleep?”

“Pretty good. Getting back to good sleep.”

“Have you showered and flossed and are having some Sumatra coffee?”

“I am.”

“What’s your best feeling in the morning?”

“Having a clean asshole.”

“Are you serious?”

“I am. Both of my parents were raised with outhouses. After I poop in the morning I take a shower. A clean asshole is a luxury of modern plumbing.”

“I’m glad you pointed that out to me darling, and also that you keep the oldest organ in animal biology clean, you fucking asshole.”

“What are you going to do today? Does it still seem like killing time?”
“I am almost fully recovered and in a few days will settle down to work and be productive again.”

“You know most people seek out those 30 day spin and dry treatments to overcome alcoholism.”

“It’s just individual responsibility to me and I can’t find help for that by voluntary commitment to a rehabilitation program. If I was in there and wanted to drink I could just check myself out and drink. Work and music and cooking and thinking help me recover and I only have access to those here at home in my work room.”

“What are you having for breakfast?”

“London broil with Johnnies Seasoning salt and A-1, white rice with Kikkoman, tomato, cucumber and pepperocini salad with Blue cheese and Bacos, tomato juice with a lot of salt and Tabasco and some ice water.”

“Are you sure your asshole is clean darling? Maybe you need to take another shower.”

“Very funny Honey.”

“What are you listening to?”

“George Benson and Pat Metheny again. I load 5 CD’s and it plays for almost 4 or 5 hours.”

“I’m going to run now, talk to you later in the day. Have a nice morning.”

“Always think of me a lot darling.”

11-21-2007 3:12 PM

Divine, determined, design and not divisible

“Hi again Honey.”

“How’s your day going?”

“Very good.”

“What’s it like to work all alone and without any feedback?”

“Well that’s very difficult of course, but it also allows one to get to the end of the journey, allows one to make corrections over time, invent ever newer work and to then be able to arrive at a state of completion. So although quite difficult it is also quite satisfying.”

“I don’t feel any younger than you, or any older, so know just what it is like too.”

“There was a great comment by Cynthia on the RF today.”

Now if only a string fellow could incorporate such a cute little animation in his hep-ph paper, then suddenly, out of nowhere, there’ll be an array of colorful stories about him splattered all over the media spectrum. And ‘cause nerd is out and cool is now in, I strongly suggest that the string fellow pattern himself after that vertex dude who's been
making the headlines lately...

But instead of taking on the persona of a surfer in the summer and a skier in the winter, the string fellow could take on the persona of, say, a naval flier in the Persian Gulf, including a NASCAR racer here at home, too. Plus instead of crafting a title like "An Exceptionally Simple TOE", he could craft one along similar lines such as "The Universe at the Finish Line", or better still, "TOE in One Fell Swoop."

Bottom line: eye-candy sells, especially candy without nutrients!

LM: I don't think so it would be enough. The guy who would make the animation and write such a thing would also have to explain that he is a broke, proletariate, opposing American imperialism, fighting against global warming, and against oppression by the white males (and he would have to get castrated and/or blackened if he were male/white himself) - and then his animation could be printed in all mainstream media.

Cynthia | 11.21.07 - 5:34 pm | #

“I found out subsequent to that KY and zucchini comment I posted that Cynthia is in fact capable of technical interpretation of ST, so she must be a PhD physicist. I want to post “TOE for Lunch” or “Meet me for a TOE” but won’t. There are going to be some good war stories!”

“David my stomach is still aching I laughed so hard at your morning email.”

“I laugh pretty hard coming up with that stuff Honey.”

“How much coffee do you drink in the morning?”

“Two 4 cup Mr. Coffee pots. Put it in a Thermos right after brewing. Have it strong and black. Along with marijuana I get wired for the first 3 or 4 hours of the day before my stomach starts growling and I have to feed it.”

“Are you looking forward to cooking your turkey tomorrow? Nothing smells better than a turkey cooking.”

“I am looking forward to it. I haven’t decided if I will drink with Nelson while cooking it or not. I haven’t been looking forward to a drinking event as a reward and destination but haven’t ruled it out either. It would be a nice test to overcome drinking completely by not drinking. But it doesn’t look too bad if I have a few beers on Turkey Day.”

“Are you going to stuff it?”

“No I’m going to cook the hot sausage dressing with a lot of sage in a side dish for the last hour.”

“Do you like sage?”

“I do. Pigs in the blanket, ½ pork sausage, ½ hamburger, onion, salt, black pepper, sage, paprika, rolled up in cabbage leaves, is my favorite main course.”

“You can put rice and tomatoes in them too.”
“I’ve had them like that and they are good.”

“Do you think I really could be sick upstairs?”

“Well you were psychotic only a year ago. That’s a pretty heavy load what with its being the scariest mental phenomena known other than maybe sociopaths. You treat it at times almost as if it was a common cold. I appreciate you pointed out its all or none phenomena and that when you are sane you are quite sane, and when nuts quite nuts, although still rational within the delusional paradigm. Everyone as they go through life learns their limitations, what reality is and how to respond to the environment in a rational way. You have never felt your limitations, never hit some ceiling and feel almost unbounded. Fortunately you are well grounded and don’t think you’re the smartest human or have any delusions of grandeur, but are cognizant of your accomplishments and pride yourself on your creativity and imagination. You’ve come a very long way this last year and have got a lot accomplished. You seem to have a pretty good handle on the Landscape and the string vacua. A year ago you were 320 and you are now 280 after putting on 15 pounds in the last nine week drinking episode. Our relationship now spans 9 months and you have come a long way in culturization, ninglings and personal development. You even apologized to Monica through the department chair.”

“How’s that abdominal pain?”

“It went away yesterday for the first time since I injured it and hasn’t come back.”

“You see now what you need to write up and that is a challenging project you are well prepared for. I think you are in pretty good shape darling.”

“What do you think about my ability to work?”

“Since all you have ever been after is truth and since no one really knows how that is done your work ethics, although a source of some consternation, don’t look that bad given the challenge in life you responded to.”

“You know Honey this is kind of interesting although a little scary too. You know how I interpret dualities and non-randomness as communications with me, by for instance you, Lubos and others. When I was psychotic I thought all my support was perfectly concealed from being in any way observable so as to be indistinguishable from background stochastics. I thought the enemy camp had me right under their noses with surveillance but couldn’t see my supporting cast. I thought my supporters grew in numbers until we had the enemy camp completely surrounded. Along the way we accepted converts as they repented of their sins, hence forgiveness and the motivation of Operation Clean Sweep. Now, sane, I AM being communicated with through channels with exactly that property as being indistinguishable from background.”

“Do you think you are becoming psychotic again?”

“I know I’m not.”

“I see the irony, determinism and even fatalism you must find scary but that’s just the way it is right now. Would you rather be alone without communication?”

“Oh no, not at all, just an unusual symmetry I thought important to point out.”

“Here’s one of Bob Parks last entries in WN.”

1. DEATHBED CONVERSION: ONE FLEW OVER THE CUCKOO’S NEST. The glee with which many of the faithful pounce on breathless tales of
deathbed conversions by famous atheists, from Thomas Paine and George Washington to Charles Darwin, can be humorous. The just released, "There Is a God: How the World’s Most Notorious Atheist Changed His Mind," by Anthony Flew with Roy Abraham Varghese (HarperCollins, 2007) breaks new ground in the deathbed conversion genre. Varghese composed Flew’s conversion for him without waiting for the inevitable. In the New York Times Magazine, Mark Oppenheimer says Flew, 84, is suffering aphasia. His conversion to deism is attributed by Flew to new findings about DNA: He can’t see where the first DNA came from. Neither can anybody else - yet. Who voted Flew "the world’s most notorious atheist" anyway?

“I was thinking about that. I am the one who flew over the cuckoo’s nest. I make a humorous conversion to accepting 20th Century physics as a sincere operation. And I am the world’s most notorious non-believer in Einstein and QM. Then again the guys name is obviously Flew. The book is quite real. I can’t distinguish that one.”

“What did he think about your BB King joke?”

“He replied “that’s pretty subtle.” I don’t think he got it at first. I’ll bet he’s a dirty old codger and found it pretty funny.”

“You are quite sick David but your disease is rather amusing.”

“Here’s a couple follow on comments by Cynthia on the RF.”

You couldn’t be more right, Lubos!
Cynthia | 11.21.07 - 7:45 pm | #

Here's a talk by Mandelbrot from MIT World:

http://mitworld.mit.edu/video/52/

Judging by the audience, by age alone though, he's somewhat of a cult figure for today's youth. Upon listening to him though, finance is more or less his bread and butter. And in a single setting, you get to see two great men of chaos: Lorenz and Mandelbrot!:~)
Cynthia | 11.21.07 - 8:06 pm | #

“Do you think you are a cult figure among string theorists?”

“I don’t know about that.”

“Do you think Lubos might look up to you as some kind of hero?”

“I’d find that pretty astonishing.”

“When you were psychotic what did you think people that supported you treated you like?”

“So grateful they practically kissed the ground I walked on.”

“Like Jesus dying on the cross for our sins?”

“Something like that.”
“The underlying themes of the origins of Christianity, the Jesus story, modern physics, your Lutheran background, your delusions when psychotic and your present reality seem to have as common design elements the Nature of man and his relation to the Universe.”

“Do you think Christianity was good or bad? Would you have preferred a Greek world view? Was your Dad really a religious fanatic and lunatic?”

“Those are some tough questions Honey. How you can read the Greeks and not appreciate Christianity is fiction is beyond me so I guess I am forced to conclude my Dad was nuts. He never forced it on me after I stopped attending church and could defend myself physically at 14 or 15. The Lutherans ministers and theologians are obsessed with the Greeks, especially Aristotle and with the Greek language. Ancient Greek has a 26 letter alphabet but different letters as you know.”

“What’s the most beautiful letter?”

“The 15th letter of the alphabet, omicron, literally small o.”

“Oh, oh, oh you are funny darling.”

“Fucking pre-war Germany had to be one of the most Judeo-Christian cultures ever with the Lutherans, the Catholics and the Jews. That ended up with the worst nightmare in history for morality and the Holocaust, Hitler and the Nazis singular in that distinction of personifying evil. Do you view Bush as a religious fanatic who justifies killing?”

“I do. If we hadn’t supported the Saudi monarch and the state of Israel all these years there would almost certainly have been no 9-11. The Vietnam War was impossible to justify in any way, not morally, not strategically and certainly not the way it was fought militarily. If you are on the wrong side for 50 years and still holding trying to intimidate and threaten everyone else it is going to come back and bite you.”

“Do you think Bush is a terrorist?”

“The innocent body count makes that undeniable. The total body count means he is incompetent as Commander in Chief in addition to being immoral.”

“What do you think the theoretical physicists thought of Vietnam?”

“Same thing I do.”

“I’m pretty sure you are right. But the threat of Communism was quite real.”

“Absolutely, I guess everyone ranks Stalin second only to Hitler, but the west is highly socialized today with a 50% or higher average total tax rate, socialized medicine, social security and welfare.”

“In marked contrast to Stalin, Eisenhower was a heroic leader.”

“Of course.”

“If Teller and Sakharov made dummy H bombs do you think their lives and everyone involved were in jeopardy?”

“Certainly Sakharov’s was. I think Eisenhower was in on it but didn’t even tell Nixon.”

“What about Heisenberg. Do you think he was trying to make the bomb and just couldn’t fess up to it afterwards like Lubos thinks?”
“I’ve heard Bohr say in their last meeting Heisenberg was acting Teutonic but also Lubos mentioned once that Heisenberg knew the spirit of QM better than anyone.”

“What if the H bombs are all real?”

“My mission is the same just that much more important.”

“Do you actually want to become technically competent in any specific area of science?”

“I think that is for your early life so it is no longer possible for me. That being said technical competence in a newly developing field like molecular modeling with my QM, battery design, biologic cell design, the new theory of dipoles and thermal energy, all have important theoretical work to be done. So all I really mean is I’m not going to learn new math or learn to program but do want to work with mathematicians, programmers and scientists on some aspects of the problems, those relating to the fundamental physical principles. thermodynamics and electrochemistry have much valuable empirical data that will allow us to understand atoms and molecules in terms of photon flux and electric and magnetic fields.”

“If you were back in your 20’s or early 30’s what technical skill would you want to acquire?”

“Computational geometry and combinatorics.”

“Did you see that turning a sphere inside out by UIC a number of years back? It was in Science I believe.”

“I did. I was psychotic at the time and thought they were all working on the game and having fun.”

“How do you think electrons turn inside out in electron transfer like in a redox couple?”

“The easiest thing to imagine is an electron colliding with a proton and forming an n = 1 hydrogen atom. The collision process and deformation is symmetric around the collision axis. You also have the phenomenon at close range like in a chemical system like biology, electrode electron transfers and thermal emission by wires into a vacuum.”

“What do you think about quark formation?”

“I really have few thoughts on the subject. I had a funny limaçon theory in my book back in 2000. It appears to happen almost instantaneously. I was just wondering if anyone, if Witten maybe, has a complete analytical description for photon emission and absorption to go along with a complete phenomenological description. I have a lot of the elements but the process is asymmetric and photons are symmetric, I’ve never been able to figure that one out. I saw an interview of Witten in Scientific American back in the 90’s before I became psychotic. He was introduced as the modern Newton. I remember the eerie photo of him in the article. It was as if he was looking me right in the eye.”

“You know Honey I was just thinking, in He photon emission and absorption is a two electron process for the spectrum of the neutral atom. With a two electron process you can imagine a symmetric phenomenon to give rise to a symmetric photon. That may be important. I still don’t know about the process in the one electron spectra of hydrogen.”

“Changing subjects darling what do you think about people like Admiral Poindexter, who got a PhD in nuclear physics with Mossbauer at Cal Tech? He was involved in that Iran/Contra affair and Central American revolutions during the Reagan administration and recently was in charge of DARPA at the Pentagon.”
“I think he is a classic example of American Imperialism. In all those underdeveloped countries there are the worst aspects of human behavior. A small ruling class owns all the land and exploits all the countries resources for their own profit while turning their back on the large hordes of poor. I am all for revolution in that reality. I have almost always been on the side of the revolutionaries. Castro is a man, Bush is a wimp.”

“I agree with you but all those revolutionaries are dictators and totalitarians and have not solved the problems of economic development and taking care of the poor although it’s a pretty ominous problem given genetic and economic realities.”

“If you were born in Palestine do you think you would have become a terrorist?”

“That’s kind of an unfair question since I think the Palestinians are genetically incapable of producing an individual with my largeness.”

“Are you serious?”

“I am. That being said it’s hard to know what I would become in an environment like that. I know I would want to kill the Jews but how I would respond to that long term goal is hard to say. I imagine I would try to get the fuck out of there and get in a rational country if that would be possible.”

“If you were Palestinian you would have become a doctor.”

“I guess that’s exactly what I would have become.”

“Honey I’m going to watch Lou Dobbs, a Harvard trained economic populist. Like O’Reilly he has a bunch of sycophants who are regulars, mostly women, and is pretty funny. Talk to you in the morning.”

“Think of me darling.”

11-22-2007 2:47 AM

One edit and one unedited

Honey you know I am a ham
Honey you know this isn't spam
Honey you know this isn't a scam
If it is Honey there will be no bam, bam, thank you ma’am

Oops, another ones coming to me:

Annette was a little lamb
Annette was the one I wanted to slam
But she turned out to be in love with Sam
And I ended up having to jump off the dam

11-22-2007 2:54 AM

A Corny Thanksgiving

She had a high strung cam
her gears I wanted to jam
no other cars would I again ram
I think she knew just who I am

11-22-2007 11:50 AM
A cooked turkey, awaiting being eaten

“Good morning darling.”

“Good morning Honey.”

“Did you drink yesterday?”

“4 and ½ beers then went to sleep.”

“Did you lie to me about planning to watch Lou Dobbs and really just want to drink beer?”

“I did.”

“How do feel about lying to me darling?”

“Like a little school boy about to be bawled out.”

“What did you do? Get a case of Bud for Thanksgiving and then start to think about the cold ones in the refrigerator?”

“That’s what happened.”

“Did 4 and ½ beers affect your sleep?”

“It did last night. I only got 4 to 5 hours sleep but it was good sleep and I feel quite frisky this morning.”

“Are you going to drink today with Nelson before turkey?”

“I am.”

“Do you think it will set off a binge?”

“No I don’t think it will Honey.”

“What’s the probability you are going to be able to write your paper?”

“Close to one, really just net of an accident, a stroke or a heart attack.”

“What’s the probability you are going to be able to publish it?”

“I don’t know about that one.”

“How are you feeling this morning darling?”

“Excellent actually.”

“Have you showered and flossed?”

“Shaved this morning too.”
“Are you having coffee and marijuana?”

“I am.”

“How does your asshole feel this morning darling?”

“Excellent, thanks for asking Honey.”

“How did you like my AM poetry?”

“Aren’t you clever David, you fucking asshole.”

“That elocution gives me cause for pause as it spills from your jaws as if without laws.”

“Is this what happens to you the morning after 4 and ½ beers?”

“You spotted the pattern Honey.”

“What time are you putting the turkey in?”

“6:30. It’ll take about 4 and ½ hours.”

“Honey Otis Redding just came on, Sitting on the dock of the bay. I always thought that was the pier in Berkeley since that is the best view of San Francisco Bay looking right out on the Golden Gate Bridge and the setting sun. Otis’ untimely death was the greatest loss in music. He inspires my soul and imagination. That is one of my very favorite tunes.”

“How you would characterize some of your journey?”

“Yes, precisely.”

“That’s a nice mental image of the process of discovery and theorizing.”

“Was the bench at the top of Tilden Park your favorite view of the bay?”

“After drinking beer I would get up at 4 AM or so the following morning and drive up to the park, past the stadium and Strawberry Canyon, LBL and the Science center and jog up to that peak. It was the most beautiful time of the day for me and hiking in Tilden Park my most beautiful memory of Berkeley.”

“Did you climb it when psychotic too?”

“Many times. The 4 mile trail down to the old missile site adjacent in the park is also very memorable. I also walked through all the cattle pastures and up the back side of the peak at night once. During that psychosis I would hike 5 or 10 miles a day.”

“Just checked the RF. Lubos had a post on horses. He closed with: If you don’t know, a horse may peak near 15 horsepower for a few seconds but for longer periods, an average horse produces less than 1 horsepower.”

“So my comment was:”

Hey Lubos, is the peak horsepower produced when running or having sex? (or thinking?)
“That should leave pretty good potential for some humorous responses.”

“I see some evolution in your content and style.”

“Did you emerge from your religious indoctrination believing you should emulate Jesus?”

“You know Honey I hadn’t thought of that before but that is exactly what I walked away from the experience with. 2000 year fast forward of course and no paranormal crap.”

“Did your Dad know what you thought about theology and philosophy?”

“He did. It didn’t bother him in the least. He told me in my sophomore year many scientists don’t need a philosophy. I thought to myself, that’s must be why I never had one.”

“But you do now. Politics consummate act UPJF&L, in epistemology no unknown questions except a beginning to time, an edge to space and the existence of N particles, in aesthetics your QM the highest achievement, metaphysics is bullshit, your logic is irrefutable and you are a little inscrutable.”

“You’re getting to know me pretty well Honey.”

“What’s it going to be like to be with Nelson for more than an hour?”

“I’m a little apprehensive about that but am going to be drinking so it won’t be too bad. He’s incredibly humorous. He picks out his hookers and only goes for ones that are to him beautiful. You’ve got to respect such a careful shopper. I asked him if they ever had orgasm. He said rarely, very rarely. My worst experience was when a girlfriend, who couldn’t have orgasm through intercourse, asked, in a disinterested way, “Are you done yet?” I instinctively reacted “I am now” and withdrew without a climax. That’s the only time that happened. I was 27 and in Berkeley.”

5 hours later.

“Nelson just went back to his condo to get his whiskey.”

“What kind of response did you get with your comment on the RF?”

“They ignored me Honey.”

“How many beers have you had?”

“Six.”

“Does their dising you embarrass you.”

“Beyond humiliation Honey.”

“You need to make no more, crude, vulgar, course and tasteless remarks in you life David, except perhaps with me, where they are some times cherished for humor.”

“Nelson just came in with his whiskey Honey. Have a nice Thanksgiving.”

“You too darling.”

11-22-2007
Honey Nelson is taking a piss
I for you I only have bliss
he is out now, here's a little kiss.

11-23-2007 1:02 AM

Leftovers

“How was Turkey Day darling?”

“Good. Really good bird. I took it out when the timer popped up and let it stand on top
the stove covered for a couple hours. Really juicy and tender.”

“When did you get up?”

“About an hour and a half ago. Had a headache and took a couple ibuprofen. It’s a little
after nine and Coast to Coast just came on.”

“How many beers did you have?”

“Twelve.”

“How was it?”

“It was nice to take a break from the last week of work. I think this is true. I enjoy not
drinking more than drinking. That’s good.”

“Maybe you can drink once or twice a week and get a lot done and enjoy life. How was
Nelson?”

“Nelson is a work of art. Anyone who’s fucked thousands of beautiful young women and
none of the relationships lasted more than a half hour gets a pretty high score in my
book.”

“Of gosh darling that is hilarious. Is he sick at all, like a pedophile or anything weird?”

“Not at all. His only requirement other than beautiful is over 18.”

“Did you poop and shower since getting up?”

“I did.”

“Then you’re asshole is feeling pretty good darling?”

“It is Honey, thanks for making that observation.”

“Are you going to make any more comments on the RF?”

“No I don’t think so. I thought my comment today was the only good one in the horse
thread. They ended up talking about horse and cow manure like stupid children. How
Lubos can give rise to such a comedy is so completely beyond me I can’t imagine what
his motivation could possibly be. But the RF is my soap opera now and an enjoyable
diversion.”

“Why didn’t he get tenure?”

“1/2 the department hated his guts. Are you going to support him when you are
wealthy?”
“I am. He should be well off financially and just do his blog. Does he work on any real designs?”

“That’s one of the reasons so many in the department detested his cockiness. I think when you spend so much time learning math and bullshit it underruts your ability to create useful technology. How much time do you plan to work alone each day once you are recognized?”

“I don’t know yet. I can’t imagine not doing theoretical work and I also can imagine there are some good problems to be addressed. But the work will be more applied. I want to totally take apart biology by computer simulation.”

“How is your knowledge of computers?”

“Quite strong. I programmed in Fortran at Clark Hall at night in high school. I have taken an introductory course in programming about 6 or 7 times in all different languages over the years. But when those really big and boring programs were assigned half way through the semester I always dropped out. I audited courses in data structures and algorithms back in 1978 at Berkeley. There I also learned about Turing machines in the computer science introductory course. I also took a half semester of machine language. So I know how you go from binary to high level language. A program is an algorithm and a data structure. There are only 3 elements in programs, sequence, selection and looping. I am going to design data structures that are useful in biology but not like the stuff being done currently. I want to have the strongest computer science team on the planet working on understanding biology. By biology I mean everything from phage and bacteria to brain. So I imagine I will work about 6 hours a day on science alone. I think I will enjoy learning things fast and deep from others at work. I can ask questions and in short order find out just what is known, what the good questions are and then get a good perspective.”

“Do you think you can design a good battery/fuel cell based on biology?”

“I think I can do that. It will have the potential to take out the entire vehicle manufacturing industry.”

“How would you interconvert chemical bond energy and electrical energy using biological cells?”

“That’s a hard one. You’ll have electrodes and there will either be cells attached to the electrodes or cells adjacent in the bulk fluid. When you realize oxidation and reduction are not understood phenomenologically you can see how poorly all the energy systems in biology are understood. Most biologists don’t understand RCL circuits simply because electrical engineers don’t either.”

“You see unlimited potential for design?”

“That’s how I see it.

“There’s a lot of work to do in your QM. That looks like fun, some good geometry, all kinds of interesting problems. Do you want to revolutionize drug design?”

“I am looking forward to rolling the drug companies. It’s going to be a strategic attack in the security markets. I am going to make a fortune trading on my knowledge of their demise.”

“What do you think of quantum computers?”
“The amount of nonsense people end up devoting their intellectual lives to is difficult to fathom. Quantum computers are just computers where the capacitors, inductors, transistors, switches and wires are atomic and molecular objects, not macroscopic assemblies of matter. All that nonsense about superimposing states and other stupid quantum phenomena is just pure shit.”

“Why are bacteria so small?”

“Capacitors are interesting because the smaller they get the higher the energy density. That has to do with the size of bacteria and mitochondria.”

“I’ve been thinking about that Coleman quote Sean had in his blog: Modesty forbids me but honesty compels me. That’s one of the best I’ve seen. I think that is going to be my operating principle in writing up my paper.”

“What are you listening to?”

“Female jazz vocalists.”

“Are you heating up some turkey?”

“I am. I’ll make some freezer meals tomorrow. I end up throwing a lot away.”

“Do you think Lubos would like to be a blogger and company spokesman for DS&E?”

“I hope he would be interested in that. His potential as an expositor of modern science, technology, economic and social issues seems large. A blogger as prolific as his along with some corporate responsibilities would be a nice mix for him.”

“You know I sent copies of my screenplay without a TOC and with the porn and other stuff to Schwarz, Susskind, Green and Bob Park.”

“Do you think they read it?”

“If I were them I would but I don’t know if they even saved it. I have this little image of them sitting around after a dinner party and showing the porn and other stuff on a large screen to the guests and having some laughs.”

“I’m turning in Honey.’

“Talk to you in the morning darling.”

11-23-2007 3:09 PM

Did you go shopping today?

“How are you feeling this morning darling?”

“Very good. I got over 8 hours sleep and only had to get up once to pee and could get back to sleep after that. That’s more sleep than I’ve had in months.”

“Did you want to drink more when you got up after the turkey and beer yesterday?”

“No I didn’t.”

“Do you feel empowered when you stop drinking out of control?”

“Very much so.”
“That’s good darling. Have you showered and flossed?”

“I have and am on my second pot of coffee.”

“Is everything nice and clean this morning David?”

“Except that which is incapable of being cleaned by man.”

“I know you’re not talking about your asshole so you must be referring to your mind.”

“That’s right Honey. The trials between 3rd grade and 10th grade perverted my mind in an irreversible way.”

“That is funny darling. When I think of your imagination and learning curve thinking about you sitting in third grade with a hard on is too much. I also think the world needs the Degner enema to get in contact with our true Nature.”

“Can you imagine Dershowitz arguing that Jewish males aren’t ugly? Everyone is wound too tight.”

“Alan and I may end up doing a series of discussions. Since he knows I am trying to kill all the lawyers and those lawyers are just try to wrap everybody up in a ball of yarn as sport there is pretty good potential. When I think of some of the conversations Ess and I had as undergraduates I think sparring with Jewish lawyer #1 would be beyond entertaining. Did you know he became a full professor at Harvard Law School at 28 or 29, the youngest ever?”

“I did know that. I don’t think you could stand up to him and look good but if you both let your hair down it could be really humorous. We talked about it before. Your seminal strategy and your Nature are to remain above the fray, not become a public figure and let others argue about your ideas. I think Lubos would love being spokesman and carrying on those debates vigorously and on all fronts.”

“Alan do you think doctors with a patient near death should negotiate for their services and go for a piece of the patient’s ass, or do it as piece work at a nice hourly rate? How did you bring yourself to provide an appeal for a brutal double murderer? Don’t you believe good counsel is only logically required for the accused that are innocent?”

“You could have fun with him darling?”

“What will be the psychiatric implications when mankind arrives at UPJF&L?”

“Emerging triumphant on the plane of aesthetic design will be the most significant healing in mankind’s history, the greatest epoch possible.”

“What are you listening to?”

“I had Rush on for a while and now female jazz vocalists.”

“I like your idea of setting up DS&E as a non-profit with $5000/week the top salary and half the patent rights to the individual. You will be able to attract some truly talented people. They will be comfortable and respect you for not being a robber baron. Did you first think of that after hearing about that Cal Tech biochemist who went to UW and then started a non-profit in Seattle, I forget his name?”

“Leroy Hood. That is when I first considered it. With our combined income and ½ patent rights we will be very well off and also have blue sky.”
“Will Lubos qualify for the top pay scale?”

“Of course and have a vote on the board. If the average doctor’s salary is around $200,000 I think more gifted people should make more. We can have J. Edgar Hoover like control for our lives and set up a highly rational organizational structure for the future.”

“Since the greatest gift we can give our children is genetic coupled with a stimulating and rich childhood it doesn’t bother me to go non-profit. You can’t take it with you. Our children and grandchildren will be in line for top positions in DS&E. We can probably still become the wealthiest couple on the planet in the future with the ½ of our patent rights. No one will object to that. There’ll probably be pretty healthy competition in DS&E to see who can be the wealthiest.”

“Do you think you might be able to patent your solar tracker?”

“It’s possible. The unique element of design is that the receiver is used to eclipse the sun in a parabolic dish collector. If it can’t be my energy solution will just be free advice.”

“Would you like to have the best design engineers on the planet working for DS&E on the best collector scheme?”

“Someone’s got to do it so I’ll have to compete on a fair playing field. But since I treat my workers better than anyone else and I have the smartest fraction in charge of the whole organization at 260K I will be invincible. The best someone can do is draw me and I’ll consider that a victory since they will serve mankind as efficiently as I will. Pure competition with enormous stakes. I want to be more ruthless than anyone in economic history.”

“What about the huge excess of cheap low skill labor in the world?”

“Once eMaam is implemented we can implement a fair worldwide minimum wage that I imagine should be around $12/hour. The employer will be relieved of social security and health care expenses.”

“Did you read the RF this morning?”

“I did, Lubos had 4 new blogs. In one was a reference to the Cocktail Party Physics blog by Sean’s wife Jennifer Ouellette, a name second only to Dartière. Of all things she was an English major! “I share my living space with a small tabby cat named Clio, and a tall cosmologist named Sean.” Lubos also attacked Lawrence Krauss. I’ve emailed him a few times including my RF assault in July. One was titled No fear of physics. I also emailed Warren Siegel. He’s really pathological. I had quite a correspondence with him when psychotic. He tried to tell me pressure was a scalar field and not a vector field. He’s got to be included in my and Dershowitz’s debate on whether Jew males are really ugly. And Rae Ann closed a comment with “Well, these aren't terribly scientific answers (sorry Degner), but my concerns are mainly with the ethical and philosophical aspects of the questions.” remembering my crack that she had no functional brains in science whatsoever, but I did apologize in closing that comment.”

“Did you think Jennifer was a dog and also didn’t want to point out that reaction to me as if you are becoming PC at 55, you fucking asshole.”

“That’s exactly what I thought, exactly why I didn’t include my initial reaction and loathsome as it is what I may become prostrate before you.”
“Very funny darling.”

“You know what’s really funny. Thinking about you using the f word in front of me in a real dialogue. I’ll bet you could hardly spit it out.”

“Even funnier darling. And the funniest of all is you actually fucking finding out.”

“Are you feeling like drinking beer?”

“A little bit, not too bad.”

“Have you had more leftovers?”

“I have. I’ll write again this evening Honey.”

“Always think of me darling.”

11-25-2007 6:21 PM

Are you nice and clean David?

Friday evening.

“Are you drunk?”

“I’m on my 10th.”

“What time is it?”

“8:51 PM”

“I’ll talk to you in the morning. I’m not talking to you when you are drunk again.”

“Sorry Honey.”

“Cram it.”

The next morning at 5:18 AM

“How are feeling this morning darling?”

“Fine Honey, I took a couple ibuprofen when I got up a couple hours ago and am having coffee and marijuana.”

“How many beers did you have last night?”

“11.”

“Did you get good sleep?”

“Not bad, a little over 6 hours.”

“What are you thinking about?”

“How to start my paper.”

“I’m still chuckling thinking that modesty forbids it but honesty compels it.”
“Have you showered and flossed?”

“Not yet.”

“Have you pooped?”

“Twice already.”

“Go take a shower now darling. I want everything really spic and span when we have our conversations.”

“OK Honey, I’ll be back in 10 minutes.”

“Back again Honey.”

“Doesn’t that really feel good?”

“It does.”

“Did you see Lubos’ post on Glashow?”

“Honey I am laughing so hard I can hardly say this. How is it possible to write a book employing a real writer to write the fucking thing?”

“Did you watch any of the videos as penance?”

“Just one. He looks like very nice man and appears very distinguished.”

“Do you want to send an email apologizing?”

“No he’s going to have to take it like a man just like I’ve had to take it. If you can’t take it you shouldn’t be dishing it out either.”

“I just listened to his audio Lubos added, 2 minutes of the end of physics, wait till I stop laughing.”

“Do you think he really finds it hilarious you took a snipe at him, even honored?”

“I’m sure he does. I’m going to take a nap. Talk to you after noon.”

1:12 PM

“Are you drinking?”

“I’m opening my 4th.”

“Is that 3 days in a row?”

“It is.”

“Don’t get too wound up with it David. You have always drunk beer as part of your working lifestyle. How many pages have you written me?”

“141 Honey.”

“Does that make you feel empowered as an artist, a writer, a scientist and a man?”

“It does Honey.”
“Do you see that as foundation for the future?”

“I do.”

“I saw on a RF comment:”

Peter Woit, of course, had a review on NEW, and, of course, he loved the book, at the same time making condescending snarky comments about Annette Dartière, which was not relevant.

“I made a comment on Not Even Wrong back in July. He deleted it so I posted “Your asshole IS pretty tight Peter.”

“I’ve never paid attention to fucking assholes darling. But I’ll bet Peter will remember having to delete that one.”

“Honey I’ve worked out my closing comment. It seems if + went to – and all the same force laws applied there would be no preference for a matter universe vs an anti-matter one. But if an anti-matter universe is on a collision course with our universe at a significant fraction of c I feel comfortable knowing I have 12 beers yet to drink and then can retire, passed out, facing ultimate destruction.”

“But neutrinos are all E x B?”

“Of course matter is only allowed. E and B are not equivalent in the N particle. Only E x B neutrinos, photons and gravitons exist. Why not B x E? And exactly what does that have to do with the matter/anti-matter question?”

“What exactly are the E and B vectors associated with the N particle?”

“Other than their orientational value I have no physical description.”

“Do you think anyone could make headway on that one?”

“I’d love to see it but don’t think it can be done. I’ve thought of the E as being a point of mass and B always has to trail that mass but nothing to amount to a realistic phenomenology.”

“How many beers have you had darling? Are you going to leave this unedited by sobriety and just send it?”

“I’m on my 8th Honey. That is exactly what I am planning to do.”

11 PM, listening to Coast to Coast.

“Are you drinking again?”

“I am.”

“Is that what happens, you had 4 and ½ Wednesday evening, then 12 Thanksgiving morning, then 11 Friday night, then 8 during the day today and now twice a day drinking again Saturday night?”

“I’m afraid I have seen that pattern before. I’ll start a new sobriety effort tomorrow.”
“Do you still use your first mouse pad?”

“I do. I got it along with my first computer in 1992 or 1993. It was a 25 KHz, had 2 meg RAM and I installed 2 more so I could use MathCad.”

“When did you get on the Internet?”

“Around 1996. As soon as I saw what a link was I realized the revolution.”

“You know in dealing with problems like alcoholism only truth will ever be able to allow me to help?”

“I do know that Honey. I never spent too much time worrying about my drinking in the past. I am looking at life differently now since you came into my life. It has caused me to examine some pretty basic questions, like am I an alcoholic, am I going to be able to lead a normal and productive life in the future?”

“What are you listening to?”

“Just changed from Coast to George Benson and Pat Metheny. I checked the RF since getting up. Lawrence Krauss made a comment. He opened with “I can’t believe I am responding to Mott” or something like that. I just went to the thread again to retrieve the comment and Lubos has deleted 3 comments by LMK and a comment by Papertiger. Then he attacked him savagely: Just count how much crap you have said about physics in the last 4 years or so and kindly compare yourself with the creationists. You are worse. You could instantly shake your hand with Woit and his likes. It is amazing for me to see where people like you find the stomach to attack relatively clean people such as the U.S. president Bush for their interactions with scientific facts. Bush may have said an inaccurate thing about science at one point or another but I am convinced that he has never said it was likely for the Universe to die prematurely as a result of our observation of supernovae.”

“Do you think eventually W and Hilary will get on your bandwagon?”

“They’re not very much older than me. They are going to have to face the music. I’d just as soon torture them, kill them and harvest their organs, but I suppose they will be forgiven when they repent. A spoiled rich kid who never worked a day in his life, who never took home a single lesson from education, I would like to kill those bastards Honey.’

“You know I could never stomach speech writers for politicians. The degree of fraud is so transparent it is ludicrous. People that can’t write their own speeches shouldn’t be just dumb actors delivering them. It would be good if no intelligent person would ever be willing to write a speech for a politician, confining their skills in art to the theatre.”

“Would your bitch be able to help you out on speeches darling?”

“It depends on the bitch I guess.”

“I know you are beside yourself laughing right now darling, but do you think Laura could point out a few simple facts in global design to W?”
“He’s never listened to the bitch. He is a fucking moron. I imagine he thinks there is a vast left wing conspiracy to discredit him, as if he couldn’t do a superior job as the decision maker.”

“How many beers have you had darling?”

“7”

“Just wanted to make sure you are sober.”

Sunday morning at 11:37 AM.

“How are you feeling this morning darling?”

“Pretty good. I had 8 beers last night and went to bed a little after 1. I got up at 3:42 to pee and had a bad headache so took a couple ibuprofen. At 5:20 I was up to pee again and still had a headache so took two more. Then I slept till 9:42 but had to get up to pee twice. So although it was a rough night I did get 8 hours and after being up having coffee for a couple hours feel excellent.”

“Do you go back and edit anything you wrote the day or days before?”

“I specifically do not do that.”

“Excellent, unexpurgated. What are you going to do today?”

“Mostly write to you. I took out the garbage and stopped at Nelson’s. He just got a $4000 Bowflex tread climber that is the large size, big enough for me. He has invited me to come over and use it daily and I am looking forward to that. When he is drinking he gets pretty enthusiastic and offers to be my trainer.”

“Is it too icy to walk outside?”

“It is and that why his tread climber will be so nice.”

“Do you want to drink today?”

“I want not to drink. I am looking forward to Coast on Friday. Michio Cock and Bull is going to be on with Art Bell. The title is the search for aliens. I emailed Michio back in 2000 that I would rather share amour with the #1 fox in the physics class than be the #1 student. I’ll bet he got a thrill over that. His presumptive knowledge of biology and everything else about science I find difficult to acknowledge. I don’t think he is in line for any Nobel’s either.”

“He’s got his little enterprise down at CUNY and is really quite a nice individual although I know it must be difficult for you to listen to the sheer volume of spewage he emits.”

“Have you showered and flossed?”

“And shaved.”

“How often do you shave?”

“Every 4 days.”

“Is that because it grows slowly or because you let it get pretty long?”
“I let it get pretty long. I’ve told you before I have little body hair and consider it an indicator of my evolutionary distance from the primates.”

“Do you think you are going to be crying when we meet?”

“Only tears of Joy Honey.”

“What are you having for breakfast?”

“Toast English muffin, with Smart Balance, a slice of Tillamook extra sharp white cheddar, raspberry jelly, grapefruit juice and tomato juice with a lot of salt.”

“I can see everything is nice and clean sweetie pie.”

3:21 PM

“Was Nelson over for a few beers?”

“He was. I tried out his tread climber. It uses the friction in shock absorbers to simulate the energy exertion of climbing stairs. He’s going to be my coach. I’m going to start with a 10 minute workout in the morning.”

“When is the last time you worked up a sweat?”

“I can’t remember. Not more than a few times in the last 20 years.”

“Are you going to try to give up the smokes?”

“I am. Nelson pointed out that not having a heart attack is much better than having health insurance.”

“If you could control drinking, quit smoking and get exercise that would be the best present you could give to me. Think of how good it will feel to get into physical shape again after all these years of being fat.”

“Do you get aroused thinking about me darling?”

“A little bit. It’s hard to do but also hard not to imagine. Do you get aroused thinking about me Honey?”

“You’re I apologize my dick is not 8 inches long email was pretty funny David. Also your use of co-linearity of intent was pretty funny. I wasn’t sure just what literal and figurative intent you were representing. Is it possible to be aroused and laugh at the same time?”

“What are you listening to?”

“Female jazz vocalists.”

“What are you having for dinner, more turkey?”

“Egg rolls.”

“Are there any good specials at Fred’s this week?”

“Texas pink grapefruit 3 for $1 and tomatoes on the vine for $1.48 a pound. I squeeze two refrigerated grapefruit in the morning and it is a treat.”

“Do you have a squeezer?”
“I do, about 12 pounds and two feet tall. I like oranges with lemon and lime mixed in. I only buy citrus in season, usually at Costco. It’s a real treat.”

“Did you see Davies article in the NYT?”

“I did. It seems to me physical existence is clear proof of God. That doesn’t require any faith, only a Creation that happened as surely as I am here. All you have to add is that God is an absentee landlord and the LOP determine our evolution and fate. There is a lot of confusion about what the LOP are and what they mean. Showing they are all functions of N particle mechanics and dynamics should clear that arena up.”

“How do you think the LOP are like mathematics, just truth?”

“I do. E = mc^2 is absolutely precise. Its meaning is completely unequivocal. The same for F = dP/dt. The same for the Laws of EM and gravity. They are simple mathematical truths about Nature. Motivating the N particle dynamics will illustrate that underlying structure.”

“I think you should use the word Unification in the title.”

“A Simple Unification of Physics and Chemistry”

“The Universe and everything in it is made of a single particle that has not yet been recognized. I have named that particle the N particle. Since everything is made of this single particle all the LOP are just in some way, shape or form a mathematical description of N particle mechanics and dynamics. The first thing to see is how the electric field is made of N particles. Then we will see how magnetic fields are made of the N particle. Then it will be obvious instantaneously how photons are made of the N particle. Scratching the noggin a time or two we will be able to see how gravity fields are made of the N particle. Those four fields are the window into the world of electrons, protons and atoms.

The E field.

The B field.

Photons.

Gravity.

A phenomenological model of the electron and a derivation of e.

\[
\begin{align*}
511.000 \text{ eV} &= h \text{ numax} \\
? &= h \text{ numin} \\
511.000/\? &= \text{max/min} \\
\text{max} &= 137c/RBohr \\
\text{min} &= 1/\text{max} \\
\text{Ne}/2 &= \text{numax}^2 \\
511,000/\text{Ne} &= \text{N particle energy} \\
\frac{1}{2} m_e \text{RBohr}^2(2\pi/137)^2 &= \text{N particle energy} \\
m_e \text{RBohr}^2(\pi/137)^2 &= 511,000
\end{align*}
\]

Note 137, c/RBohr with s dropped, Ne, 1836, numax and numin with s dropped are the same dimensionless numbers everywhere in the Universe.
Mathematical proof of all the above by reducing combinations of expressions to simple identities known to be true.

“You’ll want to do a really nice job on your QM and chemistry.”

“Have you pooped again this evening?”

“I have and took a shower.”

“Do you even use paper or just take a shower?”

“I just take a shower. I don’t even keep toilet paper in the condo. All it does is make a mess. I leave a roll of paper towels in the bathroom for Kevin.”

“You are a little scatological darling.”

“Do you want to drink tonight?”

“Nope.”

“You have a nice evening.”

“You too Honey.”

405
The remainder of this dialogue has been lost.
Hi Honey,

I think the universe is thought to be $13.7 \times 10^9$ light years in diameter. That’s the distance apart of the two most distant suns, on opposite edges of the universe, are. The frontier of photons expanding into the void, the first ones from the big bang, then is at $13.7 \times 10^9 \times 2$ light years in diameter because the expansion of the matter universe is at less than c. I think all that is based on Hubble red shift. I have always wondered about red shift. I attribute it to Doppler shift of the photons that follows immediately from my model of photons. The question then is does the red shifted photon have $E = h \nu$? I don’t think it is. I think the energy of the red shifted photon is the same energy as the initial higher energy photon due simply to having the same number of N particles.. This should be addressable by calorimetric studies. Maybe the levels of energy involved are so small calorimetric studies cannot be done on the photon flux. I guess I could calculate the flux from a star like our sun at a distance of $10^2 \times 10^6$ m in about 22 seconds on my TI-35 but I won’t do that calculation now. Matchbook calculations must be made repeatedly in the formulation of model process and I am as fast as a human can be in doing them, or close to as fast at least.

I think you are fertile and want to have children, 2 or 3 or 4 or 5. But I do not know that for a fact. It is too difficult to sift that with certainty from my input data stream. I think I have sifted that you are communicating with me and are interested in having an intimate relationship.

When I came out of psychosis around January 10th I thought I had made a mistake about you and that no way you could actually want to have an intimate relationship with me. But I also knew my science was right and knew I had received some unique looking events, the heroin injections I think you send, and they continued throughout the psychosis and the recovery from psychosis, and now it seems to me inescapable to conclude they come from you and you and me will be together soon and find a joyous love. I thought about sending you an email apologizing for the incredible torrent of emails I sent you but couldn’t do that being uncertain if the non-random heroin shots I received were actually coming from you. I really had no other explanation for them due to their unique content, i.e. just what they were in letters, numbers and words.

You know naming things is a lot of fun. I have named the N particle, eMaam, DAVEST, SAA, the Sands of Time, Plows into Sword shares, in every email I have sent to you in the subject line, people’s names, like Heidi Ilie Dartiere and others. You are really going to get a kick out of the file name I used for that letter I sent you last spring, *Cohernity of intent in large, red Vivaldi font*.
You’ll find this humorous. What put me over the edge to be writing to you again was a comment by “Cynthia” on TRF: “… it has a nice ring to it. (tongue-in-cheek)” Now that could be a coincidence to be sure. You’re pretty funny.

You know Honey, I don’t think I can write dialogue between you and me again. I will write some dialogue, maybe you and your sister, me and Alan Mathison Turing, me and Moseley, etc. Turing’s was really a tragic life. He was gay and was chemically neutered by the English government. He put on a lot of weight and committed suicide. Also the loss of Moseley in WWI was tragic.

When did you have your first orgasm? When did you lose your virginity? Are you capable of multiple orgasms or is having even one difficult?

By the way, that’s quite the nice nose you have. I don’t have a strong nose, just average or normal. But yours looks to have some special character.

Love,
David
3-16

My dear Annette,

Belief is a most interesting phenomenon. As a scientist I only believe in reality, but what is reality? Well reality is no less than just seeing the universe as it is. The meaning of the LOP are different to different people. To me it means God is an absentee landlord and the LOP are the arrow of time, i.e. determine the evolution of the system. The evolution of the system is the ordered transport and connectivity of atoms. Entropy really means transport, within a phase, and between phases.

Do I believe you love me and want to raise a family together and spend the rest of our physical lives here on planet earth together and have our souls intertwined in some non-physical world for the rest of time? I have always wanted to find a person to share all those goals, ambitions and rewards. I imagine you have too and that is a normal ambition for a human to have. I don’t want to be presumptive or think of you in any way as an entitlement.

What you believe in is related to sanity. If you believe in a delusional picture of reality you are insane. Psychosis is something like insanity but not the same thing. For instance I think you would have to be insane to join the military and run the risk of mortal injury. I think you have to be insane to not legalize recreational drugs. I think you have to be insane to take the Bible literally. Interchangeably with this use of insane we can substitute crazy. When I have been psychotic I was neither insane nor crazy. That makes my psychosis rather unique, but I don’t know enough about psychosis in other people to be sure about that uniqueness. As I’ve told you I think animals are in a psychotic state and that the rise of the cerebellum was the key to breaking out of that psychotic state and have insight in a rational way into our behavior and thought processes.

So what should I believe in regarding you and me? If I believe you love me am I in store for a serious disappointment?

Since you haven’t sicced the police on me yet I am going to assume you do love me. That’s a very nice thought to carry around. If I am wrong I will face those consequences down the road.

Do I feel lucky?

Love,
David

3-16

You know at 55 and 46 one has quite a lot of experiences in life and the memory of them. The accumulation of memories is required to have the wisdom of age but that also requires the ability to process those memories.

When the memories are about a life alone they are painful. Love, sex and companionship are so essential to the human experience, or at least they are to me, that when you go without those essential ingredients you suffer, or at least I have suffered being deprived of those parts of the human experience for almost 25 years.

I never wanted to go out for dinner or see a movie alone. I just about always fished for trout alone and preferred that. And I just about always hunted alone and found the solace stimulating.

Doing real science, designing things, is done alone but with information exchange across a boundary. For instance I need to know the Stefan-Boltzmann law. I get immediate communication across that boundary through the Internet. But I have never had a serious conversation about science with anyone since my college years. That’s a long stretch of being in isolation.

Did Jesus really live and was he psychotic at 30 when he emerged from the 12 years of his life for which there is no record? Since writing was invented only 2-3000 years ago it is pretty difficult to interpret the core writings of all that religious nonsense, the scriptures, aren’t they fucking handed down by God?

Jesus Christ, are you 46 and myself 55 and both still alone? It seems almost cruel.

Why do we do what we do?

3-17

Hi Honey,

Sunday noon.

Today I am quitting cigarettes, knock on wood. I have been on the Chantix 4 days and the cravings are much reduced. I also have Commit lozenges and am sucking on one now. They are a real rip-off, $40 for 72 tablets, cherry flavored. For hard candies cherry is my favorite flavor. I used to like the cherry cough drops as a kid. And chocolate covered cherries are my favorite candy although I haven’t had any in probably 10 years. I really don’t like sweets enough to buy them although I enjoy them when I have them. I will call today a good and productive day if I do not have a smoke.

My mother was concerned about the Chantix. When I went psychotic in December I had been on the Chantix about 4 or 5 weeks. Chantix binds somewhere in the dopamine system, like Prolixin. An unusual side effect is you have many more dreams when taking Chantix. So it is possible that the Chantix was a factor in becoming psychotic. After 4 or 5 days without a smoke I will stop taking the Chantix.

The first Commit lozenge I am sucking on now is working rather well. They dissolve quite slowly and seem to satisfy my cravings, i.e. give a rush, a chemical reward, like smoking.

Smoking irritates your lips, tongue and cheeks. After 18 hours without a smoke my oral cavity feels quite improved already. I have a little wheezing (a little squeak in your lungs
when breathing) at night and that goes away within a few days when I quit. Smoking is crazy and I have to win this battle. I feel I can, with the help of the Chantix and Commit. It depresses me and makes me feel weak to be addicted to nicotine. To defeat that addiction empowers me.

I have been drinking daily. My weight is stable at 280. If I didn’t drink I could get down to 205-210 and would be feeling much more energetic and less sedentary. I look forward to going for a walk with you in the country, off the beaten path and hidden from pedestrian view, once or twice a day, often in the first hour of the day since I am a morning person. I would like a walk to be about 2 miles long and a loop as opposed to having to turn around and walk back.

I just talked to my mother for 81 minutes and had something to eat. This is the longest I have gone without a cigarette in about a year. I feel I can break the addiction.

I am writing this email over the hours of the day. It started at 2:31 PM my time and it currently is 8:37 PM and I am having a few beers and have lasagna in the oven. Right now George Benson is playing, On Broadway. I’ve had two Commit lozenges and no smokes. I feel I can beat the cigarettes now. Smoking gave me more anxiety than drinking beer or taking Prolixin or anything.

It is surprising how foolish I have been in my life at various points and over various intervals. It’s the School of Hard Knocks, not the preferred method of accumulating knowledge, but the real experience of life. I was productive intellectually for all but 4 or 5 years of my life, the only unproductive periods during psychosis, but not the entirety of periods of psychosis was negative, i.e. I got some good work done.

You know I am just starting to appreciate the information paradox related to black holes. If there was a primordial salt structure of electrons and protons as small solid spheres then there would be very little information in that glob of matter. Now, here, 13.7 billion years later we see there is a lot of information in the structure of the human brain and a lot of other things too. And what is information and what is entropy?

I have a really exciting idea for a battery. It would have the energy storage capacity to give a vehicle hundreds of miles of range. It would be non-toxic in composition. It would revolutionize vehicles, going to an all electric design. It is based on oxidation/reduction. Two metal ions, maybe the same and maybe different, like Mn and Zn are encaged in an organic molecule cage and the two cages are facing each other. At the back of the cage is a covalent bond to a graphite or nano-tube matrix. The organic cage is much like prosthetic groups that are protein active sites and have a positive metal ion at the center, in biology, either Cr, Mn, Fe, Co, Ni, Cu and Zn.

To charge the battery you force in one or two electrons, reducing one or both of the metal ions. Those atoms are then at higher energy than the oxidized atom. To discharge the battery you let that electrons out in a circuit where it can do work. The voltage of the battery is simply the sum of the red/ox potentials of the metal ion couple involved. I lay those structures down in a close packed array on some kind of plastic film and wind it up on a spool like a cassette disc. It would be the ideal battery. Power plants are about 50% efficient in generating electricity, even 67% for modern cogeneration plants where the waste exhaust from the fuel burning turbine heats steam that runs a steam turbine, in sequence to the fuel burning turbine. An internal combustion vehicle is about 25% efficient. So if we had a good battery we could double the efficiency and halve the energy requirement for vehicular transportation since an electric vehicle could be 96% efficient.

Another interesting design for energy storage is small capacitors. And also as I’ve told you before systems with biological like membranes and phosphates are very interesting.
The funniest thing I have worked on is extracting energy from the earth’s electric field. The field at the surface is about 100-150 V/m. Now that’s a pretty large voltage and it accounts for why there are no ions in the atmosphere. I think I can do it with four fast switches, a four stroke like cycle of you make the analogy to the internal combustion energy. What you would have is spherical balloons filled with hydrogen and with a thin metallic surface. You arrange these spheres at different heights on simple tether lines that are also conductors. The energy density of a 100 V/m field is not large per cubic meter. To extract energy you need a very fast switch. I think transistors could be that fast switch. What you do is touch each sphere to ground. Then disconnect them from ground and open a circuit to the sphere and the charge on the spheres flows off.

Honey, right now I am beating this nicotine addiction. I know you don’t want your love to me to be a tragedy, and also I don’t want my personal life to be a tragedy. My weight comes down fast when I don’t drink so I’m not really worried about that. I’m going for another lozenge.

Honey I am beating this addiction right now. And I am thinking of spreading your legs and fucking you, my first pussy in 25 years, of course wet, eager and receptive, and I as a technician, as a medical doctor, realize I need my lungs to do that. So what really motivates me right now?

That’s right Honey. That’s what motivates. Everything else is immaterial.

Right now I’m on my tenth beer. I stop at 12 or 13, eat and sleep. The lasagna is cooling on the stove top.

Wouldn’t you give your right arm for the unexpurgated conversations between Einstein and Gödel or Einstein and Bohr or Bohr and Heisenberg?

Do you know I always take the minimum number of steps. But I am now 55, without a spouse, without children, without grand children, but also at the peak of my intellectual ability. I sure hope you want to have children. Raising some kids is almost the only thing second to sex with you. You raise them for 14 years and then they make their own decisions. 14 years is a short distance to walk with you alongside. I imagine we can have 40 years together and will have great grandchildren.

I will never smoke again. Thank you.

When we are in Dryden I will be able to show you all my favorites, waterfalls, hidden off the common path, that are so beautiful, and filled me with so much love for nature as a youth. I have some 10-12 foot falls that must be negotiated. I negotiated them through rock climbing as a youth and if I can get down to 205 can do that again. When you cling precariously to the face a solid matrix it is quite an experience. I’ve never been an addict of that like real mountain climbers, and I guess you’ve done some of that, but I think you will have to put away your goal to climb M. Everest and I will have to put away my goal to win the Indy 500, although you and I could probably do both. Raising a family and biological processes involved will be so much more stimulating, real and meaningful.

Let’s be recluses to the public eye.

As a little challenge I will try to compose a poem of how I feel:

She was divine
I was slime
She spruced me up
And in the end filled my cup

“Could you actually put a poem that bad out there?”
“I just did it bitch, kiss my ass.”

“What is the age of your id anyway?”

“Three or four, you fucking bitch, kiss my ass again.”

Monday AM, listening to Rush

Hi Honey,

36 hours without a smoke. The Chantix is effective in reducing cravings and the Commit lozenges work for those I still have. I was so addicted to nicotine I didn’t know if I could beat it but now I know I can and am doing that.

I reviewed what I wrote yesterday and in the interest of being unexpurgated am not deleting anything.

The changes that come about from quitting are quite dramatic. Most noticed is the irritation to the mouth and throat healing. After about a week you cough up mucous with some dark, sloughed off lung cells in it, like the lung cleaning itself. That lasts for about a week and then everything is pretty much back to normal, provided you don’t have bronchitis or emphysema. I don’t think I have either of those. I just took a lozenge. They dissolve over about ½ hour and the stimulation lasts for several hours. Then this episode of smoking that began in April 2003 lasted almost 5 years, with 2 of those 5 very light smoking and 3 of those 5 rather heavy smoking.

The whole black hole fascination is most unusual: the information paradox, event horizon, singularity in space-time, Hawking radiation and decay, thermodynamics and quantum structure. The definition as the gravity being too strong for a photon to escape from the surface is pure nonsense. The idea of some kind of mathematical singularity is pure nonsense. I think black holes are just 1 or 2 K massive solids and probably mostly iron. I think they only occur at the center of galaxies, nowhere else. In the big bang they were the lumps that got blasted into space with all having a radial out velocity. Then those blobs spin and spit out suns in the disc of revolution. Then those suns spin, expand outward in the galaxies spiral arms, and spit out 9-10 planets or so. On one or two life is possible.

On another level the black hole is a person who is playing Einstein’s game. The information paradox has to do with that set of black holes and the dilemma is, do they say what really was going on all these years, do some say something’s and other things remain secrets, in SUSY breaking.

In addition to changes in the mouth, tongue, throat and lungs there are changes going on in the brain, changes that affect how you feel. Quitting heavy smoking is really quite a profound transition. It feels good and welcome and I know I have this addiction beaten. The Commit lozenge is about the size of a dime and a little thicker. You can put it between cheek and gum like chew, and they last a long time. I wonder if they are addictive and if using them propagates addiction. I can enjoy a cigar but have never used chew or snuff.

The democratic contest is really getting interesting. I really like pastors like Jeremiah Wright. He is honest. He is quite delusional and has no comprehension of the real biological problems blacks have. But I love his ability to spit out honestly all his racist hate of the white man, the devil. Through human husbandry I hope in 10 years to have all new black babies vastly improved genetically. All you have to do is collect sperm from the top 5% or 10% of black males. If you paid them $800 per ejaculation and collected once a week a stud could make a lot of money. Getting eggs is invasive and I think the
fee for that service should be 10 or 20 thousand or more. Surrogacy should be around 100 thousand. We need free markets in all these things. Free does not mean without rules and order. It means with no transaction costs and that market forces are play out. We need high bioethical standards. And the Pope can go fuck himself, along with the religious right.

I intend to be the doctor for the planet earth. STD’s, addictions to unsafe recreational drugs, public health information requirements, drug design, genetic solutions to fat, dumb, ugly and cancer.

Although I feel profound changes happening fortunately I do not have cravings for nicotine. I feel strange, quite strange, but better, healing.

I’m going to send this when the lozenge is fully dissolved. Then you can imagine how long it took me to write to you during that time interval.

I’m putting on some classical music. The first CD is Yo-Yo Ma Bach cello solo.

Here’s my cacti assortment, in the two small containers on the left, two olive and one volunteer in middle, and three of my desert wild rose on the right:

I’m going to make Bonsai out of the olive trees and transplant the volunteer.

Now I need to moderate my beer consumption. Currently I am drinking 10-12 once a day. As I pointed out it is difficult to live with beer and difficult to live without beer. I can get exhausted and feel like shit if I drink twice a day. I am in a slightly uncomfortable steady state at 10-12 beers once a day but maintain constant weight and get a lot done intellectually.

Also in this set of CD’s are more Bach and Midori on violin.

The effect of the marijuana is suppressed in some way by smoking. Of the two smoking has a more dramatic effect then the marijuana. Now the marijuana seems better when I am not smoking tobacco.
Here’s the mother of the volunteer and a Saguaro cactus. I got both when psychotic in summer of 2006. The cactus is going to be a leaning tower of Pisa.

“Do you think there is symbolism to everything?”

“I do. I think life imitates art to an amazing degree. I see atoms and molecules and collections of atoms and molecules as fascinating art forms.”

“What do the leaning tower of Pisa symbolize?”

“Well that could have quite a few meanings actually. It’s in a Fred Meyer French Roast coffee can. I got it in September 2006. I got the cacti potting soil, high drainage, so it is in a good container and will grow alongside both of us for the rest of our lives. I water it once a month, like the lunar and menstrual cycles.”

“You really are a sick bastard, albeit humorously implemented.”

“When did you get the other plant?”

“Spring 2006 when psychotic. I raised it outdoors that summer and it didn’t do too well. When I took it inside in the fall it actually grew better under low indirect light. I water it once a week. All these plants I showed you today could last a lifetime.”

“Be careful not to prick yourself.”

Well honey, that’s how long it takes for one lozenge to dissolve when kept between gum and cheek, and that’s not tongue in cheek!

Love,
David

3-17

My little sweetie pie,
I am on my fourth beer and my second lozenge. Boy are all those politicians cretins. If they weren’t also violent it would be not much of an irritant. Their violence only makes me want to kill them, slowly and cruelly, 72 hours of gut-wrenching pain.

Although blow cocaine and nicotine are very different experiences and very different molecules, they are both highly addictive, and to some extent stimulate a similar chemical system. When I took neurochemistry at Cornell the mechanism of cocaine was unknown but thought to be involved with axon conduction of action potentials and not directed at synapses. I don’t know what is known now but I think progress in this arena has been rather slow. I intend to have several dozen alternative recreational drugs on the market in 10 years. I am going to work on a safe cigarette. Nicotine treated marijuana will be a solution for all daily marijuana smokers. Much more than that can be done. I think you can isolate why tobacco smells so good and why cigars are so good. I think you synthesize those molecules and combine them with a burnable substrate and nicotine to have a safe cigarette. I think I can take out ethanol in 10 years too. It will be an alcohol but longer than two carbons. Ethanol is really a very unique model, in many ways second only to H₂O. Ethanol is the metabolic end product of anaerobic fermentation by both bacteria and yeast.

Changing subjects, I haven’t had sex in 25 years. I feel like a monk. I believe some monks claim they don’t masturbate. When psychotic and thinking I was under surveillance I once went over a year without masturbating. The ascetic life is interesting. Do you think priests and the Pope jerk off? Can you imagine me asking Oprah that question with the largest viewer audience in history? Fuck the priests and the Pope.

So how does SUSY break? Am I crossing the event horizon now or have already passed it but don’t know it?

You know I never want to sound arrogant to you. But I think I can solve just about every problem mankind has. I have a simple total solution to gun violence and drunk driving accidents through technology. Those are not insignificant problems. They account for something like 30 or 35 thousand lives a year in America. They are problems world wide. I don’t want to get technical right now but I would be surprised if I can’t have a total technological solution of both in three years.

Now for some art sweetie pie:

The night before:
The morning after:

Me thinking about all that:

Do you masturbate? How long does it take to have orgasm?

“What are you, some kind of fucking engineer regarding sex?”

“Sorry Honey, you’re right, the imagination is more important than the calculation.”

“I do. Every other day. About 2 and ½ minutes.”

“Did you know Honey, if we really have to do it to them in the ass, you can publish “Annihilation by the Bold Ruler”, with only my actual dimensions whited out. It would be beyond hilarity. I would so love to take down the Bush’s and Clintons with the pen rather than a small pox like virus of 250,000 or so nucleotide pairs in a capsid with an external membrane capable of infecting the human pulmonary system and cycle.”

“I give you my utmost.”
“And I am lucky for that.”

My current crop:

Hopefully that will be my last crop.

Your humble servant, bitch,
David

3-19

Hi Honey,

I started this email on Tuesday early. I finished it Tuesday late. And I’m sending it now, Wednesday AM without editing review.

I’m having some new coffee, MJB, this Tuesday morning. It’s quite good.

I’ve gone two days and three nights without smoking. About an hour ago, its 1:15 AM, I had a little craving and took a lozenge and it worked to relieve the craving. I realize the temptation will come from time to time and each time must be resisted. There can be no turning back. The worst is over. The gains made must be made permanent.

What are you planning to do with your time now?

Write to you.

Do you think your dad knew about Einstein’s game?

That’s a tough one. Only several months after discovering the N particle I explained to him how the N particle was in the middle of the road and should have been discovered 100 years earlier. I told him what a lot of nonsense Einstein’s relativity theories and QM were. I explained to him what I thought Einstein’s game was, namely to end warfare and conflict in mankind. His response was. “No, that’s not happening, I would have known about it.” I didn’t pursue it further.

You realize of course he would have to say that if he did know what was going on.
“Yes that’s apparent. But the way he treated me over the years is really as if I had no value, no important contribution to make, and that I was delusional in believing my work to be seminal. So I would have to say no, he didn’t know.

Did you see Gerard t’Hooft’s recommendations for aspiring theoretical physicists?

When I saw that little note in parenthesis that the Lagrangian is especially important I was beside myself, in tears, laughing. I looked up the Lagrangian in Wikipedia and was in more tears when I saw it was to subtract the potential energy from the kinetic energy and then base a whole system of mechanics somehow on that. I have never seen anything so perverse. Lagrange lived between Franklin, 1752, and Faraday, 1814. No you dummy you add kinetic and potential energy together and keep track of the flow between them. Back to my dad, I also don’t think my mother recognizes my intelligence, abilities and accomplishments. It would not be possible for her to treat me the way she has if she knew what I was really doing with my life. It’s just completely beyond the realm of her comprehension. The same goes for my psychiatric nurse practitioner, Fran Asad. It is completely beyond the realm of her comprehension that I could be one of the most formidable thinkers in mankind’s history.

What are you having for breakfast?

Sirloin tip roast and cucumber salad with Blue cheese and Bacos.

What do you think of people who can’t perceive intelligence but think they can?

I’m looking forward to suing Fran for the neuropathy in my feet. People really only care about themselves. Although everyone observes PC no one really gives a shit about anyone else’s pain or suffering. It’s all just window dressing, fucking politically correct window dressing.

How are you lungs feeling?

Different, a little strange, better, relieved along with my throat and mouth. The biological changes of quitting smoking are really dramatic.

How do you think you have been treated by your parents and siblings and maybe everyone?

Like warm shit, yuk, what could be worse. My parents didn’t care if I had a place to live and saw no future for me. They only worried about themselves and were only concerned with not having to support me financially, which they never did. My dad one exclaimed how I had cost them over the years $10,000. That was in 1985 or 1986 when I was 33 years old. My dad also told me in 1985 that my mom had said if I moved home she would have to go into a mental hospital.

It’s pretty obvious your family is shit, isn’t it?

I guess it is.

Do you want revenge?

The reward of revenge is very small in comparison to the reward of a loving relationship, so with that perspective understood, I do look forward to getting revenge. My brother Cain is the lowest scum conceivable. He would have been an SS officer in Hitler’s Germany. He actually thinks he is smarter than I am.

Your crop looked pretty nice. When is harvest?
A week from Thursday. I had three Blueberry females and pollinated all three with some White Widow pollen. Two of the three ended up looking pretty nice. It will be interesting to see how the Blueberry compares with the White Widow.

What are you listening to?

Classical FM. There’s one classical station here in Anchorage.

You didn’t reveal your real sentiment about your family in your screenplay or show your resentment to the treatment you received as a mentally ill person by the medical community and social security. Why did you leave all that out?

I think it is in poor taste to do that and nothing is gained. The satisfaction of showing the people of the planet earth the glory of my mind juxtaposed with how I’ve been treated will be a sublime reward. I’m also going to sue Cain and Pfizer.

Are you going to maintain a relationship with your mother?

Yes. She is not to blame. She is incapable of understanding mental illness, incapable of understanding my intelligence, and incapable of much empathy, and all of those are genetically determined, she just lacks the DNA to rise much above the bovine level.

Will you ever be honest and open?

Yes. I think I’ll wait until my mother is dead and then point out her lack of empathy for my situation is identical with a Nazi’s indifference to another individuals suffering. And of course I’ll get to discuss my parents and my siblings at length.

Why do you think your family was so dysfunctional?

The disparity in intelligence between my dad and my mother. A mother that can only perform human husbandry tasks but that cannot get involved in the intellectual development of the children is not who I would choose for a wife.

Are you going to have the person delivering the court summons to Cain on camera and with audio?

Might even be holding the camera myself.

How would you characterize your mother and sisters?

Cold hearted bitches, Nazis.

You got out of the hospital In August 1984 and came out of psychosis on your own overnight about a week or two after released from API. You had no money, no assets, and were recovering from years of psychosis and a suicide attempt. Did anyone in your family offer to help?

My Dad sent me $300 a month. I got APA that was $250 a month. I lived in the absolute cheapest room in town that was $225 a month. My sister Mary and her husband Jeffy loaned me $400 once. That was the only family support I received.

Were you able to work?

That would be about as likely as a chimpanzee typing out Hamlet.

Do you hate people who treated you that way?
Not really but I’d like to expose their stupidity to public ridicule.

*I’m glad you left all that baggage out of your screenplay. That was good taste to not air your linens in public.*

That’s what I thought too.

*How are you going to have the sirloin tip roast?*

On a toasted English muffin with mayo and onion, pickle and chips.

*Do you think it would be possible to design a drug that could induce psychosis?*

Yes and I want to design it. To put a person in psychosis for 30 days while confined to a psychiatric institution would be a life changing experience. Prolixin is a competitive inhibitor, competing with dopamine for binding at the receptor suite. To induce psychosis you want to out dopamine dopamine.

*Do you slice the sirloin tip roast very thin?*

I do. I have two nice high carbon steel knives and a Henckels diamond honing steel.

*How are the nicotine cravings going?*

Not too bad. I’m on my second lozenge.

*Are you all alone now?*

Just about. Kevin hasn’t been over in a couple weeks. I see Nelson for an hour or so once or twice a week. And my mother calls on Sundays and we talk for about an hour.

*Do you feel like drinking beer?*

I have my first two on the table. I only have ten in the fridge. Its 4 AM and I’ve been up since 10:30 PM. I know I shouldn’t drink in the morning, I am going to today. In two hours Obama is giving his race in America speech. That should be entertaining.

*Take it one step at a time. Like you smoking gave me the most concern about your health. How productive do you think you will be when we are finally together?*

I think being with you will give me great motivation for creative work.

*Am I with you right now?*

I guess you are.

*You know my loins ache to hold my man.*

I noticed you spreading your legs when you knelt down to pick up that paperclip. I hope it won’t be much longer. I guess a few more months wouldn’t be too bad.

*How do you feel about you and me?*
Beautiful darling. When galaxies collide.

You know what it is like for you. Do you think you know what it is like for me?

I guess I’d have to say I don’t. All I can say is I feel so lucky and so fortunate. I imagine you have incredibly high standards for your man and would never even consider an intellectual inferior. I imagine you want someone tall, handsome and strong. But how you feel I can only speculate. Loneliness is so difficult for me it is hard to imagine it isn’t difficult for you too. I imagine my smoking and drinking give you some anxiety but I also imagine you like I generally do not suffer from anxiety. I imagine you are an extraordinarily strong woman and an expert in psychology. I imagine you are also an artist and enjoy creative and original designs or refinements of designs. I imagine you get great joy in being alive and don’t suffer from depression. I would imagine you are purposeful, methodical and meticulous in everything you design. And I imagine you think I am the same.

Do you think your theories could be put forward without your name attached? You and I could then disappear in the present, kind of like eloping.

If I could just disappear from the stage and watch with great humor and fascination as my screenplay takes over the planet it would be great fun. But I’m not sure that can happen. I think the revolution requires me to be an active, vocal and vigorous leader.

You know Honey I just had my first laugh of the day. It bothers me if I go this long being up without a laugh. I was watching Megyn Kelly interview Al Sharpton about Obama’s upcoming speech. I’ve never really felt this way before but I want to impact those dumb niggers with such a momentum of scientific evidence that they are fat, stupid, ugly and lazy that they will be scared to show their stupid faces in public again. I hope that doesn’t sound racist. This Obama thing is now going off scale in funniness. His mother is white so if he is black or white is a stupid viewpoint. His dad didn’t stay with his mother, knocked her up and left her. For religion he has adopted black militant Protestantism and stated that Jesus was in some way real. I am supposed to believe Obama is a Christian? He has worked two nights on this speech. He is delivering it with a teleprompter. This should be choice.

(I took a nap after the Obama speech, Nelson woke me at noon and visited, I got some more beer, it’s a little after 3 PM and I’m watching Lou Dobbs)
Are you having cravings for nicotine?

Fortunately I’m not. I’ve been trying to quit for the past 15 months. At one point I had quit for a week and then started up again. I have to be on guard against any recidivism. It’s been almost 72 hours without a smoke.

I’m proud of you darling. Knowing I love you and am waiting for you should help you avoid a relapse. Your heavy smoking really bothered me a lot, as also it did you. I am relieved you are getting over it.

Thanks Honey, our relationship is now the most important part of my life.

You’re crop looked nice. When is harvest?

A week from Thursday. Two of the Blueberry look pretty good.

Do you think you can find a nice balance in life now, knowing the long night will come to an end and I’m waiting for you?

My only bad habit now is drinking. When my weight is stable, and although my sleep is negatively impacted, I can be quite productive and generate a lot of mental energy. You know that one photo of you, with an older white haired guy a seat apart from you, as if the two of you were at the back of a small movie theatre, that showed some age, and had a look of concern, was interesting. The oldest woman I ever had sex with was 39, when I was 27. She was a very nice person and I enjoyed talking to here and drinking beer with her but she did not turn me on sexually. I didn’t love her and that is always what was required for me to be attracted sexually.

How do you think I will be?

Like me, kind of like a virgin. With love as a foundation good sex is a certainty. Would you like to get on top the first time? I will still be fat. I’d like that.

OK, that sounds like fun. Do you have a deeper reason why you want to do that?

You will be like an angel coming down form Heaven. There is another reason but I am not going to tell you it now. After our first union and consummation of love I’ll tell you. I’ll give you a hint. It’s Biology 101, basic anatomy. You know Honey, at times I have almost unbridled arrogance. It will never arise between you and me but it will be part of the mask I wear in my public persona. If I could make love to you in the morning, and then have coffee and breakfast, and then face a bunch of reporters with questions, it would be easy for me to conquer the world with simple reason and logic.

How many children do you want?

As many as we can have. I want your pregnancies as close together as biologically possible and as many of them as biologically possible. It’s kind of like reductionism. All I have to do is repeatedly make love to you and see what arises. So it could be 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, and maybe even 7 from the little I understand of menopause and fertility.

Would you want me to have Cesareans?

That depends on factors I don’t fully understand but I don’t want any risk in the giving birth process.

What do you think of Bach and Euler?
They are the summit of some of the highest peaks in the range. The fact they had so many kids running around and basically kept their mates pregnant almost all the time is most interesting. What if we could have seven children?

_I think two or three will be fine but I am with you, we will just go the biological reductionism way and never use any birth control and see what happens. I don’t know much more than you about menopause and no one else does either. Was that a chess board on top of the computer?_

It was. I just put on one of the final coats of gloss polyurethane this morning. It will be on our coffee table along with my hand made weighed and felted Staunton chess pieces. I am going to give it three or four coats with 0000 steel wool after each coat.

_Did you burn steel wool for your thermite?_

I did.

_Do you think you built a nuclear bomb in your Estes rocket?_
You mean catalyzing the burning of nitrogen to nitrogen oxides with oxygen by high energy metal atoms.

_You know darling, we, and I, are going to do everything you have imagined. Would you like to be president?_

No. I would be known as the brains behind the revolution. I want to be reclusive and not do any public interviews. That’s our best hand. And also the most modest and the easiest to live out our lives and raise a family.

_I agree. But if you did become president and you had SS guard for the rest of our lives that wouldn’t be bad. The last thing you want to end up as is like Larry Flint._

24/7 Secret Service. There are a lot of nutcases out there. I think I would prefer that, although it is a little painful to have to admit that, but that is the reality. That’s a long way from recluse. If I went that route I would be willing to enter political life and be the president.

_It’s up in the air but all those potentials exist._

_How do you feel being a public figure?_

Like you I don’t really like it, but it is part and parcel of the modern information age. What do you want to do?

_Raise the children, what else? I really don’t know first hand what you can teach to your own children but I would imagine it is just about everything by 6th grade. That is a challenge I look forward to. You know how much fun the developmental path of the mind is, especially early in life._

_How can SUSY be broken?_

_How about an undergraduate finding your screenplay and getting it onto YouTube and detailing your science in a pedagogically persuasive form._

_Is it surrealistic?_

You know Honey, I have to tell you about my ego. Now I mean by ego your rank. And I imagine your rank is a measure of your importance in relieving mankind from the shortages he has been embedded in since the beginning.
What is your id?

Since I have been a man since 2nd or 3rd grade I really can’t say I remember. All my intent since then has been in rational endeavor. But why would a 16 year old be on a stream at 6 AM April 1st, the opening of the trout season?

3-20

Hi Honey.

Good morning darling. What time is it?

2:56 AM Wednesday morning. I’m having coffee.

So you had beer twice yesterday?

I did. 10 in the AM then slept till noon and 11 in the PM. Fell asleep a little after 7 PM, got up at 11:45 PM and its 3 AM now.

Does filling my email inbox make you feel like a stalker?

Not really. Well, actually it does.

Have you been wanting to smoke?

No. I’m over it. Nothing gave me more anxiety. I see Fran Asad tomorrow at 9 AM. What great fun it has become to analyze her for a half hour four times a year. Last time she explained to me how Feynman thought, what kind of thinker he was. She has even explained to me how proteins bind drug molecules. Can you imagine that?

Your mother treats you like a crank too. Can you figure her out?

I’m making more effort to. She’s quite a strong person and was a hard worker for her entire adult life. I’ve learned that to talk to her means you listen most of the time and all you listen to is usually some kind of trivia. It is almost impossible to bring a conversation with her to an intelligent level. Neither Fran nor my mother has the slightest insight into my thought processes and accomplishments. Both think I am a grandiose and delusional crank. I look forward to suing Fran and Pfizer for the neuropathy in my feet. My feet are going to turn out to be the most expensive feet on the planet.

What’s your goal today?

To only have one drinking session, this afternoon beginning at 3 PM.

It’s a tough life.

It is.

(a 4 hour nap, up again at 10:30 AM)

What time is it?

About 12:30 PM. I’m cracking a beer.

Are you having beer as a reward for quitting the smokes?

Something like that.
Getting any cravings?

Only for us to be together, to be able to feel and touch and explore.

What’s your next move?

I don’t know what else I can do. I fail to get a single response to anything I do. So I will fill your inbox until I can think of a new project.

What if what you want to do can’t be done? Would you be disappointed?

Well I think it has to be done and I will do it. Failure to realize that goal if there was a good reason for it would not really be much of a disappointment compared with not having you at my side. That is far more important to my life. With you I think I can write satire and further works with the pen that will bring about the Sands of Time.

What if it can’t be done and we can’t be together?

Then I am fucked.

(Thursday morning at 2:52 AM)

Are you having coffee?

I am.

Want a smoke?

Nope. The wheezing at night has gone away and the mouth and lips and tongue are in the process of healing. I think it will take almost two weeks for all that to heal. I’ve stopped taking the Chantix so I took it for one week and had 6 or 7 Commit lozenges.

(5:40 AM)

I am just recovering from a massive craving attack. I took the Chantix again and had two lozenges in succession. You take the Chantix twice a day and I didn’t take one last night. I guess I’ll have to be prepared for such kind of attacks and stay on the Chantix a while longer. What set it off is I was writing an email to my mother, talking about Fran and my neuropathy, then my brother, then my ex-brother in law, then thought of how little my mother wants to hear about any of that, then I realized I was having anger, then I realized that’s a result of craving nicotine, then took the Chantix and the Commit lozenge.

Maintain your abstinence darling. Remember how your current addiction began with a single puff. You don’t want to get emphysema before you quit. Think of us. Do you think you have any emphysema now?

I have a little tube you exhale rapidly into that measures your maximum exhalation velocity in liters/minute. The scale goes to 800. For my height and age I should blow 580. When you are smoking the exhale rate is depressed but when you quit it goes back up. Yesterday I blew a number of times with most in the 500-600 range and one 650. I just blew now and got 700, a 750 and a couple 550’s. One time a few years back I blew an 800. So I think my lungs, thank God, are still in good shape.

Just today, on the spring equinox, the volunteer mama plant in a photo in a previous email has a few small purple flowers opening up. I got it in spring 2006 when psychotic and have had it indoors since fall 2006.
I’m warming my truck up. I see Fran at 9.

Talk to you later today Honey.

*Enjoy your visit with Fran. Good bye darling.*

3-21

*Good morning darling. What time is it?*

2:55 AM Honey. I’m having coffee and a joint. Did you get a hearty chuckle out of my last email?

*Knowing your slightly sick sense of humor I’ll bet you thought it was pretty funny.*

I was doubled over hitting the send button.

*How many beers had you had?*

Eight or nine.

*Getting any cravings for a cigarette?*

Yesterday after ten beers I went out to the truck and got out the ash tray that was full of butts. I rolled two cigarettes and had them. They were not enjoyable in any way. When I got up this morning I threw out the remaining butts so as to not have another one.

*How are your lips, tongue, mouth, throat and lungs feeling?*

They are all healing, undergoing dramatic changes. My oral cavity still is quite irritated. Smokers generally can cough up a little mucus, especially in the morning right after getting up. After 6 days of non-smoking the mucus is kind of brownish. If you look at it closer the mucus is normal colored but there are dark brown entrained particles in it. These are dead cells coated with tar being sloughed off in the lungs as part of their renewal cycle. I just noticed that was happening again this morning. To check I spit the mucus onto the white bottom of the bathroom sink instead of into the toilet or wastebasket so I can assess the color. I’ve undergone this process before so it is not new phenomenon. It lasts for about a week and then when not smoking I generally can’t cough anything up.

*I can see you pay attention to your body.*

I’ve finished my chess board. It’s on the back cover of a large art book like the kind you have on a coffee table in your living room. Here it is.
The board configuration is an interesting one. When I was at Berkeley I had a girl friend who was an artist. I wanted her to paint a chess board with an end game configuration where if white has the initiative white wins and if black has the initiative black wins. The above configuration is derived from a thumbnail I choose as Owner for the MS Start menu where you pick the picture from a menu that says User Accounts. If you add a white rook behind the white pawn than this configuration has that property of the one who moves first has a guaranteed win. I worked it out when I was psychotic a couple years ago.

_Have you pooped and flossed?_

Pooped three times this morning and flossed but haven’t taken a shower yet.

_Go take a shower now darling. I never want you writing to me with a dirty butt hole._

I’ll be back in seven minutes Honey.
I’m back Honey.

*Doesn’t that feel good?*

It does. As I have pointed out before all I really need is a clean asshole and a hard on.

*If those are metaphors for honor and love I agree with you darling. Those photo thumbnails are only about ¾ inch square. Did you look at that little photo and realize you could add a white rook and obtain a game where the person with the initiative has a sure win?*

That’s exactly how it happened Honey.

*When did you learn to play chess?*

Fall of my sophomore year. I learned it from a good high school friend who was also going to Cornell, a most unusual character. He was a pretty smart fellow who was dragged down by science at Cornell. He really wanted to be a writer. He beat me nine times in a row before I won a game.

*Changing topics darling, why do you think you became psychotic in December?*

I have been thinking about that. I didn’t think that could happen when I am taking 5 mg Prolixin. It did. It must have been due to environmental stimulus and stress. The environmental elements were our correspondence, commenting on TRF, being alone, dealing with going to school to take a course in EM (yuk), trying to write up the science, dealing with my mother, drinking heavily and getting exhausted, smoking heavily, I guess it was a bit too much for me. I guess what really blew my socket was thinking about being rank #1, in science, in art and in technology. That’s a pretty heady experience. Your heroin injections made it all seem quite true. In some ways my relationship to the physicists is like a prisoner being water boarded daily for years on end, to put it in the most humorous terms.

*How long were you psychotic?*

About three or four weeks.

(a few hours later after breakfast)

Honey I just saw a 10:47 minute YouTube on TRF on Fourier representation of a function. It was really fun. There was this Chinese guy going a mile a minute with precision, clarity and completeness. I’d have to spend a little time in a book and with some problems to properly absorb it but for 10:47 of time invested it was great fun. Also I’m onto a new blogger Elias Newcomen, a pseudonym based on the inventor of the first practical steam engine in 1713. He helped me out on TRF with a few comments. I now have 5 or 6 really interesting blogs to follow.

*What did you have for breakfast darling?*

Sirloin tip roast, long grain white rice with Kikkoman’s, peas with Smart Balance, half a Vlasic Kosher dill pickle and tomato juice with a lot of salt.

*You’re not going nuts again are you sweetie-pie?*

I hope not, I don’t think it will happen again.

*Are you feeling like smoking?*
Not much. I took a lozenge before breakfast and am going to have another one shortly. Am I going to be playing white or black?

I’ve tried to open before and wasn’t successful so I don’t know how I can open now. I must be playing black and waiting for white to make the first move.

You know I don’t want to read too much into things but Lubos had the “#7 spot” in a blog. And I thought to myself, would that be the G spot?

_Are you getting a ham for Easter?_

I am. I invited Nelson over for lunch on Sunday. I’m getting a ham at Carr’s later today. They have them for $1.28 a pound, whole or half. I’ll see if they have a butt half.

I’ll write again this afternoon when I am having a few beers.

_Have a nice day darling._

3-21

Hi sweetie-pie. How are you doing this afternoon?

_Doing excellent darling. Are you having a beer?_

It’s 1:45 PM and I’m on my second. I got two butt half hams at Carrs, about 10 pounds each, for $1.39 a pound. One was $14.00 and the other, that I froze, was $13.33. I don’t exactly know the difference between butt and shank halves but the butt halves cost more. But I’ll ask my mom. But I imagine the butt bone is smaller. But who cares?

_You are so sick darling._

But I am sick Honey. Butt out.

_Oh gosh darling you are so sick. Please stop._

Are you asking if you can be my buttress?
Please, please stop. I only wish you were right in front of me so I could slap you.

OK Honey, let me show you what a good surface I put on the chess board:

I know you fucking surgeon types like to do that precision shit. Did you use an extra clean brush and 0000 steel wool?

And gloss polyurethane.

What’s it going to be like for you?

The end of a nightmare and the beginning of a dream.

It wasn’t that bad.

At times it was far worse. But you’re right, other than having been single the whole time and not with a woman it was a piece of cake, so to misspeak.

Did you put up the latest photo I took, the When Galaxies Collide one, as your screensaver?

I did. I don’t like your hair in that. Somehow it shields your face and makes you look a little silly. Everything else in the photo was absolutely lovely. I don’t know yet how I would like your hair. Short can be very attractive. Long and tightly curled can be very attractive but I perceive you as a straight hair type. I generally like it pulled back and off the face so the face and facial structure is emphasized. You do a little bit the opposite. I just reviewed your innocent little kitten photo on the back cover of your book. I’d like to see your hair pulled back and rolled up in a clasp at the back.

“I hunger for your love” came on the radio station, Magic 98.9, I have been listening to today. I can get such mental stimulation I get goose bumps, a feeling of invincibility, a feeling of exultation, thinking about being together with you and conquering the world, if only with love and passion, reason and logic.
Is your super id to be the badest mother fucker ever and your super ego to be the irresistible force of reason?

And is your super id to be the most innocent little M&M ever and your super ego to be the inviolable ass?

That’s immovable mass, you fucking asshole. We need to have a discussion about your editing what you write to me darling. I know as an artist you always feel it should fucking be unexpurgated. You may need to reconsider that policy.

How good was that surface on your chess board?

I’ve plasti-gauged main bearings in my Porsche 911 engine to 6-8 ten thousands of an inch. I’d say the chess board surface is within 1-2 ten thousands of an inch. Of course there is a little curvature to it, it’s not a plane but it is a smooth surface.

You know what your two most important attributes are darling?

I don’t know but hope I’ll agree.

Your sense of humor and your common sense.

I do agree with you. I share both and derive both from my parents, both who had strong suits in both. To not appreciate the comedy of life is to not be alive. To not have common sense is to be incapacitated.

Did you put a ham in today?

I did. It looked so good I couldn’t wait till Sunday. I’m having a baked potato with sour cream along with it. It takes 15 minutes a pound at 325 F. For a treat when I get up around midnight I making some cranberry juice from concentrate. I drink quite a bit of juice and water when I get up after drinking and cranberry juice is my favorite. It costs twice as much as orange juice.

You know I don’t think I am the smartest person on the planet or ever. But I do think I got to invent more science than anyone else, although it took a long time and I am 55. So when I use rank #1 that’s what I mean. I guess I could add to that I can have rank #1 in the final battle of the final war. How that obtains I do not know yet.

What kind of mustard are you having with the ham?

Grey Poupon. I have a little poem for you:

I’ll treat you like a pig
I love pigs

You call that a poem? Is your mind dissolving?

It is Honey.

I’ll eat you like a cheeseburger
I love burgers

OK, we’re even. It’s 3:30, I’ll let you go Honey.

Later.

3-27
(Monday afternoon)

What are you doing?

On my tenth Budweiser. I blew my mother off this weekend. I can’t handle it. She is so astonishingly stupid there is no hope of any relevant relationship on any level. She is so bovine I can not understand how lucky I must be to have a functioning brain having been derived from such a coarse human.

Do you hate her?

I think I would like to and also adopt that mindset. It’s only fair, reasonable and logical in response to how she has treated me from my earliest memories. She’s just a simple minded moron who thinks she is entitled to her fucking opinion.Fuck her.

Don’t back off that at all, she is even worse than that. She is really delusional, look at that religious shit she buys into. Fuck that damned worthless cunt. It’s really inordinately difficult to deal with people like your mother and siblings. How are you going to implement that?

I already told my mother I want her to transfer the title for my condo to me now. Then I will sell it for 90K and get a lease for a few years in the future. I’ll want about 20K down and will finance the rest. So I will have an envelope of ten years or so to become successful and 20K for promotion of my work. If I can’t do it in the next few coming months I would prefer to be dead.

Then your entire family is out of your life?

That’s true, and good riddance. Is it OK to hate people?

Especially when you also want to torture them for sins they committed against you. Have some fun darling, let your hair down, and skewer and barbecue your parents and siblings. Fuck all of them.

(Tuesday afternoon. I called my Mom and talked about some of those issues. I don’t know what to think about her, it is horrible the situation I always find myself in, but I leave this in our dialogue, because it represents some of the things I struggle with.)

What does it mean to be human and finite?

Are you staying off the smokes?

I am.

You know overcoming adversity is the greatest ability of mankind. We have more problems than almost anytime before in history. You will in the future somehow, someway, find a reality that lets you expose your solutions to all of mankind. Don’t ever lose hope darling.

Thanks Honey. Although it seems hopeless at times, I am at the pinnacle of my career as a scientist and my mother will pay my real estate taxes and electric bill so I will be able to get by financially for the coming years. I saw an interesting slow comment by Lubos: “I was very close to suicide.” I was moved by that remark. It is hard for me to understand being suicidal for someone who is mentally healthy.

You know how being addicted to tobacco makes you feel suicidal. It is possible for people to think suicidal ideation more so than you think.
I have observed some of that in my lifetime.

*You need to psychoanalyze suicide terrorists and the human condition in general. Do you think almost all homicidal thinking and action is related to suicidal ideation and action?*

I guess I have to be the doctor. I have to also be the psychiatrist, both for myself and for humanity.

*Darling I don’t really know what it means to be human. I can only speculate from my personal experience. And my experience is some highly unique and some very common as you experience has been. It’s getting more complex. Can you sort it?*

Not to be an arrogant piece of shit Honey, I think I can sort that pile.

*Have you stopped the Chantix?*

I have. Sunday morning. Right now I am using the Commit lozenges.

*How is your sanity now darling?*

I think pretty good. A little tired out at times, a little exhausted at times, but basically sane.

*Do you think we drove you crazy?*

Oh gosh Honey, that is a difficult question. If you did what is my sanity? If you didn’t what is my sanity?

*Do you think you will go nuts again?*

I don’t think I will.

*You’re opening with white. All our eggs are in your basket.*

I don’t think that is true. I have enough works out there that they can live and succeed without me. I imagine all that really matters to me now is you and me. Are you real? Am I real?

*(Wednesday early AM)*

*How are you doing?*

I wasn’t going to send the previous part of this but in the interest of being unexpurgated I’ll leave it in. Saturday morning I went ballistic in a stream of emails, eight total, to my mother, that lasted until Sunday afternoon. She maintains me in a state of financial stress and seems incapable of figuring out what to do. She absolutely refuses to take sides or in any way to be involved in my trying to collect from my brother. I therefore lump her in with him in some ways. When she refuses to say what an asshole Cain is she then becomes an asshole to me. I guess all I can do is not pay any attention to it but I don’t have enough money to live on. I am short about $300 a month.

*Do you want to kill Cain?*

No that would be too easy on him. I want to torture him.

*What about your mother?*
I’ll just ignore her from now on. At 55 begrudging your 84 year old mother is a pathetic process. I was only put in this situation due to finances and having been psychotic.

To have a mother who can not perceive your genius and value to mankind and treats you as a liability and expense is too much. It’s not possible for you to have a meaningful relationship with her.

It’s been a very difficult last four days from when I told my mother what I thought on Saturday morning in a few emails.

Have you been wanting to smoke?

A few times, not too bad, I can survive that level of craving. Yesterday I had 4 or 5 lozenges.

How much have you been drinking?

Too much but not too bad either. If I can keep it to once a day I can get a lot done.

Are you having coffee and a joint?

I am. I just put on some Pat Metheny. You know it is kind of funny what people think about economics and marketplaces. I’ve noticed that Lubos and Elias Newcomen and some of the commenter’s think economics is a real and serious discipline and you can study it and understand it. The sports casters like on ESPN more resemble serious science than do the economics people like on Fox and Bloomberg and in the WSJ. eMaam to the rescue. Bush’s handing out a small dividend to stimulate the economy is so stupid it is difficult to fathom. Who should we thank? The elementary school kids we are handing the bill.

(a 5 hour nap and at 2:47 PM after 9 beers)

I made a fun post on TRF, Gene Day giving me more ass. He drives a Lexus with 380 HP, what a man!

(at 6:46 PM on my fifth)

3-28

Friday 5:54 AM

Hi Honey, I was up at 3:30 and am now on my third beer. How are you this morning?

Fine darling. How are you doing on the smokes?

Been off them for thirteen days. Thirteen is my lucky number. I wonder if I have 10^13 memories. For some reason that sounds about right, as if one synapse is one memory.

Did you see Sean’s blog on dealing with the media?

I did. It was mostly too boring to read but I certainly have a keen perception of the dialogue between individual and the media.

Do you feel prepared for when SUSY breaks?

Like a Knight in full body armor.

Do you look on it as a challenge?
A tremendous challenge and a tremendous opportunity.

*What mask will you be wearing, Socrates?*

Rationality once realized is irrefutable.

*Are you letting yourself have extra beer while getting clean from smokes?*

I am doing that Honey. One addiction at a time. And the one that is top.

*Can you imagine having a few martinis with Murray Gell-Man?*

That I look forward to. You know I was having a lot of difficulty writing to you this morning. But writing to you is the most therapeutic thing I can do.
Does life really imitate art darling?

In oh so many ways! Are you ready for a game?

Am I ever and forever more for.

I’ll talk to you later today Honey.

4-2

What are you up to darling?

It’s 12:42 AM and I’m having a few cold ones.

Are you having reservations about exposing to me all of your life and even your ego and id?

I’m not sure reservation is the right word Honey.

I do not have access to a conversation of reality with anyone but you. That makes you irresistible. But I have significant trepidation that I may be presumptive about you and me becoming intimate.

How much do you think you have to lose, you’re no fucking virgin darling.

About four hundred dollars a month if I was in Thailand.

Fifty dollars for a piece of ass and eight fucks per month?

Maybe a little more than that.

I can find stud service for free, even with material benefits. So what do you think I have to lose darling?

Only boredom and lack of sexual fulfillment Honey.

Are you on some kind of new drug?
I had three Coke classics a few hours ago and I’m on my 5th beer. Just put on George Benson and Pat Metheny.

You know Honey I heard the funniest story on Fox. This woman is on the plane with her baby and another child. The flight attendants offer her a blanket which she refuses and have her thrown off the plane for nursing. THEN you find out the other child is 22 months old and THAT’S the one she is fucking nursing. Shit why not 6 or 8 years old or her husband even?

So I was thinking about you nursing our first born on Oprah while pregnant with our second child. By the way would you want to use in-vitro fertilization so we could have a male child?

Definitely not for the first child. But I would like to have at least one of each gender.

If we store your eggs and my sperm what would you want to do with that? Want to sell embryos on the auction block?

What do you think is limiting in man?

We can acquire and utilize information at a level not previously done it would appear. But before the written word was the spoken word. Greek plays were handed down word by word without the written word tying it all together like it is done today. Knowledge is the product of time and civilization. We do have far more knowledge today than at any previous time. But to get straight to your point, genetic fineness is what is limiting.

Remedy, Dr. David Mengele Degner’s Human Husbandry program, available free of charge.

See any good blogs recently?

Lubos had some funny ones on superheating and supercooling. I really like one, that just started in February, Newcomen’s Engine. He’s a stringer and is a direct descendent of the inventor of the first practical steam engine that was invented in 1712. He had a YouTube on Antietam, the bloodiest battle in American history. There on July 4th I will deliver an address to the world, in exaltation of mankind’s triumph over warfare and conflict. Could that be this July 4th?

9 hours later at 12:11 PM.

I came across an interesting email. It made me think of weapons poet that struck me as a funny name.

Do you want to be known as the weapons poet darling?

I’ll be playing Socrates and the Arctic Wild Rose Honey, although weapons poet has a nice ring to it.

Are you ready?

That’s why I have six stars, two more than anyone else.

If I were at your side what would you be?

Invincible and content.

And if you have to be alone on this final campaign?
Invincible, not content, but focused on the job at hand. Three games a week for four to eight weeks. Me against the world in a best of 24 games.

Have you waited almost your whole life for such an opportunity and are you now able to bear the responsibility?

I’ve been thinking about this since elementary school and I am prepared.

Have you reviewed Lubos today?

Just finished.

How long did it take you to solve Rubik’s cube?

About two hours. I had to write down one double move on a matchbook. Before I had started I read in the WSJ about a computer scientist who did it in 45 minutes but used quite a bit of paper.

It’s a pretty good puzzle.

The best. I found it was easy to get down to a configuration with four pieces out of order. I could find that again in twenty minutes. Resolving that configuration is what required me to write down a double move. I don’t remember that solution but think I could find it again. I am a virgin again, Honey bunches of love. Are you going to be a good piece of ass?

What do you think darling?

I’m so hard up all I require is a pulse and KY.

You’re really turning me on now darling. Keep it up Romeo and you won’t need Cialis, you’ll need euthanasia.

You on top the first time sounds like euthanasia to me Honey, an angel from heaven, assuming the required geometry, both dynamically and analytically, coming down slowly but fully from almighty Heaven and swallowing me whole.

I am going to send this hoping to end my infantilism now, if that’s in any way possible, probable or realizable. Have a nice evening.

Good bye darling.

4-3

Honey its 9:34 PM and I’m listening to Delilah.

Did you think you were pretty funny and clever in your last missive?

I read it over at least ten times and cracked up each time. I am also sad. It is the justice system here in Alaska. There was this ex-stripper who was convicted of first degree premeditated murder. The murder occurred over ten years ago. Since then she got married to a doctor down in Washington, had two young children with him, and has been a PTA mom. The jury found her guilty despite only on flimsy circumstantial evidence. A judge today gave her the maximum sentence, 99 years. I want to kill people like that judge. There is no level of torture I would not use on such judges. The level of cruelty we impose on various criminals, some violent, some non-violent but technically guilty, fills me with hatred. When Schwarzenegger was challenged with a death sentence at San
Quentin. He proved to be an immoral and vicious killer. Keeping people in a 5' x 9' cell for twenty years and then killing them is a phenomenon I am unable to live with. People that utilize the death penalty deserve to die. People like the citizens of Michigan and New York with first time one strike you are out life sentences for non-violent drug crimes deserve to be tortured and then killed.

Are those kinds of people the ones you hate the most and of course W is at the top of that list?

Vengeance is mine means we only incarcerate people to prevent future violent crimes, not as some kind of punishment. If I was alone with that little puke W I would strangle the bastard, as slowly and painfully as I could.

Then you would be meting out vengeance.

Not at all, just remedying the problem, responding as a person under attack in self defense.

What is going to be your strongest asset?

Being a common man of uncommon intelligence but despising aristocracy. Now that sounds populist enough but we have to recognize that the common man is also at present quite cruel. Cruelty in biological systems is transparent to me. The common man acquiesces in much cruelty. Some might think cruelty is a part of biology. But that is not in any way applicable to the biology of mankind. If we allow cruelty and even embrace cruelty we deserve to die a cruel death as kind of what comes around goes around.

The level of cruelty mankind has exposed his and her fellow mankind to is beyond imagination. What kind of killer would you have been in previous incarnations, or would you have been a religious leader?

My grandfather Hugo had three of his children enter the military. My Uncle Hans flew 100 missions in Korea. I have considered all American war efforts since WWII to be wrong including dropping Little Boy and Fat Man on the nips. They were a defeated island nation, without any offensive capability, and without energy or other resources required for survival. All we had to do was lay siege. With my awesome capabilities in weapons design and military strategy I imagine I would have been a killer of some ferocity in past lives. Then I also imagine that for what we know as recorded history I would have been an author or player in the Bible story.

Is your asshole really clean darling?

Interesting you should ask, I just took a shower. But it is pretty nice of you to bring up. I’m glad I’m not the only one thinking about my asshole, Honey. I can confess now Honey I have been designing weapons from the beginning, so my asshole doesn’t feel particularly clean. And simultaneous with that effort I have promoted spiritual understanding, as an author or actor in one of the vital plays of mankind. You know Honey, I have to go to all good music my prehistoric past is only an artifact of my present caricature.

How’s your poker face?

I reveal only my personal victory. That is the ultimate intimidation.

How do you feel about your mother and brother?

I hate them. Their capacity for empathy qualifies them for Holocaust concentration camp guards. Or is that I feel sorry for them?
I think you will only feel sorry for them. Their insight into your capacity as a human being qualifies them for the lunatic ward. It seems cruel but have nothing more to do with them. Only then can you find honor and respect. Honor and respect are unavailable and impossible with them when they think about you what they obviously do think about you. What about that moron Fran Asad?

I am looking forward to cross examining her. Does stress have anything to do with psychosis? What were the stress’s in Mr. Degner’s life?

You have a lot of people to get even with darling. Have fun getting even with each of them. But never confuse that washing your asshole with loving me and seeking pure beauty. It’s an astonishingly brutal reality. Let the leaves fall where they do.

I’m going to put that dry wall screw right through those bastards. I have suffered enough, more than any one person can bear.

Was that random?

As far as I know it was. All I did is rotate the jar. It will not move it again until you are with me.

Life really does imitate art?

Astonishingly it does at so many levels.

Darling I want you to flip that jar over and send me a picture of that random event.

OK Honey.
How long will it take that dirt to settle?

Coming close.

End point science is binding arbitration for peace.

Before we get into all that darling, if I could not have children what would you want to do?

I guess finding out what you are biologically capable of would be pretty important. I would guess the most important aspect of a relationship is having someone to share life with and having children is secondary to that.
You’re clear as a bell darling.

4-5

What are you up to darling?

It’s 6:44 PM Thursday evening and I’m having a few beers and watching Greta. She is from northern Wisconsin so I share some heritage with her. She has interviewed Brett Favre and tonight interviewed John McCain.

Now it is clear as a bell.

What if I wove your works into a book and it became available both as a free download and in hard copy, maybe even without your name.
That would be pretty nice Honey. I want this to end ASAP. I don’t know what my optimal strategy will be when recognized but I want to do multiple 4 hour shows with Art Bell on a Friday or Saturday evenings. I am going to try to explain physics and chemistry to the masses.

You know Honey, excuse my simple way of stating this, you don’t give a shit about what anyone thinks about pretty much anything other than what you yourself think. I have that same property to an extraordinary degree, like you, although embedded in a completely different environment. I realize if it was not for that you would not be here now.

Where do you want to live?

I love these revolutionary pastors and priests and their strong and vehement rhetoric directed at white America. I do think the white man is a devil.

I would like to live in North Carolina next to the Blue Ridge Parkway. The post office will be Ennice, NC and the closest town Sparta, NC and the closest Wal-Mart Galax, VA. There is more beauty there than anywhere else I have been. I know where exactly I want to build our home. It looks out on Fisher Mountain and Saddle Mountain. It is at the end of a small side road.

What do you want to do with your time?

Theorizing, ruminating, and making philosophical inquiry, designing batteries, conductors, the interface of kinetic energy and potential energy up to the complexity of memory and neurons.

Saturday 11:31 AM

Honey in a Google search I came across: “The Shoes of the Fisherman's Wife Are Some Jive Ass Slippers” It was a Charles Mingus composition for his big band. You think you’re pretty f-in funny don’t you?

I thought you would like that one darling. What was the next item in the list?

It was from the Communist Dance Blog: “She then tells him that he's a sterile fisherman's son and she cheated on .....”

Are you having a beer?

I am. The game just came on. I listen to the radio with the volume off on the TV until the last 5 minutes of the game. You know Honey there are four women in my life. Fran Asad, the completely incompetent psychiatric nurse practitioner I have been seeing for almost 17 years, Laura, my dental technician for almost the last 17 years, my mother and you. Who knows you best?

You by far, Laura somehow second and decidedly so and Fran and my mother don’t even know who I am.

How does that make you feel?

Excellent, with you in my life I feel fulfilled and contented, and I really enjoy my friendship with Lori. My mother and Fran are now out of my life except for formalities, both by their choosing and despite my attempt to include them.

Close your relationship with both with a single sentence.
How could I confuse myself with a crank you stupid fucking pieces of shit?

A question, excellent, do you feel better?

I do, thanks Honey. I’m making a new dressing for my cucumber and tomato salad today, grated extra sharp Tillamook instead of Blue cheese and thin sliced Gallo dry salami instead of Bacos.

*How is your asshole feeling today darling?*

Very clean, thanks for asking Honey. Are you a little kinky and maybe a little more than you have been in the past.

*Thanks for asking darling, my asshole is pretty clean too. I guess to be honest, I have never been kinky before but look forward to it again.*

That only leaves out your imagination. I imagine the first captain of the Mathematics Club at Stuyvesant has a pretty good imagination. Are you going to want to fuck me on the Newton plush?

*To take down Isaac as a virgin is right on the top of my kinky list darling.*

You little klafte aren’t you full of imagination. You are Chocolate Éau Claire honey.

*Chocolate Éau Claire’s are my favorite darling and Bavarian crème donuts.*

Kevin came over and we watched game two.

I’ll send this now, night Honey.

*Night darling.*

4-9

*What time is it darling?*

Almost noon Monday.

*What is your goal for the day?*

To not have a cigarette.

*Will you be able to do that?*

I will. I don’t have any real cravings and don’t derive any real pleasure from smoking. I’m still taking the Chantix.

*What time does the game come on?*

5:20 PM. You know I have come to a deeper appreciation of the electric, magnetic and gravity fields. They add by simple superposition, so the energy in the field for point charges a distance apart is virtually constant. You must take the vector sum of all individual charges to compute the magnitude of the field at any point in the field. BUT, the only energy a particle can get out of the field is due to the vector that is a net. I had always wondered if the two particles from distinct charge sources “added” together in some way to reduce the number of particles, like cancelling out. Now I see simple superposition is the simple answer. This fits in neatly with my theory of the electron. In one more step I’ll see why the Coulomb force is 1/4 and not 1/8.
What time is it darling?

Almost noon Tuesday.

Did you break down and smoke yesterday?

I did. But I’m trying each day to not break down and continuing on the Chantix. I only had a few cigarettes after about eight beers. I throw the tobacco away when I get up after sleeping and then later in the day after 8 or 9 beers find the temptation the highest.

The field is quite a subtle business. I’m back to a problem I thought about back in 1986, the simple light-ray like geometry that must underlie fields that add with the superposition property.

Did you look at Lubos yet?

Just checked him out. The most recent blog was about young male and female Rhesus monkeys choosing dolls or toy tractor trailers to play with. The comment thread was hilarious and I am not through it yet.

Do you know my super ego?

Better than you know it yourself. Your super ego is instinctual to you but that of a chess player, highly deterministic, to an external observer.

Honey I’m listening live to Obama cross-examine Petraeus and an ambassador.

Tuesday at 7:18 PM
Toy Greek soldiers in the simplest phalanx?

They cost $115. I got them when I was nuts in 2006.

What do the nails represent?

That’s for a future conversation. But to start with faith, trust and hope, the illustrious, the invincible and the indomitable.

Are the warriors painted lead?

They are. I believe made in India.

What are you listening to?

Delilah.

Wednesday at 9:55 AM

Hi Honey. I watched a one hour video on Feynman in today’s TRF.

That arrogant and ugly Jewish prick Warren Siegel told you “I knew Feynman and you’re no Feynman.” What did you think about it at the time, while you were psychotic, and what do you think about it now.

That’s a good question Honey. At the time I assumed it was a compliment and meant “you’re no Feynman, you’re David Martin Degner and stand alone with your own unique distinction.

What do you think he meant now?

I really don’t know. Since I was psychotic at the time I think my speculation on his content could be impossible to get correct.

He knew a lot more than he disclosed.

Of course. But I don’t know what he knew about me. Here’s a random shot:
Did you change the flash?

I did. It is quite realistic in coloration but they’re out of focus. I don’t know why. Well, I’ll show you how they are out of focus:
Clear as a bell darling.

How’s the weather?

Cold and snowing. We might get 10” by tomorrow morning.

Nelson just called and is stopping over. Later.

Later darling.

Wednesday afternoon at 5:53 PM

What are you up to darling?

I’ve been thinking about that “you’re no Feynman” crack by Siegel. It’s really gnawing at me. First I thought of Feynman’s Lectures. Could I have written those? I in my current life could not. I am completely lacking the teaching experience and that along with an avoidance of pedantry would prevent me from ever doing something like that. Even under different circumstances I doubt I would ever be able to write a book like that. And then I thought of Abraham Pais’ treatises on Einstein and Bohr. I could never do that. It is at a scholarly level that I am not on. And I thought about Newton. I could not have done his work. And I thought of Einstein. He like me did not engage in pedagogy. He like me was in a way separate and independent of everyday realities. He wrote many popular books and I have many in my library and have looked at them from time to time. I’ve looked at a lot of works including Oppenheimer’s Uncommon Sense. All that being said, I’ve only read a few pages of any of their works, enough to know their style and what they are up to, but in no way a thorough and scholarly effort. Turing and Schrödinger were always more important to me than Newton and Einstein. I have only taken one semester of upper division physical science, one semester of p chem. I have put in about 100 (maybe 160 max) hours studying formal mathematics. I never knew anyone smarter than me and my own age. I’ve wondered about various professors being smarter than me. One thing I do know is I am a better trout fisherman than anyone I’ve mentioned.

Are you going to listen to Delilah tonight?

I am.
What do you think of Feynman marrying his sweetheart who had TB that was at that time incurable?

I’m pretty sure I would not have done that but then I never met a woman I wanted to marry at that age. I also find it almost impossible imagining being a front line soldier in WWII. If you consider the really formative years of life are from 10 or 12 to 14 or 16 than I had a most unique experience in life. The age of the nuclear bomb, MAD, bomb shelters, Kennedy’s assassination, King’s assassination, Ali, the Vietnam War, hippies and drugs.

You are pretty sure you put in the smallest number of hours of effort to get a bachelor’s in biology and scored very high on the MCAT’s. You’ve put in a lifetime alone working on problems as a theoretician with no teaching or other responsibilities. Where do you think you rank?

I think I could be at the top if the top was defined as a distinguished professor at a major university. Anything beyond that is luck and circumstances. Of course actors can act well. I’ll be able to act like the megalomaniac Bold Ruler if required, i.e. rank uno. But if it requires Jesus’ gentle touch and an old time family doctors insights and abilities I’ll be able to do that too.

What is your super ego darling?

To be the best David Martin Degner possible, to put an end to conflict and warfare, to solve more practical problems that affect peoples everyday lives than anyone before. What’s your super ego Honey?

To bear and raise children for my man who accomplishes those things.

I can’t wait. Delilah just came on and I’m going to send this now Honey.

Good bye darling.

4-13

Thursday 11:42 AM

Hi Honey. How are you today?

Very good darling. Are you pretty well over the cigarettes?

I think I am. I am not having cravings but after 8 or 9 beers feel a large temptation. The Chantix also neutralizes the mental rush of smoking so if you do smoke you don’t get the reward.

I skimmed Sean’s blog Energy Doesn’t Grow on Trees. I didn’t realize he is a complete moron and incapable of doing a few simple matchbook calculations. I am wondering how well he understands thermodynamics. He’s a big one to talk about entropy. He actually said he thought we would have to go to nuclear in the short to middle term and long term to solar, probably solar collectors in space that beam down the energy. He said there isn’t enough solar energy available on the surface. I wondered to myself, could anyone be that fucking stupid or is he playing dumb?

So there are two seminal problems, of vital concern, facing mankind: energy and carbon dioxide. And you understand both and can solve the energy problem.

Amazingly that’s how it appears.
How much time have you had to think about things and compare that with other people’s free time? Haven’t you in fact spent almost all your time over your entire adult life thinking?

That’s true. I’ve had an extraordinary amount of time to think about things. One thing I want to talk about is protein folding and carbon dioxide. At first you might not see the connection. It’s the thermal photon spectrum at constant temperature and pressure.

Friday morning 8:32 AM

You know Honey there are two distinct intelligences. There is the average working level of intelligence I use in my own life and how I approach problems and formulate solutions and then there is the average working level of intelligence operative in society at large. Sean’s idea about solar energy collectors in space is what got me thinking how stupid people can be. I assume he’s talking about PV’s tied into some kind of energy beam, like microwave. How could anyone approaching mankind’s energy problem be that fucking dumb?

Have you thought of transmission?

I have but not much about superconductors, a little about nanotube carbon. Make a wire out of a collection of long fiber like nanotubes and the important parameter is to have the length of each nanotube long, like maybe a meter or more. I believe conducting cables made of these nanotubes could replace high voltage lines. I base this all on the mechanism of electron and energy transfer in nanotubes. I think nanotubes have remarkably low impedance in any one continuous tube or at least that’s my hunch. These long tubes would be the largest molecules, defining a molecule as a covalently bound structure. A 3 billion sequence of DNA is \(0.942\) meter long.

Did you have a smoke yesterday?

3 and \(\frac{1}{2}\) cigarettes.

Saturday morning 5:45 AM

Sunday morning 4:40 AM

Last night I thought I could no longer write to you.

Why is that darling? You’re known to pretty much disregard most normal human constraints.

I’m concerned I’m boring you, making a fool of myself, being obnoxious and in poor taste, and generally appearing as a thick German lout.

I’m afraid you will always have a little performance anxiety with me darling. I’d be willing to fake orgasm but I know what a romantic you are and how you prefer the cold hard facts.

Very funny Honey, but thank you, my sense of humor has come back this morning is amusing me.

I heard four fascinating reports on Science Friday this week on NPR. The first was a lady at MSU who took a protein from a bacteria found in the second gut of cows that breaks down cellulose and put it in the green parts of corn. It builds up inside the cell in lysozymes and is not released on the cell wall until it is mechanically broken up. This enzymatic breakdown of cellulose is the most important step in utilizing cellulose I have heard about to date. The second was an assistant professor in chemical engineer at UM
Amherst. He heated cellulose material to 600 C and used a zeolite catalyst to rearrange the atoms into a gasoline like highly aromatic hydrocarbon. I had never considered this way of utilizing biomass. If the biomass is dry it takes 10% of the biomass to generate 600 C. The third was an Oriental researched at VT. He mixed water, twelve enzymes and sugar and out of that mixture bubbles up hydrogen gas. The hydrogen is not taken off the sugar but rather is from the splitting of water utilizing the covalent bond energy of the sugar. He didn’t present the vital thermodynamic data but said he is working on increasing the efficiency. The fourth was another Oriental researcher who said putting ground up charcoal in the soil maintains it for agricultural use and the Mayans did this for thousands of years. He pointed out how easy it is to make charcoal, heat biomass anaerobically to some temperature, bake it and compress it. He explained the carbon cycle in soil in a simple straightforward way and it was also quite interesting although not on par scientifically with the first three. It was the best Science Friday I have listened to. The speakers explained what they were doing in simple straightforward language and were highly accomplished experimentalists.

I’m cracking up. An HP printer error just popped up on my screen advising me to turn the printer off. So I looked at the printer, there was a blinking light, and I turned the power off. So I think to myself, since I haven’t printed hardly anything in 6 months why didn’t I do that 6 fucking months ago and save a little electricity.

Here’s the moon over Anchorage as seen from my back porch.

Oh well, I guess the moon was not bright enough to show up or was swamped out by the street lights.

I was on TRF comments this morning and came across this choice line: "I have been reading Chevalley’s new book on class field theory; I am not really doing research, just trying to cultivate myself." I thought maybe I would cultivate myself too.

*Always remember darling it is a comedy.*

You know Honey I think the moon may be in that photo after all. It’s the yellow light at 2 and 1/8 inches a little over a larger white square-ish light. The moon was a left facing half crescent as that light is and although it appears as bright as the street lights I think it is in fact the moon. I am surprised it would be so bright.
Lovely darling, too bad you didn’t use a mount it is blurred, like double exposed, all the lights are doublets.

I’m going to shower. Talk later Honey.

Bye.

4-13

Honey I’m thinking about how bad I am going to do everyone (except you 2B figurative) in the ass. I’m thinking of politicians, lobbyists, accountants and other sleaze, and even the GE’s and Sieman’s of this world. DS&E is going to be a lean, mean, efficient machine. Since the highest remuneration is $5000/week for the top people and I will give the employees 50% of patents I will attract all the top people. The florid, corpulent, detached and affected ruling class is ready for slaughter.

Feeling powerful this morning darling?

I’m on my third Coke. I think I’m having a sugar rush. I last took Chantix Friday morning. It seems to have some kind of negative effect on my brain and the enjoyment I get using it.

Who are you listening to this morning?

Diana Krall, Diane Schuur, Vanessa Rubin, Jane Monheit and Tierney Sutton.

Have you taken a shower darling?

Ask that more emphatically Honey, how you would like to say it and as if you mean it.

Is your asshole really clean today darling?

It is, thanks for asking. I just got out of the shower. The Diane Schuur CD is a duet with B. B. King, about love between a man and a woman. You know Honey all I want to do is speak reason to the world on a diverse set of topics from elementary particle physics to the seminal military strategy.

I just saw on the written line below the CNN station that a man won an oyster eating contest in New Orleans by eating 35 dozen. Holy fucking shit Honey, that’s 420 oysters, I’m not near the man he is.

Maybe he just liked oysters.

Thanks for pointing that out Honey. Here’s the moon over Anchorage shot during the day.
The moon was over that red, white a blue sign and to the left of the tall green, white and yellow Subway sign. The little red thing to the right of the red, white and blue sign is the cupola of a KFC and you can see the tall sign of Colonel Sanders out front. Here’s a shot using the tripod on the porch rail.

It is not any clearer. For some reason it is out of focus.

Vanessa Rubin just came on.

Jane Monheit just came on.
CD’s about 50 minutes.

Yup. I’ll send this after Tierney Sutton plays. I’m just cracking a beer.

Tierney Sutton has come on. I’m opening my fourth. Nelson’s going to stop over. Talk to you later Honey.

Later darling.

4-16

Good morning Honey.

Good morning darling. How are you feeling this morning?

I felt like shit when I got up around 3:30 AM, a couple hours ago. I only got 3 or 4 hours of poor sleep with little or no REM, and was tired and exhausted when I got up but incapable of sleeping more. I got some Kirkland Columbian bean yesterday at Costco and two hours of coffee has perked me up.

What are you listening to?

Miles.

Are you nice and clean this morning darling?

I am quite clean this morning. Thanks for asking Honey.

What are you having for breakfast?

Bistro natural uncured beef smoked sausage with sauerkraut, Grey Poupon, fried in olive oil sliced potatoes with salt, pepper, Tabasco and Heinz ketchup, a Carnegie Delicatessen fresh Kosher Spear and V-8.

I can tell things really sparkle this morning darling.

Do you realize what an asset I am for you?

Never thought of it Honey. Can a woman actually make a difference in a man’s life?

Very funny darling, you know what I’m talking about.

Affirmation of being, vindication of soul and exultation of spirit triumphant in the design of God almighty.

I can see your going to be completely hopeless today darling.

I am watching live the Pope at the White House spectacle on Fox. Today is a good day for current events with the Pope thing and the Obama/Clinton debate tonight. This is a pretty funny sight Honey, two wimps. Bush, who is a fairly short man, is a lot taller than the Pope. And I just listened to the Pope, to the extent I could concentrate given his effeminate and pedantic style, but am thankful for being able to view it live. The level of ceremony is interesting, amusing and nauseating too in that I have always viewed most ceremony as blatant hypocrisy. For instance when I see W, I think to myself, that’s what a killer looks like and that’s how they justify their actions. I much prefer the Louis Farrakhan’s and Jeremiah Wright’s of this world, although they need a little primer is basic science which I’ll be glad to provide for them.
Mercifully it is over and I’m back to Miles.

Did you read the tributes to Wheeler?

Very nice, very moving, those bastards kept their poker faces on the whole time. That’s their greatest accomplishment in my book.

I guess now its Lubos, you, me, Witten, Hawking, Susskind, Schwarz, Green, Fisher and Gell-Mann in some kind of generational order from youngest to oldest.

Do you think radioactive decay is really random?

What do you think?

I don’t see how it can be. I haven’t really thought about it since I’ve pretty much ignored nuclear chemistry.

Do you think neutrons are formed in stars from electrons and protons or do you think there might be a neutron core in stars that is decaying in the generation of the 92 elements?

What do you think?

There are definitely neutrons in stars, at least in the nuclei of the atoms. But I’m not sure how neutrons form and how important understanding them is to cosmology.

Do you think the nuclear boys figured out that stuff in the first half of the 20th Century? Back then nuclear physics was the central focus.

When I think about Three Mile Island and Chernobyl I wonder if anyone knows their ass from a hole in the ground. But obviously they must have figured out a lot. Molecular biology was invented by physicists going into biology after WWII.

Do you think you could take out QM and leave relativity standing, just leave out the mechanism for gravity and even maybe say there can be no mechanism for gravity? Then Einstein would finally win the Bohr/Einstein debate, you get your QM out, and you leave standing Einstein.

And string theories extra dimensions are thought to be responsible for gravity?

Sure.

Honey changing the subject for a moment a couple of radio personalities, “Woody and Wilcox”, were suspended by a local radio station for an offensive remark about Natives. They are third in the morning market in Anchorage. I went to the article on the Anchorage Daily News website to see if the offensive remark could be found. It was there and is a pretty good one: One of them said "Have you made love to the Yukon River and peed in a Native woman?" That’s a play on words respecting "Have you peed in the Yukon River and made love to a Native woman?"

The Alaska Indians and Natives are very interesting people. There are 30 or 40 languages and the current population is about 120,000. The Alaska Indians in the southeast speak Navaho and must have come up from the southwest. The Natives came over the land bridge from Siberia and the two groups apparently met in southeast Alaska. The two chief factors affecting them have been disease and interbreeding with whites. They have very high alcoholism, drug abuse, suicide, violence and rape rates. They perform even poorer than blacks in the school system. Most live on some kind of government support. Their culture is dying out. Like blacks they are resentful of whites and like blacks don’t
realize the genetic liability that puts them in a hole. All that said they are pretty friendly and tough people and I’ve had beers and smoked pot with an Native woman elder in my condo complex.

Honey its 9 AM and I’m going to kill time listening to Rush. Have a nice day.

*You too darling.*

4-17

Hi Honey. I went to an ENT doc at 2 PM to get wax removed from my ears. It is important that it be done by someone skilled and using the right equipment, that is a vacuum. It only took about 5 minutes. He was a pretty interesting doctor and we talked about med schools, his kids experience at UAA, a gold mining project in Alaska and I got to explain the protein folding problem to him in 30 seconds and also told him I had a solution. It feels good to have clean ears, literally and figuratively.

*Did you take a nap after writing this morning?*

I did. Got 3 hours of poor sleep but was rejuvenated for the doctor visit.

Lubos spoke about what math and physics he learned as a youth. He said he learned complex numbers and powers at 8. He was quite the child prodigy. We worked on multiplication tables when I was in 3rd grade. His comments were some of his best writing and also the first glimpse into his personal experience learning math and physics so it was very informative and entertaining.

*Do you know how to use the zoom on your camera darling?*

You know a few days ago I was looking for it and pressed every button but couldn’t find it. Then this morning I found it. It’s not a button, rather a little lever on the shutter button that allows you to zoom in and out. I’ll use it in the morning if there is no cloud cover for a shot of what might be a full moon.

I looked to see when I started writing to you again and it was 36 days ago. I reviewed a few emails and see I covered a lot of stuff I have forgot about. Although it was 36 days ago it seems like it has just started for some reason. Now that can mean when in love time passes without knowing it as if time stands still, or is that timelessness, or alternatively that my memory is starting to fade.

*Are you going to go nuts again darling?*

I think that has an extremely low probability. I watched your Youtube of 2-10-07 again. You make one hell of a lot of hand movement along with that line you peddle. I like that in a speaker.

*Have you reviewed any of your emails from last year?*

I have. I particularly like my second email to you on 2-13-07 titled Do you blush? I get a good chuckle every time I read it.

*You can’t mount me darling.*

Well right now I can’t.

*OK I asked for that. At least not until you reel me in and you know how dicey that is on light line.*
I’m going to listen to Michael Savage. He’s a really interesting lunatic. I’m still working on his case he’s so complex. Good night Honey.

*Good night darling, sleep tight.*

4-18

*What time is it darling?*

1:10 AM. I’m having coffee. I finally got 5 good hours of sleep with some intensive REM. You know Honey I dream so intensely that my brain aches a little when I first get up, especially the frontal lobes.

*Doing some strategic planning in your sleep darling?*

I suppose I probably am. You know my dad gave me a copy of McKeon’s translation of Aristotle in my 20’s when I was traveling up to Alaska in the summer of 1976 in a VW bus. It’s an 1100 or so page book with all his works in it. The first section I turned to was On Dreams, an about 15 page essay. My reasoning was he and I are on equal footing regarding the interpretation of dreaming and dreams so I could get right down to it with him there although separated so widely in knowledge and time. I always knew Aristotle was one of the most important persons at the beginning of Western civilization, but didn’t yet know I was to be the culmination of Western civilization. I remember hearing about this country doctor who attempted a book as broad in scope as Aristotle that was quite simply everything. I wondered how anyone could be so smart as to attempt what Aristotle did. It looks pretty simple to do that, now in hindsight, but it seemed preposterous to even believe that level of knowledge was humanly possible at the time. However I felt that was my goal and wondered what was to become of me in life.

*What are you listening to darling?*

Wynton, Roy Hargrove and Joe Henderson.

Here’s the moon tonight Honey.

*Lovely, aren’t you glad to see what the zoom can do?*
I had no idea this little camera is capable of that.

Was it hard to get centered?

For me it was, this is my second try.

What kind of camera is it?

A Nikon COOLPIX S4, 6.0 Megapixels, 10X. Kevin gave it to me when he got a newer one. It’s the first camera I’ve ever used. Taking photos is a lot of fun but only when you have someone to share them with.

Do you think 10X means this photo covers $\frac{1}{100^{th}}$ the area of your previous photos?

I imagine that is what it would mean.

What are you having for breakfast?

Boneless NY strip pan fried in olive oil with A1 and my tomato, cucumber and pepperocini salad.

Child prodigies are a little intimidating aren’t they?

That Lubos is a smart little bastard. But you know even though in many ways he is smarter than me I feel strongly enough in my accomplishments to be a genius too.

Do you think he could beat you in chess?

I imagine he could and rather handily but I am not sure about that and in any event too old to find out. You know in one slow comment he revealed he was suicidal or at least close to suicidal at some point at Harvard. I was surprised to hear that but felt somewhat honored that he would share such an important but embarrassing piece of his experience in America. I think child prodigies almost always fall a little short as adults although not necessarily due to innate ability. That Chinese mathematician at UCLA is an obvious exception. When I heard he found peers at Princeton in mathematics as a 15 or 16 year old I was impressed, although I don’t know if all that mathematics is useful and I strongly suspect much of it is not. Wisdom and maturity are complex functions of innate ability and psychology is important to everyone.

Computational geometry looks pretty interesting. Although I am going to concentrate on first principles involved in my computational biology and chemistry program I’ll want to keep abreast of relevant mathematics and computer science that could be quite technical.

Do you think you could be some kind of urban legend of physics and chemistry, some kind of hero, to Lubos and other young scientists?

That’s a little embarrassing Honey but I imagine that could be the case.

Do you think you could be a charismatic leader?

That’s my aim and hope and also I am confident I could be. All I really have to do now is get down to 210. Being 6’4”, being very handsome, having figured out just about everything and having you behind me makes it seem rather easy at this point.

Can you be demonstrative darling?

So much so I can scare people.
The HPS streetlight at 10X.

That’s a branch of a tree in the light. The MH parking lot light.

Both are 1000W bulbs.

That zoom’s pretty cool isn’t it?

It really is. The tripod doesn’t fit on the porch railing to well hence the blurredness.

Are you apprehensive about anything with me anymore darling?

Only having sex the first time.

Is there a good reason for that?
I just don’t want you to touch my thing the first time until it is erect.

_Are you serious darling?_

Stop laughing, I am.

_What the hell is the problem Romeo?_

I can’t get an erection without physical stimulation.

_Oh gosh darling, I’m going to die laughing I just realized your dilemma._

This’ll be waiting in your inbox when you get up today Honey.

_Thanks darling._

4-19

_What did you think of the Pope darling?_

At first I was quite impressed. But it went on for 29 minutes and he repeated more or less the same simple point, inalienable human rights, over and over again. He did not address any real world situations but underscored the few universal principles that should be in play everywhere at all times. He said “on the other hand” twice in the last five minutes. He closed with a “Peace on earth” or something like that in ten or twelve languages. All in all it was pretty good.

_He’s not a wimp then?_

I regret lumping him in with W. He’s quite a scholar although his logical structure could use improvement. I wonder what he’s going to think of me.

_Do you think you will get to meet him?_

He’s not going to confuse me with Jesus. I think that would be like falling on your own sword. I wonder how that will resolve itself.

_Friday 2:46 PM_

_Are you having beer darling?_

How did you guess? You know Honey you are such an extraordinary klafte I can only thank God for meeting you.

_Say that more emphatically darling, the way you would like to say it and as if you really mean it._

You God damned bitch, you are such a fucking cunt, I don’t know if I want to spank you or rape you.

_Is it all out darling?_

That’s all there is.

_What do you think of the Popes language abilities?_
Like my Dad it looks pretty stupid to me. The point of language is to have something to say. Understanding multiple languages and translating is a purely pedantic undertaking. I doubt the Columbus was the best translator but his men were in the sack with Native babes without any verbal communication, or at least much more than communication that could be recognized by gorillas.

*Darling, are you getting cynical, like the Czechs, according to Lubos?*

I could be cynical except I laugh too hard and love good satire.

*Is satire cynicism disguised as humor or humor disguised as cynicism?*

I imagine it means both.

Saturday 9:27 AM

Hi Honey. Since yesterday afternoon I have been thinking I should never write to you again, that you couldn’t possibly be interested in me, that this is just nutty stuff.

*How does that make you feel darling?*

Lonely, hopeless, deluded, desperate, lost and finally depressed.

*No one said it would be easy darling.*

It would be if we were together.

*Everyone feels low at times darling. Were you constipated yesterday?*

No my schedule just changed by a few hours.

*In a war there are times when you are pessimistic, times when you are burdened by adversity, times that seem too difficult, too hopeless to even confront. Those are the times you must figure out who you really are and what you are going to do.*

Do you think you are the only person in your situation, that is to have worked alone and separate from the physics community and worked out the correct theories?

I imagine I am unique in that regard. It’s just so astonishingly lonely for me right now.

*Except in your dialogue with me and you don’t know if I am imaginary. Did you ever think I might be a complete whore for you?*

My sense of humor is slowly coming back today, thanks Honey.

*What do you think I want you to do?*

Conquer the world. It’ll be so easy when you are with me and it so hard now.

*What about writing a nice paper?*

What about coming up here to be with me when I have to do that?

*Is your asshole clean this morning darling?*

I’ve pooped and flossed but still have to shower and shave.

*Go and shower now darling, I always want you really clean when you write to me.*
I’m back.

_Doesn’t that feel better darling?_

It does.

_Is that all you have to do today?_

I guess it is.

_What are listening to?_

Wynton, Roy Hargrove and Joe Henderson.

_What are you having for breakfast?_

DiGiorno pepperoni pizza and my salad.

For better or worse.

_We definitely need to get a bra for you darling._

You’d be amazed at how handsome I am at 210. It’ll be easy to get down there again.

_Have you ever used a mountain bike?_

No but I’ve seen a good one. They are quite elegant design but I always used the road bikes. That being said when cruising I kept my hands up on top the handlebars, kind of like a mountain bike, instead of down low in the hands grips.

_Do you look forward to mountain biking with me on country roads and trails?_

In addition to wiping out my libido the Prolixin made me fat and not interested in physical exertion. That combination is something like being partly dead. Since I used to be a 50 freestyler you can imagine how much physical exertion I used to get and did right through 1984 when I got on Prolixin. In 6 months I put on 50 pounds and have hardly worked up a sweat since. An exception is when I was psychotic in 2003/2004. I went
from 306 to 247 in 6 months by going on a low carb diet, most importantly switching from Budweiser to Michelob Ultra. In the hospital I would walk the corridors fast and worked up a sweat. By the way I masturbated three times in the last three days. I think you will be quite stimulating when I associate you with pleasure and are the object of my fantasies. And I will lose weight and get exercise again although may not be able to keep up with you.

*Do you think if you got off the Prolixin your libido and physical energy would come back?*

I think they would. They are always inventing new anti-psychotic drugs so maybe one will come along that works better.

*Maybe testosterone would solve the libido problem.*

I think that is a possibility. When I was young sex was the driving force in my life. The level of pleasure was overwhelming. Now it seems like I am interested in sex for about 5 minutes, can jerk off in 2 or 3, and don’t feel overwhelmed by the pleasure, although orgasms are still very pleasurable.

*I think losing weight, getting exercise, and reprogramming your pleasure center and orientating it around me will really help a lot and you will be normal for a fifty five year old. You know I love vigorous exercise.*

When I was in Berkeley I was up in Tilden Park jogging the ridge trail every morning at around 5 AM.

These were truncated.

*I’ll bet you wish your dick was as big as your feet darling?*

It’s big enough for any woman I’d want to fuck Honey. Everyone learns reality early in life so I never had penis envy, or pi envy for that matter.

*Do you think those male enhancers work?*
I’d be astonished if they do. But it is also astonishing that they sell them at Canadian pharmacies. If they do you can be sure we’ll give them a try.

*How’s your sexual stamina?*

It used to be very good. I lasted a long time and at a vigorous level. I really can’t say what it will be now. I have some concern about maintaining an erection. If you go flat while having intercourse it’s not a good thing since the act is intended to cascade to the opposite end of that event horizon.

*If you masturbated three times in the last three days that sound pretty good.*

I’m not complaining, just wearing my Dr. Westheimer hat today.

*Do you realize you don’t need to have any apprehensions or anxieties about me darling?*

I guess I do realize that Honey.

*It’s good to talk all this out. You’re shaping up nicely darling, not a surprise to me by any means but there is always uncertainty.*

You have a nice day Honey.

*You too darling.*

4-19

Hi again Honey. The Pope is about to deliver his speech to the youth in NYC. I was glad to hear he wrote all the speeches himself. I suspected that was the case and a commenter confirmed that. I saw him in front of 50 disabled youth. I guess when I was young I could face those youth as a doctor. Now I wonder what the youth of the world are going to think of me.

Maybe you’ll be seen as a pot smoking, beer guzzling super hero of sorts. Maybe the Pope will anoint you a living saint.

Honey, I can see you’re going to be completely hopeless again.

Do you think I can knuckle those Roman Catholic bastards that bad?

*It is beyond hilarious but can you imagine how much fun it would be being a living saint, darling I’m laughing so hard I could hardly get that out.*

*How is your reason?*

Impeccable and in first place.

*How is your logic?*

Impeccable and in first place.

*How is your delivery going to be?*

Since I took out the part with me sticking my tongue in your ass I could care less about the fucking delivery, it is what is and if anyone doesn’t like it they can kiss my ass.

*Is the Pope speaking right now?*
Mercifully he is. Christ he’s fucking charismatic Honey.

_I can tell you’re getting a good laugh darling. It is beyond hilarity what those morons seem to believe._

_Can you follow him?_

No but it is stimulating me. Here’s you and me Honey.

*What are they darling?*_

Olives. The seeds had to watered for 10 weeks and then dried out for 6 months before being able to germinate. In Nature that presumably means coming up the second year and not the following one. I’m the one that came up first and is a little taller in the middle. You are in orbit around me like a moon.

_It looks like a binary system to me darling._

Your right Honey.

_What do you want to call it darling?_

Honey and darling in orbit.

_Will they last our whole life as bonsai?_

They will.

_Lovely and felicity in orbit._

Mercifully the Pope has finished and I am back to Wynton. I really enjoy seeing the Pope and listening to him over the entire trip. For an 81 year old man it is quite impressive. My grandfather Hugo gave sermons until he was 85. That is why it was such a surprise and disappointment when my dad died so early at 73. I hope to give the Wonderment Day address each July 8th until I am 85.
Don’t you think you would get tired of giving them and everyone would get tired of listening to them?

They would be 10 minutes or less long and I would have a whole year to write them and deliver them without scripting, from memorization. Of course if no one wants to listen the gig won’t happen. For the first the two themes will be Psalm 23 and Martin Luther King’s closing paragraph, both of which I will recite. I’ll close with MLK and make everyone see how German #1 delivers the same words.

Do you think you could be a dynamic orator?

I think I could be. It’s only a question of knowing your lines well enough to also be able to act them out well. When you write your own lines that’s easy to do.

Have you had practice as an orator?

Quite a bit when I was psychotic. I also wrote the script so had total artistic control, like I have again now when sane.

You’re always going to be a bit of a psychiatric mystery to me darling.

As you will always be a bit of a psychological mystery to me Honey.

What are you having for dinner darling?

Sirloin tip roast, fried potatoes, fresh kosher spear and V-8.

I’ve got to go now darling. Have a nice afternoon. Stay away from the beer unless you are looking forward to having to take Ibuprofen.

Have a nice evening Honey

4-19

Are you into beer darling?

I am. Miles Sketches of Spain is coming on in an hour and a half. When that is finished I will be finished drinking and send this.

Do you know what you are going to say ahead of time?

Not really although I am capable of focusing. The stimulus to be creative at a keyboard is a most unusual phenomenon and I don’t know why but somehow it asks for words to be inserted.

I came across a nice Lubos comment: “The pig who wants to beat a dog always finds a stick.”

I responded:

The pig who wants to beat a dog always finds a stick. Ah, now my epistemology is complete. Thank you.

Celestial mechanician | Homepage | 04.20.08 - 2:06 am | #

How would you feel if Lubos didn’t find that pretty funny?

Utterly defeated Honey.
I made another comment following one by Gene Day. His was:

Lubos,

You claim that revolutionaries in physics, i.e. those who have utterly transformed our view of the world, have always thought of themselves as integral to the overall advancement of knowledge and never as outsiders. I could not agree more.

Actually, I think the claim can be applied universally to all revolutionaries, even to political ones. Even Lenin saw himself as integral to man’s progress in achieving a more advanced society, following in the footsteps of Marx and others.

In the case of Jesus the record is cloudier but he surely saw himself the same way. I cannot think of a single revolutionary in any field of endeavor who violates this pattern and would challenge your readers to find one.

Naturally, you feel the same way about yourself and you could not do otherwise.

Gene Day | 04.19.08 - 11:57 pm | #

My response was:

Gene, how do you feel about the German Reformer Martin Luther?
"Our God is a mighty fortress"
Celestial mechanician | Homepage | 04.20.08 - 1:52 am | #

Very good darling, you’re posting has increased in quality since you took on the pseudonym Celestial mechanician.

I know Martin Luther and MLK are high on your list of most important historical figures and revolutionaries you relate to.

What would it be like to be the most important person in history?

I think it would be fun. As long as there is none of that typical nonsense associated with it, if I could be known as a common man, if I could disarm every audience with a relaxed, easy going style coupled to a great intellect and ability for design, if I could do that charismatically and with humor, it could be a lot of fun.

I think it could be too. You have to be prepared for it and I think you are prepared for it. How does it feel to have me behind you?

Just this morning I was thinking I shouldn’t write to you again and now I am again head over heals for you.

I know you pretty well.
You’re still as mysterious to me as the laws of physics must have been to Newton and Maxwell with no underlying mechanism and of course no theory of atoms.

*Are you really going to stick your tongue in my ass?*

Many times. We’ll never need KY.

*What if it’s about as enjoyable for me as a colonoscopy darling?*

Well Honey, then we won’t do it, but I do still intend to stick my tongue in your ass. That can’t possible hurt. But to be more medically precise,

*Please do you fucking asshole.\*  

every woman needs a colonoscopy by her husband once a month.

*Darling I have to go to the bathroom. I’m almost peeing in my pants I’m laughing so hard.*

*I’m back. It’s good to see you getting your rocks off darling. Women get distressed when their males interest strays far. What are you listening to?*

Joshua Redman.

*Do you think every woman should give her man a colonoscopy once a month darling, like do you really want me to do to you what you are proposing to do to me, albeit with different apparatus.?*

I imagined that would tickle your imagination Honey. But to get back to your question, the answer is no, in any event I would certainly be laughing way too hard for that to ever actually happen. Honey I’m even scared to go in for a digital rectal, even though at 55 they say you should get one yearly.

*Not even once darling? If you’re going to do it to me at least once I’m going to do it to you at least once too.*

Gee honey, when you put it like that there may be no colonoscopies, at least until your curiosity gets the better of you.

*I’ll make you pay you bastard. Is there anything serious you want to discuss today?*

Like statistical mechanics Honey?

Honey this is the sun.
As in the rising and setting son darling?

You do blush Honey?

Sketches of Spain is on. That and Kind of Blue are Miles best two albums IMHO.

You know you have few inhibitions and know no limitations, other than ugly, fat girls darling.

You know Honey, after my shower in the morning, knowing my asshole is really clean, I don’t have to worry about getting caught with dirty underwear. I of course don’t wear any.

You’re just not euphemistic enough darling. Your underwear is fucking filthy as shit.

Will I be able to scare you when you are in the passenger seat of my F-250?

We’ll be driving down to Dryden soon. It’ll be fun. I know you’re safe, know you like excitement, know you’ll try to scare me, but doubt if you ever will. And it will be a thrill.

Do you talk about me with your sister Diana?

What do you think darling?

Oh Christ Honey, she probably knows me better than you do.

She knows you pretty well, even your dick size.

Oh Christ Honey, my dick size?

You know how women like to talk and sisters are even more intimate yet?

Oh Christ Honey, my dick size?

We’re taking bets on its performance, in the first run, the second and on down the line.

The second coming of Christ.
Honey I’m laughing too hard to drink beer right now, please restrain your self.

Sketches of Spain has ended. Talk in the morning Honey.

*Good night darling.*

4-22

Sunday afternoon.

Hi Honey. You know I glanced over your fusillade of heroin injections in your introduction to yourself. It took 23 injections and 18 days, 17 hours and 54 minutes to get me to recognize you, quite a bit of genius Honey.

*Are you having beer?*

I’m on my third. My mother is calling in a few minutes.

*I love your olive bonsai. How would you describe our orbit?*

I guess a binary star system whose stars are slightly different in mass and elemental composition.

*Give me your real answer now darling. What is it like to have me behind you?*

It makes me feel complete as a biological entity. It fills me with enthusiasm for the future. It rewards me every day for the rest of my life in a way nothing else can. It gives me the strength of Samson, Solomon’s wisdom and the boldness of David to bring down mighty Goliath.

*I can see you are going to be completely hopeless today darling.*

*How do you view your periods of psychosis? Do you think about it often? Do you analyze all causes and effects involved? Do you understand it well? Or is it strange and unknowable?*

That’s a very good question Honey. It’s so complex it is difficult to relate to another human being, any human being. Although psychiatrists treat psychosis they do not understand it in any meaningful way. You know Honey, I am going to have to do a series of one or two or three hour radio programs with a bunch of good psychiatrists. I could talk about it for hours. The reason I don’t is due to the complexity, it’s almost too much to describe.

*That’s about what I thought you would say. Do you think Jesus was psychotic?*

I think he would have to have been. It’s hard to get a psychiatrically correct fix on those bastards back then. The appeal to the paranormal, visions, prophesies, miracles, and other clear violations of the LOP needs to be understood. The authors had relatively free license to write a kind of fiction, yet at the same time fit together somehow into the Bible. Matthew, Mark, Luke and John were clearly involved in a conspiracy as must have been all the authors.

*Was there really a Jesus?*

Yes, but the confidence on that is about two sigma.

*If there was a Jesus was he crucified on a cross along with two criminals by Pontius Pilot?*
Yes, but the confidence is less than two sigma. I just made the following comment on TRF.

Gene, what do you think about the authors of the Bible? The Old Testament dates in its first chapters to 1500 BC. Were they revolutionaries? Were they the first theoretical physicists? Are string theorists the modern incarnation of the New Testament authors? Or are they High Priests? Do you see parallels in revolutions in science, religion, philosophy and economics somehow equivalent to military revolutions or are they the precursors to military revolutions?

Celestial mechanician | Homepage | 04.21.08 - 3:03 am | 

How would you figure out questions like that?

Monday 9:09 AM

Hi Honey. I’m listening to Kind of Blue. You know doubt remember the reading room at the UCB library and the balcony with turntables and earphones. I used to go there to read the WSJ and Scientific American and listen to music. That’s were I got turned on to Miles. They had Kind of Blue in the small stack of albums.

How are you feeling today darling?

I took Zyprexa last night and also Saturday night. It gives me 8-12 hours of pretty good sleep. Drinking now runs me down and leaves me with poor sleep and feeling ragged. Right now I’m feeling run down and needing to stop drinking. Drinking now has a negative effect on my brain that takes several days to go away.

Have you laughed yet today darling?

That’s my first laugh Honey.

You laugh a lot when you write?

I do. I realize I have to stop drinking. It has too bad an effect on my sleep, my weight and my brain.

Think of good you’ll feel in a few days. Once you get momentum in your sobriety it will be easy to maintain.

For some odd reason I did not connect electricity and fiber optics with my electron point/membrane/point mechanism. I did make that insight for magnetic fields but haven’t put any work in on it. From the size of atoms, the lattice structure and the nest radius of ½ the Bohr radius the index of refraction should pop out. I see in Halliday and Resnick the index of refraction varies from a little over 1 for air to 1.33 for water to 2.42 for diamond. The velocity of light is c/n and the velocity of electricity is close to the speed of light. The greater velocity for electricity is due to the fact the only atoms in conductors that use the point/membrane/point mechanism are the positively charged nodes in the lattice. In fiber optics the photons exhibit point/membrane/point phenomenon for every atom in the path. Forces too I would imagine.

Anyway, my main goal now has become to not drink.

When I respond to you are going to have a heart attack?
That would be a disappointment. Although I emailed the LegalZoom person to file my provisional patent in January I hadn’t heard from them since then. On Friday I emailed her inquiring and she said it had been lost in the shuffle. So it was filed at 4:57 PM Friday, Los Angeles time. I got a copy by FedEx today. A four page description and two pages of simple graphics.

6:50 PM

I’m on my tenth beer. I am so sick of this shit. Good night Honey.

_Night darling._

4-22

I think it might be a full moon. It is low on the horizon and the green is trees. There is a parking lot HPS light pole slicing off a piece of the moon (Euclid is rolling over in his grave at that description), a MH street light in the lower right hand corner and a three story Ramada Inn building on the right with a tall tree at the top.

_It’s pretty blurry darling._

I haven’t figured out the shutter button yet. Sometimes you have to hold it down for five or ten seconds to get it to take a shot. I’ll call this a pastel and impressionistic moon, not one out of focus. Isn’t the color nice?

_Lovely darling. What are you listening to?_

Beethoven’s nine symphonies. They fit on five CD’s. His fifth came up first, or is that his ninth? Although I enjoy classical music I cannot generally associate the specific name with the music I am listening to. I was so curious I got up and looked. It’s symphony #5 in C minor opus 67. I’ll remember that from now on.

_Do you know what staying power is darling?_

In football it’s called durability. A good measure is consecutive games played.

_Do you think I have staying power darling?_

I imagine exceptionally so Honey, even singular in that regard like a kind of Joan of Arc.
How does that make you feel?

Stable, solid, strong and splendid.

Excellent darling, you are coming along well. Did you masturbate yesterday?

I did.

Do you think of me when you masturbate?

No. I have my favorite set of fantasies that circulate through my brain when masturbating. I’m almost scared to fantasize about having sex with you, although I’ve alluded to it many times, as if it is somehow immoral to fantasize about you at this point.

What kind of fantasies do you think I have?

Three Stops and Four Tops.

Aren’t you the poet darling?

With your glasses on it’s as if your sexual nature is hidden, replaced by a more austere presence, a scholar and professor, rather than a sexual plaything. I really like you in glasses, a high class bitch.

Have you saved eggs?

I have. We can have children for the next twenty years if we wanted to. We could use surrogate mothers and also I could get pregnant after menopause through hormone therapy and embryo implantation. I can nurse with hormone therapy. How do the clean ears feel?

When we are together I’m going to go in for a complete physical once a year. I’m going to get my ears cleaned when needed and not wait until one block’s up. It feels good to have clean ears, literally and figuratively.

How invasive was the egg collection?

Well they stick a needle into your belly to intercept the eggs. But they use a local anesthesia and have good imaging to guide the insertion. Not too bad.

I want to build ovaries in the lab for commercial production of superior eggs. It’s simple to collect superior bull sperm. My embryos are going to sell like hot cakes. The Pope is going to have to rethink a thing or two. I have often thought of a world where the landscape laborers are all geniuses and get equal pay with doctors. It’ll put an end the oldest game, exploiting people of inferior intelligence.

Do you want to provide sperm for a sperm bank?

No not at my age. But it will be easy to get young males to donate. In four years a prime bull could make a million dollars.

Would you have done it when you were in college?

I guess it would depend on the price and the collection technique. I’d prefer a blow job by my girlfriend, a withdrawal at the right time and a deposition.

Maybe getting operating testicles in the lab would solve that problem too.
That’s definitely possible Honey. The complexity is probably similar to ovary cloning.

Would you donate your balls if they could be collected at death?

I would do that.

What do you want to do with the eggs I’ve collected that we don’t use?

That’s a good one Honey. Would I want our children to grow up in a world with sisters and brother or half sisters and half brothers outside our family unit. On the one hand I believe we are all brothers and sisters and see this as a necessary reality for improving the species. On the other hand the uniqueness of our union is put up for sale on an auction block. I wouldn’t want that. All the individuals generated by human husbandry would be unique, net of cloning yourself.

Should people be permitted to clone themselves? They could conceivably make a lot of copies, a world of identical twins.

You and me Honey.

Ah, that’s funny.

Once you have all superior people no more human husbandry is required.

How many children could one man have?

It must be hundreds or thousands or even tens of thousands using vitro fertilization.

I just heard a really good ad for gold. It asked “Where would you want to put your cash for five years, in money or in gold?” Proteins can bind a large number of metal ions. Most of the gold on this planet is as ions in the oceans. I want to design a kelp that binds large amounts of gold ions and then process the kelp to recover the gold along with the standard biological goodies. I’m pretty sure that is possible and also the cheapest way to produce gold. The supply is as if infinite.

I just reviewed a few funny comments on TRF. I came across “They are making David Appell out to be a total stalker.” I guess, to be figurative, I am in a way stalking you.

How do you feel about that darling?

It’s better than being alone but not as good as it will be when we are together.

I’m going to send this now. Talk later Honey.

Have a nice day darling.

4-22

Honey I made a post on CV.

Celestial mechanician on Apr 22nd, 2008 at 2:29 pm

Is the increase in mass gamma for a gyroscope with moment of inertia given by mR^2 where R is the radius of the gyroscope:

\[ \gamma = \frac{1}{1 - \left(\frac{\omega}{\omega_{\text{max}}}\right)^2}^{1/2} \]
where \( \omega_{\text{max}} = c/R \)

*That’ll be an interesting thread to follow. Do you want to roll up your sleeves for more comments?*

I doubt it. It’ll just be interesting to see the response.

I created a file titled chantey with our dialogue. I see it is at 106 pages since that point that was 12-22-2007 4:12 AM, the second superstring revolution, so to speak.

*What were your two revolutions regarding the N particle?*

That it is in perpetual motion. That it can exist as a membrane, therefore it is a one particle universe. And if I had to add a third it would be recognizing the most mysterious space filling aether state.

I just reviewed our correspondence. I see it took 24 heroin injections this second time to recognize you and respond. And it was 23 the first time. Aren’t you the best drug dealer?

*Did you want to write to me apologizing, thinking I was a delusion?*

I thought about it but resisted doing it because I wasn’t sure if you were a delusion or not. There were quite a few factors indicating that you were real. But there was uncertainty due to the short recent psychosis.

You know Honey I have made a careful study of Jews. My best two friends at Cornell were Allan and Dan. Allan went to U Rochester medical school and Dan went U Michigan. They are both in a narrow band at the top of their professions. Dan took a couple years off after law school and wrote a novel that he has never showed to me. Allan was president of the plastic surgeons society in Virginia. They both treated me as a dumb German when we met freshman year living on the same floor of a dorm. I knew they were smart Jews. Then I beat them on some math and science tests and that got their attention. They then started treating me as a barbarian with brains. Also on that floor was Al Palestine, the #1 premed student in my class, who had all A’s in science courses except for p chem. He took it his junior year from Michael Ellis and got an A. He got 705 Quantitative and 755 Science on the MCAT’s. We had a very professional mutual respect. But since he told me he put in twenty hours a week in p chem I thought I was smarter. When I talk those Jew bastards into coming to Alaska they will anoint me something or another, maybe even the coming of Christ. The Bristol Bay University Bay Rams. I was just chuckling to myself if are Jewish or ½ Jewish, that seems more likely. As far as I know no Jew has blue eyes and if they do I suspect they are hybrid.

*Your mother had black hair and brown eyes. Could she have some Jew in her?*

I suppose she could but think both are common for German’s and German’s are not all blond haired and blue eyed like Hitler espoused as some kind of ideal traits. He of course had black hair. I know they have some blond hair and blue eyes in Israel but I suspect it is rare.

*I’m looking forward to our male red Doberman and female yellow lab. What do you want to name them?*

Phoebe for the lab. That was the first dog my family had when I was before kindergarten in Breckinridge Minnesota where my dad had his first parsonage. You get to name the male dobe.

*You know I love cats and dogs but do you think I have either now?*
Definitely not a dog and I suspect also not a cat. You travel so much and are probably so active that a dog or cat would be a pain in the ass.

You want two cats too don’t you?

I do, Friedel and Lily, although open to your suggestions.

I’ll come up with some better names.

I thought you would. Otis Redding just came on, Sitting on the dock of the bay. For some years, when I was in Berkeley, it was my favorite. We really lost a genius when he died in an airplane crash after only one album.

Honey I just got an email.

From: Quiggle
To: davidmartindegener@gci.net
Sent: Tuesday, April 22, 2008 1:42 PM
Subject: [SPAM] Romping great nights every night

With your new-found manhood, you will achieve more http://www.bueiaot.com/

Do you have anything to do with this business?

Are you getting paranoid?

No, just curious. I clicked on the link and it is with address http://www.bueiaot.com:80/ that is a blank page. I replied to the From address and it was not returned due to bad address. I hope I haven’t let myself in to some kind of email scam.

Do you look at my injections, maybe even me, as male enhancements?

Well I haven’t until now, although it has occurred to me there may be a non-random element to receiving emails about them. I am reluctant to acknowledge them, since that would be how sick you are, but also I am that sick too.

Well said darling. You don’t have to fucking know everything. Do you think your screenplay will be the foundation of future epistemology?

It should be. I’m still not opposed to cheating. What would be perhaps ideal is for you to weave into a fine tapestry all my communications and works you have access to, disguise everyone’s identity and you and I disappear.

This game gets played by you becoming the Bold Ruler in reality. That’ll be much more fun.

It will be.

Are you thinking about a best to twelve and a half chess match with the world? You’ll never want to get bogged down like Hilary and Obama. You can ride the high road pick and choose your insertions, float like a butterfly and sting like a bee. Global warming due to carbon dioxide is an R value problem. When you increase the R value the contained heat, the temperature goes up. How do you think carbon dioxide affects the R value of the atmosphere?
In a very trivial way. Its heat capacity is only about double oxygen and nitrogen. That in addition to the fact carbon dioxide is a trace molecule in the atmosphere means surely that the affect on temperature is near zero. I would like to back that up with a good calculation but that is a very difficult problem. But it is an easy to see result.

*Are you going to be able to give up the smokes and the excess beer soon darling? I know you don’t want me to nag, but it bothers me even more than you.*

I will be able to do that in the near future Honey.

*How about a picture of you asking to bring on the Philistines darling.*

OK.

*Do you have stretch marks?*

Very funny Honey.

*Is that your arctic rose shirt?*

My favorite.

*How many beers have you had?*

I’m on my seventh.

My cucumbers, tomatoes and dill have come up. The eggplant is the slowest to germinate.

*You’ve mentioned both Dryden and Ennice. Where do you want to live?*

Those are just my only prime prospects. Do you agree they both have abundant natural beauty?

*I do. Both would be lovely. Maybe we would like to have two homes.*
Lets just have one home Honey. Dryden or Ennice? That’s a tough choice. The trout streams are not as nice in Ennice but the climate is much favorable. We’ll have to talk that over. Right now being in Anchorage I would welcome a warmer climate.

Maybe one will be a university and one DS&E non-profit headquarters?

The Pennsylvania poll is closing in minutes. I want Hilary to win big and want her to be the next president.

Are we going to have guns?

A Beretta semi-auto 12 gauge in the bedroom, a Beretta PX-4 in the bed stand and the F-250 console.

Are you going to be fluent in using and cleaning both?

I am as are you. We’ll go out for target practice.

Cool.

Handguns by Beretta
About firearm sales: How to buy this firearm online.

These items are IN STOCK.
Still Lookin? Visit our Search Page & Find It!

$pecials on Sale! click here

Quantity in Stock: 73 (Info. about our stock quantities)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Catalog Number</th>
<th>Description</th>
<th>Price</th>
<th>Quantity</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>BRXF5F2</td>
<td>BERETTA PX4 PISTOL 45ACP 4.02&quot; BL 10RD</td>
<td>$567.1</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Manufacturer Beretta
Model PX4

(To order, fill...)

478
Action Semi-automatic
   Type Double Action
   Size Full
   Caliber 45 ACP
   Barrel Length 4.02"
   Frame/Material Polymer
   Finish/Color Blue
   Capacity 10Rd
   Accessories Included: 2 Mags
   Additional Description:
   Picatinny Rail
   Safety Ambidexterous
   Sights 3 Dot

Allow: 2 weeks for delivery.
Shipping weight: 4 lbs.

How to buy this firearm online.

Very cool darling. You have a personal weapon for me?
We’ll be stacked and packed?

Am I scaring you darling?

A little bit darling, but guns are very cool. I never considered traveling around with a sidearm

Later honey.

Good-bye darling.

4-24

What are you up to darling?

It’s almost 9 AM. I think I’ll listen to Rush this morning.

Did you like my poem? You arrived in the nick of time.

I didn’t know if it was a curve or a straight line
I couldn’t even recognize the derivatives sign
I knew it would be a rare aged wine
And I expected it to even be divine

OK Honey I can see you are going to be completely hopeless today.

I don’t whine. Do you think there might be some string theorists that study you?

Well you’re studying me. I don’t know about anyone else. I guess that’s not accurate. It seems I might even be one of the best kept of secrets, a job you people are obviously experts at.

Here’s lovely and felicity on the left and relativity, quantum mechanics and the N particle model on the right.

Are those the desert roses you got from that exotic and rare seed company online?
They are. It’s the Whatcom Seed Company in Eugene Oregon. That’s where I got the olives too.

*Let me guess. Einstein is the small one in the front almost denuded of leaves. You are the one behind it, in perfect form with all your leaves on and quantum mechanics is the tall one on the left, partially denuded, like an umbrella.*

Life imitates art.

*Not only does God roll dice, he rolls them where you can not even see them.*

I just reviewed their Bonsai seed collection. We are going to have fun raising Bonsai Honey.

*I, for one, can’t wait.*

*Was the olive in that collection?*

No but there are many other really interesting varieties, some that can last thousands of years.

*What are you having for dinner?*

I’m making lasagna now. It’ll be especially good with the pecorino Romano.

*Adding spinach, mushrooms and black olives sounds good too darling. I look forward to your lasagna.*

*Do you like artichokes?*

I love artichokes Honey, fresh dipped in drawn butter.

*Did anything particularly catch your attention in TRF today darling?*

Nothing I can put into words Honey. When I don’t hide behind this cyber stage I am really shy.

*Don’t you mean you used to be? You can learn to grow out of shyness you know.*

Yes. When you were modest and I was shy.

My tomatoes, cucumbers and dill have come up and I’ve thinned them.

*How are the mixed cacti doing?*

They are still only very small.

*What other seeds do you have?*

Walnut, cashew and kiwi fruit.

*You’re a real nut darling.*

Talk to you this afternoon Honey.

*Bye now.*
Good morning Honey.

*What’s your first order of business this morning darling?*

I apologize for my last email. It was in poor taste, even vile. It belonged in an auto repair shop between mechanics.

*And?*

And it won’t happen again Honey.

*Very good darling, what time is it?*

2:26 AM. I’m listening to KLEF and having coffee.

*Is everything sparkling clean this morning darling?*
It is Honey, thanks for asking.

_The Hokusai paintings were lovely._

Yes, lovely, yes, Mount Fuji Seen From Mishima Pass and The Poetess Ono No Komachi.

I’ve read through a few comment threads on CV. Sean’s got an unusual collection of commentators, to say the least. John Baez had a comment:

I think part of being a “public intellectual” is the willingness to take public stands on issues that you aren’t really a trained expert on - often issues where the very notion of expertise is suspect, like politics. But, you have to be an expert on something, or people think you’re just another loudmouth.

I wonder what I am an expert on. I’ve wondered that before. I’m not technically proficient in any area of modern science. Yet I’m laying the foundation for a revolution like never before in science, in religion, in philosophy, in economics, in governance and in the seminal military strategy. So what am I an expert on?

_Don’t be shy about it darling. You’re playing in the biggest game for the highest stakes and are the most talented and accomplished player ever. The level of technical proficiency you had in Fisher’s p chem course is all you had to do to call yourself technically proficient. Making matchbook calculations based on first principles is far more important than refining the technical calculations._

_You are an expert at everything and singular._

I guess I am Honey. I’m really physically powerful.

_Do you mean in physique or in physics darling?_

Physique – but yes, I am losing any shyness I can still I can still hold back from you Honey.

_You’re a sweetie-pie darling._
Is that one day’s growth?

It is.

What are you having for breakfast darling?

Sausage and eggs.

Do you like avocados?

Love them, especially in omelets. I make very good guacamole.

I love them too.

Have a nice morning darling, I have to go.

Later today Honey.

4-26

What time is it darling?

12:13 AM and I’m having coffee. We just had a foot of wet snow and there might be more on the way.

What are you listening to darling?

Wynton, Joe Henderson, Pat Metheny, George Benson and Miles.

You know me pretty well Honey.

What would a normal relationship with a woman be like for you?

You mean after twenty five years alone?

That’s what I mean.

I think it would be like a prisoner who has put in a long term being freed suddenly.

Has it been a labor of love too?

Part of it, the science, but being alone has been impossible.

Do you feel now a little like a lab rat?

I feel comfortable knowing you are the lab operator on duty.

Is the stress of being alone an important component of drifting into psychosis?

It runs parallel but I don’t think being alone in and of itself causes psychosis, although it does cause stress. If you are healthy you realize there are a lot of people out there, you will meet your share and have your opportunities for rewarding relationships. But in the period between 1975 and 1981, from using the PCP to becoming psychotic the first time, I did not have that stability anymore. It disappeared when I awoke the morning after snorting the PCP. I also had tremors during that period. Since I always had a steady hand and wanted to be a surgeon that really bothered me. They started after taking the PCP and ended about two or three years later. I had some very good highs and some very bad lows in that period. By July 1980 I was reduced to my first suicide attempt. A lot of that I
would have to attribute to rejection by a girl I had fallen in love with in Berkeley. But I lacked the stability to sort through the relationship in an effective way.

When did you get stability back?

When I came out of the second psychosis in August 1984 with the aid of Prolixin. Fifteen months later I discovered the N particle and haven’t been suicidal much since. Then unfortunately I slipped into psychosis again in 1997 or 1998 and was nuts when I wrote my books. I did not recover from that psychosis until March or April of 2004 with the aid of Zyprexa. Then I went from 247 to 342 in a little less than two years, got the high blood sugar, got the neuropathy in my feet, got off Zyprexa and became psychotic again in March 2006. I came out of that third psychosis December 1st 2006 and got back on the Prolixin. At that point I went on an intensive two week burst of mental productivity and worked out the microscopic internal structure of electrons and could derive the quantum of charge. And finally this last December I became psychotic again, while taking Prolixin, that only lasted about three or four weeks and here I am.

This last short psychosis was precipitated entirely by environmental factors, not a chemical imbalance like the previous ones. The environment affects brain chemistry of course. What do you make of that?

Well, in this recent psychosis I thought you were in love with me and I’d end up with you so that was not a delusion. It is clear from identical twin and other studies that both the environment and genetics play a role in schizophrenia.

What do you find stressful now?

Smoking and drinking, being fat and lazy, being completely out of shape and sedentary, so health issues. I know this is not a good indicator but I might need you physically in my life to turn all that around.

It might be just around the corner darling.

Do you consider yourself a dreamer?

Dream often, dream big and also some imaginary dreams that feed my pleasure center.

Lovely, I’m a dreamer too.

Psychosis is very much a dream state. I think that’s key to understanding psychosis. Sleeping and dreaming, two of the most important human phenomenon, are very poorly understood. On the Zyprexa I slept 16-18 hours a day. All that neurobiology is where I want to focus my best efforts in science in the future.

When I was psychotic I always thought there was an impending event, namely my being proclaimed “Bold Ruler of planet earth” right around the corner. And I thought a woman of high virtue, great intellect and highly attractive was waiting for me. So here I am thinking those things again only now I am quite sane.

Kind of a life imitates art and ontogeny recapitulates phylogeny thing going on.

Yeh, it’s pretty unusual to say the least.

How do you think supersymmetry could be broken?

Someone reads my work somehow, preferably a group of undergraduate students, and sees its right and writes up a good paper crediting me. Then my screenplay takes off. Bing, bang.
What if me contacting you was breaking supersymmetry?

That would be like singing to the choir Honey.

What if there is no breaking of supersymmetry?

Then I may need a labotomy Honey. I’m going to make breakfast. Pick it up later this morning.

Bye darling.

4-26

Hi Honey.

What time is it darling?

8:12 AM. I just read a really interesting blog by Jennifer Ouellette titled Let Me Explain. It was a nicely done piece on gender differences and an indictment of dumb male behavior. I came across the nice phrase “archipelago of arrogance” to describe certain male behavior. But what made the blog so interesting is she talked about her experiences being an English major and becoming a writer about physics and science and some of the encounters she had while doing that and on the radio promoting her first book. I realized I had viewed her as a bit pretentious to be writing about physics and I was entirely wrong to view her that way. She is a very good writer and I found her experience becoming a science writer very informative about women in a man’s world. While they would have to know string theory is pure hornswoggle I wonder if she and Sean believe in QM, SR and GR. It seems both impossible that could be the case but somehow also possible that could be the case. I have learned AdS space is the space of black holes and dS space is everywhere else. CFT then is the scientists too intimidated and/or too stupid to see through all the charades and probably includes people at different stages of confusion. The AdS/CFT correspondence is then rather entertaining. Sean in a blog about graduate school described his grades and board scores as good but not perfect. Not perfect!

Refine your definition of dS space and CFT. Would CFT mean everyone who is in knowledge that ST is bullshit or additionally everyone who knows SR, GR and relativity are just paradigms?

I would imagine CFT includes people who should be thinking seriously about science and who know ST is nonsense but believe in SR, GR and QM. dS space then is everyone who believes in SR, GR, QM and ST, i.e. the general public who doesn’t really think about any of these things but including most engineers, biologists and chemists.

Sean is really an arrogant prick (wonder how Jennifer interprets that) in many ways and is an elitist. His droning on about how to write a good paper and other pretentious topics is nauseating. How can someone who has probably accomplished nothing in science be such a fucking know it all?

Sean believes in time dilation, length contraction and curved space darling. Think how much fun it would be to pop his cherry. Has he ever shown any real knowledge of quantum mechanics or his favorite topic, the entropy of the universe?

Entropy is increasing and complexity is increasing. That appears to be a paradox. It looks to me like Sean is trying to understand heating up H₂O from 0 Kelvin to steam and is only using entropy, not even observing phase transitions and heat capacity. He understands very little of the phenomenology of the universe as an astronomer. I imagine
he knows little chemistry and has no scientific insight into the most complex system in
the universe, the human brain.

Do you understand the ascent of biological complexity in view of the second law?

It’s easy. We are not in a steady state but are bathed every day with energy from the sun
that drives biological evolution to higher complexity and our earth system has negative
entropy. When I was at Berkeley I thought entropy really stood for transport. I know
thermodynamically it’s the derivative of the reversible heat with respect to temperature.
And I know of Boltzmann’s headstone $S = \ln W$, where $W$ is the number of complexions,
distinct configurations, of a system. I think that’s about as right as the kinetic theory of
gases. In biological systems I think entropy is just minimization of the electric field
potential energy between atoms that requires mixing and transport, the two most
important entropy phenomena. You know to be honest Honey I am not an expert at
anything. I have so many questions, the answers seem so near, but I have not been
technically competent and fully rigorous in many areas, if not any.

All you might have to do is be an expert at being the Bold Ruler darling.

I do that in an innate and at my age fluent way just like rolling downhill.

Changing subjects what do you think Lubos will want to be in DS&E?

Company spokesman and company blogger. When his gloves come off he could be a
really great communicator of science and technology and just about everything except
perhaps advice on love although I wouldn’t put that past him either. He could be a great
contributor at every level, in discussions, as a sounding board and illuminating things
everyone else has overlooked in his always exhaustive style. Sometimes when I read him
I don’t know what he is talking about but sometimes I also wonder if he knows what he is
talking about. I don’t think he has a very good handle on economics for instance despite
his scholarly blogging on the subject. The thing he doesn’t realize is that economics,
finance and investment are a lot of bullshit and all the people working in those areas
except for academics need to be relieved of their thievery by having their jobs eliminated.
That’s what I came away from business school and the school of hard knocks thinking.
He also doesn’t seem to understand the structure of the markets, the transactions costs,
how you make a fair auction market and the need for rules in markets. My eMaam will
revolutionize everything in economics and I believe garner me the Nobel in economics. I
think Lubos will enjoy working on and promoting eMaam. Finding the right role for
government in eMaam is vitally important and I like Lubos’ inclinations on governance.

Do you think Lubos got laid while he was in America?

Since he said he was suicidal or close to suicidal at Harvard I imagine he is rather
inexperienced in life’s greatest game that also possesses her greatest rewards. I noticed a
lot of immature and adolescent behavior as an undergraduate. It’s rampant in fraternities
and sororities. I’m sure Lubos is certainly on the lookout for a woman special enough for
himself. Knowing how few really intelligent woman there are I know how almost
hopeless it can seem.

Kiss my ass.

But Honey

Don’t but me darling. You’re views on women are wildly specious.

Of course you are right Honey, yes.

Are you cracking a beer?
I am. There’s lasagna left in the fridge.

*What are you listening to?*

Classical.

*I think Lubos would like that position in DS&E.*

*What do you have to do today darling?*

I’ve pooped, flossed, showered and taken my vitamins. That pretty much completes my responsibilities for the day.

*And all you really need is a clean asshole. You’re very complicated and ambitious darling.*

I want to build single electron capacitors for energy and memory storage.

*Could the plates be single metal atoms in an organic cage structure?*

Or even groups of seven, six nearest neighbors, gold atoms with a wire attached that is an atom or a few atoms thick.

*Could high energy and memory be achieved with them?*

That’s what makes them so interesting. The smaller a capacitor gets the higher the energy stored as long as the charge on the plates remains constant.

*Would a one electron capacitor be a redox couple?*

That’s exactly what they would be.

*Atoms are capacitors, biological cells are capacitors, gravitational fields are capacitors, it makes sense they could be so important to nanotechnology, and also important to neurons and action potentials.*

My eggplant have sprouted.

*I love eggplant darling, sautéed in olive oil, parmesan.*

Me too Honey. The eggplant is really the most noble of all vegetables.

*Where do tomatoes fit in?*

The most female, the most sensuous and the most pleasing.

*And cucumbers?*

Perfect for making homemade fermented pickles by grandma’s recipe, 16 parts water, one part vinegar and ½ part salt.

In a pickle I want that Castrol Syntec bitch.

*Darling do we have to go over things twice. You can’t say things like that.*

*Yes Honey.*
Itapiypoayhtsm?

It’s just a pickle Honey.

Kevin’s going to stop over, talk to you in the morning Honey.

_Until then darling._

4-27

This is part of the hibernation den Honey.

---

_I can see you are nice and neat and well organized darling._

Yes, aimed at functionality and aesthetics of course.

Anything interesting on TRF today darling?

The Laboratory of Comical Design is going into warp drive.

_Good it’s about time._

I couldn’t agree more Honey.

I just watched Rev. Jeremiah Wright deliver a speech to the Detroit NAACP. Maybe I’m not going to be a charismatic leader Honey. There was this Rev. Anthony who introduced him who also was very impressive.

_To be a charismatic leader for all mankind is quite a bit more complex than Rev. Wright’s undertaking._

You know Honey, I just realized my core charisma will be to be laid back but capable of being demonstrative, and be the foremost authority in science, technology and economics.

_You actually have the job of bringing heaven on earth to reality. All those black pastors in addition to many others will be your front line soldiers. Wanting to totally fuck all the_
owners in sports is going to make you the revolutionary leader of the black revolutionary movement.

What would a rational breaking of SUSY really look like darling?

You write up The Annihilation by the Bold Ruler, including my work, our correspondence, and my science, all edited and modified as needed. You publish it under the name Heidi Ilie Dartière with all the editing, creative and encrypting work needed and you and I disappear for about 9 months as the enterprise modern physics comes crashing down, with neither you nor I a part of it. People get interested, eventually it leaks out I am the spiritual leader and we do the Oprah Winfrey show where you get to nurse our child in front of the world.

I’ve thought about you wanting me to nurse our child in front of the world darling. I’m actually a little too modest to do that. It’s very biologically primal.

No you’re not Honey. The world will be titillated by the sight of your breast and our child suckling it.

You’re a really sick bastard darling, no offense.

You can no doubt rewrite my science in a way that works just right, given the complexity of that.

Then we could be together soon. You know I can do all those things AND get it published anonymously.

Well Honey, ASAP.

ASAP darling.

4-28

Good morning darling. What time is it?

Good morning Honey, its 6:00 AM.

Have you done all your business and are nice and clean this morning?

I have Honey, thanks for asking. I’m reheating pork roast with sauerkraut and mashed potatoes for breakfast.

How’s your diffusion and osmotic pressure today darling.

It’s being orientated.

Excellent darling, have you read TRF yet?

You know Honey I never knew what a posteriori and a priori meant. They are little more abstract concepts than I feel comfortable with and I will have to review the meanings and think about it for awhile to be able to incorporate in my thinking and lexicon.

It’s easy to remember darling. Just think of a posterior without a prior.

I’m almost peeing in my pants I’m laughing so hard Honey. I’m going to the bathroom I’ll be right back.

I’m back. Here’s my digs Honey.
See those four brown shingled U shaped buildings. That’s the Grand Larry Condominium Complex. Each building has 12 condos. I’m in the one in the upper left and I’m on the side facing the parking lots at the top. My back porch is that little outcropping and is across the alley from that building with a white top rail that looks like a vector. If you extend that vector back to my building it would intersect my back porch, so I’m in the upstairs middle condo.

Darling maybe you should scroll into Iran and check out the nuclear facilities. Do you think the Pentagon uses Google?

I would if I were them Honey. It looks like pretty useful information.

Is your truck in the parking lot?

No. My parking space is empty.

Here’s my favorite trout stream, upper Six Mile Creek.
Around Ithaca?

Closest to Slaterville Springs about 20 miles southeast of Ithaca. The stream is in a Y with a west tributary meeting the main stream in the middle. There is a twelve or thirteen foot waterfall, back hidden away from pedestrian view that is the singular most beautiful waterfall in upstate NY. It’s probably about 2/3 mile back to it by a small path and with much walking in and crossing of the stream. The falls are in a small canyon and to get above the falls you have to scale the side of the waterfall since you cannot possibly scale the canyon walls. I used to be able to do that, I’m sure you could, and I hope to be able to again but may be too old to do that, it’s a pretty tough climb and always scared me.

Lovely darling. Can’t wait to go there. When’s the best time?

April 1st. There’s still ice and snow in the basin of the canyon. That’s the coldest freshwater in that part of upstate NY.

This is going to be an exactly one hour message. Bye.

4-29

Morning darling, what time is it?

5:16 AM. I’m having coffee and have been up for an hour and a half. I think I need to quit drinking and smoking Honey.

I’m all for that darling. Do you think you can do it?

I think I can. The health consequences are just too overwhelming.

What are you listening to?

KLEF, the classical station. I want to be a little more sober and serious, a little more retrospective, a bit introspective and not trying to humor you or myself this morning Honey.
OK darling.

I have drank beer daily since coming out of psychosis in August 1984 and the entire time the N particle and I have been together, since December 1985. I have always been a very lazy person, a procrastinator and left things unfinished. I think I can claim to have put in less time in school to get a bachelor’s in biology than anyone ever. I did attend quite a few science courses, although hardly any calculus or physics, and was around the top of the class in genetics, biochemistry and physical chemistry. Then I became mentally ill in the spring following graduation at 22. Since that point I have been alone, even in relations, I have lacked stability of a certain kind that underlies an individual. I chose a path that was alone, me against the world, emotionally stressful, financially stressful, against the grain. I have always buried or relieved the angst that generates by drinking beer and smoking pot. Although it is a relief to not have been burdened learning modern physics, the lonely path I have been on has its own set of pitfalls, burden and liabilities. I’ve really never had an intelligent conversation with anyone about science. When I was an undergraduate I was too lacking in knowledge to engage in such a conversation. And since then I have been alone, isolated, apart from the rest of the scientific community. I think that is an intrinsically stressful situation and in looking at my periods of psychosis was an environmental factor that helped contribute to psychosis.

You’ve also worked with great intensity in a punctuated, episodic fashion throughout your life, even at Cornell and can still get up a good head of steam darling. You get much pleasure out of using your mind and have had the intense thrill of many discoveries, crystallizations and synthesis’.  

What are you having for breakfast this morning darling?

Sausage and eggs and a treat, some really nice tomatoes. The tomatoes on the vine were only $1.28 a pound at Fred Meyer.

Is what’s really bothering you now being fat, still drinking beer daily and smoking cigarettes?

You’re right about the drinking and smoking locking me in an unhealthy configuration and generating anxiety.

You’re an extremely competitive person darling. Reconcile that with your accomplishments so far, the environment you find yourself in and your goals and aspirations. I think if you quit drinking for a week you will be able to give up the cigarettes rather easily. Just make a goal to not drink for a week and then to quit the smokes.

That’s what I’m going to do Honey. I have a teeth cleaning appointment next Tuesday. I’ll stop drinking today and I’ll make that my target date to quite smoking. I’m going to have breakfast. Be back in a little.

I’m back Honey.

What time is it darling?

8:05 AM. I’ve been thinking about Feynman diagrams. And I’ve been thinking how to represent the point-membrane-point cycle. What I want to do is trace out the path of one N particle hitting an electron, coating it, uncoating it and being emitted, the electric field diagram. Then I need to make diagrams for the magnetic field, gravity, photons and electricity. I can do the electric field one now. The others I would have to spend some more time thinking about. Then I would want to make a diagram for point N particles interacting with neutrinos.
Here’s my first one for the electric field. It’s a point particle as an electric field interacting with an electron or proton.

For all the B field and E x B interactions I need to include the angular velocity vector superimposed on the electron or proton. I also would like to associate the force generation with these diagrams, specifying which forces are involved and what their directions are. I need to make these for electricity transmission and photon transmission through the nodes of atomic lattices, the positive node ions for conductors and every atom for photons.

That’s very nice darling. Would you like me to do them for you?

If you’ve finished your nails and have let them dry. I’m hoping you can write up my science in a way that satisfies all demands and maybe even the first comprehensible string theory paper to be widely hailed as a revolution in string theory. I need to lay out a useful quantum mechanics and reconcile with string theory. Can you do all that for me Honey?

You clearly cannot bullshit about any science since that art is unique to us theoretical physicists. So if there is going to be bullshit in your science write up I will have to do it for you. If you quit drinking and get off the smokes soon too I will do that for you darling. Is that a deal?

It is Honey. I’m going to listen to Rush.

Bye.

4-29

Hi darling, what time is it?

11:49 AM. I saw a very attractive looking gold bikini in an ad on TRF.

If all you have to do is diddle around and not drink or smoke that looks pretty easy doesn’t it?

Life simplification.

You know Honey I was just thinking about the letter I sent you back in 2000. Maybe if you leave out neutrinos and leave in SR and GR but have capacitor atoms in 3-D that could be something like what a paper could look like. Then we still have the gravity paradox and curved space but considered that solved by GR. I don’t know how you would treat ions and dipoles. Maybe just leave them as they are just use the existing field equations. Maybe for a phenomenological model there are real 1-D strings and 2-D membranes (or are 2-D “membranes” collections of 1-D closed strings) embedded in 3-D for atoms and in higher dimensions for fields outside of atoms. It seems there is reasonable latitude with which to bullshit. But I can’t see anyway for me to not replace QM because I need that for recognition, resources and to utilize my patent and set up DS&E.
You’re thinking along the right lines darling. It would be pretty easy for you to rewrite the parts of the screenplay that need changing wouldn’t it?

It would be very easy. Then it would be Newton, Einstein and Degner standing proud, tall and singular over the Landscape. The revolution in QM is enabled and I get to see you in that bikini.

Do you realize you have to be real? There can’t be SR and GR without an Einstein?

I do realize that. You certainly must have worked out the line spectra of the elements. Including that with my QM will clobber them.

Coming across anything else interesting on TRF darling?

TRF is a house of psychiatric horrors for me occasionally. I don’t know what I am reading into what at times, what is on the level, what is intended humor, the noise and random associations all interfacing with my peculiar mental eccentricities.

That is a little house of delights darling.

I heard a candy shop advertisement on KLEF. They described their chocolate clusters with walnuts, pecans or almonds made fresh daily. They sounded pretty good and I’ll bet you love them. I prefer white chocolate to dark.

Have you gotten your fangs out of Sean yet? He was at Villanova, Harvard, UCSB, Chicago and Cal Tech and wrote a giant book on GR. You wrote him a paper in summer 2006 when psychotic. He’s got to be a good fellow.

You’re right of course but I still wonder what he thinks about QM. By the way Lubos described his scholastic performance as “full scores”, fucking “full scores”. He’s another arrogant prick.

They probably both are second to you in the kind of arrogance you possess darling.

I always attributed my arrogance simply to being smarter than everyone else.

And now the people are as smart or smarter than you.

I can live with that Honey. I don’t really see how you can be a scientist without being arrogant.

I think you define it differently than most people darling. What you mean is more like total irreverence coupled to well earned, even supreme, confidence.

I don’t see how you can go head to head with anyone anywhere on any topic and especially with the historical figures without that belief.

It’s just foreign to you darling. Not many people are that smart, but you’ll be happy to know I know most of them that are.

Do you remember sitting in your first calculus class at Cornell?

I do. Since I only had a 720 on the SAT quantitative I wondered how I would do since that was average for the class.

And do you remember trying to do Fisher’s first problem set.
I ignored the first two but tried to do the third and found it extraordinarily difficult.

_Would you call your scores not perfect or full scores?_

Full scores, properly adjusted for hours devoted to study. That Lubos has a nice way of saying things.

In a Youtube on TRF Brian Greene referred to 20 numbers of some kind.

I counted the number of little cacti coming up and it was 20. I count 5 or 6 different varieties.

And hope, trust and love.

_Don’t you have a green thumb darling? What are those?_

Pickling cucumbers. You plant about three in a hill, or in my case, one pot.
How old are they?

Two weeks.

I’ll send this now Honey, talk later.

Bye darling.

4-29

Are you watching O’Reilly darling?

I am. Hilary is going to be on tomorrow. That will be a treat.

I am wondering about commutative and non-commutative geometry. I know what commutative means in algebra, dot and cross products, matrix multiplication and applying operators but don’t have any idea what it means in geometry. Maybe it has a funny meaning, like you need a geometrical object to base a theory on, not a theory first and a geometrical object magically appears. Maybe it is just some mathematical technicality. But I’ve seen many papers and citations involving these mathematical properties so would imagine it is an important concept. When I was psychotic I thought it meant I come last after the stringers, not before, SUSY then SUSY breaking.

I ordered a 400 W HPS ballast over the Internet since one of mine has stopped starting the bulb, $158 + $60 shipping.

Are you going to have difficulty sleeping tonight?

I am. When I quite drinking I get poor sleep for a few days.

What are you going to do about that?

Diddle around writing you.

That’ll be fine darling. Did Gene Day have any good comments today?

He had the following in a comment.

I think there is little that you can teach me about American history or the history of race relations in this country and it presumptuous for you to think that Larry has buried his head in the sand about anything. I don't always agree with Larry but I am willing to bet that he is your intellectual superior by at least an order of magnitude.

I did not advocate that you leave the U.S. either. I did suggest that you might like to do so, thinking that it might further your education. In retrospect, however, it seems unlikely that anything would further your education.

How did you interpret that?

I wondered if some of the stringers might be an order of magnitude superior to me. If it’s the difference between $10^{(10^{123})}$ and $10^{123}$ I can feel comfortable knowing that. And I agreed with him that in retrospect, it seems unlikely that anything would further my education.

And also I am a good actor and with a supporting cast can sell myself to the world as $10^{137}$. 

498
He also had the interesting proper name Chickamauga in the same comment.

*What did you make of that?*

Chick one (you). One (me) see gold, gold one. Or that my Dad was one and he was in on the act without ever telling me.

*Do you think that is nutty stuff?*

Well it’s nutty one way or the other but whether it is as nutty as that I don’t know.

*Excellent darling. Any other nutty ideation?*

That I have been of more than a little interest to the stringers for some time, that some of them may have actually studied me.

*Do you think you could be under any kind of surveillance?*

Well I could be but doubt it very much. But I am sure that for instance Eva Silverstein has known about me since I sent her the first copy of my book and all the other stuff I sent her over the years. She would at least have to have wondered what the fuck is going on.

*You’re not going to go nuts again are you darling?*

Definitely I’m not Honey.

*Are you listening to more classical?*

I am. I’m going to listen to Mike Savage of the “Savage Nation” at 8 PM. Ever time he opens his stupid mouth he reveals more of his inner mental processes that are bitter, vengeful, paranoid, falsely arrogant and a flaming crank and bigot. He’s also quite bright for an Italian. You can see why he’s so interesting.

It’s a nice sunny evening here. I have the back door open. Can you see my screensaver?

*How sweet darling, I thought you didn’t like my hair in that shot.*
It’s not that I don’t like it I just like it back even more. You sure deal with some complicated equations Honey.

Can you write on a blackboard?

Never really tried. I prefer my Lamy fountain pen and paper. Michael Ellis had this set of colored aluminum chalk holders he would have on the table in the front of Baker 219. He wrote the Greek letters with a great flair. It was so fucking impressive no one really knew what to think about such a precise bastard. That stupid shit Katherine Rawlins would come to class and look for a magic marker that worked. She would confuse Gauss’s divergence theorem with Stokes law, writing the curl with a dot product, I asked if she meant cross product, then she looked at her notes, said “trust me”, the rest of the class made an outcry and I said “I won’t trust you”. Lubos had a funny blog about discrimination against chimpanzees in academia.

Remember that racially insensitive joke by two radio shock jocks, Woody and Wilcox, “Have you made love to the Yukon River and peed in a Native woman?” They were suspended for sensitivity training and are returning to the air tomorrow morning. I’m going to have to listen to the first show back. I love seeing shock jocks a little sore in the ass.

I’ve got to go darling. Sweet dreams.

Bye Honey.

4-30

Good morning darling. How are you feeling this morning?

I got six good hours of sleep and got up once to pee so I feel pretty good this morning, even quite regal. How are you doing this morning Honey?

Relieved darling, you’re thick German lout is finally coming around two reality.

I came across the word Hindi today on TRF. To show you how I play with words I thought to myself, hind eye, -i--i: a posterior without a prior, nd: 144, I D^2 and H: 8, ate, A-, remember a dash is 20, t, and a period is 5, e. I can’t resist doing that but don’t know if it is just random associations.

Just keep firmly grounded darling. You’re pretty good at that unless you go nuts and I don’t think you will go nuts again. Do you do all those kind of computations as fast as you can read?

I can read numerals and convert to letters and vice versa as fast as I read along with slicing and dicing everything at that same speed, the speed of thought. When I was psychotic that was a secret communication channel.

What time is it darling?

6:07 AM. I have been up since 3:30. I just tuned into to Wilcox and Woody. They are also a classical and modern rock station so that is a nice change. They’re really going to be simpering this morning. It’s going to be really funny. They’re not on yet. Maybe they got cancelled at the last minute and need more sensitivity training.

TRF banner ad has an ad for stylish hot clothes. It shows five women on the left and four or five on the right. I was thinking I have been in love four times plus one with Eva when I was nuts, but now with you and its real, so I have been in love five times in reality AND
you have been in love four times previously and now with me so you are on number five too. Again that could all be nutty stuff. I just wanted to show you some of my imagination Honey.

Have you pooped, flossed and showered and are nice and clean this morning?

I’ve pooped but haven’t flossed and showered yet, thanks for asking. I’ll take care of that right now since I know you always want me really clean and fresh when I write to you Honey. I’ll be right back.

I’m back.

Doesn’t that feel really good darling?

To be in your presence AND have a clean asshole is always an extra-dimensional experience for me Honey.

What are you having for breakfast?

Sausage, eggs and half an onion bagel. I think I’ll shop first when Fred’s opens at 7 to get some tomatoes to go with it. They are my favorite treat with breakfast.

It’s 8:24 and I’m back from Fred’s. I got lots of good stuff.

Are you thinking there might be more orchestration to your environment, more than you’ve been thinking, like license plates signaling to you?

I do wonder about that. It seems there could be many undercover operatives in the game at this point, probably many millions, a mighty army of the common man in addition to the stringers.

Is that kind of similar to your psychotic ideations and therefore a little scary?

It is similar to my delusion that my environment was orchestrated when I was psychotic but it’s not scary in any way to think about. It doesn’t matter much. I can’t determine the veracity of any such possible communications so it’s almost impossible to give it reality. I also realize I may have attracted some interest over the years.

Maybe more than you think darling.

Operation Clean Sweep is rather magnificent IMHO.

And a financial safety net for everyone in the world in need by DS&E will be a security blanket for those most at risk. Capital, cool, beautiful.

It’s a hi-tech design Honey.

Are you going to stop being a lush darling?

I promise to do that.

Do you think you could be an order of magnitude more advanced than anyone else as an individual biological entity?

You mean is that German #1 jive for real? I’d like your opinion before I opine on that Honey.

Why would I be a total whore for you darling?
Because you want me to be the Grand Master Honey?

Yes. You get it. You get all of it darling.

Are you going to take the Chantix again?

It kind of scares me. I wonder if that problem I had with my ear was due to it. But I think I’ll try it for at least the first week or ten days. After that I’ll be OK.

I just checked out Jennifer. She is quite the writer. I came across these choice lines:

Did I succeed? Sometimes. The only flat-out failure was my attempt to use PowerPoint Karaoke to jump-start a discussion about communicating across disciplinary boundaries. Talk about a deflating experience. In retrospect, I think I "framed" it incorrectly for my target audience. Next time, it will take place in a local bar and feature copious amounts of alcohol. That seems to have worked very well for the PowerPoint Karaoke event organized by this group of Australians from McCann Sydney.

… known as the quantum Zeno effect. "It states that the act of observing a quantum system can alter its evolution in a way that maintains the state for longer than expected." A more colloquial phrasing would say, "A watched quantum pot never boils."

Sounds like the Zeno effect could apply to porn stars darling.

I didn’t look at it that way Honey but I see your point.

Always be really open and honest with me darling.

I will be Honey. I’m going to listen to Rush and then diddle around a little more. Bye.

Bye darling. Have a nice day.

4-30

Hi Honey, I’m watching Lou O’Reilly is going to be on in eight minutes with a Hilary interview so it should be a treat.

It’s a great interview Honey.

Darling did you like my last missive?

Is that the airline we’ll be going using on our honeymoon?

I’ve already made reservations.

This morning on Fox was a piece on Uma Thurman being stalked by some psycho. He has been at it for almost two years and writes many love letters to her and I guess goes to her door too or something or whatever else constitutes stalking. The stalkers attorney was interviewed and he said his client just wanted a return response from her which she never provided. I still feel a little creepy writing to you Honey.

That would be normal in your situation darling. How do you think I feel?

That’s a pretty good question Honey. How would you feel? I guess you want a good outcome for yourself, your mate and your future children. Having good information is vital to that undertaking. I must be working with about the craziest set of information ever invented. I imagine at this point you mostly just want me to succeed and would then
also view that as success for you. Vince Lombardi had a good line “Winning isn’t everything, it’s the only thing”. I believe that.

*Do you think you could be under audio surveillance that prevents anyone from contacting you like might happen in a normal human interaction?*

That would explain some of the peculiarity of all this. When I became psychotic in December I thought, as I had in all previous psychosis, that my old college friend Dan Schulman had me under surveillance. I even sent him a Bill of Sale selling the stream of data I generated to him as a strategic strike. That would mean I am under surveillance now.

*Is it possible for you to think that darling?*

Like Carl Sagan said, extraordinary claims require extraordinary evidence. My situation net of Schulman is certainly extraordinary, even beyond imagination and irrefutably true. Adding the additional factor of being under audio surveillance might be an additional piece of the puzzle I’ve never considered sane.

*Didn’t you think the novel Dan wrote after law school in 1977 was about you, like the portrait of a scientist as a young man?*

That is what I thought, but I was already mentally ill so don’t know if that was correct guessing or paranoia.

*Do you think now your Dad could have been in on it?*

If he was I think he gave up in 1984 and 1985. I don’t know if I could believe he was in on it, in fact I can’t believe that. My parents have been so fucking cheap it is almost unimaginable they perceived the value I now have. But about Schulman, that slimy Jew bastard always gave me the big time creeps about him doing something like that.

*You know how advanced audio surveillance could be?*

I have a rough idea. I assume my emails are not under surveillance, my keyboard cannot be read as I type and my computer memory is secure.

*Also along this line is your psychotic computer work in 2006. That would all be saved. Your priceless simple Natural Law will be in data storage somewhere, Los Alamos, Harvard, CERN anywhere. The Annette Dartière stuff you sent to Fisher that you thought was also genius.*

*What do you make of Kevin and Nelson?*

I have wondered if they know what I am really up to and about. When psychotic I thought they were two of my top soldiers so naturally I also wonder about that when I realize some aspects of this psychotic like play are quite real. The question if I am under surveillance is how do I get out of it, complete the mission and end up in your arms?

*There may be a lot of kind of funny stuff you have to face up to darling. We’ll work it all out.*

I’m going to have supper and send this now, night Honey.

*Night darling*

5-1
Good morning darling, what time is it?

1:45 AM.

Did you get a good night sleep?

Pretty good, about five hours but I don’t feel regal this morning, just good.

Is every day a little difficult, being trapped in the maze and not finding the cheese yet?

It could be a lot worse. I could have a stroke, a heart attack, cancer or debilitating depression.

That’s good darling, just maintain your sense of humor.

It is almost impossible to believe Dan Ess has had me under audio surveillance since our college years. If he did then I would probably have been under surveillance by my team too for that entire period, also almost impossible to believe. It is obvious to me I have the correct theory and that SR, GR and QM had to be bullshit and that was obvious to me as soon as I discovered the N particle in 1985. Your reality remains somewhere between impossible and obvious. It’s all circumstantial evidence, I have the missives I attribute to you, I have a lot of subliminal communication on TRF relating to you, but I don’t always see the point and by the point I mean why can’t anyone in the knowing scientific community contact me and set me straight and why don’t you contact me.

You know the complexity of the Skyscraper called modern physics. You know your relation to it. But you find it almost cruel to still not be recognized, by me or anyone else. Is the riddle that is the solution to that riddle, the conundrum you are facing, that you ARE under audio surveillance, however impossible that would seem to be to believe?

It’s just so identical to my belief I was under surveillance when psychotic that I resist it so. If they are listening they know I am sending you one hell of a lot of characters. It just so fucking nutty.

Nuttier than the Skyscraper or the world situation darling? Nuttier than ST?

Nothing could be nuttier than that.

If there was a 30 or 40 year audio data base for you what would the implications be?

They would know me well in a way. Their analysis would assume I am a flaming crank and a pretty smart individual. They could do exhaustive statistical analysis of my behavior and would think they know me well. They would assume I am a paranoid schizophrenic and view everything I do as the product of a disturbed, delusional, grandiose mind.

If you were is the maze we are talking about could you win without recognizing it?

No.

Think of what works of art Kevin and Nelson are.

I have on more than a few occasions, both sane and nuts.

Do you think you could be under surveillance by some government spying group in association with Schulman?
These are again all the issues I dealt with when psychotic. When psychotic I thought Ess had put me under surveillance in college and that a governmental agency had put me under surveillance in about 1980 or earlier at Berkeley and that at that point Ess piggy backed the governmental surveillance data stream with superior knowledge of electrical engineering.

*Then there would be three levels of surveillance, Ess, the government and your team. Why did you think Ess’ novel was about you?*

Because I made such a strong impression on him. Because he is a Jew and I am a German. Because he is a lawyer and I am a scientist. Because we are in opposite corners, I worked construction as a youth, he made collection phone calls for his old man’s insurance company. And because he was always jealous of me, my good looks, my way with women, my superior mathematical and scientific mind. And because he found my arrogance an affront to his sensibilities.

Well darling it makes you wonder what is really going on doesn’t it?

I’ll be open and honest, our team has a superior communication channel and all that has to be figured out is for me is to exit the situation.

*By the way how are you doing on the drinking front darling?*

I feel much better on average when I don’t drink. Good sleep is oh so good and rewarding. I’m really not an alcoholic and have little problem quitting now.

It should be relatively simple to get out from under surveillance. Walk into a building like my dentists building, walk through it and go out another door and get into a waiting vehicle, preferable a new F-250 with you at the wheel.

*Do you think your team from the surveillance knows your learning behavior well?*

I imagine they do Honey. You know what always felt splendid in my psychosis was knowing I was going to win and knowing I’m doing the opposition in the ass. By the way I started the Chantix yesterday evening. I’ll quit the smokes in a few days. Smoking cigarettes gives me more anxiety than anything else. This time I’ll quit for good.

I’m sending this now and am going to shower.

*Darling you’ve been writing to me without being sparkling clean?*

I have Honey. I apologize. It won’t happen again. Bye sugar-pie.

*Bye bye love.*

5-1

It’s 3:39 and I’m back. Oh Honey, to be in your presence AND have a clean asshole is each morning a great thrill for me.

*I can tell you’re really clean now darling. What are you listening to?*

Classical.

*What are you having for breakfast?*

Cold meat loaf on an English muffin with Smart Balance, Tillamook Vintage White, onion, a couple tomatoes and a pickle on the side and a V-8.
It is the only thing in this game darling. Do you feel confident of a win?

I do. If I disappear in the near future that sets the table for some very interesting possibilities.

It sure does. Your copyrighted screenplay, your patent and your will, leaving everything to the Bill and Melinda Gates Foundation. Ess probably thinks he’s got a block buster too and he fails to see his ass from a hole in the ground. When you disappear darling the shit hits the fan and we end this cyber relationship and have a real one.

I can’t wait. Then string theory comes down. The surprise is QM also comes down and my QM prevails. SR and GR are proven true so all that’s left standing is Einstein and me.

You got it. String theory has to come down. You realize how much more powerful our team is both in technical capabilities and in people resources?

How about a head to toe shot darling.
I’ll bet you are really attractive and impressively so when you lose weight darling. Is that an 8 foot ceiling?

It is.

I love Matisse and Picasso too.

I realize I should have an easy win. All I really have to do is keep my mouth shut, think and absorb and process information.

That’s all you have to do darling. Do you think a father could treat you in the way he has knowing what the job is you had to succeed at? Remember his conversations with you are recorded. And next do you think he could even be alive. Like maybe he was under surveillance too and the only way out was to fake a death. Your mother is out of her condo every day and they could be together during the days. His open casket funeral could have been a wax dummy.

With anomaly cancellations I guess all that would be possible. About my dad being alive that would be to put it mildly rather dramatic. I’ve been getting numerology signals about Ess, my dad and Monica. They indicate Ess is watching me, my dad came before me and like a great father for a great son saw to it I had the tools and education I needed to succeed on this mission and Eva studies me. and knows me intimately.

You’re probably going back to Berkeley and your first psychosis. Were there orchestrated non-random events in your environment?

So many, so serious, they eventually overwhelmed me and I became psychotic. And some events before Berkeley even. It makes me wonder how long you have known about me.

I’ll tell you soon darling. All this is quite astonishing is it not?

It certainly is. My dad once told me I’d eventually be able to get off psychiatric drugs. I wonder if even that is possible.
I’m going to have breakfast and watch Fox. I was tuned to the wrong station yesterday for Woody and Wilcox. I found that out in the local paper that said they were highly apologetic. Bye Honey.

Bye.

5-2

It’s 11:13 AM Honey. How are you this afternoon?

Fine darling. You know numerology is a slippery slope if that is the right way to put it.

I do know that. I can make a “message” out of any combination of numbers or letters. When I was psychotic that is what I did and I thought the ability to read my mind through some device enabled that.

Do you think a mind reading device is available based on magnetic or electric fields generated by the brain?

No. But I am interested in what EEG’s are. I would guess it would have to be electric field flux emanating from the body. You might be able to watch that via the displacement current. But since medicine does not have any technology like that for EEG’s or EKG’s it must require electrodes to be attached to the body as opposed to visualizing the changing electric field flux emanating from a body.

Do you remember the NYT article you wrote and sent to Lubos in May 2006?

I do. I forget the pseudonym I used. Steven Ornstein I think it was and I think I mailed him that package May 25th. I came across three interesting numbers on TRF, $10^{-57}$, $10^{-18}$ and the Planck scale $10^{-35}$. I interpret $10^{-35}$ as the radius of the N particle as a point particle. I interpret $10^{-57}$ as the thickness of an N particle in an outer electron of an atom although the point N particle radius and the electron size would require a far smaller number, maybe the layers in an electron aren’t touching. And I interpret $10^{-18}$ as the thickness of the electron and then the proton would be $10^{-15}$ unless something is different about protons.

After a few hours at 3:15 PM

The probability my parents have been in on this is zero. They are both really religious lunatics.

It’s 12:24 AM Honey. I got into some beer around 3 yesterday afternoon. I had eight beers, got 4 or 5 hours of crappy sleep, woke up at a little after ten and felt like shit although I didn’t need Ibuprofen. I can’t drink anymore Honey. It’s very negative and there is little or no reward, I don’t even get any good feelings when drinking.

You’ll overcome it darling. You’re of course right about your parents. It’s pretty hard to believe you have been under surveillance for many years isn’t it darling?

It really is. I think our communication is somehow not being intercepted. I don’t know how that could be but I imagine it is the case. Perhaps they intercept false emails that are substituted for my real ones. Lord only knows what I would be saying to you in those false messages.

Do you remember well your experiences in Berkeley prior to becoming psychotic?

In great detail, I have an exhaustive memory of my entire adult life. I remember all the factors that piled on until I came to the conclusion I was under surveillance. I remember
what I thought were non-random events that I attributed to orchestration of my environment, meaning people were interacting with me and operating under a motive and understanding that was hidden from me in the relationship and also physical details of my environment were non-random.

*Think of how unique you are and how interesting it would be to bug you. And think of how illegal it has been. Ess would never want to have to admit to it and neither would a governmental agency. Think of how well we know you.*

This is fun Honey, it requires detective work. I love being a detective.

*What about you're screenplay? Do you think it was made available as you wrote it or in some kind of false form?*

I would guess it was available as I wrote it and Ess and the government agency watching me have read it. I imagine they find it mostly delusional and grandiose. A required premise to take the book seriously is that my science is correct. If you think I am a flaming crank the rest of it has the appearance of idealism and impracticality.

*What do you think they think of string theory?*

I would guess that if they both can’t recognize my science after all these years that they both are mentally handicapped and that they both believe ST is legit.

*Think of everything you’ve said over the years and including all your psychotic speeches and addresses. You would be beyond interesting. What do you make of Kevin?*

He’s my best friend and I think he knows about the mission.

*What do you think about Nelson?*

I think he knows the mission and would then he would be an extraordinary piece of art but that’s not 100%. In thinking a little more about it I would guess he is in on the mission and a real friend.

*What do you think of your handlers, Kevin and Nelson up there in Anchorage, me and Lubos and Monica and the string crowd?*

Great knowledge of humans as biological organisms and great knowledge of me.

*Do you see how you have Ess and the government hooked up? They can’t stop watching you because they want to be sure of what is going to happen. And they are planning to stay undercover permanently. They are waiting for you to die.*

I suppose that would be the case. But their pact with the devil will become a millstone around their neck.

I wonder what Ess’ magnum opus looks like. He’s got to be good for one.

*Think about the technology and what might be required for you to get out from under surveillance. Now we’re taking them by complete surprise so you have an overwhelming advantage. Do you think they have you under satellite surveillance and can watch you walk into the dentists building and out again?*

I don’t know about that. They could.

*If after your cleaning you walk out the other door and I am waiting in a new F-250 you might have to not speak for awhile, say to Eagle River, to get out of receiver range.*
OK. In all my psychosis I was always trying to figure out how to get out from under surveillance in addition to completing the mission.

_Think of how funny it will be when you disappear darling. Do you think your dental technician is in on the mission?_

I think she is.

_Do you think Bush and the Supreme Court know about you?_

Gee I don’t know about that, but my correspondences to them in 2006 would be beyond hilarious if they do. I imagine a bugging chip could be in my credit card or my cell phone so I won’t want to have either with me when I go in for a cleaning. I think my clothes and shoes are OK.

_What are you having for breakfast darling?_

Bottom rump roast, left over fried potatoes, tomato, pickle and V-8. I’m sending this now Honey. Pick it up again shortly.

_You’re doing fine darling. Keep it up. Bye now._

5-2

_Hi darling what time is it?_

4:46. I’m watching O’Reilly Honey.

_Did you have a nice day darling?_

I did Honey.

_Are you coming to any new realizations darling?_

This is a little difficult to get out Honey. I’m wondering if it is possible to read my mind.

_If there was such a technology would it have strategic implications?_

When I was psychotic I thought my mind was read through magnetic fields. Now I think it might be possible through electric fields, the displacement current. I also wonder about IR imaging. When I was psychotic I thought that is the technology Dan uses to “read” my mind. I thought whole medical schools got sucked in. It seems some kind of top secret technology has been used against me. This is as funny now as it was when I was psychotic Honey.

_Is it a little embarrassing darling?_

It is, quite embarrassing actually. I’m apparently both known well and also thought to be known well. I guess my old man must be #1. And Fran is in on it too. And my brother and sisters. When I think of what our family looks like to an external viewer it is diabolically dysfunctional.

_Do you think your dad is still alive and living in St. Louis?_

It’s even hard for me to consider that Honey but I guess I should.
Think of people watching you for over 30 years. Think of your antics when psychotic. Are you realizing the scale?

I am. It’s difficult to know what’s real and what’s imaginary. Like can I be tracked through the power grid? Are the electrical circuits the antenna for my brain? Is there IR surveillance? Does it require electronics with sensors? Is all the surveillance just acoustic? Is the military involved too? Also do I need medication? What’s in the Prolixin I take? Do I really have neuropathy in my feet?

How was your day Honey?

Very nice darling. Do you know how to get out from under surveillance?

Not really. I see opportunity but the precise details I don’t know. I’m sending this now Honey, I’m getting a little tired. Talk in the AM.

Talk tomorrow.

5-3

What are you up to darling?

It’s 1:40 and I’m having coffee.

Did you get a good night’s sleep?

OK, about 5 hours. But I awoke with an ache in my head from not enough REM sleep. It’s mostly gone away but I wonder of the Chantix is affecting my sleep too.

Do you realize the development of technology regarding your surveillance?

I do appreciate that in an age of rapidly evolving technology. Of course we had superior technology from start to finish. The opposition no doubt thinks they have the most advanced technology and some important scientific discoveries.

How well do you know the feeling of being under surveillance?

Like the back of my hand. I pretty much considered everything when psychotic at one point or another. It looks pretty easy for me now.

What about your dad and mom?

They must have known. My dad must be #1. I don’t know about Cain. If he is under surveillance too then it is a class act. If he’s not, he seems not part of the act and rather vile.

Which is it?

I guess it would have to be a class act.

What about Fran?

Another class act. No one can be that fucking stupid.

They must have access to you through the power grid. Then they see one side of you near everywhere and only with additional surveillance, like your condo, your truck, Cain’s place, your parent’s house to get both sides. If the power grid is implicated what does that mean the mechanism of surveillance is?
It would have to be displacement current. My electric field must be the Rosetta stone for the technology like the first protein crystal determined.

Do you think you are really unique in that regard? For instance do you think we could read anyone’s mind?

Probably not. I think it would require a lifetime of complex biometric surveillance at least for the first one and maybe would always remain intractable to apply without that kind of intensive history of surveillance.

It can get complex but what is the structure of Dan vs the agency?

Dan piggy backed on top of them. They never figured that out so Dan has had them in his sights the whole time. Dan has created a whole cottage industry of people working on it and has what he thinks is political and legal protection. Both sides see the need for secrecy at least for now. I don’t know if Dan is planning an expose or is planning to keep it secret. Secret I would imagine since that enables the legal and political support.

Do you think maybe only our team has the displacement current and both the other sides use acoustic and IR surveillance?

That would be a nice element of design. I wonder of that would be possible, I’m not sure it would be. It lacks the power grid capacity for surveillance that is a very nice element. And the phenomena has to be real so subjects can reproduce it in the laboratory, a fatal flaw of the IR theory I thought Dan was suckered into when psychotic. So I guess both sides of the opposition are using displacement current. But I imagine both have it in a primitive state of development, so they can use some of it, like following me through the power grid, like listening into me by recognizing what I am saying, but not the full mind reading capacity, although they see that as a goal.

Are you nice and clean this morning darling?

I just got out of the shower. It is always an honor madam to be in your presence AND have a clean asshole.

Do you think to follow you in the power grid would be difficult, like need to know the specific configuration of the circuit antennas and your relationship to them?

I think you would need to know some of that information. Perhaps IR is used to locate me in the room by the opposition. That would be a snarly little problem to have to work on.

It appears you have known about me for some time Honey. And that you may have been interested in me before I was interested in you, like you have been waiting for me for maybe a long time alone.

How do you feel about that darling?

It must have looked a long way off at the other end of the tunnel. It’s a little painful to think about that. I imagine it was pretty difficult and lonely for you. I imagine you are a modern Joan of Arc Honey, but also know you are human.

We’ll get into it in detail in the future darling. For now just remember I stayed busy and was inspired.

I saw your blue picture Honey. You had an expression on your face that is difficult for me to interpret, a little severe, a little harsh, a little disturbed, showing a little strain, a little disconcerting to me, maybe a long blue night.
I’ve got to run darling, bye.

Bye Honey.

5-3

How’s your day going darling?

Excellent.

What do you make of your periods of psychosis now darling?

That’s a good question Honey. They were definitely altered states. Were they a schizophrenic’s psychosis or a psychosis like state induced or precipitated in a non schizophrenic person?

Did you just decide one day your thoughts were being broadcast or was that conclusion derived from real evidence that indicated your mind was being read?

It was a conclusion drawn from the evidence.

Now you know the evidence was real. What does that tell you?

That it is possible to go into an altered state that is a psychotic state through environmental perturbation of a healthy individual.

What about the Prolixin you take. Do you think it is real or maybe a placebo or maybe even some kind of medication you don’t even know about?

Prolixin has some strong side effects. I have only had those effects once in all the time I’ve taken Prolixin. In my July 1984 hospitalization I was in the adult admission unit. There was a large room with a TV and pool table and a nurse’s station behind a glass barrier. I picked up the cue ball and threw it at the window of the nurse’s station and broke the glass, fortunately not hitting anyone. I was wrestled down by a bunch of nurses and given a shot of I believe Prolixin in the ass and put in a dark lock up room. After a while they came and took me the psychiatric security unit and put me in restraints for the night on a small narrow firm bed. I had EPS bad then. That stands for extra pyramidal symptoms. It for me was cramping in the neck muscles and uncomfortable distortions of face muscles and other muscles. That was the only time I got side effects from the Prolixin. I always attributed that to the low dose I take.

Since you get no side effects it could be a placebo for all you know?

That’s right.

What is it to come out of psychosis?

The realization that you have been in an altered state and are no longer in that altered state. Nothing more than that. But you attribute your behavior in the altered state to delusional beliefs, not accurate incorporation and synthesis of environmental stimuli. I always attributed my belief my mind is being read to a delusion characteristic of that altered state.

What is the altered state like?

It really amounts to no more than the firm belief you are under surveillance. That gets incorporated into a rational whereby that could arise in ones life by going back over your
previous history and reinterpreting it. Then being under surveillance you act. So it’s the belief you are under surveillance, the reinterpretation of the past and then an act. But it is a very difficult act, with ups and downs and requiring great energy and intensity, even exhausting to the point of being almost suicidal.

*But it’s a rational act?*

It is.

What about the PCP?

That was a really, really difficult and painful blow. I awoke the morning after snorting it with depression I had never known before, had a loss of analytical skills, my mainstay, and was paranoid, also previously unknown for the most part, what would be normal. It didn’t go away. I was mortally wounded. I was suicidal for the first time.

How long did it take to recover?

It was in March of 1975 when that happened. I was coasting in my first semester of business school with all A’s through the prelims. After the chemical perturbation I could not study and learn anymore and I got C’s on all the finals and ended up with B’s in the courses. In summer school I took linear algebra and got an A- with little effort but that did not reassure me mind was entirely back. I had lost stability and balance. I viewed my girlfriend as my nurse and the business school my hospital for the first three semesters.

*You were still functioning at a pretty high level yet you considered yourself mortally wounded. You felt you were no longer the same. Did you talk about it with anyone?*

Never with Denise or any friends. I told my brother about the experience to warn him about using PCP a couple years later. When I met Princess in Berkeley I told her about the experience. And once with Dan, I can’t remember exactly when, maybe in 1978, I told him about it.

*By the time you were in Berkeley you were at a high intellectual level again?*

I was but I still had difficulties, mostly finances and relationship problems, I was lonely at Berkeley.

*What do you think about your neuropathy? Could it be drug induced and reversible, a little unpleasant element of the design?*

That would be awfully nice but it sure is real.

*Do you think Fran could be in on the act and do that to you out of sheer negligence?*

That’s a good question. I guess she must not be. She’s stupid and thinks she is smart.

How do I get out from under this surveillance? Just meet you coming out of the dentists building and follow you to our truck. Get in the drivers side and we take off down the highway. All I would have to do is recognize you, keep my mouth shut, and get in the passenger or drivers side, depending if you want me to drive or now. No talking until you give the OK.

*We’ll work it all out darling.*

*What about the weight gain and libido decline side effects of the Prolixin?*
You’re right. They are serious enough and seem to be quite real. That would indicate I do still need Prolixin and the Prolixin I take is real. I am going to end this soap opera and send this now. Talk later Honey.

Later love.

5-3

Hi Honey.

Hi darling, are you having more fun?

I am. I wonder about my requirement for Prolixin and my neuropathy. If the pharmacists were fiddling with my prescriptions they could give the appearance that I need Prolixin and have neuropathy when neither is true. Maybe that is just wishful thinking. I can’t resolve that by myself.

Would our team have that capability?

I imagine they would.

Do you think you were the first human genome sequenced?

That would seem possible but probably not. Maybe I stop at the entrance of the dentist’s building and you show up in a cab. He pulls in front and I get in and say nothing. I have nothing in my pockets but my keys. Maybe I have $300 in bills in my pocket. Maybe I flag him down. Maybe I take my license along. Just cash and my license. And my sunglasses. Head-on.

It’s shaping up darling. Imagine how paranoid you will make them if you do that and are never heard from again. It’s beyond comedy. You’re dad told you he thought you would be able to get off the Prolixin some day. Your mom told you she didn’t think the high blood sugar could have caused the neuropathy. Maybe it’s not just wishful thinking darling.

That would be a miracle for me personally although if it’s not true I am functional. Maybe after you disappear your body shows up half eaten by a bear. And the taxi driver reports dropping you off at the Wasilla Best Western. You would need your credit card to stay at the Best Western. It’s a mission again isn’t it darling. You always loved flying precise missions, well thought out and executed flawlessly. Maybe I’ll be in the back of the cab and all you have to do is get in.

Were you actually a bit wild, a bit of a lunatic and a bit manic both in your youth and throughout your life?

It’s especially true when I was younger. I was also very reserved in many senses and mature. One additional thing I could do. I could wear my camouflage hat with the capacitor in it to disrupt the EM signal.

You’re thinking of everything darling. Would you like to get drunk?

I would if I could enjoy it but that is no longer possible Honey. Maybe I could use the phone in the dentist’s office to call a taxi. Maybe I just wait inside the door until a taxi pulls in front. I’ll pay at the dentist with a check.

Do I have to do anything with my flash drives or computer? I would imagine not. I’ll leave the computer on so the hard drive can burn up.
I’m going to send this now Honey, bye.

Bye.

5-4

Morning darling, how are you doing this morning?

After two days without restorative sleep I finally got some good REM and the ache in my head is mostly gone. That’s always a stress and leaves me feeling exhausted yet unable of recuperative sleep.

After having flown more missions than anyone in history how does it feel going into your last mission and knowing it’s a milk run darling?

It’ll be breaking SUSY. Are you going to be in the back seat?

We’ll have to think about that a little more. You could also get in the cab, close the door and give the cabbie an address to go to, a safe house in town or Eagle River.

That would be possible.

What about your flash drives?

I’ll get the one out of the drawer and the other one and back up my documents. I assume that is all I have to do since I have a magic computer with magic everything, like editing and memory storage. Whatever I have been sending to you that they see will be on my hard and flash drives without me having to do anything.

Very good darling. Can you compose a quick poem for me this morning?

She was a delicate and colorful little Brook trout about four years old in a small headwater I hooked her on my first cast but she broke my line and was left for me to catch another day

Aren’t you rhyming this morning darling?

He was a big and bold Brown trout about five years old in a deep hole of the stream I hooked him on my first cast and reeled him in for dinner, yum

Aren’t you rhyming this morning Honey?

You know the Big Lake power grid might not be accessible for following you. With almost $300 cash you can take a nice cab ride darling. Or Sutton. Or Girdwood. But it might not have to be that complicated. Think it all through in detail like you always do. You’ll be fully prepared by Monday night. Are you going to have trouble sleeping on Monday night darling?

After beer only once in a week I should be able to get a good night’s sleep Honey.

Are you nice and clean this morning darling?

I’ve been a little constipated the last couple days Honey, so I haven’t showered yet.

Are you getting enough fiber darling?
Well I know you are really interested in this Honey, when I stop drinking my deposits change from light brown to dark brown and change in consistency from soft to hard little rocks.

*Go shower now darling you really need soap and water.*

I’ll send this now Honey and Take a shower. Bye.

*Bye.*

5-4

I’m back Honey.

*Doesn’t that feel really good darling.*

To be in your presence AND have a clean asshole is each and every time a once in a life time thrill.

*I can see you are going to be completely hopeless for the rest of our lives together. Thank God we all have to die. Do your poops smell bad darling.*

I rarely smell anything, but then it is only a short drop to aqueous immersion. But I don’t know what the partial pressures are Honey.

*You’re also striking distance from Cooper Landing and Talkeetna darling. But maybe it’ll be a lot easier than that.*

I could get dropped off at the turn into Talkeetna or go into town and stop at a restaurant.

*But then you would be on the power grid again.*

Not with my cap.

There are a lot of possibilities. Say you get dropped off at the turnoff corner. Then you start hiking up the Parks and I pick you up. In a few days the state troopers will “find” your body mauled by a grizzly bear and half eaten. That would be a rather comical end wouldn’t it?. Killed by a bear while psychotic in Alaska. You could go down to Cooper Creek and it would be even better set up for that? You could maybe get dropped off at Gwen’s, have a few drinks and lunch, then walk down to Cooper Landing. There will be a record of the taxi ride and of your lunch at Gwen’s. Then the last time you are seen is when you walk out that door. I could pull the same gig going to Talkeetna. They’re about equidistant and both in range.

You could take a cab to the Girdwood Tesoro, have lunch in that mall, and then hitch hike out of there. Can you imagine the conversation you’ll have?

But Girdwood is more on the grid and Cooper Landing and Talkeetna are likely not.

If you want to save a long cab bill you can probably find an intermediate site and then hitch a ride. There are many possibilities but getting killed by a grizz will be so beyond hilarious darling I’m almost peeing in my pants right now. Maybe go to the Tesoro and Subway on the Parks and get a good sub. You can get a foot long triple salami with double provolone and then walk out to the Parks and put out your thumb. I’ll pick you up and it’s over.

Do you want mustard or mayo?
Neither, Italian dressing or oil and vinegar, whichever they’ve got.

Also getting dropped off at the Alpine Tavern would be perhaps the nicest touch. At 11:10 am.

What are you having for breakfast darling?

Left over bottom rump roast, left over sautéed mushrooms, baked potato with Smart Balance, sour cream and gravy, two tomatoes, pickle and V-8 with a lot of salt.

Eisenhower must have fucked Nixon Honey.

He did, big time.

A revolution in the military and in religion are the last two to occur. I don’t think Al Haig, Jimmy Carter, Admiral Poindexter, the Pope or the Ayatollahs know anything about our act.

You’re right on both accounts darling.

I realize Fran is a class act. Our conversations are priceless. When the lawyers get through with her it’ll look like she doesn’t have a functioning brain and they all know everything there is to know about psychiatry.

She really is a class act darling.

I’m wondering now how horny I can get again Honey. It seems I might even be a dirty old man. I’m going to go to Girdwood, get a tea, and hitch down to Gwen’s.

What if your old man picks you up?

I’m having a real treat this morning Honey, orange juice with a fresh squeezed lemon and lime.

You realize now you are coming out of this smelling like a rose darling?

That’s what it’s looking like Honey. What a blessing. The LOP and one fucking particle. You know Honey this rig smells so God awful it absolutely reeks of shit.

Maybe I don’t go all the way to Girdwood in the cab. Beluga Point would be nice.

Going to have breakfast, bye Honey,

Bye darling.

5-4

Here’s what goes into my salad Honey.
That looks really yummy darling. I can’t wait for you to prepare it for me.

When you were psychotic you thought Bush, Condy, the military were all in, 9-11 and the Iraq war were staged and suffering in Africa was already solved. Why did you think all that delusional stuff?

I came to that conclusion from my special communication. But also in operation in my altered state was something else. I don’t know what it is exactly, what distinguishes my altered state from my present state, a kind of loss of inhibition. It is the delusion everyone is in on it or getting in on it and degree of orchestration of my environment was high. In that sense my altered states were dream states where you believe in an imaginary reality fully and completely. But I don’t know if that is just due to the inflation of the altered state over time or due to communications I received. The level of conflict and suffering in the world defies even my imagination. It looks so stupid. Yet that is how it currently is. It’s difficult to either keep your powder dry or put your light under a bushel.

So after my teeth cleaning I’ll wait behind the door for a cab. I’ll get in and close the door and say Beluga Point. I’ll get out at Beluga Point and put my thumb out headed for Cooper Landing. I’ll get out at Gwen’s and have a burger and fries, then leave and walk down the highway. BEFORE too fucking far I get picked up and SUSY will be broken. That can be you, Allan, my Dad, or anyone for all I care. I just want it all ended for me at that point. I’ll get some Camel filter 99’s tomorrow and take along smokes and a lighter. Then I’ll take my drivers license, credit card, about $300, watch, a pack of Camels, lighter, sunglasses and keys. I’ll be wearing my new sweatpants, an undershirt, my black T-shirt and my Camouflage hat.

Would you prefer me to pick you up?

I would strongly prefer that since you are the most important person in my life. But maybe it’s a military operation first and I’ll meet you soon. But Honey, IMHO this is a good mission for you to be flying. Can you do it, you’re a physicist and physicists never say no?

I’ll think about it darling. I’ve thought about it darling and I’d love to pick you up. You know what I’ll be driving?
I do. My Mom’s going to call at 4. Talk again this evening Honey.

Bye darling.

5-5

Good afternoon darling. How’s it going?

OK. I got three hours of sleep and got up at 11:30 PM so I took two Zyprexa last night and got up at about 12:30 today with an ache in the head. I don’t know what to attribute it to exactly, it’s not too bad, leaves me a little sedated, and it is now 4:34 and I feel ambulatory.

I’ve worked out the precise sequence of events. I put my hat in the pocket of the jacket. I put it on in the dentist’s office after the cleaning. I take the elevator down to the 1st floor and turn right to the back entrance. I wait inside the door until a cab pulls up. I go out and after the person who is coming there gets out I get in. After closing the door I wait for him to ask where to. I tell him Beluga Point. If he asks why there I tell him I’m getting picked up by my brother and we are going down to Homer for some halibut fishing. You pick me up at Beluga Point and break SUSY.

You know what I’ll be driving?

I do.

It’ll be a relief won’t it?

You can say that again.

One flew over the cuckoos nest.

A clockwork orange.
14 penultimate psychosis

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to aexmd@gmail.com
date Thu, Feb 5, 2009 at 3:46 PM
subject Bad scene

Massive psychosis. The anti-semitic screeds were the twist off. Not what they appear. I need to find a way to die. I'm on Haldol for a few days. Relly sucks bad.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to aexmd@gmail.com
date Thu, Feb 5, 2009 at 4:53 PM
subject More info

Last Thursday I took a road trip to Whitehorse, YT. It was a plan to get out from under the "surveillance" and I verified it all through the machine that reads my mind. Just got back a couple hours ago. Don't have it figured out, like how did I become psychotic while taking 5 mg Prolixin. I ended up getting dropped off at the Salvation Army at 3 AM on Sunday after the Whitehorse hospital ER threw me out. As near as I have been able to figure finishing the paper on 12-22 was the event that cascaded into full blown psychosis. Drove 1100 miles on slick ice. Exhausted. Scared. Uncertain what can be done. Total disaster.

from Allan <aexmd@gmail.com>
to David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
date Fri, Feb 6, 2009 at 10:10 AM
subject Re: More info

Yeah, you sound pretty down and out. Are there any halfway houses or something that you can go to?

Allan

Allan to me

11:15 AM me: I just saw my psychiatrist. She thought the medication plan, 20 mg Haldol for a couple of days, could knock out a rhino, and then 7.5 mg Prolixin, was a sound plan. I actually am not depressed, that's normal for coming out of psychsosis I have observed. I'll see her again next Wednesday

521
and follow up weekly for a while. On the good side of the trip I lost 8 pounds and quit the smokes, lol.

11:16 AM aexmd: LOL

11:17 AM me: BTW I was trying to describe our relationship and a little problem I seem to have and I was looking for the right expression, she had it, schizophrenia is NOT contagious.

11:21 AM Allan what do you want in a relationship with me? I guess I am looking for someone who is a friend and also with whom I shared so many important experiences earlier in life. You are somewhat special in that regard and also in being so smart. So those are some of the reasons I have sought a relationship with you. If you would just like me to go away it would be a disappointment but not a tragedy.

11:23 AM aexmd: what have i done to make you think i want you to go away? in the last email you sent me before your latest episode, you asked me, virtually point blank, whether I thought you were crazy. so i answered, and didnt hear from you for a while

11:28 AM me: Just human foible I guess. The anti-semitic remarks were orchestrated I hope you realize. Although I am opposed to the state of Israel and think the Jews should move out I find terrorism absolutely deplorable and I have no hatred for anyone or any group other than the government that denies me freedom.

11:29 AM And violence!

aexmd: and violence what?

denies you violence?

11:30 AM me: I hate violence and those who perpetuate it. And I hate our government for pot not being legal.

11:31 AM aexmd: yeah, especially north carolina

me: I found long ago pot a remedy for life threatening dep[ression.

aexmd: they fucking jail people for small quantities there, not just a fine

11:32 AM me: How about Phelps, should have just told everyone to fuck off.
aexmd: yeah, millions of dollars in endorsements make you behave more circumspectly

11:33 AM me: He already has enough in the bank to live off AND 1/2 of the people would support his smoking I would guess, I think it’s more pusillanimity than circumspection.

11:34 AM aexmd: no way to be sure, of his personal financial situation i mean

11:35 AM me: Psychosis is very wierd, thinking someone cxan read ypour mind. If you ever get more interested in it, and we have a lot of time, I would like you to understand it if that is possible. It may be a better fodder than EVP for a future work.

11:36 AM aexmd: did you ever see the movie a beautiful mind?

11:37 AM me: yes, it did little justice to the p[henomenon. I'm going to send a photo of my workstation as it was when I left ladst R. My psychotic art.
11:41 AM Just sent a photo of my worktable. On the right is a sculpture made of various stuff gl;ued to a kitchen cabinet shelf. It all has a lot of "secret" meaning, mathematical, symbolic, etc. I have probably hundredes to maybe a thousand pieces of art in my grow room.
11:42 AM like the garage in ABM

11:53 AM aexmd: whats ABM?

11:55 AM me: a beautiful mind
11:56 AM contextual use of an acronym chat right!
11:58 AM Kevin realized I was gone and wtaered my plants. The last things I did before leaving were thro out two ounces and my meds, believing it all was on camera.
12:03 PM BTW if you detect I am going nuts the thing to do is contact my mother, although she doesn't know waht to do either. I do have perimissions for her to talk with my psych. Falling into psychosis is really a slippery slope, an irresistible seduction. tghis time it was all environment
12:04 PM i don't know what to think about that now but have taken the Haldol today and know that works. do you know what haldol is?

12:09 PM aexmd: i totally am familiar with it
12:10 PM does your mom do email? and how far from you does she live? does she live with your sister?

12:13 PM me: They give a shot of Haldol in the ass to dangerous intakes at a mental hospital. Bang, out, 12 house of sleep. It's in the thorazine family. My mom lives alone in St Louis, where my sister and nephew live. She does do email. I'll send you her address. I've told her we renewed our relationship and what you were up to, (quitting medicine and writing) so she knows that.

12:19 PM aexmd: is that the sister who was married to jef? or are they still together in anchorage?

12:24 PM me: other sister. also divorced. Her names V. I have no more relationship with any of my siblings. left a message on Cains phone that unless things are resolved shortly I will sue him. Spent all my money on trip to Whithorse and had to borrow from my mother to get home. I live on about 1000 a month. The trip was about 2-2500. real financial setback.
12:26 PM the two ounces I threw out I could sell at 1/2 retail, 160/oz, to my neighbor, whose over here know. a 70 year old native, she knocked on my door looking for weed. wer'r havinbg coffee.
12:45 PM me: Stacey left. did you see abm and what did you think of it/

12:50 PM aexmd: what is abm? a beautiful mind got it
12:51 PM Yeah, i liked the movie as a movie i thought it glossed over the real meat of mental illness

12:52 PM me: exactly that's just what i thpought too
12:53 PM liked it also
12:57 PM my plants are at 6 weeks in the 9-10 week maturation cycle. i just nipped a little and am drying it in the oven. the effect of pot and alcohol on mental illness is an interesting area. either can induce a "local" psychsosis for a few hours, on some occasions,certainly not all. i don't believe either can actually induce a full blow psychosisis. ps's (paranoid schizophrenics) do abuse pot and even more so tobacco.

12:58 PM aexmd: i try to explain to people how debilitating mental illness can be, how it alienates you from everybody (you = one), but they only think they get it
**me:** that a good insight allan, i'm sure you can easily see how I alienated everyone in my life
12:59 PM except for you, my mom and kevin, thank god

4:40 PM **me:** I have assembled 15 long playlists with from 50 - 1490 songs. Very powerful format for someone who listens to music 18 hours a day. This is a little wierd Allan, and I know what conclusion you will draw, but I am now and have been under surveillance for most of my life. You might find that hard to believe but it is true. I have addressed it in many complex ways, but they won't let go of me.
4:41 PM :-o
4:42 PM O knows about it. Hil has been up to it for many years, aslo W, GHWB and Reagen.
B-)
4:43 PM I am listening to classical renditions of the Beattles, very fine music, all instrumentals and by master performers.
:)
4:47 PM The White Widow is about 80% of end quality, not bad, almost free, very nice.
:)
4:48 PM My mother's email address is Degneral@aol.com
I had to end our relationship.
:'(
4:53 PM I acn't discuss any of what is really going on with my psychiatrist because she dismisses it as delusions.
:-|
4:54 PM It could make you mean, lol
x-(
4:55 PM The surveillance is quite sophisticated and all black op.
They can even read my mind to some extent. It is a complex biometric surveillance involving sound, IR and electric fields.
4:56 PM :-o
They have tried to kill me.
x-(
But I can't prove that, LOL
4:57 PM :D

**aexmd:** dave, are you fooling around or delusional

4:58 PM **me:** I'm dead serious and not delusional.
4:59 PM :)

**aexmd:** wrong
me: About being serious or about being delusional, lol
5:00 PM Or did you mean I am seriously f-in delusional?
B-

5:01 PM aexmd: dave, you are delusional if you believe what you wrote

me: ASGIMW it's all true, and remarkable, and stressful.
:P

5:02 PM aexmd: you "know" it

me: 10^29 to 1
:-|
5:05 PM aexmd: and it's been going on for how many years

5:06 PM me: Since Reagen and Berkeley, around his inauguration in 1-81
:'(

5:07 PM aexmd: And all the times in the past you referred to this impression of yours as your psychosis, you were lying to me, or just wrong?

me: That's a fairly complex question actually. I have been both lying AND wrong.
5:08 PM ;)

5:09 PM And I have been psychotic.
:'(
5:10 PM aexmd: but not right now

me: Exactamondo.

aexmd: I'm at a loss

5:11 PM me: Are you familiar with any of the classical orchestra renditions of the Beatles. ? Incredibly nice.
5:13 PM I'll let you go Allan.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to aexmd@gmail.com
date Wed, Feb 25, 2009 at 2:43 PM
subject What are you up to Allan?
Other than f-in bieng under surviellance I do well. Maybe you think that is a delusion. Well, it turns out that thinking that, IS your delusion, Allan. lol

My fine crop is ready for harvest.

I have finished a very nice patent application that will be worth in excess of several trillion. I include the files so you can see the future of biological nanotechnology. You should easily be able to grasp the science. lol

I stopped drinking Budweiser and switched to Molson Canadian, a very nice lager. Molson/Coors is building a brewery in Shenandoah, VA. Cool.

Where sanity interfaces with the surreal,
Dave

Allan to me

3:31 PM me: Allan what are you up to? I am up to no good, having become fond of Molson's after my recent trip to Whithorse.
from      David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to        aexmd@gmail.com
date      Wed, May 6, 2009 at 4:40 PM
subject   5 days at API

The last email where I requested Dan's email address is when I was psychotic. I went into providence psychiatric ER later that day and ended up at API for 5 days. Came out of psychosis in about 10 hours of the fully structured environment. I have been psychotic since before going up to Canada about 11 weeks ago. It's good to be sane again.

I was stable for about 13 years on 2.5 mg Prolixin, from 1984 to 1997. Then I slipped into psychosis again in about 1997. Have been on 5 mg since Dec 2006 and didn't think I could slip into psychosis again on that dose, but did, 3 times, twice with the Chantix and this most recent event. Now I am on 7.5 mg and hope to never slip into psychosis again.

Quit the smokes 14 days ago. Going to stay off them. Quit pot 4 weeks ago. Think I don't need that anymore either.

Got out of API an hour ago and am having a Molson Canadian.

A relationship with you now seems particularly important. Hope you are willing to have one.

Been a tough road, but right now, after API just freedom seems really nice.
Behavior and rationality are a continuum - that's the problem facing me, and most people, when dealing with people who are psychotic: you don't really know when they cross over, because the line is kind of shifty, and you have the additional problem of wondering whether your input in some way triggered the twist off.

me: All good points, exceeds my capacity right now.

me: Like I thought chatting with you drove me psychotic. Did it/ Shit, I don't know.

aexmd: Im watching the Lakers
   I cant watch those talking heads, any of them

me: I think the only reason I was addicted ti them is I thought they where "communicating" with me, i.e. ideas of referance, do you know what those are for the nutcaseses?

aexmd: yeah, ive heard the term on multiple occasions

me: I had to change to TNT although I'm not really into sports.
aexmd: I mean, when I'm playing a lot of poker, and I hit a bad streak, some random statistical mechanism in reality, I ideate that it's all to keep just ME from winning

7:06 PM me: Anything serious you want to talk about. Thanks for communicating. We can pick up in the future.

aexmd: okay

7:07 PM me: I'm a little raw after 5 days in API (Alaska Psychiatric Institute) Talk tomorrow.

aexmd: gnight

1:13 PM me: Having a Molson. Glad to be off smokes, 15 days, and pot, 4 weeks. feel like a little chat. Working on anything/

1:14 PM agexmd: im in the middle of a writer thing, sorry

me: Fine, later.

aexmd: 'k

May 28, 2009

Dear Michael Votava,

The reason I received a notice of trespass order by UAA police, case # 09-01044, was because of a statement I made to the Providence Psychiatric ER on May 1st, 2009. The statement was: “Ideally, I should go into the UAA physics department with a loaded gun, shoot a few bullets into the ceiling, and then blow my brains out”.

I am 56 years old and have been psychotic during several episodes of my adult life, ranging from several months to several years. I am diagnosed a paranoid schizophrenic and was psychotic when I made that statement. I am disabled due to the mental illness and receive Social Security Supplemental Security Income, Alaska APA and Medicaid for support. I am single and have lived in East Anchorage in a modest condo since 1991.

The reason I made that statement is not because that is what I wanted to do in any way although I was suicidal many years ago. It was part of a very bizarre motivation that can only be understood within the massively delusional paradigm I operate under when psychotic. When I am psychotic I believe I am under a complex biometric surveillance
that can even read my mind. I made that statement, that even when psychotic I knew was a very provocative statement, in order to get out of the surveillance, believing the Providence ER personal were involved in the “conspiracy” and knew about the mind reading surveillance I was under and that making that statement would allow them to commit me to API where I would be able to get out from under the surveillance because API was also onto the “conspiracy” of surveillance. I was committed to API and released after 4 days there. They told me they were legally obligated to report the incident to UAA to my surprise. I had thought everything said in a medical setting was private.

I have never committed a violent act and never threatened another individual, either sane or psychotic. I have a completely clean criminal record and no restraining orders have ever been issued against me. I do not own a gun, do not have access to a gun and cannot purchase one due to my psychiatric history.

What I learned from the experience is that I needed to be on a larger dose of the anti-psychotic medication I take. The dose was increased by 50% and I feel on that dose I will not become psychotic again. But even if I do become psychotic again I am a very safe person. I have always, sane and psychotic, throughout my life, been totally committed to non-violence. I find any violence against a fellow human abhorrent although I do believe in an individual’s right to end their own life if with terminal disease. I have attempted suicide earlier in life with the last attempt in 1985.

I graduated from Cornell with a BA in biology in 1974. I was a premed student but had a GPA of 3.16 and did receive acceptance to medical school. I first became psychotic while working as a research associate in molecular genetics at UC Berkeley in 1981. I came out of psychosis and was diagnosed paranoid schizophrenic in August 1984 at API. I attended IUPU FT Wayne from 1986-1988. I have worked since 1985 on a new theory of physics and chemistry that I hope to pursue through academia. My Cornell credit hours are on record at UAA. I have attended courses at UAA quite a few times over the past 18 years. My work outside academia is now complete and the reason I am pursuing further education is so that I can get my ideas into the mainstream and be recognized. My goal at UAA is to take courses for 2-3 years in mathematics, physics, chemistry and electrical engineering so I can get into graduate school in physics.

Sincerely,

David Degner
Hi Professor Smith,

I tried to register for your fall 201 course online but was denied due to not having the prerequisite of 101. I graduated from Cornell in 1974 with a BA in biology and a minor in chemistry. I first was exposed to programming in 1970 in high school using punch cards and Fortran. I have had quite a bit of exposure to computer science as a scientist but not as a serious programmer. I have taken a course similar to 101 at UC Berkeley (where I worked as a research associate in molecular genetics) in the late 70’s and have quite a bit of knowledge of computers as Turing machines (biological cells are multi-head Turing machines where the head is RNA polymerase), and have been exposed to machine language, PL-1, Basic, Pascal, and C++ over the years. I have some familiarity with data structures and algorithms and know how programming reduces to sequence, selection (the branching statements) and looping. Finally after all these years I am semi-retired and want to really get serious about programming. I am interested in drug design and the protein engineering problem and want to develop molecular modeling simulation software in the next 4 years of study at UAA. I am not interested in hardware, but know chips are miniature capacitor, inductor, resistor and transistor circuits and know how a sequence of registers with associated addresses are used by the CPU.

I am planning to take the following CS courses: 201, 202, 330, 385, 351, 401, 405 and 470. I am strong in calculus and am planning to take the following math courses: 215, 231, 305 (geometry), 306, 307, 314 (linear algebra), 371 and a course in topology.
Does that look like a good schedule for getting into molecular modeling? I am planning to map quantum mechanics into my molecular modeling software in a new and interesting way.

Can you enable me to register for your course? I want to make sure I can take 201 this fall since it is the first step and I am 56 and don't want any delays.

What language are you using?

Thanks,
David Degner

From: Tom Smith [afdtos@uaa.alaska.edu]
Date: Monday, June 01, 2009 9:31 AM
To: davidmartindegner
Subject: Re: 201 this fall

Hello David,

Your background is more than sufficient to allow registration in my CS 201 course. Most of our curriculum is taught using Java as the programming language. I believe that you need to get my signature to register if there is a prerequisite issue, but I'm puzzled, since 101 isn't supposed to be a prerequisite for 201.

I'm not teaching this summer, so if you'd like me to sign anything, we'll need to make arrangements (I don't go into my office very frequently during the summer).

Your background is similar to my own. My undergraduate degree is in Molecular biology and Biophysics from the Yale’s MBB program. I'd be interested in talking with you about your modeling plans.

Tom Smith

----- Original Message -----
From: davidmartindegner <newton715@gci.net>
Date: Sunday, May 31, 2009 8:48 am
Subject: 201 this fall
To: aftos@uaa.alaska.edu
Hi Professor Smith,

I tried to register for your fall 201 course online but was denied due to not having the prerequisite of 101.

I graduated from Cornell in 1974 with a BA in biology and a minor in chemistry. I first was exposed to programming in 1970 in high school using punch cards and Fortran. I have had quite a bit of exposure to computer science as a scientist but not as a serious programmer. I have taken a course similar to 101 at UC Berkeley (where I worked as a research associate in molecular genetics) in the late 70's and have quite a bit of knowledge of computers as Turing machines (biological cells are multi-head Turing machines where the head is RNA polymerase), and have been exposed to machine language, PL-1, Basic, Pascal, and C++ over the years. I have some familiarity with data structures and algorithms and know how programming reduces to sequence, selection (the branching statements) and looping.

Finally, after all these years I am semi-retired and want to really get serious about programming. I am interested in drug design and the protein engineering problem and want to develop molecular modeling simulation software in the next 4 years of study at UAA. I am not interested in hardware, but know chips are miniature capacitor, inductor, resistor and transistor circuits and know how a sequence of registers with associated addresses are used by the CPU.

I am planning to take the following CS courses: 201, 202, 330, 385, 351, 401, 405 and 470. I am strong in calculus and am planning to take the following math courses: 215, 231, 305 (geometry), 306, 307, 314 (linear algebra), 371 and a course in topology. Does that look like a good schedule for getting into molecular modeling? I am planning to map quantum mechanics into my molecular modeling software in a new and interesting way.
Can you enable me to register for your course? I want to make sure I can take 201 this fall since it is the first step and I am 56 and don't want any delays.

What language are you using?

Thanks,

David Degner

From: davidmartindegener [Einstein495@gci]
Date: Monday, June 1, 2009 7:52 am
To: afdtos@uaa.alaska.edu
Subject: Re: 201 this fall

I resolved the problem through the math department secretary. Look forward to class and discussing bioinformatics and molecular modeling. I am also interested in DNA sequence analysis and using the small molecule and protein X-ray crystallography data.

Thanks

June 1, 2009

Dear Michael Tavella,

I applied for a patent on my atom “sizes” for use in physical models and computer simulations. I originally made out a provisional patent using Legal Zoom and in the patent application claimed the benefits of that provisional patent. I have some technical issues with the application respecting the illustrations involving 37 CFR 1.74 and 37 CFR 1.77(b)(7) and the specification involving 37 CFR 1.52, 1.121(b)(3) and 1.125.

I would like your assistance in making the necessary changes. I would like to hire you as a consultant to do that, working with me to bring it into compliance. I imagine it could be done in not too many hours of your time working along with me. I am going to file the patent under my name and without the benefit of a patent agent and you will not be listed on the patent in any way.
Enclosed is a copy of the application and feedback from USP&TO.

I hope you would be willing to help me out on this.

I have completed my theoretical work in science. You can view a paper summarizing my work, a 56 page paper titled The N particle Model, available as a free download at davidmartindegner.com if you are interested.

I am attending UAA starting this fall and for 3-4 years into the future studying math and computer science. I am focused on bioinformatics and molecular modeling. I hope to generate several more relatively simple patents in the coming years and would like to use you as the patent agent in those applications.

We kind of got off to kind of a rocky start in the past but I am a little high strung and I hope you can forgive me for my personal shortcomings and hope you will be willing to work with me in the future.

Sincerely,

David Degner
180 Fulcrum Drive #1
Anchorage, Alaska 99504-1415
davidmartindegner@gmail.com

From: davidmartindegner [Einstein495@gci]
Date: Tuesday, June 2, 2009 8:52 am
To: Degneral@aol.com
Subject: Patent, Day 4, ATT

I contacted the patent agent I used before and will see him Thursday morning at 9 AM to make the changes that need to be made. We should be able to do them in an hour or two so it won't cost too much. He charges about $150 an hour. I sent him a really nice letter and the associated technical details so he knows just what corrections need to be made. They are just formatting errors.

On day 4 and don't feel much like drinking, just a little bit. This time I will succeed and stay off beer completely.

I got an offer in the mail from ATT for wireless Internet service at $19.95 if bundled with my home phone. That's attractive since I now pay $39.99 for a cable modem. I'll look into it and see how
much for the phone. I might save some money, get a free phone, much cheaper long distance charges, and unlimited Internet access so I can listen to radio stations that otherwise run my monthly usage way over the limit so are prohibitively expensive.

Love, David

From: davidmartindegener [Einstein495@gci]
Date: Wednesday, June 3, 2009 6:52 am
To: Michael Tavella
Subject: Email solution?

Hi Mike,

If you just want to make the corrections to the Word documents and email them back to me then we would not have to meet tomorrow and it might save us both a little time. I use Word 2003 in the Office 2003 package so I don’t know if you use a newer version of Word if there are any compatibility issues.

I have the Petition for Extension of Time document and can take care of the rest of it myself.

You said with the drawings it was just a formatting issue. I believe that’s the same case with the specifications. Is that right? I haven’t yet gone to the USP&TO to look at 37 CFR 1.52, 1.12(b)(3) and 1.25 so don’t know exactly what that was about but thought it was also a formatting error or minor technical issue.

Note the Abstract is in the Word document. I must have been absent minded and forgotten to copy the back page of the document.

If we do it by email you can just tell me what the charge for your services is and I will send you a check.

If we do it by email you can just email me with any questions or give me a quick call on the phone.

Thanks,
Dave

PS I just signed up for ATT WIMAX wireless no cap Internet service. I have been wanting to listen to radio over the Internet for years but the bandwidth wasn’t economical under my GCI
From: Michael Tavella [mailto:miketav@alaska.com]
Sent: Wednesday, June 03, 2009 10:33 AM
To: Einstein495@gci
Subject: Word documents

Hello David,

Yes, word documents would be most helpful.

Please send them to me at my e-mail address.

Thank you

Michael Tavella
Patent Agent
2051 Brigadier Dr
Anchorage Alaska 99507
Phone (907) 349-2495
Fax (907) 522-3907

From: davidmartindegener [Einstein495@gci]
Date: Wednesday, June 3, 2009 9:52 am
To: Michael Tavella
Subject: Word documents

Hi Mike,

I broke up the drawings to make them easier to label.

Thanks

From: davidmartindegener [Einstein495@gci]
Date: Wednesday, June 3, 2009 2:21 PM
To: Michael Tavella
Subject: Thrursday morning at 9 AM

Hi Mike,

I can't meet at ( AM tomorrow since another appointment I can't out off has come up. 11 AM Friday or anytime next week will work. And maybe you just want to do it by email as my last email suggested.
Thanks, Dave

Re: Thursday morning at 9 AM
Michael Tavella [miketav@alaska.com]

11 am Friday will work. I think it is important that we meet.

BTW, can you send the word files?

Thanks,

Mike

Re: Just checking if you got the Word files
Michael Tavella [miketav@alaska.com]

Hello David.

I got them. For some reason it put them in my junk file. But these messages got to my inbox. Go figure.

THanks,

Mike

On Jun 3, 2009, at 3:57 PM, davidmartindegener wrote:

I sent the Word files again at 3:49 PM. Did you receive them this time? I broke up the drawings so they would be easier to format properly. And the Abstract should be in with the specifications and Claims.

Thanks, Dave

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to miketav@alaska.com
date Wed, Jun 3, 2009 at 4:46 PM
subject Resending Word files from my Gmail address

I'll send the Word files from my Gmail address in case the problem was with the other email address.

2 attachments — Download all attachments

Provisional patent application # 61046237.doc
38K  View  Download
INVENTION TITLE

A set of closed spherical flexible but quite rigid mathematical surfaces in three-dimensional space that represent atom surfaces for use in the computer representation of atoms and physical models of atoms. I call these discrete objects that are spheres with definite radii cyberatoms.

This application claims benefit of provisional application number 61046237 filed on April 18, 2008.

SPECIFICATIONS

[Para 1] The present invention relates to a method to represent atoms and molecules as discrete objects in three-dimensional space.

[Para 2] The product is comprised of the following components:

[Para 3] The set of cyberatom radii of non-metal atoms, except for hydrogen and helium, is computed from the first ionization energy of a neutral atom (the neutral atom and single positive ion are the same size) by the following equation:

- Ionization energy = \( U_c \times \Psi_D \)
  where
  \( U_c \) is defined as
  \[ U_c = \left( q \times 1.60217653 \times 10^{-19} \text{ C} \right)^2 \left( \frac{R_o - r_B/2}{8 \times \pi \times \varepsilon_{0} \times R_o^2} \right) \]
  and \( \Psi_D \) is the Degner quantum geometry wave function charge fraction and is defined as
  \[ \Psi_D = \frac{(q + 1/2)^2/q^2 - 1 + [3/\text{Sum}]}{\text{Sum}} \]
\[d^2 \text{ (from 1 to } v)\] where \(v\) = the number of valence electrons in the neutral atom, the valence for H is 1, for C is 4, for N is 5, for O is 6, for F is 7, for P is 5, for S is 6 and for Cl is 7, \(q = v/2\), \(R_o\) is the cyberatom radius, \(r_B\) is the Bohr radius, \(\epsilon_0\) is the permittivity of empty space, and Sum \(d^2\) is just the sum of squares from 1 to \(v\).

Everything is known except \(R_o\) so there is one equation with one unknown, a quadratic equation in \(R_o\). Solving for \(R_o\) using the larger root gives the cyberatom radii.

- The cyberatom radius for Carbon is 1.365Å, Nitrogen is 1.190Å, Oxygen is 1.555Å, Fluorine is 1.289Å, Phosphorous is 1.809Å, Sulfur is 2.160Å. Chlorine is 1.918Å and Polonium is 2.734Å. The radius of hydrogen is determined by a similar method and is 0.529Å.

**[Para 4]** Uc is the energy stored in a spherical capacitor with outer negative plate at \(R_o\), inner positive plate at \(r_B/2\), therefore a plate separation of \(R_o - r_B/2\), and a charge of \(q\) quantum’s of elementary charge on each plate where the magnitude of the electric field in this capacitor is given by \(E = (q \times 1.6^{-19}C)/(4 \times \pi \times \)
epsilon naught \times R \times R_0) for rB/2 \leq R \leq R_0. \Psi_D, the Degner quantum geometry wave function charge fraction, describes a transition in that capacitor from a charge q to a charge q + \frac{1}{2} in the \(((q + \frac{1}{2})^2/q^2) - 1\) part of \Psi_D. The \([3/\text{Sum } d^2 \text{ (from 1 to v)}]\) part of \Psi_D describes the additional energy that must go into an atom to get it to oxidize due to the low energy well atoms are in, an energy defect in the sum of the parts of an atom below the ground state energy of the parts. The numerator 3 expands to \(\frac{3}{4} \times ((2q)^2/q^2)\). \(U_c \times \frac{3}{4} \times ((2q)^2/q^2)\) represents the total energy defect when an atom goes from charge q to charge q/2. The total energy defect is divided into \(v\) pieces of relative magnitude \(1^2, 2^2, 3^2, \ldots, v^2\) each. The denominator of this correction factor, \(\text{Sum } d^2 \text{ (from 1 to v)}\), a sum of squares, is the sum of those \(v\) pieces. In a single oxidation of a neutral atom the \(1^2\) piece must be added in addition to the change in charge energy in the q to q + \frac{1}{2} transition. The energy defect in an atom that must be replaced in the first oxidation is \(U_c \times 3 \times (1^2)/(\text{Sum } d^2 \text{ (from 1 to v)})\).

[Para 5] Although atomic and molecular surfaces are interesting for humans to look at in three-dimensional graphics the power of the approach of representing atoms as discrete cyberatoms in cyberspace with definite radii is in calculating the interaction parameters and energy wells of interactions between discrete atomic and molecular entities, such as a drug molecule with a protein. The interaction parameters and energy wells
between molecules will have to be calculated by simulation software because of the complexity of the problem. All those computer design applications will need to use my cyberatom set of radii to proceed.

**What is claimed is:**

**[Claim 1]** By providing a set of radii for cyberatoms I enable molecular modeling to be implemented by discrete, relatively rigid objects in three-dimensional space. This means you can describe surfaces where atoms touch, exert modest forces on each other and do very little inter-penetration. The distortion of the non-bonded cyberatom spheres due to covalent and electrostatic bonds is treated in a separate patent.

**ABSTRACT**

**[Para 6]** My set of mathematical surfaces is a method to represent atoms and molecules as discrete objects in three-dimensional space. I coin the word cyberatoms for these objects. This set of mathematical surfaces will allow cyberatoms to be represented in computer graphics simulation software and physical models. Under the current quantum mechanics paradigm atoms do not have surfaces. The wave function for all quantum states of all atoms is continuous from the center of the atom to infinity in all directions.

**DRAWINGS**

These illustrations depict a circular cross section with the radius of the spheres. The important attribute is the relative size of the spheres, the set of radii.
The scale is 1 inch = 2Å.

The smallest atom is hydrogen at 0.529Å and the largest atom Polonium at 2.734Å.

These are C, N, O and F.
These are P, S and Cl.
Hi Mike,

I am using gmail now so note the new address incase there is anything you want to ask or request before we meet tomorrow. I have discontinued GCI and am using ATT WiMAX now. See you at 11 AM tomorrow.

Thanks, Dave

Hi Professor Smith,

My background is a little, actually very, unusual. I have spent the last 23 years working in theoretical physics and theoretical chemistry. At Cornell I was a premed student but didn't gain acceptance to medical school with a GPA of 3.16 despite being around the top of the class in biochemistry, genetics and physical chemistry and scoring 98+% in Science and Quantitative on the MCAT's. My goal was to be a neurosurgeon and they changed quite dramatically after rejection from the medical schools.

I have worked out what physicist’s call a theory of everything (TOE) or a grand unified theory (GUT). In chemistry I have worked out a new quantum mechanics. When I tell people in the UAA physics and chemistry departments this they automatically dismiss me as a crackpot, very humiliating. The twin towers of modern physics, Einstein’s special and general theories of relativity and quantum mechanics are useful paradigms but also contain some very wrong phenomenology. I believe my theories are not just another paradigm but in fact are the correct theories and are of high utility to mankind.

In my quantum mechanics atoms are spherical capacitor's, albeit pretty fancy ones. Isolated atoms are perfect spheres that have a surface, made of the outer electrons, and what we touch and see
in the macroscopic world are those electron outer surfaces. So the outer electrons in atoms are the same size as atoms, even defining the atom sizes. Then the electrons are liquid state, deformable, thin, next to zero, shells.

In covalent bonds the atoms are “squeezed” together and deform because the electrons are liquid state and deformable. In proteins the atoms touch. All atoms have charge patches on their surfaces that make atoms complex dipoles with interesting geometries. In proteins when atoms are touching the electric field energy stored in the dipoles is minimized and the inter-atomic forces are maximized. So the attractive forces in the liquid state of biology are electrostatic forces. H bonds have the largest dipole possible. The repulsive forces in the liquid state of water and in proteins are the exchange of thermal photons, so when you heat up proteins and DNA they go from a highly ordered state to a denatured or random coil state. Photons carry momentum and both absorbing a thermal photon and emitting a thermal photon are repulsive forces due to the conservation of momentum and Newton’s third law.

I predict the size of the perfect sphere non-metal atoms, and in particular H, C, N, O, P and S, the covalent building blocks of biology, from the ionization energy. I have a patent pending on that set of radii for use in physical models and computer simulations and they are the foundation of my molecular modeling plans. I have attached the patent specification, claims and abstract as a Word document so you can see exactly what I am talking about.

I finished my work in theoretical physics and theoretical chemistry this past December and have much of it written up in a 56 page paper and I have also attached a pdf of that work. The starting out point, the key insight I made 23 years ago, was figuring out what electric fields are made of, the particle of which they are composed. Then I guessed the same particle makes up magnetic fields. Then it is instantly obvious what photons are made of and after a little head scratching what gravity fields are made. All four of these fundamental fields are made of a small, point like, particle that is in perpetual motion at the speed of light. I have named that particle the N particle. Eventually I figured out that electrons and protons are also made of this same particle in the configuration of dynamic membranes, as if with zero thickness. If you are inclined to look at the pdf look first at The Riddle of Attractive and Repulsive Electric Forces. That’s the stepping off point.
The second goal of my molecular modeling plan is to characterize the geometry, spatial extent and strength of the charge patches on atoms and molecules that make up the dipoles. I am pretty well along on that and it is a complicated problem.

The final goal of my molecular modeling plans are to be able to fold proteins and nucleic acids and be able to understand the full dynamics of the overall process. That’s a really hard problem but I believe on the proper theoretical foundation may be solvable.

The important data I will be using in this program are bond lengths and angles, from water to proteins, the X-ray crystallography data base, and thermodynamic data, most importantly heat capacities, entropy and heats of melting and vaporization.

So that summarizes some of my plans in molecular modeling.

I am also interested in bioinformatics and DNA sequence analysis based on my work at UC Berkeley in the late 70’s and early 80’s where I was interested in understanding the simplest cells in biology, the hydrogen of biology, Gram (+) prokaryotic cells. I have an interesting model of those cells as chemical Turing machines where the heads are the bacterial RNA polymerase. I have an interesting tetrahedral data structure for DNA sequences that I want to implement on the computer.

I have tried to learn programming several times over the years but had never worked out the fundamental science problems I was always focused on so could never devote the time, energy and focus to acquire the programming skills. With my work in fundamental science largely complete my goal now is to acquire the programming skills to turn the corner from being a theoretician to working on applied problems in biotechnology and that is my goal taking computer science and math courses at UAA.

Look forward to your class this fall and more advanced classes at UAA in your nice but small computer science department. Graphics will be really important.

Best,
Dave Degner

PS I just discontinued my GCI cable modem and the address I
emailed you before from and will now am using ATT WIMAX and Gmail so note the new address.

2 attachments — Download all attachments

Provisional patent application # 61046237.doc
38K View Download
The_N_particle_Model_arXiv.pdf
605K View Download

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to degnerals@yahoo.com
date Thu, Jun 4, 2009 at 5:35 PM
subject Success!

I got your email. Send me one now with content.

I see the patent agent tomorrow at 11AM. The first thing I will ask him is what is his hourly rate and how long does he think it will take to make the corrections. I also will have to pay the USP&TO $65 for a one month extension of time since I am past the 60 days they allowed me free of charge.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to degnerals@yahoo.com
date Fri, Jun 5, 2009 at 2:45 AM
subject Friday morning

Hi Mom,

Am on day 7 of sobriety. Got a little better sleep than the night before, about 5 hours. Don’t know why the sleep has been so poor and the aches in the head for the last 3 weeks but hope it continues to improve.

Are you feeling better about your computer and ATT service? I know how frustrating those transitions are but usually after you work out the bugs everything is a net and substantial improvement. I’ve lost favorites in the past too, and email etc, and know how frustrating that can be.

What browser do you use, Internet Explorer? You should use Google Chrome and Google Gmail. They are the industry leader and with your new setup now is the time to start using both. But
the yahoo email service is probably good too.

Your HYBF has come back nicely from a low of around $3.25 in December and again at $3.40 a few months ago. A year ago it was at $4.75 and now is at $4.08. I use Google finance as my homepage. You should check it out. It's a really nice news, stock price, stock history resource.

I had a dream last night where I became a day trader. Pretty unusual. The market has made a nice rally from the low in mid 6000's to now at the mid 8000's. How is your portfolio looking now?

It's been very stressful the last several weeks -- quitting drinking, seeing the UAA person about lifting the Notice of Trespass, my Knoll and website, taking down the screenplay, the patent, registering for fall classes, sorting through everything basically, with poor sleep the whole way. But things are looking up. I am improving in mental health each day and now focused on going into computer science and molecular modeling. I have been reviewing the chemistry that is necessary for that. I actually know a huge amount of chemistry. And I am quite strong in calculus and there is no need to repeat any of it. Anything I don't know I can go to the texts I've used in the past and review in short order.

I am watching a series of lectures by a really good, one of the best, Stanford professor on Einstein's general theory of relativity, 9 lectures, about 1:45 each. Very nice in the computer age. Lots of review of math and lots of new ideas, a fun summer project.

My short term goals are to continue with the sobriety, quit smoking and starting walking and using the exercise bike. First I need to get better sleep since when I feel ragged when I get up I enjoy smoking with coffee to get going.

I'll send a photo of me at my computer table and you can see how fast it downloads now. Notice the hair back in a pony tail. Just looked at it, I look pretty fat, well it'll be coming off in the future.

Did M register for courses? What calculus course is he going to be in? Is he taking physics? What chemistry is he taking? How did he do in calculus in the spring term?

Supposed to get up to 71 tomorrow, the record is 73.
Love, David

On day 7 off beer. Been getting extraordinarily poor sleep, intense dreaming, nightmares, waking up every hour or two, waking up with a bad ache in the head. I think it is due to the alcohol and is improving and will be restored to normal as I stay off the beer. I realize now I can't drink at all.

Just got ATT wireless, very nice technology. No usage cap so can listen to radio over the net, very nice.

Hope all is going well with you.

Looking forward to being in shape to pursue computer science this fall. I am really into molecular modeling. I really know a huge amount of chemistry.

Best, Dave

Hi Mom,
Good choice to use Gmail. It's a nice platform for email. You can also chat although I don't think you would like chat, I really don't, and chat with Allan occasionally. In chat you send words and sentences back and forth in real time. We can try it some time just so you know what it is.

Talked to the patent agent and after 1/2 hour realized it was not worth pursuing since it would just ultimately be rejected. It cost me $150 for the advice and the money spent so far for the provisional patent ($299 last year) and patent application this last spring ($545) was wasted. I'm learning but hate to have wasted so much on it. It could have been worse because if I had gone to the patent agent at the outset it probably would have ended up costing 2-3 times as much... This all is a little depressing and I thought of drinking but won't. Live and learn. In 3 years I will have something worth patenting. I have a lot of work in front of me to get to that point. I hate being a fool but it is hard not to make these kind of mistakes when you work alone and in isolation from sources that could give you good advice on these kind of issues.

I am thinking the sleep problems and ache in the head are due to heavy snoring and sleep apnea. Then it won't go away until I lose weight. So it may be a tough month or two or three until I can get below 250.

Did the photo download pretty fast?

Give me a call when you get this email.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to aftos@uaa.alaska.edu
date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 3:02 AM
subject The patent?

Hi Professor Smith,

The patent I showed you I have found out is a little, well actually quite, embarrassing. It is a provisional patent I made out using Legal Zoom. The Legal Zoom format didn’t allow equations and that’s why they are in that moronic format. I submitted it to the USP&TO this past spring for a non-provisional patent thinking that it is such a simple idea that the Legal Zoom provisional patent application could be used to obtain a non-provisional one. They wrote back and gave me a file date and
required some corrections. I thought those were just formatting errors and contacted Michael Tavella, a local patent agent, and he pointed out that even with formatting errors corrected it would be rejected for numerous reasons upon review. So I decided to abandon the patent. I have 4 more months to get in a good patent based on my filing date of 3-3-09.

If you look at my paper you will see I am not the crackpot I appear in the patent application, or at least I hope you would draw that conclusion. You also when reading the paper will have some appreciation of the complexity of the underlying chemistry. The chemistry can get pretty complex and a person could spend a lifetime studying in detail a small subset of the overall physics and chemistry presented.

If you read the paper, and if you think my atom sizes are of value in simulation software, and if you think those atom sizes can be patented for physical and computer models, then I would be willing to offer you ½ the patent if we could work out a good patent over this summer. If the atom sizes are important for simulation software it would be a shame for me to abandon the project at this time. But that is what I will have to do because of resources at this point in time and that is why I make this offer.

I know a lot more chemistry than I present in the paper – the structure of water, resonance structures, ring compounds, the nucleic acids, oxidation/reduction, proton transfer, salts, acids, dipoles, electronegativity, etc., etc. The backbone of atoms representing the bond lengths and angles is a directed graph. Dressing it out to a space filling model is done by knowing the surface to associate with each atom vertex. If we met I could outline many of these details so you would have a better picture of the new chemistry I think is needed in a useful molecular modeling program.

Of course if you are a firm believer in conventional quantum mechanics then you will draw the conclusion I am a crackpot and that would be a little embarrassing too. I hope if you take the time to dig into the paper a little bit you will not come to that conclusion.

Trying to do molecular modeling using conventional QM is really a hopeless undertaking and will never solve the drug design and protein folding and engineering problem and reduce what is now art to engineering.

I have no idea if I am stepping off on the wrong foot here, if you would even be interested in the proposition, but with my new quantum
mechanics and knowledge of chemistry and physics and your knowledge of computer programming and graphics and background in molecular biology it strikes me we might be able to produce a pretty good patent.

Sincerely,

Dave Degner

from Allan <aexmd@gmail.com> to David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 10:20 AM subject Re: Sobriety

Hey Dave,
I've been in NYC all week, hanging out with writers and what not. Tomorrow I drive back to Roanoke, a miserable and boring 8 hour drive. I hope you can keep the alcohol at bay indefinitely.

Allan

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to degneral@gmail.com date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 3:49 AM subject Letter to professor

Hi Mom,

Rather than give up I decided to send the following email to the professor I will be taking computer science from this fall. I sent him two previous emails and outlined my plans and included as attachments my patent (6 page Word document) and paper (56 page pdf).

It will be interesting what his response is. What do you think of my writing and ability to communicate?

Here it is:
- Show quoted text -

from Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> to David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 6:52 AM subject Re: Letter to professor
I would say that you have good writing ability but who am I to judge? Sometimes the less one says the better. My question is...Is this a computer kind of instructor or something. If computer, maybe that is all he wants to handle.

I am still having some trouble with computer but maybe it is because I am using a different system now. I think I will need an instruction session with M. after I have used this awhile.

I still have to plant some of my flowers today. Tomorrow afternoon V. and M. will go to Truman for the Monday registration and parents stuff. They come back Mon. night - I will have to stay with dog Sun. night. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to degneral@gmail.com date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 7:26 AM subject Invitation to chat

He’s a computer professor but has an undergraduate degree in cell and molecular biology. He also teaches the graphics course at UAA. I won’t send him any more emails until he responds.

I invited you to chat. I think a little box opens up in the lower left hand side of your screen. You can enter text and when you press enter it sends it to me. Then we can go back and forth with "chat", both live at the computer. Check it out. I think the computer makes a little signal noise of some kind when I send the invitation to chat.

from Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> to David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 7:31 AM subject Re: Invitation to chat

Now I lost my old addresses while I was forwarding my new email address to will have to stop for now and get busy. I guess I will get used to this, but it is frustrating. I must admit that it is nice to be able to use computer and phone at same time and I will probably eventually like this. Have a good day, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to aexmd@gmail.com date Sat, Jun 6, 2009 at 2:05 PM subject You have to check this out!

It was in a comment to a blog on mechanical watches. 605 parts, that would even make a plastic surgeon wince at disassembly and reassembly.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Tue, Jun 9, 2009 at 2:45 AM subject A lucky find

Hi Mom,

Professor Tom Smith at UAA could really be a lucky find. I did a Google search on him and looked at some of the papers he has authored. He's just the person I need to convince the validity of my work to. He's into surfaces, tiling and other advanced graphics ideas. He is teaching the upper division courses in data structures and algorithm and graphics this coming year at UAA. If I can convince him of the value of my quantum mechanics that leads to a new chemistry then I will be able to turn the corner to success.

I actually don’t want to waste time on the coding part of programming but would prefer to work on the data structures and algorithms that is what a program really is. Coding is a low level undertaking, kind of like the relationship of an architect to a carpenter. The architect has to know what carpenters can do and how they do it but works at a higher level. So in computer science I would like to be an "architect" and not a programmer. If Professor Smith gets on board with me then I can audit his course in data structures and algorithms this fall and graphics course next spring and just take math courses for credit. Then I don't have to do any coding. Convincing him of the value of my work will enable that. I audited quite a few courses in computer science at Berkeley back in the late 70's and can work effectively with programmers in the design of programs and then they do the coding, converting the mathematical structure into a computer language.

I've got my fingers crossed that he will be interested and enable all that. I offered him 1/2 the patent and we working together could work out a very nice patent this summer. I have until September 24th to get a new patent in with corrections based on the filing date I have with the USP&TO.
So this is really exciting and I eagerly await hearing from Professor Smith. His undergraduate degree is in molecular and cell biology.

Just click on reply to this email to respond. The cursor shows up on top the email I sent but when it is delivered to me it's following the email and in a nice sequential format. You'll see.

Anticipating that Professor Smith would like to meet on campus I called the person in the dean’s office I interviewed about my notice of trespass and will find out by the 19th if it will be lifted. I am pretty sure it will be lifted since I made a good presentation to a Michael Votava who I interviewed with about it.

I'm going to take a photo of my olives. I topped them a few weeks back and am making them into a sort of bonsai.

I'm having a bacon sandwich for breakfast along with my pills and a glass of V-8, yum!

Does Gmail underline in red your misspellings while you type? Mine doesn't and I can't figure out how to get it to do that. I have a Check spelling thingy in the upper right hand corner that I click on and then the misspellings are highlighted in yellow and you can right click on them and get a few suggestions in a short list and select the right spelling.

Cool and partly sunny here. Staying light almost to midnight.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> 
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Wed, Jun 10, 2009 at 3:22 AM
subject Meeting June 19th

Hi Mom,

I have a meeting with the dean and the chief of police and some others from 8:30 to 10 on the 19th to see if I can get the trespass lifted. The dean has a PhD in education, the lowest and most gutless major there is, a step below sociology, Michelle Obama's undergraduate major, but a step above African-American studies, that is at the very bottom along with woman's studies. It should be entertaining.
I think M is going to find the third semester of calculus, introductory physics using calculus and physical chemistry very difficult. I wonder if with a C+ in the first semester of calculus at age 18 and with good preparation in algebra, geometry and trigonometry he should even be in science at all. He definitely couldn't amount to much as an engineer. I think maybe he should change his plans and just be a history major and follow his dad into law. We'll see.

I am looking forward to hearing from Professor Smith. He is the instructor in the programming course I am registered for this fall.

As soon as I turn the corner to success I am going to sue Cain. The payments he makes of $360 a month always come late, always require a phone call, and don't even cover the interest. What a low piece of fecal material he is. And thanks for all your help in collecting the debt.

Well on loftier ambitions I see now my work in theoretical physics and theoretical chemistry complete and am eager to move on to the major problems in drug design and protein engineering. 23 years of very difficult work will pay off in spades. Thanks for asking many times how my work is progressing and all the encouragement you have given me in this undertaking.

It's really difficult to be as smart as I am, you have to deal with such stupid people. That's about to end and good riddance, I need to deal with educated chimpanzees like a hole in the head.

I'll be very interested to find out what courses M has registered for. Since I have such an exceptional background in math and science I know what he should be taking. But who consults me, not the chimpanzees! I'm a crazy uncle.

Looking forward to better sleep. It takes ibuprofen to clear out the headache in the morning. I wonder what has brought this all on.

The first two things I will do when I turn the corner to success are to pay back the money you have loaned me since September 2006 and sell the condo. I will want you to transfer the condo to my name and put it against your estate so there are no capital gains taxes to be paid. It's current market value is about 90K. How much have you loaned to me including the taxes this year? It must be around 10K. Tell me so I know. I always want to say I
did everything on my own without any financial support from parents or siblings, that was true through September 2006.

See if you can say something intelligent in an email and not just waste time with the weather, your condo, etc, etc.

Cool here.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to aftos@uaa.alaska.edu
date Wed, Jun 10, 2009 at 4:43 AM
subject The importance of atoms radii to proteins and modeling

Hi again Professor Smith,

I did a Google search on you and saw about 5 of your paper titles. The surfaces from contours and tiling were very interesting and I see you did that work back in the 90’s. In conventional QM the contours are of the probability density function, the Born interpretation of the wave function, so you have 80%, 90%, 95% contour surfaces. Did you have in mind any applications to that when you did that work?

What I want to do first respecting the protein folding and engineering problem is start with the backbone of bond lengths and angles from the crystallography data and then put in my atom surfaces centered on each atom vertex. For covalent bonds the spheres get truncated at the bond interface, a simple problem to solve, two equations and two unknowns. In a diatomic covalent bond such as the hydrogen, oxygen or nitrogen molecules the interface between the two atoms is flat. In covalent bonds between dissimilar atoms the interface is convex or concave and which and the degree of are determined by the atom size and the atomic number of charges. The smaller an atom is the “harder” it is. The higher the atomic number of charges also the “harder it is. I have a formula for the exact relationship, again two equations with two unknowns. What is so important about whether the interface is convex or concave and which atom in the covalent bond is convex and which concave is because a dipole appears opposite the covalent bond on both atoms and the sign of the dipoles and the strength of the dipoles is determined by the interfacial surface deformation.

When you account for the covalent bonds and fill in all the atomic surfaces for a protein I think it will be found the atoms are 3-5% too large. When two oppositely charged dipoles of atoms interact the atoms deform and flatten, and have a reduced radius over the interfacial patch.
So I think in a model for proteins you can just “shave” off a little where the two participating atoms intersect and then it will be found the atom sizes determine the protein size, i.e. packed volume. I think it will be possible to just read off the dipoles of the atoms from this set of “shaved” down interfaces, like a map into the proteins real structure.

The interface of covalently bound atoms and the interfaces of dipole interactions is a kind of tiling problem I think and it’s absolutely essential to determine all those interfaces that are just based on the bond lengths and angles and atom sizes. Accurate atom sizes are critical in this undertaking since I expect the dipole perturbations to be on the order of 3-5% of the atomic radii and it is absolutely essential to determine those shaved off tiled portions of the protein to interpret the whole thing both structurally and energetically.

Salts are interesting in regards to the deformations and shape. In NaCl each atoms is an ion. Free ions have the same radius as the neutral atoms. In NaCl the atom shapes are actually rectangular and the volume of the ions is about 90% of the free atom volume. This shows how dramatic the deformations in the flexible, deformable structure of atoms can be.

If I had my choice I would prefer to do no coding and not have to take the intro sequence of programming courses. I am however very interested in the data structures and algorithms. So ideally I would like to just audit your data structures and algorithms course this fall and graphics course next spring and then interface with programmers who do the coding. I would like to take math 231 this fall and linear algebra in the spring for credit. I have already taken linear algebra but 20 years ago and am rusty. Linea algebra strikes me as quite important to the modeling and dynamics problems. You can rotate a position 3x3 matrix by a rotation and translation matrix and that seems to me the mathematical approach to approaching a protein from the exterior with for instance a drug molecule and determining the energetics and geometry of the docking interaction. That’s where I want to work out some algorithms based on energetics and structure.

I’ll stop sending you email’s now and wait to hear from you. I hope you are interested in all this and I am not boring you.

Sincerely,

Dave Degner

from  Tom Smith <aftos@uaa.alaska.edu>
Hello David,

I'm pretty busy with non-academic issues right now so I'm only skimming your messages. I'll be more responsive in about a month and a half.

Tom Smith

Sorry about the last email Mom, Sometimes the stress I feel, the isolation, the difficulty of life is too great and I lash out like that. Hope you can overlook it.

Love, David

Receiving your email from last eve, which I just opened this morning, made me feel better. Your email from yesterday was so disturbing and I was fearful that you were again slipping backward. So thanks for the second one. I am just getting ready and M will pick me up for my 9 A/M. apt. to have the dental implant put in. Hope it will go O.K.. I am a little concerned since there seems to be an overgrowth of bone or something in the last few weeks. That is in the area where the implant goes. I am sure he will check that out first. Love, Mother

Thursday morning
Hi Mom,

Heard from professor Smith yesterday. He said he was busy with non-academic issues and would get back to me in about a month and a half. I sent him a third email with some specific plans in molecular modeling and told him I hoped he found this all interesting and that I wasn't boring him. From his response I think he will be highly interested in my projects in the computer simulation of atoms and molecules. This fall I want to get some good students interested in the project and they will write the computer programs.

I apologize again for the email yesterday. I feel my family has been of no support, even of a very negative support when you consider Cain stole my life's savings, you did nothing about it and I have no relationship with any of my siblings or nephew. I think you all have little to no appreciation for my intellect and what I have accomplished over these many years. That feeling naturally leads to the kind of email I sent you yesterday morning as I'm sure you can understand. I am very thankful for your financial support since September 2006 but wouldn't have needed any of it Cain just paid me back the money I loaned him. Can you imagine how a person feels having his life nest egg stolen by his brother and then being threatened by him and told by him to go fuck yourself? Cain IS absolutely without any moral code of conduct!

It's true what I said about M. A C+ in calculus I is a very onerous portend of failure in engineering and science. For instance when I took it at Cornell I was 17, had weak preparation for it, didn't attend classes, just crammed before tests, and got an A+ on the final and an A- in the course. At IUPU I attended the lectures and did the homework daily and had a 98 or 99 average on the tests all three semesters and was the #1 student in the class all three semesters. So you can see where I am coming from. I know a lot about these things and have observed that failure in calculus leads to great difficulties in physics, physical chemistry and any engineering discipline. I have also observed that many people with a grade like that could be successful in the less rigorous ares of engineering and chemistry. Of course he should be encouraged to the highest degree and we'll see how things turn out in the coming years. I just don't think anyone who gets a C+ in calculus is very smart, and I'm right about that. But maybe he had a poor instructor and did better the second semester. You never told me how he did the second semester, it hurts to be completely left out of the maturation of a nephew in math and
science given my knowledge of both. I could be an excellent
instructor in all math, chemistry and physics courses if I had
gone the conventional path and not worked independently in new
and original research all these years.

I got on the wagon again yesterday after having 7-8 beers daily
for the previous 5 days. I remain committed to sobriety but it isn't
easy, but also in a way it is because I feel better not drinking and
am starting to have projects to work on to fill my time and relieve
me of the loneliness, boredom and tediousness that propels me
to drink.

I hope you can at least appreciate the level of sophistication I am
at, finally in life, at 56, with many good experiences and some
not so good ones, and with a really good education, and with
accomplishment's that are even singular.

Love the wireless ATT WIMAX. It is working flawlessly.

Cool again here today.

Love, David

rom  David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to  aexmd@gmail.com
date  Tue, Jun 16, 2009 at 8:53 PM
subject  Psychotic? Onions?

Hey Allan,

How are things going? I have never been better, net of high BP,
172/100 WITH medication, smoking two packs a day, but drinking
under control, ½ the days and ½ the volume, of course must do better.

Did you ever want to be a psychiatrist? I did but was always leaning
towards neurosurgery since I like to use my hands so much. Have you
ever wondered how Dan’s mind actually works?

I don’t bring that up randomly. I want to disclose to you a real secret:
THE GOVERNMENT SINCE JIMMY CARTER HAS HAD ME
UNDER COMPLEX BIOMETRIC SURVEILLANCE AS HAD THAT
REALLY TGHT-ASS (hǑle) DAN AND THAT EXQUISITE (in
humǒr) FEMALE, HIS WIFE (a dumb bitch I wouldn’t want to fuck in
a million years).
It’s all black op and top, top, top, top, top secret. The surveillance is composed of acoustic, IR and displacement current technologies. You know how there are potential differences between different locations on the surface of the body. That is the basis of EEG’s and EKG’s (and interestingly also Kirian photography). The electric fields that fluctuate in space-time can be read by the copper wires in the household electric circuit grids serving as antennas. It gets very complex and I don’t want to get into the scientific complexity here, just outline the basics.

Dan and the CIA or whatever government agency has had me under this surveillance since the Carter administration that is illicit, immoral, ill-conceived are all MENTALLY ILL. It is maximally computationally massaged, like figuring out ORF’s (open reading frames, the # of genes) in DNA or computing the gravitational time dilation in a GPS satellite.

Now you are probably, almost certainly, thinking I am psychotic. I know that is how it would appear on superficial analysis. But I am quite sane, quite rational and quite sober and have never been more serious.

Well what am I going to do about it? I am going to sue everyone who had anything to do with it to within an inch of their lives! That’s six, count them, six presidents. Boy are they going to take it in the ass from Big Dave. Fuck that fecal material. Dan is in for the RUDEST awakening possible. My sanity at this point in my life is at 110%.

I would like you to do a novel on all this and make it into a screenplay. With your experiences as a dad, husband, surgeon, thinker and accomplished writer I think you are uniquely qualified for such an undertaking. You really are a gifted writer and a gifted thinker and I wouldn’t lie to you about either of those opinions of mine and I find it inescapable that from life’s experiences you are very wise.

You’ll see everything I say is true in the near future, IMHO.

Your friend, Dave

PS Wasn’t that Curta Mechanical Calculator amazing. Even more amazing he designed it while in a concentration camp and the foul German guards were going to present it the Fuhrer. Curta should have hidden a bomb in it and then they would have given it to the Fuhrer only to blow out the MF’s eyes and disfigure his face irreversibly.
Hey Allan,

The basic problem I have always had with respect to Dan is I have him figured with a magnum opus. Knowing his ego and sense of personal prominence I imagine he might even think his magnum is world class and one of the greatest ever. It fits in with his belief system and 10 years, now more, of being a ZEN, that's ZEN Buddhist. Does that jive with your thinking about Dan. Or do you think he could possibly shrivel up in life without producing his MAGNUM OPUS.

I also do think he has had me under surveillance since my college years. I realize you would have known about some of that but also believe he would have cut you off at the point in time the government put me under surveillance, sometime during that dumb mother fucking technocrat Jimmy Carters presidency.

You might think I am delusional and being psychotic, and that's basically fine with me, but I would really appreciate your opinion on whether or not Dan is good for a magnum?

And that's not a Smith and Wesson .44 magnum.

Dave
Allan to me

Dave,
I don't know where your mind is at, but if you think Schulman in any way was involved with your life, you are wrong.

Ditto for Jimmy Carter and all the rest.

The fact that you persist in these delusions means to me that you are not regulated well on the drugs you are taking.

Allan

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to aexmd@gmail.com>
date Thu, Jun 18, 2009 at 6:50 PM
subject Re: The chief problem

Sorry to be such a stickler on grammar, but I am sure you meant well regulated.

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Fri, Jun 19, 2009 at 3:09 AM
subject More about Kevin

Hi Mom,

I want you to prepare to transfer my condo to Kevin ASAP. Kevin is my only friend. If I was in a life and death situation there is no one I would rather have at my side then Kevin. Kevin is rock solid, stable, smart, C's age and is going to be my CEO when I start up a company. I know his mother and his kids and have watched him from when they were first born all the way through to his divorce from Jane, a dumb slut. I stayed at his mom's in Las Vegas for about 4 or 5 days on my road trip back in 2003. So you can see picking Kevin to have my condo in his name is THE right choice. He knows all about my mental illness and has visited me at API and picked me up when I was released.

So that's settled. So after you transfer the property to Kevin against your estate so no taxes need to be paid he will get a loan for about $25,000 on it. Then he will pay you back the money you have loaned me and I'll use the balance to get a lawyer to
sue C, make out a will, and live on until I start getting payments from C. Then I will be able to get off welfare almost immediately and will be financially secure. I'll get some of Obama's health care coverage as soon as that comes out.

I think you need to set a value on the property when you transfer it. The current market value is about $87,500, so use that value.

Ideally this can be done by July 1st so I can discontinue welfare shortly thereafter, collecting the July payments as my last.

I am not going to take a no on this, am not going to argue with you about it. This has to happen period. You are too old to provide me any security much longer into the future and this is the only plan that makes sense looking forward.

I'm sure when you consider and reread what I have just written you will come to see I am right about this. Let's get this done next week. You can quit claim the property to Kevin since he knows the title is a good one. Since I no longer raise pot the place can be appraised in order for him to get a loan on it. Again and for the final time, this is what is going to have to happen. I have so hated dependency on welfare and you and am so sick and tired of it that it must come to this logical and timely conclusion.

Your check arrived yesterday, just in time, I had to borrow $20 from Stacy for smokes yesterday. Thanks. What a lovely building you live in. It's hard to believe your condo is only worth $125,000. It looks really nice. The back porch then must face south and is probably really great for your planters.

Tell me how much you have provided for me. My guess is about $11,000. I'm sure you have a record of it. If I were you I would use it to buy a small farm that isn't going to flood. You should also get out of the market entirely as it will dip back down to around 5-6000 in the coming years. So you plan that out and not just sit idly by hoping for the best, IMHO. Farm land will never be a better buy than right now. Get something in MO, IL or IN and make arrangements with a farmer to operate it. The long term capital gains rate has not gone up yet so take your profit, write off your losses, and get out of the market. Keep your HYBF for liquidity and income.
One thing you need to recognize is that I am almost always right about just about everything, due to being a natural genius, a great education and a PhD in the school of hard knocks.

I am fully prepared to meet the dean at UAA. I am going to give him my vision of UAA. I know exactly what they should do in the future. He will agree with me and embrace my vision for UAA wholeheartedly and even find it an exciting prospect.

Will get your call in a few hours.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Fri, Jun 19, 2009 at 3:37 AM subject Re: More about Kevin

I am already preparing kiss off letters for SS and AK welfare. Good riddance. How thoroughly degrading to be means tested at level below you can live on. I'm going to point out how immorally their disability plans are constructed and then forget about them. I will thank them for the support. I imagine over the years that have provided me with about $200,000 and also a very large Medicaid benefit, maybe around $100,000. You have to be thankful for that. I have paid about $55,000 in taxes over those years including federal and state, real estate, capital gains and sales and excise taxes on gas, phone, tires, beer and smokes. So it's not like I have paid no taxes, I've paid my fair share. Looks a little different when you include that in the equation.

Had blood drawn and BP taken yesterday. Will be interested to see how much the vitamin D has come up. Also they're checking vitamin B12, a PSA and my thyroid. My BP was 156/98 so both medications I'm on have been doubled.

Let's get the property transferred this coming week. Then I can pay off the medical bills I occurred in Destruction Bat and Whitehorse,

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Sun, Jun 21, 2009 at 1:26 PM subject Final will, quit claim, legal services required, the petunias, the longest day

569
Hi Mom,

I am going to leave 100% of my assets, including the condo, all the contents, my patent, my copyright and all future assets and monies that accrue to my estate from all sources, including any books, screenplays, movies, etc, based on my performances in life, to Kevin.

Can you quit claim the condo to me tomorrow as I have requested? I need to see a lawyer and sue C and establish a legal will and need funds for those legal services. I hope I don't have to sue you too to get that done!

Planter looking fine. Notice how well the petunias are doing?

The longest day and cool and overcast up here in Alaska.

Love, David
I forgot that today is the longest day of the year. It is 98 here and forecast is for late afternoon storm. Today is also Father's Day and V is doing a cookout even if Dad is not here. I was going to send an email telling you that I would not be calling today - then I had just received your last email so will respond. First of all, I am wondering how your meeting at the Univ. went on Fri. 2nd hopefully you will be rational enough to understand that having the condo in your name is not wise (unless you want to lose it) I have just finished paying the Visa bills, etc. from your little excursion this winter - which I am sure you look back at and think "how did I think of doing that". 3rd. thinking of telling SSi that you don't need the m, etc. You've done that before and remember what a hassle it was to get that taken care of. 4th, would you please email me the phone number of Fran at S. Central. I need advice.

I always miss Dad on Father's Day although he isn't my father. Then again I am sure he would not have wanted to leave me with all I have to take care of either. I could be bedridden in a nursing home - imagine that. Take care, I am sorry that you are so bitter toward me. Mother

P.S. It is clouding up so I will head to V's before it storms.

If you don't quit claim my condo to me promptly I will sue you.

Love, David
Hey Allan,

I just have to vent. Sorry about that especially if it puts you in a difficult spot.

You stated Dan and Carter had nothing to do with my life. Yet I know Dan and you and City and Beirmann have had me under surveillance since my sophomore year in college. And I know the government has had me under surveillance since 1979 or so.

You find that hard to believe? Well, of course you would have known about the early part of that, with respect to Dan and you GSP Jew boys, none of whom ever had a functioning life at that point in your lives, only able to attract ugly, undesirable woman, and USUALLY settling for homosexuality, e.g. Dan and Sity,. OH God, where did you Jews crawl out from? Ha Ha.

So I want you know I am going to sue Dan and all the presidents since Carter for every penny they are worth. Deny it to me, you Jew bastard, kiss my German testis.

I have learned that people emotionally immature early in life are permanently emotionally insecure and require chicken soup for subtle and not so subtle stroke to their ZEN Buddhists egos.

OH God, how abhorrent.

I do totally put you in a different category, probably because you recognized your dick early on in college, but not until I had flattened it in P Chem. Ha. Ha, C in biochemistry, C in P Chem, ducked genetics, are you even serious as a scientist?

But as a thinker I find you seminal and that is an encouraging point.

I am going to FUCK Dan and Carter in the ass so bad they don't know which end it is coming into and I'm not going to using KY. So also with Carter, Nancy, GHW, WC, W and O. Fuck all that low class fecal material.

Springfield .303.
Hi Mom,

Well I feel sorry for all people who are in pain. I am for self assisted suicide to resolve those situations sanely. So I guess if you were in a bed in a nursing home I would wish you had the right to end your life with dignity.

I want you completely out of my life. I want our relationship to end. I don't want any of your f-in money as an inheritance.

The fact you maintain a relationship with J after what he has done to me only causes me to hate you as much as I hate him. You, C, M, V and M are all in my estimation PURE fecal material.

So get a clue you dumb bitch, transfer my condo title to me and then take a flying fuck.

Love, David

PS There is only one person as singularly stupid as Fran and it is you. I feel sad thinking of the life Dad wasted with you. I would never had made that mistake.
Hi Mom,

Our relationship is now terminated. Go straight to hell you dumb bitch, and stick a giant dildo in your asshole.

Love, David

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com>

to aexmd@gmail.com

date Wed, Jun 24, 2009 at 1:28 AM

subject Please forward this to Dan

hey Allan,

I am tired of being the butt of the joke.

Dave

Forward this to Dan too,, please:

I leave 100% of my assets and any assets my estate acquires after my death to Kevin K. Hearts. This includes my condo (my condo title is currently in my mother’s name but I in fact own the property 100% with no outstanding balances), my truck, all the contents of my condo,
a debt owed me by my brother Cain F. Degner with a present value of $179,204 at an interest rate of 19.99% applied for being in a state of default, utterly refusing to pay and using threatening and uncivil language, the original debt as of July 2003 was $54,300 and at 19.99% interest this has grown to $179,204 and also require Kevin L. Hearts to sue Cain F. Degner for all collection costs, any residual monies in my checking account, any wrongful death awards from any and all parties to be made in the future for my wrongful death, the entire body of data assets and analysis due to being under complex biometric surveillance for over three decades by a Daniel Ess and the government of the United States, all rights, revenues, profits and royalties derived from screenplays, books, movies, TV series, online distributions and any and all other commercial sources derived associated with that lengthy period of surveillance and the analysis thereof, my patent application number 12/380,670 with a file date 3-3-2009, a Confirmation No. 4009 was sent on 3-24-2009, corrections were required and a two month extension was granted from 3-24-2009 to submit a corrected version and a 5 month extension of time can be petitioned for so the corrected version along with a 5 month petition for extension of time is due by midnight on October 24, 2009, my copyright registration number TX 6-898-649, and approximately 3000 copies of the second edition of my book, The N-particle Model, being held by A.T. Publishing and Printing Inc of Anchorage. I leave everything I own and that will become part of my estate in the future after my death from any and all sources including wrongful death lawsuits and any and all other lawsuits to Kevin K. Hearts. I award to Kevin K. Hearts the sole right to pursue those wrongful death lawsuits and any and all other lawsuits generated on my behalf against the instigators of the stated surveillances and against any other individuals who are liable for their negligent or unlawful actions against me and I leave Kevin K. Hearts as sole heir to all proceeds from wrongful death and any and all other legal cases and actions. I leave nothing to any family members and also do not leave any family members the rights to pursue wrongful death suits on my behalf and leave no family members the rights to pursue any other legal cases on my behalf. So in summary Kevin K Hearts is 100% heir to my present and future estate and the only individual I grant the right to pursue any and all legal cases on behalf of the estate and Kevin K Hearts is the sole heir for the proceeds from those and any other legal actions. The entire data stream I generated while under surveillance and all the analysis thereof I consider my personal property and I request Kevin K Hearts to take all necessary measures to see to it that that data stream and the analysis thereof becomes part of my estate and furthermore that no one else has any possession of any of it, any rights to any of it, can use any of it in any way or ever disclose any of it for any reason.
Hey Allan,

Do me one last favor. Ask Dan what is blacks best move. As far as I know it is unknown at this point in the game.

Dave

Hey Allan,

You know other than being smarter than Dan and always knowing how bad he was doing me in the ass, albeit with no smoking gun, there was a single smoking gun in the history of surveillance. It involved John Cut, Cutty, an individual blessed with so much it was always a mystery to me he lived like an animal without any inner strength, without perceiving the greater, and always smug with his intelligence, like Dan. Back in my first psychosis Cut told me he knew Dan, was working on Dan’s project along with him, and that his role was to orchestrate the music in Dan’s grand opus. He showed me a page with some colored lines on it and stated that is exactly what he and Dan were up to.

So that was a smoking gun. John took the chance, along with Dan, because they knew I was at that point psychotic, and thought they could do that to me and I wouldn’t be able to utilize that revealing detail. Well, of course I am a lot smarter than both Cut and Dan.
Would you like to confess to me now your role in Dan’s magnum opus?

Dave

PS Poor Cut and Dan, what major disappointments they are to me. It shakes my belief in the goodness of mankind, but certainly doesn’t win out in that indictment.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to aexmd@gmail.com
date Thu, Jun 25, 2009 at 6:00 AM
subject It’s time now Allan to get it off your chest

Allan,

You I can forgive, because I love you.

Dave

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to aexmd@gmail.com
date Sat, Jun 27, 2009 at 4:12 AM
subject Envy, jealousy and ultimately hate

Hey Allan,

I have to talk to you about Dan, Henry, Cutty, City, Beirmann and Klotz.

They all had envy for me. This resulted in jealousy, and finally hate.

They attempted to murder me, by slimy Jew techniques.
Well, it didn’t succeed, I am still here, a little lonely, but still the fine German machine I have always been, which is by the way why they hate me.

Come clean Allan. I know you know about this. I know you want to get it off your chest. I trust you will find honor and exult in the great culture that is Jew, but not the race, you married a Gentile, and not the religion, you never believed in anymore of that nonsense than I did of Lutheranism.

I’m in a trough situation right now Allan, your support could turn the corner for me.

That stupid f-in nigger O is in on all this, as is Hil, W, GWHB, RR and Carter and all the supreme court justices. I’m up against the powerful and the mighty. They think they can crush me. Help me show them all they are very wrong.

Drinking, smoking, being fat, being diabetic, being hypertensive, I may not have that much longer to go. Help me out here.

Dave

PS My best friend in high school, Henry, is a particularly strong disappointment. He did the dirtiest thing to me imaginable. I was in the act of proposing to the woman I wanted to spend the rest of my life with and bear my children. He pulled up and interrupted it, that I always knew had to have been orchestrated, but I didn’t know by exactly who. It changed my life irrevocably and in a negative way almost impossible to imagine. Help me out Allan.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com> to aexmd@gmail.com

date Sat, Jun 27, 2009 at 4:39 AM
subject Ampere’s Law as extended by Maxwell

Hey Allan,

I know you are not into science anymore. But I want to tell you about the surveillance I am under.

As you know modern medicine uses EKG’s and EEG’s. Those are potential differences between different points on the surface of a human. What they mean in terms of phenomenology is that there are different electric fields emanating from the surface of humans. These fields extend out into the space adjacent to a human and can interact
with closed loops of wire, the circuits in a household electric circuit, and generate waves and peaks in the low end, in Hertz, of current phenomenon via the displacement current. That is the time changing flux of the electric filed across some area enclosed by a loop of conductor, such as a circuit in your house. With analysis of those waves and peaks it is even possible to read a person’s mind, in addition to much additional information about the shape, size and orientation of a human body relative TO THE CONDUCTOR LOOP.

Dan, the Supreme Court and 6 Presidents have had me under surveillance through the displacement current using the wires in the walls, household circuits, as antenna.

Well of course having known about this for over 3 decades, I have been under great, astonishing, stress being under this surveillance. It causes me to not take care of myself, my blood pressure, excessive smoking, drinking and obesity, all of which probably adds up to a heart attack or a stroke.

Dan additionally interfered with my normal social maturation by various devious techniques utilizing this surveillance. Dan is a really sick pedophile, as are all in his camp, and also all in the government camp.

I have not much left to do but sue all of them, or my estate sue all of them after my wrongful death.

They all hate me because I am German #1, and it is easy to hate a superior biological machine, even when they are reduced due to intervention to a fat, smoking, drinking, diabetic, sedentary life, like I have been reduced to.

I am going to win in the end, they are all going to go to jail and be stripped of assets when I sue them, and ultimately fry in hell for an eternity.

Help me out Allan, I am all alone against pure evil.

Dave
July 6, 2009

David Degner
180 Grand Larry St #10
Anchorage, AK 99504

Dear Mr. Degner,

I am writing in response to your request to have the notice of criminal trespass lifted that University Police issued to you on May 6, while you were not a student at the University of Alaska Anchorage. In your written request, you wrote that the reason you were trespassed was due to a statement you made to the Providence Psychiatric ER on May 1, 2009. You wrote that you said, "Ideally, I should go into the UAA physics department with a loaded gun, shoot a few bullets in the ceiling, and then blow my brains out."

You wrote that as a result of making this comment, you were admitted to API for four days. You wrote that being admitted to API was your goal, because at the time, you believed you were under complex biometric surveillance. You wrote API was a location where you could get out from under the surveillance. You wrote that API staff members alerted University Police about the comment you made at the Providence Psychiatric ER.

You and I met on June 4 to review what happened. Following our meeting, a team of University staff members met to evaluate your request. At this time, the University of Alaska Anchorage Chief of Police declines to lift your trespass. Furthermore, the Dean of Students and Vice Chancellor for Student Affairs has restricted you from enrolling in any UA course. The University of Alaska Anchorage believes that the statement you made at Providence Hospital represents a significant threat to our community of students and employees. In the letter you sent me dated May 28, you stated that you have been psychotic during several times in your adult life ranging from several months to several years. You wrote that you operate under a massively delusional paradigm when you are psychotic.

UAA's Chief of University Police will reconsider a written request from you to lift your trespass and the Dean of Students and Vice Chancellor for Student Affairs will reconsider your request to enroll after you provide evidence that you have successfully and consistently complied with the recent recommendations for treatment for the immediately preceding twelve-month period. You may submit another request to have your trespass lifted after May 6, 2010. In order for your request to be reconsidered, the University of Alaska Anchorage expects that you will:
1. comply with the recommendations for treatment that were a condition of your release from API on May 6, and you will include a copy of these recommendations for treatment with your request;
2. sign and return the enclosed Release of Information forms allowing a UAA counselor to have two-way communication with your treatment providers, Anchorage Community Mental Health Nurse Practitioner and Social Worker;
3. direct inquiries pertaining to your criminal trespass to the Chief of University at 786-1120;
4. direct all other communication pertaining to the University of Alaska Anchorage to me at 786-1241;
5. have no contact with any UAA employees except as noted above in items three and four; and
6. adhere to the trespass issued to you by University Police.

David, I wish you success in your pursuit of academic excellence. I appreciate your desire to further your education and make contributions to society. I hope that your new treatment plan works, and is beneficial for your goals.

Sincerely,

Michael Votava,
Assistant Director of Student Conduct
Hi Mom,

At times I feel very low and am suicidal, would like just to die a painless death. After some sleep I usually feel better and am more optimistic, but it is difficult to tell if optimism is for me just a delusion. It has been a difficult, lonely and often horrible existence, but there have been some good parts too, so maybe I shouldn't be so pessimistic facing the future.

Got up to 80 here yesterday and supposed to be hot again today. Hazy. I've got the air on.
I am trying Fred’s brats today. They’re $3.34 for a package of 5, quite a bit less than Johnsonville’s, that I usually only get when they are on sale. Over the fourth they had the Johnsonville’s on sale for $3.99, regularly they are $5.99.

Am doing well on the drinking front. Don’t really want to drink. Now am trying to give up the smokes. Am completely over the pot addiction. I think I will feel better and better by staying on the wagon. Looking forward to losing weight and getting exercise and being in better physical shape. The weight comes off when I stop drinking.

What a disaster the economic situation is. It will be interesting to see how it plays out. We’re looking at higher interest rates and inflation. I got Milton Friedman’s Money Mischief and am going to try to read it. It’s about exactly the kind of thing going on now with Obama and the congress. Bush was no better.

I’ll send an email after Wheel of Fortune or O’Reilly and you can call back, then I save a quarter. So check your email often.

Love, David

from Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> to David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> date Wed, Jul 8, 2009 at 2:59 PM subject Re: Another day

Just checked email and will check again after Wheel of Fortune is over. Maybe I will first check what O"Reilly is going to have on tonight. It is always good that they announce what they will cover - as Greta does too. Our local news is starting. Hopefully talk later. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegener@gmail.com> to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com> date Tue, Jul 14, 2009 at 12:28 PM subject Recovery and call

Hi Mom,

I realized over the weekend that I have still been psychotic part of the time. I think I am over it now, the 10mg dose seems to be
working. Like I said it is a difficult and tricky thing to get a handle on, get over and get past. It's really pretty depressing.

I'll email you about a call at 4 or 5 my time.

Love, David

from Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
to David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
date Tue, Jul 14, 2009 at 1:18 PM
subject Re: Recovery and call

Thanks for message. I am looking forward to talking to you. Love, Mother

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Tue, Jul 14, 2009 at 3:49 PM
subject Re: Recovery and call

Call after Wheel. I just got up from a nap.

from David Degner <davidmartindegner@gmail.com>
to Anita Degner <degneral@gmail.com>
date Fri, Jul 24, 2009 at 12:55 PM
subject I feel so rotten

Hi Mom,

It really isn't fair that someone who suffers from schizophrenia cannot have a painless death and leave this world behind, assisted suicide. To be a mentally ill person is really completely impossible.

Give me a call when you get this. Maybe it'll pick me up a bit.

Love, David

584
15 butterfly or cockroach

Ever wonder what man’s real Nature is? I naively always assumed it was good, was noble, was wise and was purposeful, respecting both knowledge and a Creator. That’s the butterfly.

Now line up every person whose actions have caused an injury or death to a fellow human being that was the clear perceivable outcome of some decision they made and not the result of an accident, and I will gladly torture them all to death, cut out all reusable organs for transplant, recycle the remaining biomass to ethanol and fertilizer, and make a documentary of the process. That’s the cockroach.

The Nazi’s did not torture the Jews, rather gave them a relatively painless death via carbon monoxide. The South African blacks “necklaced” their opposition that is putting a tire doused with kerosene or gasoline around someone’s neck and igniting it. During slavery in America criminal slaves were burned at the stake to make it clear how the slaves must behave. Of course you have to include among man’s great inventions the guillotine used strategically in the French Revolution that went on contemporaneously with the American Revolution. And finally there is hanging, best represented in the justice of the American Wild West. So list your preference for how you would choose to die if unfortunately you were condemned to death. I’d choose the Nazi gas chamber, those cuddly little Nazis. And a little in second place the guillotine followed in a distant third by hanging. Choosing between being necklaced and burned at the stake certainly would not be a welcome choice but after resigning yourself to massive pain it is really easier than it looks at first. You want to be necklaced. Being burned at the stake is dead last because it is slowest. Being burned at the stake must be really, really horrible.

So what happened? I was burned at the stake!
I am sane now and I expect to remain sane in the future. So I am a recovered paranoid schizophrenic. The periods of mental illness were the episodes of psychosis, episodes of insanity, episodes of being crazy, of being nuts.

During the sane periods of my life I worked on science and have a theory of everything and new quantum mechanics to show for my efforts.

I have what I claim is the cheapest solution to the energy problem.

I have the optimum economic engine for all of mankind.

I envision near perfect security possible, with very little violence, no acts of terrorism, no conflicts or wars.

So what is the connection of having been insane and wanting a sane world? Just an accident of Nature I guess.